



*Non me pudet Evangelij Christi.  
Virtus enim Dei est ad salutem  
omni credenti Rom. 1. 16*

# Full Text

Bishops' Bible, 1568

## Bishops' Bible New Testament, 1568

¶ **The newe Testament of our sauour Iesus *Christe*.**

I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christe, because it is the power of God vnto saluation to all that beleue.

Rom.i.

[Page]

¶ **The description of the holy lande, conteyning the places mentioned in the foure *Euangelistes*, with other places about the sea coastes: wherein may be seene the wayes and iourneyes of Christe and his Apostles in Iudea, Samaria, and Galilee: for into these three partes this lande is deided.**

[Table] [Page]

### **A preface into the newe Testament.**

**The** newe Testament so called, conteyning the writings of the Euangelistes, with the Epistles of Christes Apostles, and with other such diuine bookes, declare playnely vnto vs the summe and effect of all the scriptures expressed in the olde Testament. [Note: ii Pet.i. ] That whiche was in figure and in obscuritie inuolued by the patriarkes and prophetes in their propheticall volumes, written by the inspiration of the holy ghost: is in this booke more playnely and evidently set out, vttered also in the selfe same spirite by the children of the prophetes the holy Apostles. [Note: Psal.xlv. Iohn.i. ] In deede the lawe was geuen by Moyses, but grace and veritie came by Iesus Christe, whiche grace this booke of the newe Testament doth most evidently commende and set out. In this is discoursed the whole misterie of our saluation and redemption, purchased by our sauour Christe, here is his holy conception described, his natiuitie, his circumcision, his whole life and conuersation, his godly doctrine, his diuine miracles. In this booke of the newe Testament is set out his death, his resurrection, his ascension, his sending of the holy spirite, his session in our fleshe on the right hande of his father, making continuall intercession to him for vs. [Note:

Collo iii. ] In this booke is contayned the fourme and order of his last iudgement, after the generall resurrection of our bodyes. [Note: Math.xxv. Iohn.20. ] These be the misteries of our fayth, these be the groundes of our saluation, these be thus written that we shoulde beleue them, and by our beliefe shoulde enioy life euerlasting. [Note: Hebre.i. ] Once and in tymes past God diuersly and many vvayes spake vnto the fathers by the prophetes, but in these last dayes he hath spoken vnto vs (vpon vvhom the endes of the vvorld be come) by his ovvne sonne, vvhom he hath made heire of all thinges, vvwhose dignitie is suche, that he is the brightnesse of his fathers glory, the very image of his substaunce, ruling all thinges by the vvorde of his povver. [Note: Hebre.i. Mat.iii.xvii ] This heauenly doctour so indued vvith glory and maiestie, vve ought most reuerently to beleue, as commended vnto vs from the aucthoritie of the heauenly father, to be hearde as his most vvbeloued sonne, in vvhom is his vvhole delight, by vvhom he vvyl be pleased and pacified: It vvyl els come to passe saith that prophete Moyses, [Note: Deut.xviii. ] that vvhosoeuer shall not here and obey that prophete in the vvordes that he shall speake in his fathers name, I vvill be saith the father, reuenger of him. This is the last prophete to be looked for to speake vnto vs: In hym be vniuersally inclosed the riches and treasures of the vvisdome and knowvledge of God his father, by him he hath decreed finally to iudge the vvhole vvorld, the liuing and the dead: by him hath he decreed to geue to his elect the life euerlasting, and to the reprobate (vvho hath contempned his life and doctrine) death euerlasting. [Note: Collo.ii. ii.Tim.iii. Actes.xvii. ] Let vs therefore seriously heare and obey this our heauenly teacher, submit our selues to this our iudge and revvarder: Let vs esteeme his doctrine and conuersation, as a ful, perfect, and sufficient patterne of al holynes and vertue: Let vs esteeme the doctrine of this booke, as a most inflexible rule to leade vs to all trueth and nevnesse of life. Here may vve beholde the eternall legacies of the nevve Testament, bequeathed from God the father in Christe his sonne to all his electes, I say the legacies liuely renevved vnto vs, not of deliuerance from Pharao his seritude, but from the bondage and thraldome of that perpetuall aduersarie of ours the deuil: here may vve beholde our inheritaunce, not of the temporall lande of Chanaan, or of the translation of vs to the place of vvordly paradise: but here vve may see the full restitution of vs, both in body and soule, to the celestially paradise, the heauenly citie of Hierusalem aboue, there to raigne vvith God the father, God the sonne, and God the holy ghost for euer. [Note: Gallat.iii. ] vvliche legacies of his Testament promised and bequeathed, vvvere notvvwithstanding recorded in the bookes of the olde Testament to our auncient fathers, vvliche in hope beleued in Christe to come, vvho vvvas painted before them in figures and shadovves, and signified in their olde sacramentes ordayned for that tyme: [Note: Hebre.ix. ] but novve more evidently renevved and exhibited vnto vs, not in figure, but in deede, not in promise, but in open sight, in feeling, in handling and touching of this eternall life, most manifestly confirmed vnto vs in Christe his blood in this his nevve Testament continued and reuiued, yet in nevve sacramentes, the better to beare in our remembraunce this his eternall Testament of all ioyfull felicities. [Note: i.Iohn.i. ] Let vs novve therefore good christian people, reioyce in these glad tidings expressed vnto vs by the name of the gospell of our sauour Christe, and let it neuer fall out of our remembraunce that vve vvvere sometime ouervvhelmed in darknesse, and set in the shadovve of death: let vs consider that vve vvvere sometime by our naturall byrth, the chylde of God his vvyrath, and vvholly estraunged from the housholde of God. [Note: i.Pet.iii. ] Let vs beare in minde that vve vvvere sometime no people of God, nor his beloued, that vve vvwere by nature braunches of the vvilde oliue, and novve by mere mercy grafted into the right and naturall oliue tree: vvhervpon let vs the rather repose our life in feare and reuerence. [Note: Math.iii. Ephe ii. Rom.xi. i.Tes.v. Ephe.iii. ] If vve be novve the chylde of light, let vs vvvalke in this our light in all holynesse and godlynesse of life, approuing that vvliche is pleasing to the Lorde. Let vs haue no felovvship vvith the vnfruitfull vvorkes of darknesse, and let vs hencefoorth be no more chylde, vvvaueing and caried about vvith euery vvinde of doctrine, and by the deceit and craftinesse of men, vvherby they lay in vvayte to deceaue vs: but let vs folovve the trueth in loue and charitie, and in al thinges grovve vp into him vvch

is the head, that is Christe our sauour. If vve be novve the chyldren of grace, and made liuely members of his body, though sometyme straungers and forreyners farre of, and made neare by the blood of Christe, and made citizens vvith the saintes, and of the housholde of God: [Note: Ephe.iii. ] let vs direct our heartes thither vvhere our head is, deliting our selfe in all heauenly cogitations, vvalking in all spirituall vvorkes and fruites of the spirite, as Gods deare elect. God graunt that Christe may so dvvell in our heartes by fayth, that vve may be hable to comprehend vvvith all saintes the vvnspcakable loue of Christe, vvchich passeth all mans knowvledge. Vnto him therefore vvchiche is hable to do exceeding abundauntly aboue all that vve can aske or thinke, be prayse in the Church by Christe Iesus, throughout all generations for euer. Amen.

[Note: In prologo vet. testam. ] And here yet once againe, let the reader be admonished charitably to examine this translation of the nevve Testament folovving, and be not offended vvith diuersitie of interpretation, though he finde it not to agree to his vvont text, or yet to disagree from the common translation: Remembring vvhat Santes Pagninus testifieth of that auncient interpreter saint Hierome, that in many places of his commentaries, he doth reade and expounde othervvise then is founde in the common translation: Yea saith Santes, Hierome doth retract very many places, and doth playnely confesse, that him selfe vvas deceaued by the haste of his translating in the doubtfull signification of the vvordes. And therefore saith the saide Hierome thus: I thinke it better to rebuke mine ovvne error, then (vvhyle I am ashamed to confesse my lacke of skill) to persist in an error. For vvho vvas euer, saith he, so vvell learned, that hath not somevvhere ben deceaued. Thus farre saint Hierome, vvhervpon good reader I exhort thee, reade aduisedly, expende learnedly, and correct charitably, and be not offended (good englishe reader) to see the holy scriptures in thyne ovvne language, as a matter nevvely seene: seeing that our ovvne countreyman that venerable priest Bede, many yeres agone did translate saint Iohns gospell into the vulgare tongue, *Ad vtilitatem ecclesia*, to the profite of the Church, saith Cuthbert & Durhams story, who reporteth Bedes ovvne saying: *Nolo vt discipuli mei mendatium legant*, I vvoulde not that my disciples should reade any lye, or spende their labour after my departure vvithout fruite. VVhiche thing also the auncient lyfe of Bede doth testifie of him. *In hiis diebus etiam euangelicum Iohannis in Anglicam transtulit linguam iuxta Apostolum: Sapientibus, & insipientibus debitor sum, & omnibus omnia factus.* [Note: Rom.i. i.Cor.ix. ] In these dayes (of his sicknesse) he did translate the gospell of saint Iohn into the englishe tongue, saying vvith the apostle: I am detter to the learned and vnlearned, I am made all to all. The rather he so did saith VVilliam Malmesberi,: *Quia hoc euangelium difficultate sui, mentes legentium excreat*: Because this gospell by the difficultie that is in it, doth so much exercise the vvittes of the readers, therefore he did interprete it into the englishe tongue: and so did condiscende (saith he) to them vvchiche vvere not skilfull in the latin tongue. God graunt that all readers may take so much profite therby, as the good translatours ment vnto them. Amen.

[Page]

## The fifth part.

## ¶ The [Note: [a] Gospell, that is, tydynges of our saluation by Christe. ] Gospell by Saint Matthewe.

### The first Chapter.

¶ 1 The Genealogie of Christe from Abraham. 18 The maryage of his mother Marie. 20 The Angell satisfieth Iosephes mynde. 21 The interpretation of Christes names.

<sup>A</sup>

1 **This** is the [Note: [b] That is, the rehearsall of Christes lineage and lyfe ] booke of the generation of Iesus Christ, the sonne of Daudid, the sonne of Abraham.

2 [Note: Gen.xxi.a. Ios.xxiiii.a ] Abraham begat Isaac, [Note: Gen.xxv.d ] Isaac begat Iacob, [Note: Ge.xxix.d ] Iacob begat Iudas, and his brethren.

3 [Note: Gen.38 g. ] Iudas begat Phares, and Zara of Thamar, [Note: Gen.xlvi.d ] Phares begat Esrom, [Note: i.Par.ii.a. ] Esrom begat Aram.

4 [Note: Ruth.iiii.d. ] Aram begat Aminadab, [Note: i.Par.ii.b. ] Aminadab begat Naasson, [Note: Num.i.a. ] Naasson begat Salmon.

5 [Note: Ruth.iiii.d. ] Salmon begat Boos, of Rachab, [Note: Ruth.iiii.d. ] Boos begat Obed of Ruth, [Note: Ruth.iiii.d. ] Obed begat Iesse.

6 [Note: i.Reg.xvi.a ] Iesse begat Daudid the kyng, [Note: ii.Reg.xii.f ] Daudid the kyng begat Solomon, of her that was the wyfe of Urie.

7 [Note: i.Para.iii.b. ] Solomon begat Roboam, [Note: ii.Par.xi.d. ] Roboam begat Abia, [Note: ii.Pa.xiiii.a ] Abia begat Asa.

8 [Note: iii.Reg.xv f ] Asa begat Iosaphat, Iosaphat begat Ioram, [Note: ii.Pa.xvii.a ] Ioram begat Ozias.

9 Ozias begat Ioatham, [Note: ii.Pa.xxi.a. ] Ioatham begat Achas, [Note: 4.Reg.xi.a ] Achas begat Ezekias.

10 [Note: ii.Par.xvi d ] Ezekias begat Manasses, [Note: 2.Pa.xxvii. ] Manasses begat Amon, [Note: 2.Para.28.d. ] Amon begat Iosias.

11 [Note: 4.Re.xx.d 4.Re.xxi.d 4.Re.24.a. ] Iosias begat Iacim, [Note: 4.Re.xx.d 4.Re.xxi.d 4.Re.24.a. ] Iacim begat Iechonias and his brethren, about the tyme they were caryed away to Babylon.

B

12 And, after they were brought to Babylon, [Note: Iere.xxii.f. i.Par.iii.d. Agge.i.a. ] Iechonias begat Salathiel, Salathiel begat Zorobabel.

13 [Note: i.Esd.iii.a. ] Zorobabel begat Abiud, [Note: i.Par.iii.d. 4.Reg.18.d. ] Abiud begat Eliakim, Eliakim begat Azor.

14 Azor begat Sadoc, Sadoc begat Achen, Achen begat Eliud.

15 Eliud begat Eleazar, Eleazar begat Matthan, Matthan begat Iacob.

16 Iacob begat Ioseph, the husband of Marie, of who was borne Iesus, that is called Christe. >

17 And so, all the generations from Abraham to Daud, are fourteene generations: and from Daud vntyll the caryng away into Babylo, are fourteene generations: and fro the caryng away into Babylon vnto Christe, are fourteene generations.

C

18 The birth of Iesus Christe was on this wise. < When as his mother Marie was betrouthed to Ioseph (before [Page] they came together) she was founde with chylde of the holy ghost.

19 Then Ioseph her husbände, beyng a ryghteous man, and not wylling to make her a publique example, was mynded priuily to put her away.

20 But whyle he thought these thinges, beholde, the Angell of the Lord appeared vnto hym in a dreame, saying: Ioseph, thou sonne of Daud, feare not to take [vnto thee] Marie thy wife, for that which is conceaued in her, is of the holy ghost.

21 She shall bryng foorth a sonne, and thou shalt call his name [Note: Philip.ii.b. Actes.iiii.b. ] Iesus: for he shall saue his people from their sinnes.

D

22 (All this was done, that it myght be fulfilled, which was spoken of the lorde by the prophete, saying:

23 [Note: Esai.vii.c. ] Behold, a virgin shalbe with childe, and shall bryng foorth a sonne, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, whiche is by interpretation, God with vs.)

24 Then Ioseph, being raysed fro slepe, dyd as the Angel of the Lorde had bidden hym, and he toke his wyfe:

25 [Note: [c] This phrase doth not import yt he knewe her afterward: as the like phrase vsed. Math.v xxviii.d. and Psal.cx. or yt she hadde any mo chydren. ] And knewe her not, tyll she hadde brought foorth her first borne sonne, & called his name Iesus.

## ¶ The .ij. Chapter.

¶ 1 The tyme and place of Christes birth. 11 The wyse men offer their presentes. 14 Christe fleeth into Egipte. 16 The young chylde are slayne. 23 Christe turneth into Galilee.

A

1 **When** Iesus was borne in Bethlehem, a citie of Iurie, in the dayes of Herode the kyng: beholde, there came wise men from the east to Hierusalem,

2 Saying: Where is he that is borne kyng of Iewes? For we haue seene his [Note: Nu.xxiiii.c. ] starre in the east, and are come to worship hym.

3 When Herode the kyng had hearde these thynges, he was troubled, and all [the citie of] Hierusalem with hym.

4 And when he hadde gathered all the chiefe Priestes and Scribes of the people together, he demaunded of them where Christe shoulde be borne.

5 And they saide vnto him: At Bethlehem in Iurie. For thus it is written by the prophete.

6 [Note: Miche.v.a. ] And thou Bethlehem [in] the lande of Iuda, art not the least among the princes of Iuda. [Note: Iohn.vii.g. ] For out of thee shall there come a capitain, that shal gouerne my people Israel.

7 Then Herode, when he had priuilye called the wyse men, inquired of the diligently, what tyme the starre appeared.

B

8 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and sayde: Go, and search diligently for the young childe, and when ye haue founde hym, bryng me worde agayne, that I may come, and worship hym also.

9 < When they had hearde the kyng, they departed, and loe, the starre which they sawe in the east, went before them, tyl it came & stode ouer [the place] wherin the young chylde was.

10 When they sawe the starre, they reioyced excedyngly with great ioy.

11 And went into the house, and founde the young chylde with Marie his mother, [Note: Psal.lxii.d. Esai.lx.b. ] and fell downe, and worshypped hym, and opened their treasures, and presented vnto hym gyftes, golde, and frankensence, and mirre.

12 And after they were warned of God in a dreame, that they shoulde not go agayne to Herode, they returned into their owne countrey another way. >

13 When they were departed, beholde, the Angel of the Lord appeared to Ioseph in a dreame, saying: Aryse, & take the young chylde and his mother, and flee into Egipte, and be thou there, tyll I bryng thee worde. For it wyll come to passe, that Herode shall seke ye young chylde, to destroy hym.

C

14 When he arose, he toke the young chylde and his mother, by nyght, and departed into Egipt.

15 And was there, vnto the death of Herode, that it myght be fulfilled whiche was spoken of the Lorde,

by the prophete, saying: [Note: Osee.xi.a. Nu.xxiiii.c. ] Out of Egipte haue I called my sonne.

16 Then Herode, when he sawe that he was mocked of the wyse men, was excedyng wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the chyldren that were in Bethlehe, and in all the coastes, as many as were [Page] two yere olde, or vnder, according to the tyme, which he had diligently searched out, of the wyse men.

17 Then was fulfilled that, which was spoken by Ieremie the prophete, saying.

18 In Rama was there a voyce hearde, [Note: Iere.xxxi.c ] lamentation, wepyng, & great mournyng, Rachel weping [for] her children, and woulde not be comforted, because they were not. >

D  
19 < But when Herode was dead, beholde, an Angel of the Lorde appeared to Ioseph in a dreame, in Egipt, saying.

20 Aryse, and take the young chylde and his mother, and go into the lande of Israel. [Note: Mark.i.b. Luk.iii.d. Iohn.i.d. ] For they are dead, whiche sought the young chyldes lyfe.

21 And he arose, & toke the young chylde and his mother, & came into the lande of Israel.

22 But when he hearde, that Archelaus dyd reigne in Iurie in the rowme of his father Herode, he was afrayde to go thither. Notwithstandyng, after he was warned of God in a dreame, he turned aside, into the parties of Galilee,

23 And [went and] dwelt in a citie, which is called Nazareth, that it myght be fulfilled, which was spoken by the prophetes: He shalbe called a Nazarite.

## ¶ The. iij. Chapter.

¶ 1 Iohns preachyng, office, lyfe, baptisme. 7 reprehendyng of the Pharisees, 13 and baptizyng of Christe in Iordane.

A  
1 In those dayes, came Iohn the [Note: Mark.i.a. Luk.iii.a. Iohn.iii.d. ] Baptist, preachyng in the wyldernesse of Iurie, and saying.

2 [Note: Mark.iiii.c. ] Repent, [Note: [a] This worde is, after a faulte to be wyse, with a mynde to amende. ] for the kingdome of heauen is at hande.

3 [Note: Esay.xl.a. ] For this is he, of whom it is spoken by the prophete Esayas, saying. [Note: Esay.xl.a. ] The voyce of one crying in the wyldernesse: prepare ye the way of the Lorde, make his pathes strayght.

4 This Iohn had his rayment of Camels heere, [Note: 4.Reg.18.b. ] and a girdle of a skynne about his loynes, [Note: Mark.i.a. ] his meate was locustes, and [Note: i.Reg.xiiii d ] wylde hony.



5 Then went out to hym Hierusalem, and all Iurie, and all the region rounde about Iordane,

6 And were baptized of hym in Iordane, confessyng their sinnes.

B

7 But when he sawe many of the Pharisees, and Saducees come to his baptisme, he sayde vnto them.

[Note: Luk.iii.b. ] O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the anger to come?

8 Bryng foorth therefore fruites meete for repentaunce.

9 And be not of suche mynde, that ye woulde say within your selues, we haue Abraham to [our] father. For I say vnto you, that God is able, of these stones to rayse vp chyldren vnto Abraham.

10 Euen now is the axe also put vnto the roote of the trees: therefore, [Note: Math.vii.e. Luk.iii.b. ] euery tree which bryngeth not foorth good fruite, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

C

11 I baptize you in water [Note: Mark.i.a. Luk.iii.c. Iohn.i.d. ] vnto repentaunce: But he that shall come after me, is mightier then I, whose shoes I am not worthy to beare, he shall baptize you with the holy ghost, and with fire.

12 [Note: Luk.iii.e. ] Whose fanne is in his hande, and he wyll purge his floore, and gather his wheate into [his] garner: but wyl burne vp the chaffe with vnquencheable fire.

13 Then commeth Iesus from Galilee to Iordane, vnto Iohn, [Note: Mark.i.b. ] to be baptized of hym.

14 But Iohn forbad hym, saying. I haue nede to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

15 Iesus aunsweryng, sayde vnto hym: Suffer it to be so nowe. For thus it becommeth vs, to fulfyll all righteousnes. Then he suffred hym.

16 And Iesus, when he was baptized, came strayghtwaye out of the water, and loe [Note: Mark.i.b. Luk.iii.d. Iohn.i.e. ] the heauens was open vnto hym, and (Iohn) sawe the spirite of God descendyng lyke a doue, and lyghtyng vpon hym.

17 And loe, there (came) a voyce from the heauens, saying: [Note: Esay.xlii.a. Mat.xvii.b. Mark.i.b. Luk.iii. ii.Pet.i.d ] This is my beloued sonne, in whom I am well pleased.

[Page]

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

¶ 1 Christe fasteth, is tempted. 17 he begynneth to preache. 18 he calleth Peter, Andrewe, Iames, and Iohn, and healeth all the sicke.

A

1 **Then** was Iesus [Note: Mark.i.b. Luk.iii.b. ] ledde away of the spirite into wyldernesse, to be tempted of the deuyll.

2 And when he had fasted fourtie dayes, and fourtie nightes, he was afterwarde an hungred.

3 And when the tempter came to hym, he sayde: If thou be the sonne of God, commaunde that these stones be made breade.

4 But he aunswered, and sayde, it is written: [Note: Deut.viii.a. Luk.iii.a. Sap.xvi.c. ] Man shall not lyue by breade only, but by euery worde that procedeth out of the mouth of God.

5 Then the deuyll taketh hym vp into the holy citie, and setteth hym on a pinnacle of the temple,

6 And saith vnto hym: If thou be the sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe. For it is written: [Note: Psal.xcii.e. ] He shall geue his Angels charge ouer thee, & with their handes they shall lyft thee vp, lest at any tyme thou dashe thy foote agaynst a stone.

7 And Iesus sayde to hym. It is written agayne: [Note: Deut.vi.c. Luk.iii.b. ] Thou shalt not tempt the Lorde thy God.

B

8 Agayne, the deuyll taketh hym vp, into an exceedyng hye mountayne, and sheweth hym all the kyngdomes of the worlde, and the glorie of them,

9 And sayth vnto hym: All these wyll I geue thee, yf thou wylt fall downe, and worship me.

10 The sayth Iesus vnto hym: Auoyde Sathan. For it is written: [Note: Deut.vi.c. and .x.d. Luk.iii.b. i.Reg.vii.a. ] Thou shalt worship the Lorde thy God, and hym only shalt thou serue.

11 Then the deuyll leaueth him, and beholde, [Note: Mark.i.b. ] the Angels came, and ministred vnto hym. >

12 When Iesus had hearde [Note: Mark.i.b. ] that Iohn was [Note: [a] That is, cast in pryson. ] delyuered vp, he departed into Galilee,

13 And left Nazareth, and went & dwelt in Capernaum, whiche is (a citie) vpon the sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim.

14 That it myght be fulfilled, whiche was spoken by Esayas the prophete, saying:

15 [Note: Esay.ix a. ] The lande of Zabulon, & Nephthalim, (by) the way of the sea beyonde Iordane, Galilee of the Gentiles.

C

16 The people, which sate in darknesse, sawe great lyght: And to them whiche sate in the region and shadowe of death, lyght is sprong vp.

17 From that tyme, Iesus began to [Note: Math.iii.a. Mark.i.a. Math.i.b. Math.iii.a. Mark.i.b. ] preache, and to saye: [Note: Math.iii.a. Mark.i.a. Math.i.b. Math.iii.a. Mark.i.b. ] Repent, for the kyngdome of heauen is at hande.

&gt;

18 < And Iesus, walkyng by the sea of Galilee, sawe two brethren, Simon (which was) called Peter, and Andrewe his brother, castyng a nette into the sea, (for they were fysshers.)

19 And he saith vnto them: Folowe me, and I wyl make you [Note: Iere.xvi.d. Eze.xlvii.b ] fysshers of men.

20 And they strayghtwaye lefte their nettes, and folowed hym.

D

21 And when he was gone foorth from thence, he sawe other two brethren, Iames, the sonne of Zebedee, & Iohn his brother, in the shippe with Zebedee their father, mendyng their nettes, and he called them.

22 And they immediatly, [Note: Luk.v.b. ] left the shippe and their father, and folowed hym. >

23 < And Iesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preachyng the Gospell of the kingdome, and healyng all maner of sicknesse, and all maner of disease among the people.

24 And his fame spread abrode, throughout all Syria: and they brought vnto hym all sicke people, that were taken with diuers diseases, and grypynges, and them that were possessed with deuyls, and those which were lunaticke, and those that had the paulsie, and he healed them.

25 [Note: Mark.iii.d. ] And there folowed him great multitudes of people, from Galilee, and from the [Note: [b] A cuntry conteyning ten cities ] ten cities, and from Hierusalem, and from Iurie, and from the regions (that lye) beyonde Iordane.

[Page]

## The .v. Chapter.

¶ In this Chapter, and in the two next folowyng, is conteyned the most excellent and louyng Sermon of Christe, in the mount, Which Sermon, is the very key, that openeth the vnderstandyng into the lawe. In this fifth Chapter specially, 3 he preacheth of the eyght beatitudes, or blessynges, 21 of manslaughter, 22 wrath, and anger, 27 of adultrie, 33 of swearyng, 39 of sufferyng wrong, 44 and of loue, euen towarde a mans enemies.

A

1 **When** he saw the multitude, he went vp into a mountayne: & when he was set, his disciples came to hym.

2 And he opened his mouth, & taught them, saying.

3 [Note: Luke.vi.d. ] Blessed (are) the poore in spirite: for theirs is the kyngdome of heauen.

4 [Note: Esay.lxvi.a. and .lxvii.d. ] Blessed (are) they that mourne: for they shalbe comforted.

5 Blessed (are) the meke: for they shall inherite the earth.

6 Blessed (are) they, which do [Note: Ier.xxxi.c. ] hunger and thirste (after) righteousnes: for they shalbe satisfied.

7 Blessed (are) the mercyfull: for they shall obteyne mercy.

8 Blessed (are) the pure in heart: for they shall see God.

9 Blessed (are) the peace makers: for they shalbe called the chyldren of God.

B  
10 Blessed (are) they which suffer persecution for righteousnes sake: for theirs is the kyngdome of heauen.

11 [Note: i.Pet.ii.c. iii.c.iiii.c. ] Blessed are ye, whe (men) reuyle you, and persecute (you) and, lying, shall say all maner of euyll saying agaynst you, for my sake.

12 [Note: Actes.v.g. ] Reioyce, and be glad: for great is your rewarde in heauen. > For so persecuted they the prophetes, whiche were before you.

13 < Ye are the salt of the earth. [Note: Mark.ix.g. Luk.iii. g. Leuit.ii.e. ] But yf the salt become vnsauery, where in shall it be salted? It is thencefoorth good for nothing, but to be caste out, and to be troden vnder foote of men.

14 Ye are the lyght of the worlde. A citie that is set on an hyll, can not be hyd.

15 [Note: Mark.iii.b. Luk.viii.c. and .xi.c. ] Neyther do men lyght a candell, and put it vnder a busshell: but on a candelsticke, and it geueth lyght vnto all that are in the house.

16 Let your lyght so shyne before men, [Note: i.Pet.ii.c. ] that they may see your good workes, and glorifie your father, whiche is in heauen.

C  
17 Thynke not that I am come to destroy the lawe, or the prophetes. I am not come to destroy, but [Note: Math.i.d. and .ii.c. ] to fulfyll.

18 For truely I say vnto you, [Note: Luk.xvi. d. Esay.xl.c. ] tyll heauen and earth passe, one iotte, or one title of the lawe shall not scape, tyll all be fulfyllled.

19 Whosoeuer therefore breaketh one [Note: Iacob.ii.b. Eze.xviii.b. ] of these least commaundementes, and teacheth men so, he shalbe called the leaste in the kyngdome of heauen. But who so euer doeth, and teacheth (so) the same shalbe called great in the kyngdome of heauen.

20 For I say vnto you: except your righteousnes, excede the righteousnes of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall not enter into the kyngdome of heauen.

D  
21 Ye haue hearde, that it was sayde to them of the olde tyme, [Note: Exod.xx.c. Luk.xvii.d. Deut.v.b. ] thou

shalt not kyll: who so euer kylleth, shalbe in daunger of iudgement.

22 But I say vnto you, that who so euer is angry with his brother, vnaduisedly, shalbe in daunger of iudgement. And who so euer shall say vnto his brother, racha, shalbe in daunger of a counsell: But, whosoeuer shall saye (thou) foole, shalbe in daunger of hell fire.

23 Therefore, if thou bring thy gyft to the aulter, and there remembrest, that thy brother hath ought agaynst thee:

24 Leauē there thy gyft, before the aulter, [Note: Iob.xlii.b. ] and go thy way, first and be reconciled to thy brother: and then, come and offer thy gyft. >

25 [Note: Luk.xii.g. ] < Agree with thyne aduersarie quicklye, whyles thou art in the waye with him: lest at any tyme the aduersarie deliuer thee to the iudge, and the iudge deliuer thee to the minister, and then thou be cast into pryson.

26 Ueryly I say vnto thee, thou shalt not come out thence, tyll thou hast payde the vtmost farthyng.

27 Ye haue hearde, that it was sayde vnto them of olde tyme: [Note: Exod.xx.c. Rom.xiii.c. Eccle.xli.c. ] Thou shalt not commit adultry.

28 But I say vnto you, [Note: Iob.xxxi.a ] that whosoeuer [Page] loketh on a woman, to luste after her, hath committed adultry with her alreedy, in his heart.

E

29 [Note: Mark.ix.g. ] If thy ryght eye offende thee, plucke it out, and cast it from thee. For better it is vnto thee, that one of thy members perishe, the that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

30 And yf thy ryght hande offende thee, cut it of, and cast it from thee. For better it is vnto thee, that one of thy members perishe, then that all thy body shoulde be cast into hell. >

31 It is saide: whosoeuer putteth away his wyfe, [Note: Deu.xxiii.a ] let hym geue her a wrytyng of diuorcement.

32 [Note: Math.xix.a Mark.x.b. ] But I say vnto you, that whosoeuer doeth put away his wyfe, except it be for fornication, causeth her to commit adultry. And whosoeuer maryeth her that is diuorced, committeth adultry.

F

33 Agayne, ye haue hearde that it was sayde vnto them of olde tyme: [Note: Luk.xix.c. ] Thou shalt not forswear thy selfe, but shalt perfourme vnto the Lorde thine othes.

34 [Note: Iacob.v.d. ] But, I say vnto you: Swear not at all, neither by heauen, [Note: Esay.lxvi.a. Mat.xxiii.c ] for it is gods seate,

35 Nor by the earth, for it is his footestoole, neither by Hierusalem, for it is the citie of the great kyng.

36 Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one heere whyte or blacke.

37 But let your communication be yea, yea, nay nay. For whatsoever is more then these, commeth of euyll.

38 Ye haue hearde, that it is sayde, [Note: Exod.xxi.c Deut.xix.d Leuit.24.d. Luk.vi.d. ] an eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.

39 But, I say vnto you, that ye resist not euyll. But, whosoever geueth thee a blowe on thy right cheeke, turne to him the other also.

40 And yf any man wyll sue thee at the lawe, and take away thy coate, let him haue thy cloke also.

G

41 And whosoever wyll compell thee to go a myle, go with hym twayne.

42 Geue to hym that asketh thee: & from hym that woulde borowe of thee, turne not thou away.

43 Ye haue heard, that it is saide: [Note: Leuit.xix.d Mat.xxii.d ] Thou shalt loue thy neyghbour, & hate thyne enemye.

44 But I saye vnto you, loue your enemies, [Note: Rom.xii.c. ] blesse them that curse you, [Note: Leuit.xix.d ] do good to them that hate you, pray for the which hurt you, and persecute you:

45 That ye may be the chyldren of your father, which is in heauen. For he maketh his sonne to aryse on the euyll, and on the good, and sendeth rayne on the iust, and on the vniust.

46 For [Note: Luk.vi.a. ] yf ye loue them which loue you, what rewarde haue ye? Do not the publicans also euen the same?

47 And yf ye salute or greete your brethre only, what singuler thyng do ye? Do not also the publicans lykewyse?

48 [Note: Leuit.xix.c ] Ye shall therefore be perfecte, euen as your father, which is in heauen, is perfecte.

## ¶ The .vj. Chapter.

¶ 1 Of almes, 5 prayer, 16 and fastyng. 19 He forbyddeth the carefull sekyng of worldly thynges.

A

1 **Take** heede to your almes, that ye geue it not in the sight of men, to the intende that ye woulde be sene of the, or els ye haue no rewarde of your father, which is in heauen.

2 Therefore, when thou geuest thyne almes, thou shalt not make a trumpet to be blowen before thee, as hypocrites do, in the synagogues, & in the streates, yt they might be esteemed of me. Uerily I say vnto

you, they haue their reward.

3 But when thou doest [thyne] almes, let not thy left hande knowe, what thy ryght hande doeth,

4 That thyne almes may be in secrete: And thy father, which seeth in secrete, shall rewarde thee openly. >  
[Page]

5 And when thou prayest, [Note: 2.Reg.15.c. Esa.xxix.d. ] thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are. For they loue to stande, praying in the synagogues, and in the corners of the streates, that they may be sene of men. Ueryly I say vnto you, they haue theyr rewarde.

6 But when thou prayest, [Note: ii.Reg.iiii.f. ] enter into thy chaumber, and when thou hast shut thy dore, pray to thy father, which is in secrete, and thy father which seeth in secrete, shall rewarde thee openly.  
B

7 But when ye pray, [Note: Esay.i.d. ] babble not much, as the heathen do. For they thynke [it wyl come to passe,] that they shalbe heard, for theyr much bablinges sake.

8 Be not ye therfore lyke vnto them. [Note: Rom viii.d. ] For your father knoweth, what thynges ye haue nede of, before ye aske of hym.

9 After this maner therfore pray ye. [Note: Luke.xi.a. ] O our father, which art in heauen, halowed be thy name.

10 Let thy kyngdome come. Thy wyll be done, as well in earth, as it is in heauen.

11 Geue vs this day our dayly breade.

12 And forgeue vs our dettes, as we forgeue our detters.

13 And leade vs not into temptation, but delyuer vs from euyll. For thyne is the kyngdome, and the power, and the glory, for euer. Amen.

14 For, [Note: Mat.xviii.b Mark.xi.d. ] yf ye forgeue men theyr trespasses, your heauenly father shall also forgeue you.

15 But, yf ye forgeue not men theyr trespasses: no more shall your father, forgeue [you] your trespasses.  
C

16 Moreouer, [Note: Esay.lvii.a. Math.ix.d. Iere.xvii.b. ] when ye fast, be not of an heauy countenance, as hypocrites are. For they disfigure theyr faces, that they myght appeare vnto men, to fast. Ueryly I say vnto you, they haue theyr rewarde.

17 But thou, when thou fastest, annoynt thyne head, and washe thy face:

18 That thou appeare not vnto men, to fast: but vnto thy father, which is in secrete, and thy father, which seeth in secrete, shall rewarde thee openly.

19 Hoorde not vp for your selues, treasures vpon earth, where the moth and rust doth corrupt, and where

theeues breake through, and steale.

20 [Note: Luk.xii.d. Eccl.xxii.b ] But laye vp for you, treasures in heauen, where neyther moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where theeues do not breake through, nor steale.

21 For, where your treasure is, there wyll your heart be also.

22 [Note: Luk.xi.c. ] The lyght of the body, is the eye. Wherefore, yf thyne eye be single, all thy body shalbe full of lyght.

23 But and yf thyne eye be wicked, all thy body shalbe ful of darknesse. Wherefore, yf the lyght that is in thee, be darknesse, howe great is that darknesse?

D

24 < [Note: Luk.xvi.a ] No man can serue two maisters. For either he shall hate the one, & loue the other: or els leane to the one, and dispise the other. Ye can not serue God, and [Note: [a] In the Sirian tounge it signifieth money, and lucre. ] mammon.

25 Therefore I say vnto you, [Note: Luk.xii.c. Psal.lv.d. i.Pet.v.c. ] be not carefull for your lyfe, what ye shall eate, or drynke: nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the lyfe more worth then meate? & the body then rayment?

26 Beholde the fowles of the ayre: For they sowe not, neither do they reape, nor cary into the barnes: yet your heauenly father feedeth them. Are ye not much better then they?

27 [Note: Luke.xii.d. ] Which of you, by takyng of carefull thought, can adde one cubite vnto his stature?

28 And why care ye for rayment? Learne of the Lylies of the fielde, howe they growe. They weery not [them selues] with labour, neither [do they] spinne:

29 And yet I say vnto you, that euen Solomon in all his royaltie, was not arayed lyke one of these.

30 Wherefore, yf God so clothe the grasse of the fielde, which though it stande to day, is to morowe cast into the ouen: shall he not much more [do] the same for you, O ye of litle fayth?

31 Therefore take no thought, saying: What shall we eate? or, what shall we drynke? or, wherewith shall we be clothed?

32 (For after all these thynges, do the Gentiles seke:) for your heauenly father knoweth, that ye haue nede of all these thynges.

33 But rather, seke ye first the kyngdome of God, and his ryghteousnesse, and all these thynges shalbe ministred vnto you.

34 Care not then for the morowe: for the morowe shall care for it selfe. [Note: [b] That is, the preset day hath enough of his owne grief or affliction. Hier. ] Sufficient vnto the day, is the euyll therof.



## ¶ The .vij. Chapter.

¶ 1 He forbyddeth foolyshe and rashe iudgement, 5 reproueth hypocrisie, 7 exhorteth vnto prayer, 13 & to enter in at the strayte gate, 15 warneth to beware of false prophetes, 24 and wyllleth the hearers of his worde, to be doers of the same.

A

1 **Iudge** [Note: Luk.vi.f. ] not, that ye be not iudged.

2 [Note: Rom.ii.a. ] For with what iudgement ye iudge, ye shalbe iudged: [Note: Luk.vi.f. ] And with what measure ye meate, it shalbe measured to you agayne.

3 [Note: Luk.vi.f. ] Why seest thou a mote in thy brothers eye, but perceiuest not the beame that is in thyne owne eye?

4 Or, howe sayest thou to thy brother: suffer me, I wyll plucke out a mote out of thyne eye: and beholde, a beame is in thyne owne eye?

5 Thou hypocrite, first caste out the beame out of thine owne eye: and then shalt thou see clearely, to plucke out the mote out of thy brothers eye.

6 Geue not that which is holy, vnto dogges, neyther caste ye your pearles before swyne, lest they treade them vnder their feete, and turning agayne, all to rent you.

B

7 Aske, and it shalbe geuen you: [Note: Ier.xxix.c. Iohn.xvi.f. Luk.xi.b. ] seke, and ye shall fynde: knocke, and it shalbe opened vnto you.

8 For he that asketh, receaueth: and he that seketh, fyndeth: and to hym that knocketh, it shalbe opened.

9 Is there any among you, which, yf his sonne aske hym bread, wyll geue hym a stone?

10 Or yf he aske fyshe, wyll he geue hym a serpent?

11 If ye then, beyng euyll, knowe to geue your chyldren good gyftes: howe much more shall your father, which is in heauen, geue good thynges, to them that aske hym?

12 Therefore all thynges, [Note: Eccl.xxxi b Toby.iiii.c. Luk.vi.c. ] whatsoever ye woulde that men shoulde do to you, do ye euen so to them: For this is the lawe, and the prophetes.

13 [Note: Luk.xiii.c. ] Enter in at the strayte gate. For wyde is the gate, and brode is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in therat.

14 Because, strayte is the gate, and narowe is the way, which leadeth vnto lyfe, and fewe there be that fynde it.

15 < [Note: Deut.xiii.a. i.Iohn.i.a. ] Beware of false prophetes, which come to you in sheepes clothyng: but inwardly they are rauenyng woolfes.

C  
16 Ye shall knowe them by theyr fruite, [Note: Luk.vi.g. ] Do men gather grapes of thornes? or fygges of thystles?

17 Euen so, euery good tree, bryngeth foorth good fruite: But a corrupt tree, bryngeth foorth euyll fruite.

18 [Note: Math.xii.c. ] A good tree, can not bryng foorth bad fruite: neither can a bad tree, bryng foorth good fruite.

19 [Note: Math.iii.d. Luk.iii.b. ] Euery tree that bryngeth not foorth good fruite, is hewen downe, and cast into the fyre.

20 Wherefore, by theyr fruite, ye shall knowe them.

21 Not euery one, that sayeth vnto me [Note: Mat.xxv.b Luk.vi.g. and .xiii.c. ] Lorde, Lorde, shall enter into the kyngdome of heauen: but he that doeth the wyll of my father, which is in heauen.

D  
22 Many wyll say to me in that day, Lorde Lorde, haue we not prophesied thorowe thy name? [Note: Act.xix.c ] and thorowe thy name haue cast out deuyls? & done many great workes thorowe thy name?

23 And then wyll I confesse vnto them, I neuer knewe you: [Note: Psal.vi.b. Luk.xiii.d. ] Depart from me, ye that worke iniquitie.

24 Therefore, whosoeuer heareth of me these sayinges, and doeth the same, I wyll lyken hym vnto a wyse man, which [Note: Luk.vi.g. ] buylt his house vpon a rocke:

25 And the rayne descended, and the fluddes came, and the wyndes blewe, and beat vpon that house, and it fell not, because it was grounded on a rocke.

26 And euery one that heareth of me these sayinges, [Note: Iacob.i.b. ] and doeth them not, shalbe lykened vnto a foolyshe man, which buylt his house vpon the sande: [Note: Eze.xiii.b. ]

27 And the rayne descended, and the fluddes came, and the wyndes blewe, and beat vpon that house, and it fell, and great was the fall of it.

28 And it came to passe, that when Iesus had ended these sayinges, the people were astonied at his doctrine.

29 [Note: Mark.i.c. Luk.iiii.c. ] For he taught them, as one hauyng power, and not as the Scribes.

[Page]

## The .viiij. Chapter.

¶ 2 Christe clenseth the leper, 5 healeth the captaynes seruaunt, and many other diseases, 14 helpeth Peters mother in lawe, 24 stylleth the sea, and the wynde, 28 and dryueth the deuyls out of the possessed, into the swyne.

A

1 **When** he was come downe fro the mountayne, great multitudes folowed hym.

2 And beholde, [Note: Luke.v.c. Mark.i.d. ] there came a leper, and worshipped hym, saying: Lorde, yf thou wylt, thou canst make me cleane.

3 And Iesus put fourth his hande, and touched hym, saying: I wyll, be thou cleane. And immediatlye his leprosie was censed.

4 And Iesus sayth vnto hym: See thou tell no man, [Note: Leuit.xiii.a ] but go, [and] shewe thy selfe to the priest, and offer the gift that Moyses commaunded, for a witnes vnto them. >

5 < And when Iesus was entred [Note: Luke.vii.a. Iohn.iii.g. ] into Capernaum, there came vnto hym a Centurion, besechyng hym.

6 And saying: Lorde, my seruaunt lyeth at home sicke of the paulsie, greeuously payned.

7 And Iesus sayth. When I come, I wyll heale hym.

8 The Centurion aunswered, & sayde: Lorde, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come vnder my roofe: but [Note: Psal.cvii.c. ] speake the worde only, & my seruaunt shalbe healed.

B

9 For I also my selfe am vnder authoritie, and haue souldiers vnder me: and I say to this man go, and he goeth: and to another, come, and he commeth: and to my seruaunt, do this, and he doth it.

10 When Iesus hearde [him], he marueyled, & sayde to them that folowed [him]: Ueryly I say vnto you, I haue not founde so great fayth in Israel.

11 I say vnto you, that [Note: Luke.xiii.f. Esay.xli.g. ] many shall come from the east and west, and shall rest with Abraham, and Isaac, & Iacob, in the kyngdome of heauen.

12 But the chylde of the kyngdome shalbe caste out, into vtter darcknesse: there shalbe wepyng, and gnashyng of teeth.

13 And Iesus sayde vnto the Centurion: Go thy way, and as thou hast beleued, so be it vnto thee. And his seruaunt was healed, in the selfe same houre.

14 [Note: Mark.i.c. Luke.iiii.f. ] And when Iesus was come into Peters house, he sawe his wyues mother

layed, and sicke of a feuer.

15 And he touched her hande, and the feuer left her, and she arose, and ministred vnto them.

16 When the euen was come, they brought vnto hym many, that were possessed with deuyls, and he cast out the spirites with a worde, and healed all that were sicke.

17 That it myght be fulfilled, which was spoken by Esayas the prophete, saying: [Note: Esay.liiii.b. i.Pet.ii.d. ] He toke on hym our infirmities, and bare [our] sicknesses.

C

18 When Iesus sawe great multitudes about hym, he commaunded that they shoulde go ouer the water.

19 And a certayne Scribe came, & sayde vnto hym: [Note: Luke.ix.g. ] Maister, I wyll folowe thee, whyther soeuer thou goest.

20 And Iesus sayth vnto hym. The foxes haue holes, and the birdes of the ayre haue nestes: but the sonne of man, hath not where to rest his head.

21 And another, of the number of his disciples, sayde vnto hym: [Note: Luke.ix.g. ] Lorde, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

22 But Iesus sayde vnto hym: Folowe me, and let the dead bury theyr dead.

23 < And when he entred into a shippe, his disciples folowed hym:

24 And beholde, [Note: Mark.iiii.b. Luke.viii.c. ] there arose a great tempest in the sea, [in so much] that the shippe was couered with waues: but he was a slepe.

25 And his disciples came to hym, and awoke hym, saying: Lorde saue vs, we peryshe.

26 And he sayth vnto them: Why are ye fearefull, O ye of litle fayth? Then he arose, [Note: Iob.xxvi.d Psal.cvii.c. ] and rebuked the windes, and the sea: and there folowed a great calme.

D

27 But the men marueyled, saying: What maner of man is this, that both wyndes and sea obey hym? >

28 [Note: Mark.v.a. Luk.viii.d. ] And when he was come to the other syde, into the countrey of the Gergesenes, there met hym two, possessed with deuyls, which came out of the graues, and were very fierce, so that no [Page] man myght go by that way.

29 And beholde, they cryed out, saying: [Note: Math.v.a. Luk.viii.d. ii.Cor.vi.c. ] O Iesu, thou sonne of God, [Note: Math.v.a. Luk.viii.d. ii.Cor.vi.c. ] what haue we to do with thee? Art thou come hyther, to torment vs before the tyme?

30 And there was, a good way of from them, [Note: Mark.viii.d ] a hearde of many swyne, feedyng.

31 So, the deuyls besought hym, saying: Yf thou cast vs out, suffer vs to go away into the hearde of

swyne.

32 And he sayde vnto them, go. Then went they out, and departed into the hearde of swyne: And beholde, ye whole hearde of swyne russhed headlong into the sea, and peryshed in the waters.

33 Then they that kept them, fledde, and went theyr wayes into the citie, and tolde euey thyng, and what was done of the possessed with the deuyls.

34 And beholde, the whole citie came out to meete Iesus: and when they sawe hym, [Note: Act.xvi.g. ] they besought hym, that he woulde depart out of theyr coastes.

## ¶ The .ix. Chapter.

¶ 2 He healeth the paulsie. 9 Calleth Mattheue from the custome. 11 Aunswereth for his disciples. 22 Healeth the woman of the bloody issue. 25 Helpeth Iairus daughter. 29 Geueth two blynde men theyr syght. 33 Maketh a dumbe man to speake, and dryueth out a deuyll.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **And** he entred into a shippe, & passed ouer, & came into his owne citie.

2 And beholde, [Note: Mark.ii.a. Luke.v.d. ] they brought to him a man, sicke of the paulsie, lying in a bedde. And when Iesus sawe the fayth of them, he sayde vnto the sicke of the paulsie: Sonne, be of good cheare, thy sinnes be forgeuen thee.

3 And beholde, certayne of the Scribes sayde, within them selues: This man blasphemeth.

4 And whe Iesus saw their thoughtes, he sayde: Wherefore thynke ye euyll in your heartes?

5 Whether is easier to say, thy sinnes be forgeuen thee? Or to say, aryse and walke?

6 But that ye may knowe, that the sonne of man hath power to forgeue sinnes in earth (then sayde he to the sicke of the paulsie) [Note: Actes.iii.b. and .ix.f. Mark.ii.b. Luke.v.c. Iohn.v.b. ] Aryse, take vp thy bedde, and go vnto thyne house.

7 And he arose, and departed to his house.

8 But when the multitudes sawe it, they marueyled, & glorified God, which had geuen such power vnto men. >

9 < And as Iesus passed foorth from thence, he sawe a man, named Mattheue, syttyng at the receipte of custome: & he sayth vnto hym, folowe me. And he arose, and folowed hym.

10 And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at meate in his house, beholde, many publicans also and sinners

came, and sate downe with Iesus and his disciples.

B

11 And when the Pharisees sawe it, they sayde vnto his disciples: Why eateth your maister with publicans and sinners?

12 But when Iesus hearde that, he sayde vnto them: They that be whole, nede not the phisition, but they that are sicke.

13 [Note: Osee.vi.c. Math.xii.a. ] Go ye, and learne what that meaneth, I wyll [haue] mercie, and not sacrifice: for I am not come, to call the righteous, but sinners to repentaunce. >

14 < Then came the disciples of Iohn vnto hym, saying: [Note: Math.xi.b. Mark.ii.c. Luke.v.f. ] Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?

15 And Iesus sayde vnto them: Can the chyldren [Note: [a] That is, ministers attendyng in the bride chamber ] of the bryde chaumber mourne, as long as the brydegrome is with them? But the dayes wyll come, when the brydegrome shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.

16 No man putteth a peece of newe [Note: [b] Or, rawe cloth. ] cloth in an olde garment: for then, the peece taketh away [somyng] from the garment, and the rent is made worse.

17 Neither do men put newe wine into olde vessels: els, the vessels breake, and the wyne runneth out, and the vessels peryshe: But they put newe wyne, into newe vessels, and both are preserued together. >

C

18 < Whyle he spake these thynges vnto them, [Note: Marke.v.c. Luke.viii.f. ] beholde, there came a certayne ruler, and worshypped hym, saying: [Page] My daughter is euen nowe dead, but come and lay thy hande vpon her, and she shall lyue.

19 And Iesus arose, and folowed hym, and [so dyd] his disciples.

20 ( [Note: Mark.v.c. Luk.viii.f. Leuit.xv.c ] And beholde, a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood twelue yeres, came behynde hym, and touched the hemme of his vesture.

21 For she sayde within her selfe: If I may touche but euen his vesture only, I shalbe safe.

22 But Iesus turned hym about, and when he sawe her, he saide: Daughter be of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee safe. And the woman was made whole from that same houre.) >

23 [Note: Mark.v.d. Luk.viii.g. ] And, when Iesus came into the rulers house, and sawe the minstrels, and the people, makyng a noyse,

24 He sayde vnto them: Geue place, for the maide is not dead, [Note: Iohn.xi.b. ] but slepeth. And they laughed hym to scorne.

25 But when the people were put foorth, he went in, and toke her by the hande, and the mayde arose.

26 And the fame [of this] went abrode into all that lande.

D

27 And when Iesus departed thence, two blynde men folowed hym, crying, and saying: O thou sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on vs.

28 And whe he was come into the house, the blynde came to hym. And Iesus sayth vnto them: Beleue ye that I am able to do this? They sayde vnto hym, yea Lorde.

29 Then touched he their eyes, saying: [Note: Mat.viii.b. ] Accordyng to your fayth, be it vnto you.

30 And their eyes were opened. And Iesus straytly charged them, saying: see that no man knowe [of it.]

31 But they, when they were departed, spread abrode his name in all that lande.

32 As they went out, beholde, [Note: Mark.vii.d. Luk.xi.b. ] they brought to him a dumbe man, possessed with a deuyll.

33 And when the deuyll was cast out, the dumbe spake, and the multitudes marueyled, saying, that it was neuer so seene in Israel.

34 But the Pharisees sayde: [Note: Math.xii.b. Mark.iii.b. Luk.xi.b. ] He casteth out deuils, through the prince of deuils.

35 [Note: Mark.vi.b. ] And Iesus went about all cities and townes, teachyng in their synagogues, and preachyng the Gospell of the kyngdome, and healyng euery sicknesse, and euery disease among the people.

36 But when he sawe the multitudes, [Note: Mark.vi.d. ] he was moued with compassion on them, because they were destitute, and scattered abrode, euen as sheepe, hauing no shepheard.

37 Then sayth he vnto his disciples: the [Note: Luk.x.a. ] haruest truely is plenteous, but the labourers are fewe.

38 Pray [ye] therefore the lorde of the haruest, that he wyl thrust fourth labourers into the haruest.

## The .x. Chapter.

¶ 5 Christe sendeth out his twelue Apostles, to preache in Iurie. 7 He geueth them charge, teacheth them, and comforteth them agaynst persecution and trouble.

A

1 **And** when he had called his [Note: Mark.vi.b. Luk.vi.d. ] twelue disciples [vnto hym] he gaue them power agaynst vncleane spirites, to cast them out, and to heale all maner of sicknesse, and all maner of disease.

2 The names of the twelue Apostles are these. The first, Simon, whiche is called Peter, and Andrewe his brother, Iames, the [sonne] of Zebedee, & Iohn his brother,

3 Philip, & Bartholomewe, Thomas and Matthewe, which [had ben] a Publicane, Iames, ye [sonne] of Alphee, & Lebbeus, whose surname was Taddeus,

4 Simon [the] Cananite, & Iudas Iscariot, which also betrayed hym.

5 [Note: Mark.vi.b. ] Iesus sent foorth these twelue, who he comaunded, saying. Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into the citie of the Samaritanes enter ye not.

6 But go rather to the lost sheepe of the house of Israel.

7 As ye go, preache, saying: The kyngdome of heauen is at hande.

B

8 Heale the sicke, cleanse ye lepers, rayse the dead, cast out deuyls. [Note: Actes.viii.d. ] Freely ye haue receaued, freely geue.

[Page]

9 [Note: Mark.vi.b. Luk.ix.a. ] Possesse not golde, nor syluer, nor brasse in your purses,

10 Nor yet scrippe, towardes your iourney, neither two coates, neither shoes, nor yet a staffe. [Note: i.Tim.v.c. ] For the workman is worthy of his meate.

11 But to whatsoeuer citie or towne ye shall come, inquire who is worthy in it, and [Note: [a] Shift not your lodgyng vntyll ye go out of ye citie. ] there abyde, tyll ye go thence.

12 [Note: Lu.ix.a.x.a ] And when ye come into an house, salute the same.

13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come vpon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace returne to you again.

14 And whosoever shal not receaue you, nor wyll heare your preachyng: when ye depart out of that house, or that citie, [Note: Mar.vi.b. Act.xiii.g. ] shake of the dust of your feete.

15 Ueryly I say vnto you, it shalbe easier for the lande of the Sodomites and Gomorreans, in the day of iudgement, then for that citie.

16 [Note: Luk.x.a. ] Beholde, I sende you foorth, as sheepe in the midst of woolfes. Be ye therefore wyse as serpentis, and harmelesse as doves.

17 [Note: Mar.xiii.d. Luk.xii.c. Iohn.xvi.b ] But beware of men. For they shall delyuer you vp to the counsels, and shal scourge you in their synagogues.

18 And ye shalbe brought to the head rulers, and kynges, for my sake, in witnesse to them, and to the



## Gentiles.

C

19 But [Note: Mar.xiii.b. Luk.xii a. ] whe they delyuer you vp, take ye no thought, how or what ye shal speake. [Note: Exod.iiii.d. ] For it shalbe geuen you, euen in that same houre, what ye shall speake.

20 For it is not ye that speake, but ye spirite of your father, which speaketh in you.

21 [Note: Mich.vii.b. ] The brother shall delyuer vp the brother to death, and the father the sonne, & the chyldren shall ryse agaynst their fathers, and mothers, and shall put them to death.

22 And ye shalbe hated of all men, for my names sake: [Note: Math.24.a. ] but he that endureth to the ende, shalbe saued.

23 But, [Note: Math.ii.c. Act.viii.a. and .xiii.a. ] when they persecute you in this citie, flee ye into another. For verily I say vnto you, ye shall not ende all the cities of Israel, tyll the sonne of man be come.

24 [Note: Luk.vi.f. ] The disciple is not aboute the maister, nor the seruaunt aboute his lorde.

25 It is enough for the disciple, that he be as his maister is: and that the seruaunt, be as his lorde is. If they haue called the lorde of the house Beelzebub: howe much more shall they call them of his householde so?

26 Feare them not therfore. [Note: Mat.iii.c Luk.viii.c. and.xii.a. ] For there is nothing close, that shal not be opened: & nothing hyd, that shall not be knowen.

27 What I tell you in darknesse, that speake ye in lyght: And what ye heare in the eare, that preach ye on the houses.

28 [Note: Luk.xii.a. ] And feare ye not them, which kyll the body, but are not able to kyll the soule. But rather feare hym, which is able to destroy both soule and body in hell.

29 Are not two litle sparowes solde for a farthyng? And one of the shall not light on the grounde, without your father.

30 Yea, euen all the heeres of your head are numbred.

31 Feare ye not therfore, ye are of more value then many sparowes.

D

32 [Note: Mat.viii.d. Luk.ix.c. and .xii.b. ] Euery one therfore, that shall confesse me before men, hym wyll I confesse also, before my father, which is in heaues.

33 But whosoeuer shall denye me before men, hym wyll I also denye, before my father, which is in heauens.

34 Thinke not [Note: Luk.xii.g. ] that I am come to sende peace into the earth. I came not to sende peace, but a sworde.

35 For I am come to set a man at varyaunce [Note: Mich.vii.a. ] agaynst his father, & the daughter agaynst her mother, and the daughter in lawe agaynst her mother in lawe.

36 And a mans foes [shalbe] they of his owne householde.

37 [Note: Luk.xiiii.a. ] He that loueth father or mother, more then me, is not worthy of me. And he that loueth sonne or daughter, more the me, is not worthy of me.

38 [Note: Mat.xvi.d. Mark.vii.d Luk.xii.b. ] And he that taketh not his crosse, & foloweth me, is not worthy of me.

39 [Note: [b] That is, he that wyll saue his lyfe. ] [Note: Mat.xvi.d. Mark.vii.d Luk.xii.b. ] He that findeth his life, shall lose it: and he that loseth his lyfe, for my sake, shall fynde it.

40 [Note: Luk.ix.c. Iohn.xii.c. ] He that receaueth you, receaueth me: & he that receaueth me, receaueth hym that sent me.

41 He that [Note: 3.Reg.18.b.c. ] receaueth a prophete, in the name of a prophete, shall receaue a prophetes rewarde. And he that receaueth a ryghteous man, in the name of a ryghteous man, shall receaue a ryghteous mans rewarde.

42 [Note: Mar.ix.f. ] And whosoeuer shall geue vnto one of these litle ones, to drynke, a cuppe of colde water only, in the name of a disciple, veryly I say vnto you, he shall not lose his rewarde.

[Page]

## The .xi. Chapter.

1 Christe preacheth. 2 Iohn Baptist sendeth his disciples vnto him. 7 Christes testimonie concernyng Iohn. 18 The opinion of the people concernyng Christe and Iohn 20 Christe vpbraydeth the vnthanfull cities. 25 The Gospell is reuealed to the simple. 28 They that labour and are laden. 29 Christes yoke.

A

1 **And** it came to passe, that when Iesus had made an ende of commaundyng his twelue disciples, he departed thence to teache and to preache in their cities.

2 < When Iohn being in prison heard the workes of Christe, he sent two of his disciples, and sayde vnto him:

3 Art thou he that shoulde come? or do we loke for another?

4 Iesus aunswered and sayd vnto them: Go and shewe Iohn agayne what ye haue hearde and seene.

5 [Note: Esa 35.b. ] The blinde receaue their sight, the halt do walke, the lepers are cleansed, and the deafe

heare, the dead are raised vp, and the poore [Note: Esa.lxi.a. ] receaue the Gospell.

6 And happy is he that is not offended in me.

B

7 [Note: Luk.xi.d. ] And as they departed, Iesus began to say vnto the multitude cocerning Iohn: What went ye out into the wildernesse to see? A reede shaken with the winde?

8 Or what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft rayment? Beholde, they that weare soft [clothyng] are in kinges houses.

9 But what went ye out for to see? A prophete? yea I say vnto you, and more then a prophete.

10 For this is he of whom it is written: [Note: Mala.iii.a. Mar.i.a. ] Beholde I sende my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. >

11 < Ueryly I say vnto you, among them that are borne of women, arose not a greater then Iohn the Baptist: Notwithstandyng, he that is lesse in the kingdome of heauen, is greater then he.

12 From the dayes of Iohn the Baptist vntyll nowe, the kingdome of heauen suffereth violence, & the violent plucke it [vnto them.]

13 [Note: Luk.xvi.d. ] For all the prophetes and the lawe it selfe prophecied vnto Iohn.

14 And if ye wyll receaue it, [Note: Luk.i.b. Mal iii.d. Iohn.i.c. ] this is Elias which was for to come.

C

15 He that hath eares to heare, let him heare. >

16 [Note: Luk.vii.c. ] But whervnto shall I liken this generation? It is like vnto litle children, which sit in the markettes, and call vnto their felowes,

17 And say: We haue pyped vnto you, and ye haue not daused: we haue [Note: [a] we haue song mournyng songes vnto you. ] mourned vnto you, and ye haue not sorowed.

18 For Iohn came neither eatyng nor drinking, and they say, he hath the deuil.

19 The sonne of man came eatyng and drinking, and they say, behold a glutton and an [vnmeasurable] drinker of wine, and a friende vnto publicans & sinners: And wisdome is iustified of her children.

20 < [Note: Luk.x.c. ] Then began he to vpbrayd the cities which most of his mightie workes were done in, because they repented not.

D

21 Wo vnto thee Chorazin, wo vnto thee Bethsaida: for if the mightie workes which were shewed in you had ben done in Tyre or Sidon, they had repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.

22 Neuerthelesse I say vnto you, it shalbe easier for Tyre and Sidon at the day of iudgement, then for you.

23 And thou Capernaum, which art lift vp vnto heauen, shalt be brought downe to hell: For if the mightie workes which haue ben done in thee had ben done among them of Sodome, they had remayned vntyll this day.

24 Neuertheless, I say vnto you, that it shalbe easier for the lande of Sodome in the day of iudgement, then for thee. >

25 < At that tyme Iesus aunswered and sayde: I thanke thee O father, Lorde of heauen and earth, because thou hast hid these thinges from the wise and prudent, and hast shewed them vnto babes.

26 Euen so [it is] O father, for so was it thy good pleasure.

27 [Note: Mat.28.d. Luk.x.d. Ioh.iii.d. Ioh.vii.d. and .viii.c. ] All thinges are geuen vnto me of my father: [Note: Mat.28.d. Luk.x.d. Ioh.iii.d. Ioh.vii.d. and .viii.c. ] And no man knoweth the sonne but the father, neither knoweth any man the father saue the sonne, and he to whomsoever the sonne wyll open him.

28 Come vnto me all ye that labour sore, and are laden, and I wyll ease you.

29 [Note: Eccle.vi.d. ] Take my yoke vpon you and learne of me, for I am meeke & lowly in heart: and ye shall finde rest vnto your soules.

30 For my yoke is easie, [Note: i.Ioh.v.a. ] and my burthen is lyght. >

[Page]

## The .xij. Chapter.

3 Christe excuseth his disciples which plucke the eares of corne. 10 He healeth the dryed hande. 22 helpeth the possessed that was blynde and dumbe. 31 Blasphemie. 34 The generation of vipers. 35 Of good wordes. 36 Of idle wordes. 38 He rebuketh the vnfaithfull that woulde needes haue tokens, 49 and sheweth who is his brother, sister, and mother.

A

1 **A**t that tyme Iesus went on the Sabbath dayes [Note: Mark.ii.d. ] through the corne, and his disciples were an hungred, and began to [Note: Deut.23.d. ] plucke the eares of corne, & to eate.

2 But when the Pharisees sawe it, they sayde vnto hym: Beholde, thy disciples do that which is not lawfull to do vpon the Sabbath day.

3 But he sayde vnto them: Haue ye not read what Dauid did when he was an hungred, and they that were with him:

4 [Note: 1.Reg.21.a. ] Howe he entred into the house of God, and did eate the shew bread, which was not lawfull for hym to eate, neither for them which were with hym, but only for the priestes?

5 Or haue ye not read in the lawe, howe that on the Sabbath dayes the priestes in the temple [Note: [a] That is, do vncleane workes: ] prophane the Sabbath, and are blamelesse?

6 But I say vnto you, that in this place is one greater then the temple.

B

7 Wherefore if ye wist what this meaneth, [Note: Mar.xi.b. Ozee.vi.b. ] I will mercie & not sacrifice: ye woulde not haue condempned the giltlesse.

8 For the sonne of man also is Lorde euen of the Sabbath day.

9 And he departed thence, [Note: Mar.iii.a. Luk.vi.b. ] and went into their synagogue,

10 And beholde there was a man which had his hande dryed vp, and they asked him, saying: [Note: Luk.xiii.a. ] Is it lawfull to heale vpon the Sabbath dayes? that they might accuse him.

11 And he sayde vnto them: What man of you wyll there be that shall haue [Note: Deu.xxii.a. ] a sheepe, & if it fall into a pit on the Sabbath day, wyll he not take holde of it, and lift it out?

12 Howe much more then is a man better then a sheepe? Wherefore it is lawfull to do a good deede on the Sabbath dayes.

13 Then saith he to the man, Stretch foorth thy hande. And he stretched it foorth: and it was made whole like as the other.

C

14 [Note: Mark.iii.a. Ioh.x.g. ] Then the Pharisees went out, and helde a counsaile agaynst him, howe they might destroy hym.

15 But when Iesus knewe it, he departed thence: and great multitudes folowed him, and he healed them all,

16 And charged them that they shoulde not make him knowen:

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophete, saying:

18 [Note: Esai.xliii.a ] Beholde my childe whom I haue chosen, my beloued in whom my soule well delighteth: I wyll put my spirite vpon him, and he shall shewe iudgement to the gentiles.

19 He shall not striue nor crye, neither shal any man heare his voyce in the streetes.

20 A bruised reede shall he not breake, and smokyng flaxe shall he not quenche, tyll he sende foorth iudgement vnto victorie:

D

21 And in his name shall the gentiles trust.

22 [Note: Luk.xi.b. ] Then was brought to him one possessed with a deuyll, blinde, and dumbe: and he healed him, insomuch that the blinde and dumbe both spake and sawe.

23 And all the people were amased and sayde: Is not this that sonne of Daudid?

24 [Note: Mat.xii.d Mark.iii.a. Luk.x.c. ] But when the Pharisees hearde it, they sayde: This [felowe] driueth the deuils no otherwise out, but by Beelzebub the prince of the deuils.

25 But whe Iesus knew their thoughtes, he sayde vnto them, Euery kingdome deuided agaynst it selfe shalbe brought to naught: and euery citie or house deuided agaynst it selfe shall not stande.

26 And if Satan cast out Satan, then is he deuided agaynst him selfe: howe shall then his kingdome endure?

27 Also if I by Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whom do your children cast them out? Therefore they shalbe your iudges.

28 But if I cast out the deuils by the spirite of God: then is the kingdome of God come vpon you.

29 Or els [Note: Luk.xi.c. ] howe can one enter into a strong mans house, & spoyle his goodes, except he first binde the strong man, and then spoyle his house?

30 He that is not with me, is agaynst me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth abrode.

[Page]

31 Wherefore, I say vnto you, all maner of sinne and blasphemy shalbe forgeuen vnto men, [Note: Mark.iii.d. Luk.xii.b. ] but the blasphemy agaynst the spirite, shall not be forgeuen vnto men.

32 [Note: i.Reg ii.c. ] And whosoeuer speaketh a worde agaynst the sonne of man, it shalbe forgeuen hym: But whosoeuer speaketh agaynst the holy ghost, it shall not be forgeuen hym, neither in this worlde, neither in the worlde to come.

33 [Note: Math.vii.c. ] Either make the tree good, and his fruite good: or els make the tree euyll, and his fruite euyll. [Note: Luk.vi.f. ] For the tree, is knowen by his fruite.

34 O generation of vipers, howe can ye speake good thynges, when ye your selues are euyll? [Note: Psal.xl b. Luk.vi.g. ] For out of the aboundaunce of the heart, the mouth speaketh.

35 A good man, out of the good treasure of the heart, bryngeth fourth good thynges: And an euyll man, out of euyll treasure, bryngeth fourth euyll thynges.

D

36 But I say vnto you, of euery idell worde that men shall speake, they shall geue accompt therof, in the day of iudgment.

37 [Note: ii.Reg.i.e. Luke.xv.d. Mark.viii.b ] For of thy wordes, thou shalt be iustified: and of thy wordes, thou shalt be condemned. >

38 [Note: Luk.xi.d. ] < Then certayne of the Scribes, and of the Pharisees, aunswered hym, saying. [Note:

Math.xvi.a. Mar.viii.b. Luk.xi.d. Iohn.vi.b. ] Maister, we wyl see a signe of thee.

39 But he aunswered and sayde to them. [Note: Math.xvi.a. Mar.viii.b. Luk.xi.d. Iohn.vi.b. ] The euyll and adulterous generation [Note: Math.xvi.a. Mar.viii.b. Luk.xi.d. Iohn.vi.b. ] seketh a signe, and there shall no signe be geuen to it, but the signe of the prophete Ionas.

40 [Note: Ionas ii.a. ] For as Ionas was three dayes, and three nyghtes, in the Whales belly: so shall the sonne of man be three dayes, and three nyghtes, in the heart of the earth.

41 The men of Niniue shall ryse in the iudgement, with this nation, and condemne it, because [Note: Ionas.iii.c. ] they repented at the preachyng of Ionas: and beholde, here [is] one greater then Ionas.

42 [Note: Luk.xi.d. iii.Reg.x.a. ii.Para.ix.a. ] The Queene of the south shall ryse in the iudgement, with this generation, and shall condemne it: for she came from the vtmost partes of the earth, to heare the wisdome of Solomon. And beholde, in this place [is] one greater then Solomon.

43 [Note: Luk.xi.d. ] When the vncleane spirite is gone out of a man, he walketh throughout drye places, sekyng rest, and fyndeth none.

44 Then he sayeth: I wyll returne into my house, from whence I came out. And when he is come, he fyndeth it emptie, swept, and garnysed.

45 Then goeth he, and taketh vnto hym seuen other spirites, worse then hym selfe, and they enter in, and dwell there: And [Note: ii.Pet.ii.d. Heb.vi.a. ] the ende of that man, is worse then the begynnyng. Euen so shall it be also, vnto this frowarde generation.

46 Whyle he yet talked to the people, [Note: Mark.iii.d. Luk.viii.c. ] beholde, his mother, and his brethren stode without, desyryng to speake with hym.

47 Then one sayde vnto hym: beholde, [Note: Mark.iii.d. Luk.viii.c. ] thy mother, and thy brethren, stande without, desyryng to speake with thee.

48 But he aunswered, and sayde vnto hym that had tolde hym: Who is my mother? or who are my brethren?

49 And he stretched forth his hande towarde his disciples, & sayde, [Note: Iohn.xv.b. ] beholde my mother, and my brethren.

50 For whosoeuer shall do the wyll of my father which is in heauen, the same is my brother, sister, and mother. >

## ¶ The .xiiij. Chapter.

¶ 3 The parable of the seede, 24 of the tares, 31 of the mustarde seede, 33 of the leuen, 44 of the treasure hyd in the fiede, 45 of the pearles, 47 and of the nette.

A

1 **The** same day, went Iesus out of the house, & [Note: Mark.iii.a. ] sate by the sea syde.

2 And great multitudes were gathered together vnto hym, so greatly that he went and sate in a shippe, and the whole multitude stode on the shore.

3 And he spake many thynges to them in parables, saying: Beholde, the sower went forth to sowe.

4 And when he sowed, some seedes fell by the wayes side, and the fowles came, and deuoured them vp.

5 Some fell vpon stony places, where they had not much earth, and anone they sprong vp, because they had no depenesse [Page] of earth.

6 And when the sonne was vp, they caught heate, and because they had not roote, they wythered away.

7 Agayne, some fell among thornes, and the thornes sprong vp and choked them.

8 But some fell into good grounde, and brought forth fruite, some an hundred folde, some sixtie folde, some thirtie folde.

9 Who hath eares to heare, let hym heare.

B

10 And the disciples came, and sayde vnto hym: Why speakest thou to them by parables?

11 He aunswered and sayde vnto them: [Note: Mark.iiii.a. Luk.vii.b. ] because it is geuen vnto you, to knowe the secretes of the kyngdome of heauen, but to them, it is not geuen.

12 [Note: Mat.xxv.c. Mark.iiii.c. Luk.viii.b. xix.d. ] For whosoouer hath, to hym shalbe geuen, and he shall haue more aboundaunce: But whosoouer hath not, from hym shalbe taken away, euen that he hath.

13 Therefore speake I to them in parables: because they seeyng, see not: and hearyng, they heare not: neither do they vnderstande.

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophesie of Esaias, saying: [Note: Esay.vi.c. Mar.iiii.b. Luk.viii.b. Iohn.xii.b. Act.xxviii f Rom.xi.b. ] by hearyng ye shall heare, and shall not vnderstande, and seeyng, ye shall see, & shall not perceae.

15 For this peoples heart is waxed grosse, and their eares are dull of hearyng, and their eyes haue they closed: lest at any tyme they shoulde see with their eyes, and heare with their eares, and shoulde vnderstande with their heart, & shoulde conuert, that I myght heale them.

C

16 [Note: Luk.x.d. ] But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your eares, for they heare.



17 Ueryly I say vnto you, [Note: i.Pet.i.d. ] that many prophetes and ryghteous men haue desired to see those thynges which ye see, and haue not seene: and to heare those thynges which ye heare, and haue not hearde.

18 [Note: Mark.iiii.b. Luk.viii.b. ] Heare ye therefore the similitude of the sower.

19 When one heareth the worde of the kyngdome, and vnderstandeth it not, then commeth that euyll, and catcheth away that which was sowed in his heart: this is he, which receaued seede by the way syde.

20 But he that receaued the seede into stony places, the same is he that heareth the worde, and anone with ioy, receaueth it:

21 Yet hath he not roote in hym selfe, but dureth for a season: for when tribulation or persecution aryseth because of the worde, by and by he is offended.

22 He also that receaued seede into the thornes, is he that heareth the worde: and the care of this worlde, and the disceiptfulnes of ryches, choke vp the worde, and so is he made vnfruitfull.

23 But he that receaued seede into the good grounde, is he that heareth the worde, and vnderstandeth it, which also beareth fruite: and bryngeth forth, some an hundred folde, some sixtie folde, some thirtie folde.

D

24 Another parable put he forth vnto them, saying: < [Note: Mark.iiii.c. ] The kyngdome of heauen is likened vnto a man, which sowed good seede in his fielde.

25 But whyle men slept, his enemye came & sowed tares among the wheate, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was sprong vp, and had brought forth fruite, then appeared the tares also.

27 So, the seruauntes of the housholder came, and sayde vnto hym. Sir, diddest not thou sowe good seede in thy fielde? from whence then hath it tares?

28 He sayde vnto them: the malicious man hath done this. The seruauntes sayde vnto hym: wylt thou then that we go, and gather them vp?

29 But he sayde, nay: lest whyle ye gather vp the tares, ye rote vp also the wheate with them.

30 Let both growe together vntyll the haruest: & in tyme of haruest, I wyl say to the reapers, gather ye together first the tares, and bynde them in bundels to burne them: but carrie the wheate into my barne. >

31 < Another parable put he forth vnto them, saying. [Note: Mat.iiii c Luk.xiii.d. ] The kyngdome of heauen is like to a gayne of mustard seede, which a man toke & sowed in his fielde.

32 Which in dede is the least of all seedes: But when it is growen, it is the greatest among hearbes: and is a tree, so that the byrdes of the ayre come & make their nestes in the braunches therof.

E

33 Another parable spake he vnto them: [Note: Luk.xiii.d. ] The kyngdome of heauen is lyke vnto leuen, which a woman taketh & hydeth [Page] in three peckes of meale, tyll all be leuened.

34 [Note: Mat.iii.c. ] All these thynges spake Iesus vnto the people in parables: and without a parable spake he not vnto them.

35 That it myght be fulfilled, which was spoken by the prophete, that sayth: [Note: Psal.xxviii.a ] I wyll open my mouth in parables, I wyll speake foorth thynges which haue ben kept secrete from the foundation of the worlde. >

36 Then Iesus sent the people away, & went into the house: [Note: Mark.iii.c. ] And his disciples came vnto hym, saying: Declare vnto vs the parable of the tares of the fielde.

37 He answered and sayde vnto them: He that soweth the good seede, is the sonne of man.

38 The fielde, is the worlde: & the good seede, they are the childre of ye kingdom: the tares, are the chyl dren of ye wicked.

39 The enemye that soweth them, is the deuyll: the haruest, is the ende of the worlde: the reapers, be the Angels.

40 Euen as the tares therefore, are gathered and brent in the fyre: so shall it be in the ende of this worlde.  
F

41 [Note: Apo.xiii.d. ] The sonne of man shall sende foorth his Angels, and [they] shall gather out of his kyngdome, all thynges that offende, and them which do iniquitie:

42 And shall cast them into a furnesse of fyre: There shalbe waylyng and gnasshyng of teeth.

43 [Note: Dan.i.xii.a. Sapin.iii.b. i.Cor.xv.f. ] Then shall the ryghteous shine as the Sunne, in the kingdome of their father. Who hath eares to heare, let hym heare. >

44 < Agayne, the kyngdome of heauen is lyke vnto treasure hyd in the fielde: the which a man hath founde, and hyd, and for ioy therof, goeth and selleth all that he hath, and byeth the fielde.

45 Agayne, the kyngdome of heauen is lyke vnto a marchaunt man, seekyng goodly pearles.

46 Which, when he founde one precious pearle, went and solde all that he had, and bought it.

47 Agayne, the kyngdome of heauen is lyke vnto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of all kynde:

48 Which when it was full, men drewe to lande, and sat downe, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

G

49 So shall it be at the ende of the world: The Angels shall come foorth, and seuer the bad from among the iuste:

50 And shall cast them into a furnesse of fyre: [Note: Mat.xxii.b and .xxv.a ] there shalbe waylyng and gnasshyng of teeth.

51 Iesus sayth vnto them: haue ye vnderstande all these thynges? They say vnto hym: yea Lorde.

52 Then sayde he vnto them: Therefore, euery Scribe which is taught vnto the kyngdome of heauen, is lyke vnto a man that is an householder, whiche bryngeth foorth out of his treasure, thynges newe and olde. >

53 And it came to passe, that when Iesus had finished these parables, [Note: Mark.vi.a. ] he departed thence.

54 And when he came into his owne countrey, he taught them in their synagogues, in so much, that [Note: Luk.iiii.e. ] they were astonyed, and sayde: whence commeth this wysdome and powers vnto hym?

55 [Note: Mark.iii.a. Iohn.vi.c. ] Is not this the carpenters sonne? Is not his mother called Marie? and his brethren, Iames, and Ioses, and Simon, and Iudas?

56 And are not all his sisters with vs? whence hath he then all these thynges?

57 And they were offended in hym. Iesus sayde vnto them: [Note: Mark.vi.a. Luk.iiii.d. Iohn.v.f. ] A prophete is not without honour, saue in his owne countrey, and in his owne house.

58 And he did not many mightie workes there, because of their vnbeliefe.

## The .xiiij. Chapter.

¶ 10 Iohn is taken, and beheaded. 19 Christe feedeth fyue thousande men with fyue loaues & two fysshes, 25 and appeareth by nyght vnto his disciples vpon the sea.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **At** that tyme [Note: Mark.vi. b. Luk.ix.a. ] Herode the Tetrarch, hearde of the fame of Iesu.

2 And sayde vnto his seruauntes: this is Iohn the Baptist, he is risen from the dead, and therefore great workes do shewe foorth them selues in hym.

3 For Herode [Note: Mark.vi.c. Luk.iii.d. ] had taken Iohn, and bounde hym, and put hym in prison, for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wyfe.

4 For Iohn sayde vnto hym: [Note: Leui.xviii.e ] it is not [Page] lawfull for thee to haue her.

5 And when he woulde haue put hym to death, he feared the people: [Note: Mat.xxi.b. ] because they counted hym as a prophete.

6 But when Herodes [Note: Gene.xl.d. ] birth day was kept, the daughter of Herodias daunsed before them, and pleased Herode.

7 [Note: Mark.vi.c. ] Wherefore he promised with an othe, that he woulde geue her whatsoever she woulde aske.

8 And she, beyng instruct of her mother before, sayde: geue me here Iohn Baptistes head in a platter.

9 And the kyng was sory: Neuerthelesse, for the othes sake, and them which sate also at the table, he commaunded it to be geuen her:

10 And sent, and beheaded Iohn in the pryson.

11 And his head was brought in a platter, and geuen to the damsell: and [she] brought it to her mother.

12 And his disciples came, and toke vp his body, and buryed it: and went, and tolde Iesus.

B

13 When Iesus hearde of it, he [Note: Mark.vi.d. Luk.ix.d. Iohn.vi.a. ] departed thence in a shyp, vnto a desert place, out of the way: And when the people had hearde therof, they folowed hym on foote out of the cities.

14 And Iesus went foorth, and sawe much people: and was moued with mercye towarde them, and he healed their sicke.

15 And when the euen drewe on, his disciples came to hym, saying: this is a desert place, and the hour is nowe past, let the people depart, that they may go into the townes, and bye them vittels.

C

16 But Iesus sayde vnto them: They haue no nede to go away, geue ye them to eate.

17 They saye vnto hym: we haue here but fyue loaues, and two fisshes.

18 He sayde: bryng them hyther to me.

19 And he commaunded the people to sit downe on the grasse, and he toke the fyue loaues, and the two fisshes, and lift vp his eyes towarde heauen, & blessed: And when he had broken [them], he gaue the loaues to his disciples, and his disciples to the people.

20 And they dyd all eate, and were suffised. And they gathered vp (of the fragmentes that remayned) twelue baskets full.

21 And they that had eaten, were about fyue thousande men, besyde women and chyl dren.

22 [Note: Mark.vi f. Iohn.vi.b. ] And strayghtway Iesus constrayned his disciples to get vp into a shippe, and to go before hym vnto the other syde, whyle he sent the people away.

23 And when the people were sent away, he [Note: Luk.vi.c ] went vp into a mountayne alone to pray: And

when nyght was come, he was there hym selfe alone.

24 But the shippe was nowe in the middes of the sea, & was tost with waues: for it was a contrary wynde.

25 And in the fourth watch of the nyght, Iesus went vnto them, walkyng on the sea.

26 And when the disciples sawe hym walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, it is a spirite: and they cryed out for feare.

27 But strayght way, Iesus spake vnto them, saying: be of good cheare, it is I, be not afrayde.

28 Peter aunswered hym, and sayde: Lorde, yf it be thou, byd me come vnto thee, on the water.

29 And he sayde: come. And when Peter was come downe out of the shippe, he walked on the water, to go to Iesus.

30 But when he sawe a myghty wynde, he was afrayde: And when he began to sincke, he cryed, saying, Lorde saue me.

31 And immediatly Iesus stretched forth his hande, and caught hym, and sayde vnto hym: O thou of litle fayth, wherefore diddest thou doubt?

32 [Note: Mark.vi.g. ] And when they were come into the shippe, the wynde ceased

D

33 Then they that were in the shippe, came and worshypped hym, saying: of a trueth thou art the sonne of God.

34 And when they were gone ouer, they came into the lande of Gennezaret.

35 And when the men of that place, had knowledge of hym, they sent out into all that countrey rounde about: and brought vnto hym all that were sicke.

36 And besought hym, that they myght touche the hemme of his garment only: And as many as touched [it] were made whole.

[Page]

## ¶ The .xv. Chapter.

¶ 3 Christe excuseth his disciples, and rebuketh the Scribes and Pharisees for transgressyng Gods commaundement through their owne traditions, 18 the thyng that goeth into the mouth, defyleth not the man, 22 he delyuereth the woman of Cananees daughter, 30 healeth the multitude, 36 and with seuen loaves, and a fewe litle fisshes, feedeth foure thousande men, besyde women and chydren.

A

- 1 **Then** [Note: Mark.vii.a. ] came to Iesus Scribes and Pharisees, which were come from Hierusalem, saying:
- 2 Why do thy disciples transgresse the traditions of the elders? for they washe not their handes when they eate bread.
- 3 But he aunswered and sayde vnto them: why do ye also transgresse the commaundement of God, by your tradition?
- 4 For God comaunded, saying: [Note: Exod.xx.b. Mark.vii.b. ] honour father and mother, and he that curseth father or mother, let hym dye the death.
- 5 But ye say, whosoeuer shall say to father or mother: [Note: Exod.xxi.b. Ephe.vi.a. Deut.v.b. ] by the gyft that [is offered] of me, thou shalt be helped:
- 6 And so shall he not honour his father or his mother. And thus haue ye made the commaundement of God, of none effect, by your tradition.
- 7 Hypocrites, full well dyd Esayas prophecie of you, saying:
- 8 [Note: Esa.xxix.g. Ie.xxxiii.g Mark.vii.b. ] This people draweth nye vnto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lippes: howbeit, their hearts are farre from me.
- 9 But in vayne do they worshippe me, teachyng doctrine, preceptes of men.
- B
- 10 And he called the people to hym, and sayde vnto them: heare, & vnderstande.
- 11 That which goeth into the mouth, defyleth not the man: but that which commeth out of the mouth, defyleth the man.
- 12 Then came his disciples, and sayde vnto hym: knowest thou not, that the Pharisees were offended after they hearde this saying?
- 13 But he aunswered and sayde: Euery plantyng which my heauenly father hath not planted, shalbe rooted vp.
- 14 Let them alone, they be the blynde leaders of the blynde. If the blynde leade the blynde, both shall fall into the dytche.
- 15 Then aunswered Peter, and sayde vnto hym: Declare vnto vs this parable.
- 16 Iesus sayde: Are ye also without vnderstandyng?
- 17 Do not ye yet vnderstande, that whatsoeuer entreth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

18 But those thynges which proceade out of the mouth, come foorth from the heart, and they defyle the man.

19 For out of the heart, proceade euyll thoughtes, murders, adulteries, whordomes, theftes, false witnessse, blasphemyes.

20 These are the thynges, which defyle a man: But to eate with vnwasshen handes, defyleth not a man. >  
C

21 < And Iesus went thence, and departed into the coastes of Tyre and Sidon.

22 And beholde, a woman of the Chananites, which came out of the same coastes, cryed vnto hym, saying: Haue mercie on me O Lorde, thou sonne of Daud: My daughter is greeuously vexed with a deuyll.

23 But he aunswered her not a worde: and his disciples came, and besought hym, saying: sende her away, for she cryeth after vs.

24 But he aunswered, and sayde: I am not sent [Note: Luk.xix.b. ] but vnto the lost sheepe of the house of Israel.

25 Then came she, and worshipped him, saying: Lorde, helpe me.

26 He aunswered, and sayde: it is not meete to take the chyldrens bread, and to cast it to litle dogges.

27 She aunswered and sayde, trueth Lorde: and yet litle dogges eate of the crummes, which fall fro their maisters table.

28 Then Iesus aunswered, and sayde vnto her: O woman, great is thy fayth, be it vnto thee, euen as thou wylt. And her daughter was made whole, euen from that same tyme. >

D  
29 And Iesus went from thence, and came nye vnto the sea of Galilee, and went vp into a mountayne, and sate [Page] downe there.

30 And great multitudes came vnto him, hauyng with them those that were lame, blynde, dumbe, maymed, & other many, and cast them downe at Iesus feete: [Note: Esa.xxxv.b ] And he healed them.

31 In so much that the people wondred, when they sawe the dumbe speake, the maymed to be whole, the lame to walke, and the blynde to see: And they glorified the God of Israel.

32 [Note: Mark.viii.a. ] Then Iesus called his disciples vnto hym, and sayde: I haue compassion on the people, because they continue with me nowe three dayes, and haue nothing to eate: and I wyll not let them depart fastyng, lest they faynt in the way.

33 And his disciples say vnto hym: whence [shoulde we get] so much bread in the wyldernesse, as to suffise so great a multitude?

34 And Iesus sayeth vnto them: howe many loaues haue ye? And they say, [Note: Mat.xvi.b ] seuen, and a fewe litle fisshes.

35 And he commaunded the people to sit downe on the grounde:

36 And toke the seuen loaues, and the fisshes: and after that he had geuen thankes, he brake them, and gaue to his disciples, and the disciples gaue them to the people.

37 And they dyd all eate, and were suffised: And they toke vp, of the broken meate that was left, seuen baskets full.

38 And yet they that did eate, were foure thousande men, besyde women and chyldren.

39 And he sent away the people, and toke shippe, and came into the parties of Magdala.

## The .xvj. Chapter.

¶ 1 The Pharisees require a token, 6 Iesus warneth his disciples of the Pharisees doctrine, 16 The confession of Peter, 19 the keyes of heauen, 24 the faythfull must beare the crosse after Christe.

A

1 **The** [Note: Mark.vii.b Iohn.vi.d. Luk.xi.d. ] Pharisees also, with the Saducees, came, and temptyng, desired hym that he woulde shewe them a signe from heauen.

2 He aunswered & sayde vnto them: when it is [Note: Luk.xii.g. ] euenyng, ye say, [it wyll be] fayre weather: for the sky is redde.

3 And in the mornyng, It wyll be foule weather to day: for the sky is lowryng redde. O ye hypocrites, ye can discerne the outwarde appearaunce of the sky: but can ye not discerne the signes of the tymes?

4 [Note: Mark.xii.c. ] The froward and adulterous nation requireth [Note: Mark.viii.b Luk.xi.d. ] a signe: and there shall no signe be geuen vnto it, but the signe of the [Note: Iohn.vi.d. Ionas.ii.a. ] prophete Ionas. And he left them, and departed.

B

5 And when his disciples were come to the other syde of the water, they had forgotten to take bread [with them].

6 Then Iesus sayde vnto them: [Note: Luk.xii.a. ] Take heede and beware of the leuen of the Pharisees, and of the Saducees.

7 And they thought in them selues, saying: for we haue taken no bread [with vs].



8 Which when Iesus vnderstoode, he sayde vnto them: O ye of little fayth, why thynke you within your selues, because ye haue brought no bread?

9 Do ye not yet perceaue, neither remember those fyue loaues, when there were [Note: Mat.xiii.c. ] fyue thousande [men], and howe many baskets toke ye vp?

10 [Note: Mark.xv.d ] Neither the seuen loaues, when there were foure thousande [men], and howe many baskets toke ye vp?

11 Howe is it that ye do not vnderstande, that I spake it not vnto you concernyng bread, [warnyng you] that ye shoulde beware of the leuen of the Pharisees, and of the Saducees?

12 Then vnderstoode they, howe that he bad not them beware of the leuen of bread: but of the doctrine of the Pharisees, and of the Saducees.

C  
13 < When Iesus came into the coastes of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying: [Note: Mark.viii c. ] [Note: Luk.ix c ] Whom do men say that I the sonne of man am?

14 They sayde: some say [that thou art] Iohn Baptist, some Helias, some Ieremias, or one of the prophetes.

15 He sayth vnto them: but whom say ye that I am?

16 Simon Peter aunswered and sayde: [Note: Luk.ix.c Iohn.vi.g. ] Thou art Christe, the sonne of the Iyuyng God.

17 And Iesus aunswered, and sayde vnto [Page] hym: happy art thou Simon Bar Iona, for flesh & blood hath not opened [that] vnto thee, [Note: Iohn.vi.d. ] but my father which is in heauen.

18 And I say also vnto thee, that thou art Peter, and vpon this [Note: i.Cor.x.a. ] rocke I wyll buylde my congregation: And the gates [Note: Esd.xxviii c. ] of hell shall not preuayle agaynst it.

19 And I wyll geue vnto thee, the keyes of the kingdome of heauen: And [Note: Mat.xviii.c ] whatsoever thou byndest in earth, shalbe bounde in heauen: and whatsoever thou loolest in earth, shalbe loosed in heauen. >

20 Then charged he his disciples, that they shoulde tell no man, that he was Iesus Christe.

21 [Note: Mar.viii.d. Luk.ix.c. ] From that tyme foorth, began Iesus to shewe vnto his disciples, howe that he must go vnto Hierusalem, and suffer many thynges of the elders, and hie priestes, & scribes, and [must] be kylled, and be raysed agayne the thyrde day.

22 And when Peter had taken him aside, he began to rebuke hym, saying: Lorde, fauour thy selfe, this shall not be vnto thee.

23 But he turned hym about, and sayde vnto Peter: go after me Satan, thou art an offence vnto me: for thou sauerest not the thynges that be of God, but those that be of men.

D

24 Then sayde Iesus vnto his disciples: If any man wyll folowe me, let hym forsake him selfe, and take vp his crosse, and folowe me.

25 [Note: Mark.x.d. Luk.ix.c. Mark.viii.d Iohn.vi.d. ] For, who so wyll saue his lyfe, shall lose it: Agayne, who so doth lose his lyfe for my sake, shall fynde it.

26 For what doth it profite a man, yf he wyne all the whole worlde, and lose his owne soule? Or what shall a man geue for a raunsome of his soule?

27 For the sonne of man shall come in the glory of his father, with his Angels: and [Note: Rom.ii.b. ] then shall he rewarde euery man accordyng to his workes.

28 Ueryly I say vnto you, [Note: Mark.viii.d Luk.ix.c. ] there be some standyng here, which shall not taste of death, tyll they see the sonne of man come in his kyngdome.

## ¶ The .xvij. Chapter.

¶ 2 The transfiguration of Christe, 15 he healeth the lunaticke, 27 and payeth tribute.

A

1 **And** [Note: Mark.ix.a. Luk.ix.c. ] after sixe dayes, Iesus taketh Peter, Iames, and Iohn his brother, and bryngeth them vp into an hye mountayne, out of the way,

2 And was transfigured before them, [Note: Apoc.i.d. ] and his face did shyne as the sunne, and his clothes were as whyte as the lyght.

3 And beholde, there appeared vnto them, Moyses, and Elias talkyng with hym.

4 Then aunswered Peter, and sayde vnto Iesus: Lorde, it is good for vs to be here. If thou wylt, let vs make here three tabernacles: one for thee, and one for Moyses, and one for Elias.

B

5 Whyle he yet spake, beholde, a bryght cloude shadowed them: And beholde, [there came] a voyce out of the cloude, which sayde, [Note: Math.iii.d. and .xii.b. ] this is my beloued sonne [Note: Esay.lxii.a. Deu.xviii.e. ] in whom I am well pleased, heare hym.

6 And when the disciples hearde [these thynges] they fell on their face, and were sore afrayde.

7 And Iesus came, and touched them, and sayde: aryse, and be not afrayde.

8 And when they had lyft vp their eyes, they sawe no man, saue Iesus only.

9 [Note: Mark.ix.a. ] And when they came downe from the mountayne, Iesus charged them, saying: shewe the vision to no man, vntyll the sonne of man be rysen agayne from the dead. >

10 < And his disciples asked hym, saying: Why then say the scribes, that Elias must first come?

11 Iesus aunswered, & sayde vnto them: [Note: Mala.iii.d. ] Elias truely shall first come, and restore all thynges:

12 But I say vnto you, that [Note: Math.xi.b. ] Elias is come alredy, and they knewe hym not, but haue done vnto hym, whatsoeuer they lusted.

13 Lykewyse, shall also the sonne of man suffer of them. [Page] Then the disciples vnderstode, that he spake vnto them of Iohn Baptist.

C  
14 And when they were come to the people, there came to hym a certayne man, knelyng downe to hym, and saying:

15 Lorde, haue mercy on my sonne, for he is lunaticke, and sore vexed: for oft tymes he falleth into the fyre, and oft into the water.

16 [Note: Mark.ix.f. Luk.ix.c. ] And I brought hym to thy disciples, and they coulde not heale hym.

17 Iesus aunswered and sayde: O faythlesse and croked nation, howe long shall I be with you? howe long shal I suffer you? bryng hym hyther to me.

18 And Iesus rebuked the deuyll, and he departed out of hym: And the chyld was healed euen that same tyme. >

D  
19 [Note: Mark.ix.d. ] Then came the disciples to Iesus secretely, and sayde: why coulde not we cast hym out?

20 Iesus sayde vnto them: because of your vnbeliefe. For veryly I say vnto you: [Note: Luk.xvii.a. ] If ye haue fayth as a grayne of mustarde seede, ye shall say vnto this mountayne: remoue hence to yonder place, and it shall remoue, neither shall any thyng be vnpossible vnto you.

21 Howebeit, this kynde goeth not out, but by prayer and fastyng.

22 Whyle they were occupyed in Galilee, Iesus sayde vnto them: [Note: Mat.xvi e and .xx c. Mark.viii.d.ix.d. and xc Luk.ix.c. ] it wyll come to passe, that the sonne of man shalbe betrayed into the handes of men:

23 And they shall kyll hym, & the thyrde day shall he ryse agayne: And they were exceedyng sorry.

24 < And when they were come to Capernaum, they that receaued tribute money, came to Peter, and sayde: Doth not your maister pay tribute?

25 He sayth: yes. And when he was come into the house, Iesus preuented hym, saying: What thyngest thou Simon? of whom do the kynges of the earth take tribute or toule? of the chyldren, or of straungers?

26 Peter sayth vnto hym: of straungers. Iesus sayth vnto hym: Then are the chyldren free.

27 Notwithstandyng, lest we shoulde offende them, go thou to the sea, and cast an angle, and take the fische that first commeth vp: and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt fynde a peece of twenty pence: that take, and geue it vnto them for me, and thee. >

## The .xviiij. Chapter.

¶ 3 He teacheth his disciples to be humble and harmelesse, 6 to auoyde occasions of euyll, 21 and one to forgeue anothers offence.

A

1 < **A**t the same time, came the disciples vnto Iesus, saying: [Note: Mark.ix.g. Luk.ix.f. ] Who is the greatest in ye kyngdome of heauen?

2 Iesus called a litle chylde vnto hym, and set hym in the myddest [of them],

3 And sayde. Ueryly I say vnto you: [Note: Mark.x.b. Luk.xviii.d 1 Peter.ii.a. ] except ye turne, and become as litle chyldren, ye shall not enter into the kyngdome of heauen.

4 Whosoeuer therefore shall humble hym selfe as this litle chylde, the same is ye greatest in the kingdome of heauen.

5 And who so shall receaue such a litle chylde in my name, receaueth me.

6 [Note: Mark.ix.f Luk.xvii.a ] But who so shall offende one of these litle ones, which beleue in me, it were better for hym, that a myll stone were hanged about his necke, & that he were drowned in the deapth of the sea.

7 Wo vnto the worlde, because of offences. [Note: i Cor.xi.d. ] It must nedes be, that offences come: But wo to that man, by whom the offence commeth.

B

8 If then [Note: Math.v e. Mark.ix a. ] thy hande or thy foote offende thee, cut them of, and cast [them] from thee. It is better for thee to enter into lyfe, halt or maymed, [rather] then thou shouldest, hauyng two handes, or two feete, be cast into euerlastyng fyre.

9 And yf thyne eye offende thee, plucke it out, and cast [it] from thee: It is better for thee to enter into lyfe with one eye, [rather] then, hauyng two eyes, to be cast into hell fyre.

10 Take heede that ye despise not one of these litle ones: For I say vnto you, that in heaue their Angels do

always beholde the face of my father, which is in heauen.

11 < For the sonne of man, is come to saue that which was lost.

[Page]

12 Howe thynke ye? [Note: Luk.xv.b. ] If a man haue an hundred sheepe, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leaue ninetie & nine, and goeth into the mountaynes, and seketh that which went astray?

13 And yf it so be that he fynde it, veryly I say vnto you, he reioyceth more of that sheepe, then of the ninetie and nine, which went not astray.

14 Euen so, it is not the wyll of your father in heauen, that one of these litle ones shoulde peryshe.

C

15 < Moreouer, [Note: Luk.xvii.a. Leui.xix.d. Eccle.xix.b. ] yf thy brother trespas agaynst thee, go and tell hym his faulte betwene thee and hym alone: If he heare thee, thou hast wonne thy brother.

16 But yf he heare thee not, then take yet with thee one or two: that [Note: Deut.xix.d ii Cor.xiii.a Heb.x.f. ] in the mouth of two or three witnesses, euery worde may be stablyshed.

17 If he heare not them, tell it vnto the Churche: If he heare not the Churche, let hym be vnto thee as an Heathen man, and a publicane.

18 Ueryly I say vnto you: [Note: Mar.xvi.c. ] Whatsoeuer ye bynde on earth, shalbe bounde in heauen: And whatsoeuer ye loose on earth, shalbe loosed in heauen.

19 Agayne, truely I say vnto you, that if two of you agree in earth, as touching any thyng that they shall aske, it shalbe done for them, of my father, which is in heauen.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the myddes of them.

21 Then came Peter to hym, and sayde: Lorde howe oft shall my brother sinne agaynst me, and I forgeue hym? tyll seuen tymes?

22 Iesus sayth vnto hym, I say not vnto thee vntyll seuen tymes: but, vntyll seuentie tymes seuen. >

D

23 < Therefore is the kyngdome of heauen, lykened vnto a certayne man, that was a kyng, which woulde take accomptes of his seruauntes.

24 And when he had begunne to reckon, one was brought vnto hym, which ought hym ten thousande talentes.

25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his Lorde commaunded hym to be solde, and his wyfe, and chyldren, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

26 The seruaunt fell downe, & besought hym, saying: Lorde, haue pacience with me, and I wyll pay thee all.

27 Then the Lorde of that seruaunt, moued with pitie, loosed hym, and forgaue hym the debt.

28 But the same seruaunt went out, and founde one of his felowes, which ought hym an hundred pence: and he layde handes on hym, and toke hym by the throte, saying: pay me that thou owest.

29 And his felowe fel downe at his feete, and besought him, saying: haue pacience with me, and I wyll pay thee all.

30 And he woulde not: but went, and cast hym into prison, tyll he shoulde pay the debt.

31 So, when his felowes sawe what was done, they were very sory: & came, and tolde vnto their Lorde all that was done.

32 Then his Lorde called hym, and sayd vnto him: O thou vngracious seruaunt, I forgaue thee all that debt, when thou desiredst me:

33 Shouldest not thou also, haue had compassion on thy felowe, euen as I had pitie on thee?

34 And his Lorde was wroth, and delyuered hym to the tormentours, tyll he shoulde pay all that was due vnto him.

35 So [Note: Iacob.ii.c. Math.vi.b. Mark.xi.d. ] lykewyse, shall my heauenly father do also vnto you, yf ye from your heartes, forgeue not, euery one his brother, their trespasses. >

## ¶ The .xix. Chapter.

¶ 3 Christe geueth aunswere concernyng maryage, 21 and teacheth, not to be carefull, 22 nor to loue worldly riches.

A  
1 **And** it came to passe, [Note: Mark.x.a. ] that when Iesus had finished these sayinges, he gat hym from Galilee, and came into the coastes of Iurie, beyonde Iordane:

2 And great multitudes folowed hym: and he healed them there.

3 The pharisees also came vnto hym, temptyng hym, and saying vnto hym: Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wyfe, for euery cause?

[Page]

4 He aunswered and sayde vnto them: Haue ye not read, that he which created at the begynnyng, [Note: Gen.xii.d. Ephe.v.g. 1.Cor.vi.d. ] made them male and female,

5 And sayde: For this cause, shall a man leaue father and mother, and shall be knit to his wyfe: and they twayne shall be one fleshe.

6 Wherefore, they are no more twayne, but one fleshe. Let not man therefore put a sunder, that which God hath coupled together.

7 They say vnto hym: why did Moyses then commaunde to geue a writyng of diuorcement, and to put her away?

8 He sayde vnto them: Moyses, because of the hardnes of your heartes, suffred you to put away your wyues: But from the begynnyng it was not so.

9 [Note: Deut.24.a. Iere.iii.a. Mala.ii.d. Math.v.a. Mark.x.b. Luk.xvi.d. ] I say vnto you: whosoeuer putteth away his wyfe, except it be for fornication, and maryeth another, committeth adulterie: And who so maryeth her which is diuorced, doth comit adulterie.

B

10 His disciples say vnto hym: If the matter be so betwene man and wyfe, [then] is it not good to mary.

11 He sayde vnto them: all men can not receaue this saying, [Note: Sapi.ii.e. ] saue they to whom it is geuen.

12 For there are some chaste, which are so borne, out of their mothers wombe: And there are some chaste, which be made chaste of me: And there be chaste, which haue made themselues chaste, for the kyngdome of heauens sake. He that is able to receaue [it], let him receaue [it].

13 [Note: Mark.x.b. Luk.xviii.d ] Then were there brought vnto hym young chyldren, that he shoulde put his handes on them, and pray: And the disciples rebuked them.

14 But Iesus sayde vnto them: suffer the young chyldren, and forbyd them not to come vnto me: for of such, is the kyngdome of heauen.

15 And when he had put his handes on them, he departed thence.

16 And beholde, one came, and sayde vnto hym: [Note: Mark.x.a. Luk.xviii.d ] good maister, what good thyng shall I do, that I may haue eternall lyfe?

C

17 He sayde vnto hym: why callest thou me good? [Note: Psal.cxii.c. ] there is none good but one, [and that is] God. But yf thou wylt enter into lyfe, kepe the commaundementes.

18 He sayth vnto hym: Which? Iesus sayde: [Note: Exod.xix.e Deut.v.b. ] Thou shalt do no murther, Thou shalt not commit adulterie, Thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witnesse,

19 Honour father and mother: [Note: Rom.xiii.c. Galathi.v.c. ] and thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

20 The young man sayth vnto hym: All these [thynges] haue I kept, from my youth vp: what lacke I yet?

21 Iesus sayde vnto hym: yf thou wylt be perfect, [Note: Mark.x.e. Luk.xii.d. Math.vi.c. ] go & sell that thou hast, and geue to the poore, & thou shalt haue treasure in heauen: and come & folowe me.

22 But when the young man hearde that saying, he went away sory: For he had great possessions.

23 Then Iesus sayde vnto his disciples: Ueryly I say vnto you, [Note: Mark.x.c. Luk.xviii.e. ] that a riche [man] shall hardly enter into the kyngdome of heauen.

24 And agayne I say vnto you: it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a nedle, then for the riche, to enter into the kyngdome of God.

25 When the disciples hearde this, they were exceadyngly amazed, saying: who then can be saued?

26 But Iesus behelde them, and sayde vnto them: with men this is vnpossible, [Note: Zach.vii.b ] but with God all thynges are possible.

D

27 < Then aunswered Peter, and sayde vnto hym: Beholde, [Note: Math.iiii.d Mark.x.d. Luk.xviii.f. ] we haue forsaken all, and folowed thee, what shall we haue therfore?

28 Iesus sayde vnto them: veryly I say vnto you, that when the sonne of man shall syt in the throne of his maiestie, ye that haue folowed me in the regeneration, [Note: Luk.xxii.c. Deut.33 b. ] shall syt also vpon twelue seates, and iudge the twelue tribes of Israel.

29 And euery one that forsaketh house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wyfe, or chyldren, or landes, for my names sake, [Note: Iob.xlii.c. ] shall receaue an hundred folde, and shall inherite euerlastyng lyfe. >

30 [Note: Math.xx b Luk.xiii.c ] But many that are first, shalbe last, and the last, shalbe first.

[Page]

## ¶ The .xx. Chapter.

¶ 1 Christe teacheth by a similitude, that God is detter vnto no man. 20 He teacheth his disciples to be lowly, 30 and geueth two blynd men their syght.

A

1 < **For** the kyngdome of heauen is lyke vnto a man, that is an householder, whiche went out earlye in the mornyng to hire labourers into his vineyarde.

2 And he agreed with the labourers for a peny a day, & sent them into his vineyarde.

3 And he went out about the thirde houre, and sawe other standyng idle in the market place,

4 And saide vnto them: Go ye also into ye vineyard, & whatsoeuer is right, I wyl geue you. And they went their way.

5 Agayne, he went out about the sixth and nynth houre, and dyd lykewyse.



6 And about the eleuenth houre, he wet out, and founde other standyng idle, and saide vnto them: why stande ye here all the day idle?

7 They saye vnto him: because no man hath hyred vs. He sayth vnto them: go ye also into the vineyarde, and whatsoeuer is ryght, that shall ye receaue.

8 So, when euen was come, the lorde of the vineyard sayth vnto his steward: Call the labourers, and geue them their hire, beginning at ye last, vntyll the first.

9 And when they came, that [were hired] about the eleuenth houre, they receaued euery man a peny.

B  
10 But when the firste came also, they supposed that they shoulde haue receaued more: and they lykewyse receaued euery man a peny.

11 And when they had receaued it, they murmured against the good man of the house,

12 Saying: These laste haue wrought but one houre, & thou hast made them equall vnto vs, whiche haue borne the burthen and heate of the day.

13 But he aunswered to one of the, & said: Frende, I do thee no wrong: dyddest thou not agree with me for a peny?

14 Take that thyne is, and go thy way: I wyll geue vnto this last, euen as vnto thee.

15 Is it not lawfull for me, to do that I wyll with myne owne? Is thyne eye euyll, because I am good?

16 [Note: Mat.xix.d. Mark.x.e. Luk.xiii.f. ] So the last, shalbe the first, & the first [shalbe] last: For many be called, but fewe [be] chosen. >

C  
17 < And Iesus, goyng vp to Hierusale, toke the twelue disciples asyde in the way, and sayde vnto them:

18 [Note: Mark.ix.e. Luk.xviii.c ] Beholde, we go vp to Hierusalem, and the sonne of man shalbe betrayed vnto the chiefe priestes, and vnto the scribes, and they shall condempne hym to death:

19 And shall deliuer him to the Gentiles to be mocked, and to be scourged, and to be crucified: and the thirde day, he shall ryse agayne.

20 [Note: Mark.x.e. ] < Then came to hym the mother of Zebedees chyldren, with her sonnes, worshyppying hym, and desiryng a certayne thyng of hym.

21 And he sayth vnto her: what wylt thou? She saith vnto him: graunt, that these my two sonnes may syt, the one on thy ryght hande, and the other on the left, in thy kyngdome.

D  
22 But Iesus aunswered, and saide: Ye wote not what ye aske. Are ye able to drynke of the cuppe that I shall drynke of? and to be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with? They say vnto hym: we

are able.

23 He sayth vnto them: Ye shall drynke in deede of my cuppe, and be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with: But to syt on my ryght hande, & on my lefte, is not myne to geue, but to them for whom it is [Note: Mat.xxv.a ] prepared for of my father. >

24 [Note: Mark.x.f. ] And when the ten hearde [this], they disdayned at the two brethren.

25 But Iesus called them vnto him, and sayde: [Note: Luk.xxii.e. ] Ye know that the princes of the gentiles haue dominion ouer them: and they that are great, exercise aucthoritie vpon them.

26 It shall not be so among you: But whosoeuer wyll be great among you, let hym be your minister:

27 And who so wyl be chiefe among you, let hym be your seruaunt.

28 Euen as [Note: Mark.x.a. ] the sonne of man came, not to be ministred vnto, but to minister, and to geue his lyfe a raunsome for many. >

[Page]

29 [Note: Mark.x.g. Luk.xviii. ] And as they departed from Hierico, much people folowed hym.

30 And behold, two blind men syttyng by the waye syde, when they hearde that Iesus passed by, they cryed, saying: O Lorde, thou sonne of Daud, haue mercie on vs.

31 And the people rebuked them, because they should holde their peace. But they cryed the more, saying: haue mercy on vs, O Lorde, thou sonne of Daud.

32 And Iesus stode styll, & called them, and sayde: what wyll ye that I shall do vnto you?

33 They saye vnto hym? Lord, that our eyes may be opened.

34 So Iesus had compassion on them, and touched their eyes: and immediatly theyr eyes receaued syght. And they folowed hym.

## ¶ The .xxj. Chapter.

¶ 7 He rydeth into Hierusalem, 12 dryueth the marchauntes out of the temple, 19 curseth the fygge tree, 28 and rebuketh the pharisees with the similitude of the two sonnes, 35 and of the husbände men that slewe such as were sent vnto them.

A

1 **And** when they [Note: Mark.xi.a. Luk.xix.c. ] drewe nye vnto Hierusalem, & were come to Bethphage, vnto the mout of Oliues, the sent Iesus two disciples,

2 Saying vnto the: Go into the towne that lyeth ouer agaynste you, and anone ye shall fynde an Asse tyed, & a colt with her: loose [them and] bryng [them] vnto me.

3 And yf any man saye ought vnto you, saye ye, the Lorde hath nede of them: and strayghtway he wyll let them go.

4 All this was done, that it myght be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophete, saying:

5 [Note: Esay.lxii.d. Zach.ix.b. Iohn.xii.c. ] Tell ye the daughter of Sion: behold, thy kyng commeth vnto thee meke, and syttyng vpon an Asse, & a colt, the foale of [the Asse] vsed to the yoke.

6 The disciples went, and did as Iesus commaunded them,

7 And brought the Asse, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and set hym theron.

8 And many of the people spread their garmetes in the way. Other cut downe braunches from the trees, and strawed them in the way.

B

9 Moreouer, the multitudes that went before, & that came after, cryed, saying: Hosanna to the sonne of Daud. Blessed is he that commeth in the name of the Lorde, [Note: Luk.xix.f. Iohn.xii.b. Psal cxviii d Mark.xi.c. ] Hosanna in the hiest. >

10 < And when he was come into Hierusale, all the citie was moued, saying: who is this?

11 And the multitude saide: This is Iesus [Note: Mat.xiii.a. Luk.xix.g. ] that prophete of Nazareth in Galilee.

12 And Iesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and ouerthrewe the tables of the money changers, and the seates of them that solde doues,

13 And sayde vnto them, it is written: [Note: 3.Reg.8.d e f Esay.lvi.c. Iere.vii.c. ] My house shalbe called the house of prayer, but ye haue made it a denne of thieues.

14 And the blynde and the halt came to hym in the temple, and he healed them.

15 When the chiefe priestes and scribes sawe the wonders that he dyd, and the chyldren crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the sonne of Daud, they disdayned,

16 And sayde vnto hym: Hearest thou what these saye? But Iesus sayth vnto them, yea, haue ye neuer read: [Note: Psal.viii.a. ] Out of the mouth of babes & suckelynges thou hast ordeyned prayse?

17 And he left them, and went out of the citie, [Note: Iohn.viii.a. ] vnto Bethanie: and he lodged there. >

18 [Note: Mark.xi.c. ] In the mornyng, as he returned into the citie, he hungred.

19 [Note: Luk.xiii.b. ] And when he sawe one fygge tree in the waye, he came to it, and founde nothyng

theron but leaues only, & said vnto it: neuer fruite growe on thee henceforwarde. And anone the figge tree withered away.

20 And when his disciples sawe it, they marueyled, saying: Howe soone is the figge tree wythered away?  
[Page] c

21 Iesus aunswered, and saide vnto the: Ueryly I saye vnto you, [Note: Mat.xvii.c. Luk.xvii.a. ] yf ye haue fayth, and doubt not, ye shall not onlye do this [which is done] to the figge tree: but also, yf ye shall say vnto this mountayne, be thou remoued, and, be thou cast into the sea, it shalbe done.

22 And all thynges, whatsoever ye aske in prayer, beleuyng, ye shall receaue them.

23 [Note: Mark.xi.d. Iohn.xiiii.b xv. b.xvi.c. Mark.xi.d. Luk.xvii.a. ] < And when he was come into the temple, the chiefe priestes, & the elders of the people, came vnto hym teaching, and saye: [Note: Exod.ii c. Actes.iiii.b. and vii.d. ] By what auctoritie doest thou these thynges? and who gaue thee this power?

24 Iesus aunswered, & saide vnto them: I also wyll aske you one questio, which yf ye tell me, I in likewise wyll tell you by what auctoritie I do these thynges:

25 The baptisme of Iohn, whence was it, from heauen, or of men? And they reasoned with them selues saying: if we shall say from heauen, he wyll say vnto vs, why dyd ye not then beleue hym?

26 But yf we shall say of men, then feare we the people: [Note: Mat.xiiii.a. ] for all [men] holde Iohn as a prophete.

27 And they aunswered vnto Iesus, and sayde: we can not tell. And he saide vnto them: neither tell I you, by what auctoritie I do these thynges.

28 But what thynke you? < A man had two sonnes, and came to the firste, and saide: sonne, go and worke to day in my vineyarde.

29 He aunswered and saide, I wyll not: but afterwarde he repented, and went.

30 Then came he to the seconde, & sayde lykewyse. And he aunswered & saide, I wyll sir, and went not.

31 Whether of them twayne did the wyl of the father? And they saide vnto him, the first. Iesus sayth vnto them: Ueryly I saye vnto you, that publicanes & harlottes go into the kingdome of God, before you.

32 For [Note: Math.iii.a. ] Iohn came vnto you by the way of righteousnes, & ye beleued hym not: but publicanes & harlottes beleued him. And ye, when ye had sene [it] were not moued afterwarde with repentaunce, that ye myght haue beleued hym. >

D  
33 < Hearken another similitude. [Note: Gene.ix.e. ] There was a certayne man, an householder, which [Note: [a] Or digged Esayas.v.a. Iere.xii.c. Mark.xii.c. Luke.xx.b. ] made a vineyarde, & hedged it rounde about, and made a wynepresse in it, and buylt a towre, and let it out to husbände men: and went into a strange country.

34 And when the time of the fruite drewe neare, he sent his seruauntes to the husbände men, that they might receaue the fruites of it.

35 And the husbände men caught his seruauntes, and beatte one, killed another, and stoned another.

36 Agayne, he sent other seruauntes, mo then the first: and they dyd vnto them lykewyse.

37 But laste of all, he sent vnto them his owne sonne, saying: they wyll stande in awe of my sonne.

38 But when the husband men sawe the sonne, they sayde among them selues: [Note: Ge.xxxvii. ] this is the heire, come, let vs kyll hym, and let vs enioy his inheritaunce.

39 And they caught hym, and thrust him out of the vineyarde, and slewe [hym].

40 When the Lorde therfore of the vineyarde commeth, what wyll he do vnto those husbände men?

41 They sayde vnto hym: He wyll miserably destroy those wicked [men] & wyll let out his vineyard vnto other husband men, which shall delyuer him the fruite in due seasons.

42 Iesus sayth vnto them. Did ye neuer reade in the Scriptures: [Note: Psal.cxviii c Mark.xii.a. Luk.xx.e. i.Pet.ii.b. Actes.iiii.b. ] The stone which the buylders refused, the same is become the head of the corner. This is the Lordes doing, and it is marueylous in our eyes.

43 Therefore saye I vnto you, the kyngdome of God shalbe taken from you, & geuen to a nation bryngyng foorth the fruites therof.

44 And [Note: Zach.xii.a. ] whosoouer falleth on this stone, shalbe broken in peeces: but on [Note: Dani.ii.c. ] whomsoouer it falleth, it shal all to grynd him.

45 And when the chiefe priestes and pharisees had heard his parables, they perceaued that he spake of them.

46 [Note: Iohn.vii.d. Mark.xi.c. Luk.xix.g. and .xx.c. ] And they went about to laye handes on hym, [Note: Iohn.vii.d. Mark.xi.c. Luk.xix.g. and .xx.c. ] but they feared the multitudes, because they toke him as a prophet. [Page]

## ¶ The .xxij. Chapter.

¶ 2 The mariage of the kynges sonne, 17 Tribute to be geuen to the Emperour. 25 Christe confuteth the opinion of the Saducees concernyng the resurrection, 26 and aunswereth the Scribe vnto his question.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **And** Iesus aunswered, and spake vnto them againe by parables, and sayde:

2 < The kyngdome of heauen is lyke vnto [Note: Luk.xiiii.d. ] a man that was a kyng, which made a mariage for his sonne.

3 And sent fourth his seruauntes, to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they woulde not come.

4 Agayne, he sent fourth other seruauntes, saying: Tell them which are bidden, beholde, I haue prepared my dinner, my oxen and my fatlynges are kylled, and all thynges are redy: come vnto the mariage.

5 But they made lyght of it, and went their wayes, one to his farme, another to his marchaundize:

6 And the remnaunt toke his seruauntes, and entreated them spitefully, and slewe them.

7 But when the kyng hearde [therof], he was wroth, and sent fourth his men of warre, and destroyed those murtherers and brent vp their citie.

8 Then sayde he to his seruauntes, the mariage in dede is prepared: But they which were bidden, were not worthy.

9 Go ye therefore out into the hye wayes: and as many as ye fynde, bid [them] to the mariage.

10 And the seruauntes went out into the hye wayes, and gathered together all, as many as they coulde fynde, both good and bad: and the weddyng was furnished with ghestes.

11 Then the kyng came in, to see the ghestes: and whe he spyed there a man, which had not on a [Note: Esay.lxi.d. ] weddyng garmet,

12 He sayde vnto hym: frende, howe camest thou in hyther, not hauyng a weddyng garment? And he was euen speachlesse.

B

13 Then sayde the kyng to the ministers: bynde hym hande and foote, and cast hym into vtter darknesse: [Note: Mat.xiii.g. and .xxv.c. ] there shalbe wepyng and gnasshyng of teeth.

14 For many be called, but fewe are chosen. >

15 < [Note: Mark.xii.a. ] Then went the Pharisees, and toke councell how they myght intangle hym in his talke.

16 And they sent out vnto hym their disciples, with the Herodians seruauntes, saying: [Note: Luk.xx.d. ] Maister, we knowe that thou art true, and teachest the way of God truly, neither carest thou for any man: for thou doest not respect mens persons.

17 Tell vs therefore, howe thynekst thou? Is it lawfull that tribute be geuen vnto Caesar, or not?

C

18 But Iesus perceauyng their wickednesse, sayde: Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?

19 Shewe me the tribute money. And they brought vnto hym a peny.

20 And he sayde to them: whose is this image and superscription?

21 They say vnto hym, Caesars. Then sayde he vnto them: [Note: Mat.xvii.d Rom.xiii.d. ] Geue therfore vnto Caesar, the [thynges] which are Caesars: and vnto God, those [thynges] that are gods. >

22 When they had hearde [these wordes] they marueyled, and left hym, and went their way.

23 [Note: Mark.xii.b. Luk.xx.c. Act.xxiii b ] The same day came to hym the Saducees, which say that there is no resurrection, and asked hym,

24 Saying: Maister, Moyses sayde, that [Note: Deu.xxv b ] if a man dye, hauing no childre, his brother shoulde mary his wyfe, and rayse vp seede vnto his brother.

25 Ther were with vs seuen brethren, and the first maryed a wyfe, and deceased without issue, and left his wyfe vnto his brother.

26 Likewyse, the seconde, and the thirde, vnto the seuenth.

27 Last of all, the woman dyed also.

28 Therefore, in the resurrection, whose wyfe shall she be of the seuen? For they all had her.

29 Iesus aunswered & sayde vnto them: ye do erre, not knowyng the Scriptures, nor the power of God.

30 For in the resurrection, they neither mary, nor are geuen in maryage: but are as the Angels of God in heauen.

31 But as touchyng the resurrection [Page] of the dead: haue ye not read that which is spoken vnto you of God, which sayth.

32 [Note: Exod.iii.b. Mark.xii.c. Luk.xx.f. ] I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the lyuyng.

33 And when the multitudes hearde this, they were astonyed at his doctrine.

D

34 < But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Saducees to silence, they came together.

35 And one of them, which was a lawyer, asked hym a question, temptyng hym, and saying:

36 Maister, which is the great commaudent in the lawe?

37 Iesus sayde vnto hym: Thou shalt [Note: Deut.vi.b. ] loue the Lorde thy God with all thy heart, and with

all thy soule, and with all thy mynde.

38 This is the first and great commaundement.

39 And the seconde is lyke vnto this. [Note: Leuit.xix.d Mark.xii.c Rom.xiii.c. Gala.v.d. Iacob.ii.b. Math.v.g. ] Thou shalt loue thy neyghbour as thy selfe.

40 In these two commaundementes, hang all the lawe and the prophetes.

41 Whyle the Pharisees were gathered together, Iesus asked them,

42 Saying: what thynke ye of Christe? whose sonne is he? They sayde vnto hym [the sonne] of Daud.

43 He sayde vnto them: [Note: Mark.xii.d. ] howe then doth Daud in spirite call him Lorde, saying:

44 The Lorde sayd vnto my Lorde: [Note: Psal.cx.a. ] sit thou on my ryght hande, tyll I make thyne enemyes thy footstoole?

45 If Daud then call him Lorde, howe is he then his sonne?

46 And no man was able to aunswere hym a worde: neither durst any man (from that day fourth) aske hym any mo questions. >

## ¶ The .xxij. Chapter.

¶ 3 Christe cryeth wo to the Pharisees, Scribes and hypocrites, 37 and prophesieth the destruction of Hierusalem.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **Then** spake Iesus to the multitudes, and to his disciples,

2 Saying: [Note: Deut.xvii.b ] The Scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moyses seate.

3 All therfore, whatsoeuer they bid you obserue, that obserue and do: but do not ye after their workes, for they say, and do not.

4 [Note: Esay.x.a Luk.xi.f. ] Yea, they bynde together heauy burthens, and greeuous to be borne, and lay them on mens shoulders: but they them selues wyll not moue them with [one] of their fingers.

5 All their workes they do, for to be sene of men: They make broade their philacteries, and enlarge the hemmes of their garmentes.

6 And loue the vppermost seates at feastes, and to syt in the chiefe place in counsels,



7 And greetynge in the markettes, and to be called of men, Rabbi.

B

8 [Note: Iacob.ii.a. ] But be not ye called Rabbi: For one is your maister, [euen] Christe, and all ye are brethren.

9 And call [no man] your father, vpon the earth: for one is your father, which is in heauen.

10 Neither be ye called maisters: for one is your maister [euen] Christe.

11 He that is greatest among you, shalbe your seruaunt.

12 [Note: Luk.xiiii.e. and xviii.c. ] But whosoever exalteth hym selfe, shalbe brought lowe: And he that humbleth hym selfe, shalbe exalted. >

13 Wo vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye shut vp the kingdome of heauen before men: [Note: Luk.xi.g. ] ye neither go in your selues, neither suffer ye them that come, to enter in.

14 Wo vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye deuoure widdowes houses, and that vnder a pretence of long prayer: therefore ye shall receaue the greater dampnation.

15 Wo vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye compasse sea and lande, to make one [Note: [a] One brought from gentilitie to their religion. ] proselite: & when he is become one, ye make hym two folde more the chylde of hell, then ye your selues [are].

16 Wo be vnto you ye blynde guides: for ye say, whosoever doth sweare by the temple, it is nothyng: but whosoever sweareth by the golde of the temple, he is a [Note: [b] Both to God and to man, for to perfourme it. ] detter.

[Page]

17 Ye fooles and blynde. For whether is greater, the golde, or the temple that sanctifieth the golde?

18 And whosoever sweareth by the aulter, it is nothyng: but whosoever sweareth by the gyft that is vpon it, he is a detter.

19 Ye fooles and blynde, for whether is greater, the gyft: or the aulter that sanctifieth the gyft?

20 Who so therefore sweareth by the aulter, sweareth by it, and by all thynges thereon.

21 And who so sweareth by the temple, sweareth by it, and by hym that dwelleth therein.

C

22 [Note: Math.v.f. ] And he that sweareth by heauen, sweareth by the seate of God, and by hym that sitteth thereon.

23 Wo vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, [Note: Luk.xi.f. ] for ye tythe mynt, and annise, and cummyn: and haue left the wayghtier matters of the lawe, iudgement, mercy, and fayth. These ought ye to haue done, and not to leaue the other vndone.

24 Ye blynde guides, which strayne out a gnat, and swalowe a Camel.

25 Wo vnto you Scribes and Pharisees hypocrites: for ye make cleane the vtter syde of the cup, & of the platter: but within they are full of brybery & excesse.

26 Thou blynde Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outsyde of them may be cleane also.

27 [Note: Luk.xi.f. ] Wo vnto you Scribes and Pharisees hypocrites: for ye are lyke vnto paynted sepulchres, which in dede appeare beautifull outwarde, but are within full of dead [mens] bones, and of all fylthyne.

28 Euen so, ye also, outwardly appeare ryghteous vnto men: But within, ye are full of hypocrisie and iniquitie.

D

29 [Note: Luk.xi.g. ] Wo vnto you Scribes and Pharisees hypocrites: ye builde the tombes of the Prophetes, and garnishe the sepulchres of the ryghteous:

30 And say, yf we had ben in the dayes of our fathers, we woulde not haue ben parteners with them in the blood of the prophetes.

31 And so [Note: i.Thes.ii.c. ] ye be witnesses vnto your selues, that ye are the chyldren of them which kylled the prophetes.

32 Fulfill ye lykewyse, the measure of your fathers.

33 Ye serpentes, ye generation of vipers, howe wyll ye escape the dampnation of hell?

34 < Wherefore, beholde [Note: Math.x.b. Luk.xi.g. Iohn.xvi.a. Actes.v.c and .vii.a. ] I sende vnto you prophetes, and wyse men, and Scribes, and [some] of them ye shall kyl and crucifie: and [some] of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from citie to citie.

35 That vpon you may come all the ryghteous blood, which hath ben shed vpon the earth, from the blood of ryghteous Abel, vnto the blood of Zacharias, sonne of Barachias, [Note: Gen.iii.b. 2 Pa.xxiiii.f. ] whom ye slewe betwene the temple & the aulter.

36 Ueryly I say vnto you: all these thynges shal come vpon this generatio.

37 [Note: Luk.xiii.g. ] O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, thou that kyllest the prophetes, and stonest them which are sent vnto thee: Howe often woulde [Note: iii.Esd.i.c. ] I haue gathered thy chyldren together, euen as the henne gathereth her chickens vnder her wynges, and ye woulde not?

38 Beholde, [Note: Psal.ix.f. ] your house is left vnto you desolate.

39 For I say vnto you: ye shall not see me hencefoorth, tyll that ye say, [Note: Psa.cxviii.d Luk.xix.f. ] blessed

[is he] that commeth in the name of the Lorde. >

## The .xxiiij. Chapter.

¶ 1 Christe sheweth his disciples the destruction of the temple, 6. 29 the ende of the worlde, and the tokens of the later dayes, 42 and warneth them to wake, 44 for the worlde shall sodaynely peryshe.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **And** Iesus went out, and departed from the temple: and [Note: Mark.xiii.a Luk.xxi.a. ] his disciples came to hym, for to shewe hym the buildynges of the temple.

2 Iesus sayde vnto them: See ye not all these thynges? Ueryly I say vnto you [Note: Luk.xix.e. ] there shall not be here left [one] stone vpon another, that shall not be destroyed.

3 **And** as he sat vpon a mount of Oliues, his disciples came vnto hym secretly, saying: Tell vs, when shall these thynges be? & what shall be the token of thy commyng, & of the ende of the worlde?

[Page]

4 **And** Iesus aunswered, and sayde vnto them: [Note: Collos.ii.b. Ephe.v.b. ] take heede, that no man deceaue you.

5 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christe: and shall deceaue many.

6 Ye shal heare of warres, & rumours of warres: See that you be not troubled. For all [these thynges] must come to passe, but the ende is not yet.

7 [Note: 4.Esd.13.c. ] Nation shall ryse agaynst nation, and realme agaynst realme: and there shalbe pestilence, and famine, and earthquakes, in [certayne] places.

8 All these are the begynnynges of sorowes.

9 [Note: Math.x.b. Mar.xiii.b. Luk.xxi.c. Iohn.xvi.a. ] Then shall they put you to trouble, and shall kyll you, and ye shalbe hated of all nations for my names sake.

10 **And** then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

11 **And** many false prophetes shall aryse, and shall deceaue many.

12 [Note: 4.Esd.14.b. ] **And** because iniquitie shall abounde, the loue of many shall waxe colde.

13 [Note: Math.x.e. ] **But** he that endureth to the ende, the same shalbe saued.

<sup>B</sup>

14 [Note: Mar.xiii.b. ] **And** this Gospell of the kyngdome, shalbe preached in all the worlde, for a wisse vnto all nations: and then shall the ende come.

15 [Note: Mark.xiii.d Luk.xxi.d. ] When ye therefore, shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by [Note: Daniel.ix.g. ] Daniel the prophete, stande in the holy place, (who so readeth, let hym vnderstande.)

16 Then let them which be in Iurie, flee into the mountaynes:

17 And let hym which is on the house toppe, not come downe to fet any thyng out of his house:

18 Neither let hym which is in the field, returne backe to fetch his clothes.

19 Wo shalbe in those dayes, to them that are with chylde, and to them that geue sucke.

20 But pray [ye] that your flyght be not in the Winter, neither on the Sabboth day:

21 For then shalbe great tribulation, [Note: Dan.xii.a. ] such as was not since the begynnyng of the worlde, to this tyme, nor shalbe.

22 Yea, and except those dayes shoulde be shortened, there shoulde no fleshe be saued: but for the chosens sake, those dayes shalbe shortened.

23 [Note: Mark.xiii.c Luk.xvii.e. ] Then yf any man saye vnto you: lo, here is Christe, or there: beleue it not.

24 For there shall aryse false Christes, and false prophetes, [Note: ii.Tes.ii.b. Deut.xiii.a. ] and shall shewe great signes, and wonders: In so much, that yf it were possible, the very elect, shoulde be deceaued.

25 Beholde, I haue tolde you before.

26 Wherefore, yf they say vnto you, beholde, he is in the desert: go not fourth. Beholde, he is in the secrete places: beleue it not.

C  
27 For as the lyghtnyng commeth out of the east, and shineth into the west: so shall the commyng of the sonne of man be.

28 [Note: Iob.39.d. Luk.xvii.g. Mar.xiii.c. Luk.xxi.e. Ioel.ii.c. ] For whersoever a dead carkas is, euen there wyll the Egles also be gathered together.

29 Immediatly after the tribulation of those dayes, shal the sunne be darkened, and the moone shall not geue her lyght, and the starres shall fall from heauen, and the powers of heauen shalbe shaken.

30 And then shall appeare the signe of the sonne of man, in heauen: And then shall all the kynredes of the earth mourne, and they shall [Note: Actes.i.b. ] see the sonne of man comming in the cloudes of heauen, with power and great glory.

31 [Note: Dan.xii.a. i.Thes.4.d. ] And he shall sende his Angels, with the great sounde of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his chosen, from the foure wyndes, euen from one ende of heauen, to the other.

32 [Note: Mark.xiii.c Luk.xxi.f. ] Learne a parable of the fygge tree: when his braunche is yet tender, and the leaues sprong, ye knowe that somer is nye:

33 So lykewyse ye, when ye see all these thynges, be ye sure that it is neare, euen at the doores.

34 Ueryly I say vnto you: this generation shall not passe, tyll all these thynges be fulfilled.

35 [Note: Esay.ii.b. Esay.xl.c. Math.v.c. Actes.i.a. ] Heauen and earth shall passe away [Note: Esay.ii.b. Esay.xl.c. Math.v.c. Actes.i.a. ] but my wordes shall not passe away.

36 But of that day and houre knoweth no man, no not the Angels of heauen, but my father only.  
D

37 [Note: Gen.vii.d. Luk.xvii.f. ] But as the dayes of Noe were, so shall also the commyng of the sonne of man be.

38 For as in the dayes [that went] before [Page] the fludde, they dyd eate, and drynke, marry, and geue in maryage, euen vntyll the day that Noe entred into the Arke:

39 And knewe not, tyll the fludde came, and toke them all away: So shall also the commyng of the sonne of man be.

40 Then shall two be in the felde, the one receaued, and the other refused.

41 [Note: Luk.xvii.g. ] Two [women] shalbe gryndyng at the myll, the one receaued, and the other refused.

42 [Note: Mat.xxv.b Mark.xiii.d Luk.xii.c. ] Watch therefore, for ye knowe not what houre your Lorde doth come.

43 Of this yet be sure, that yf the good man of the house, knewe what watche [Note: Apo.xvi.c. ] the thiefe woulde come, he woulde surely watche, and not suffer his house to be broken vp.

44 Therefore, be ye also redy: for in such an houre as ye thynke not, the sonne of man commeth.

45 Who is a faythfull and wise seruaunt, whom his Lorde hath made ruler ouer his householde, to geue them meate in season.

46 Blessed is that seruaunt, whom his Lorde when he commeth, shall fynde so doyng.

47 Ueryly I say vnto you, that he shall make hym ruler ouer all his goodes.

48 But and yf that euyll seruaunt say in his heart, my Lorde wyll be long a commyng:

49 And so begyn to smyte his felowes, yea, and to eate and drynke with the dronken:

50 The same seruauntes Lorde shall come in a day, when he loketh not for hym, and in an houre that he is not ware of:

51 And shall hewe hym in peeces, & geue hym his portion with hypocrites: there shalbe wepyng and gnasshyng of teeth.

## ¶ The .xxv. Chapter.

¶ 1 The ten virgins, 14 the talentes delyuered to the seruauntes, 32 and of the generall iudgement.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 < **Then** shall the kyngdome of heauen be lykened vnto ten virgins, which toke their lampes, and went to meete the brydegrome.

2 But fyue of them were foolyshe, and fyue were wyse.

3 They that were foolyshe, toke their lampes, but toke none oyle with them:

4 But the wise, toke oyle in their vessels, with their lampes also.

5 Whyle the brydegrome taryed, they all slumbred and slept.

6 And euen at mydnyght, there was a crye made: beholde, the brydegrome commeth, go out to meete hym.

7 Then all those virgins arose, and prepared their lampes.

8 So the foolyshe sayde vnto the wyse: geue vs of your oyle, for our lampes are gone out.

<sup>B</sup>  
9 But the wyse aunswered, saying: [not so] lest there be not inough for vs & you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and bye for your selues.

10 And whyle they went to bye, the brydegome came: and they that were redy, went in with hym, to ye maryage, and the gate was shut vp.

11 Afterwarde came also the other virgins, saying: [Note: Math.vii.c. ] Lorde, Lorde, open to vs.

12 But he aunswered and sayde: veryly I say vnto you, I knowe you not.

13 [Note: Ma.xxiiii.d. Mark.xiii.d. Luk.xii.c. ] Watch therefore, for ye knowe neither the day, nor yet the houre, wherin the sonne of man shall come. >

14 < [Note: Mark.xiii.d Luk.xix.b. ] Lykewyse, as a [certayne] man, redy to take his iourney into a straunge

country, called his owne seruauntes, and delyuered vnto them his goodes.

15 And vnto one, he gaue fyue talentes, to another two, and to another one: to euery man after his habitie, & strayght way departed.

16 Then he that had receaued the fyue talentes, went, and occupied with the same, & made [them] other fyue talentes.

17 And lykewyse, he [that receaued] two: he also gayned other two.

18 But he that receaued that one, went and digged in the earth, and hyd his Lordes money.

19 After a long season, the Lorde of those seruauntes commeth, and reckeneth with them.

20 And so, he that had receaued fyue talentes, came, and brought other fyue [Page] talentes, saying: Lorde, thou delyueredst vnto me fyue talentes, beholde, I haue gayned with them fyue talentes mo.

21 His Lorde saide vnto him: Well done, thou good and faythfull seruaunt. Thou hast ben faythfull ouer fewe thynges, I wyll make thee ruler ouer manye thynges: enter thou into the ioy of thy Lorde.

22 He also that had receaued two talentes, came, and sayde: Lorde thou delyueredst vnto me two talentes, beholde, I haue wonne two other taletes with them.

23 His Lorde saide vnto him? Well done, good and faithfull seruaunt. Thou hast ben faythfull ouer fewe thynges, I wyl make thee ruler ouer many thynges: enter thou into the ioy of thy Lorde. >

C

24 Then he which had receaued the one talent, came, and saide: Lorde I knew thee, that thou art an harde man, reapyng where thou hast not sowen, & gatheryng where thou hast not strowed.

25 And [therefore] was I afrayde, & went and hid thy talent in the earth: loe, there thou hast that thyne is.

26 His Lorde aunswered, and sayde vnto hym: Thou euyll and slouthfull seruaunt, thou knewest that I reape where I sowed not, and gather where I haue not strowed,

27 Thou oughtest therefore to haue delyuered my money to the exchaungers, and then at my commyng shoulde I haue receaued myne owne with vauntage.

28 Take therefore the talent from hym, and geue it vnto hym whiche hath ten talentes.

29 [Note: Math.xiii.c Mark.iii.c. ] For vnto euery one that hath, shalbe geuen, and he shall haue aboundaunce: But he that hath not, from hym shalbe taken away, euen that which he hath.

30 And cast the vnprofitable seruaunt into vtter darknesse, [Note: Math.xiii g and. xxii.b. ] there shalbe wepyng, and gnasshyng of teeth.

31 < [Note: i.Thess.i.b. ] When the sonne of man shall come in his glorie, and all the holy Angels with hym, then shall he sitte vpon the throne of his glorie.

32 And before hym shalbe gathered all nations: [Note: Eze.xxxiiii ] and he shall separte them one from another, as a shepheard deuideth his sheepe from the goates.

33 And he shall set the sheepe on his right hande, but the goates on the left.

34 Then shall the king say vnto them on his right hande: Come ye blessed of my father, inherite the kyngdome, [Note: Math.xx.d. ] prepared for you from the foundation of the worlde.

35 [Note: Esay.lviii.b. Ezech.xviii.a ] For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me meate: I was thirstie, and ye gaue me drynke: I was harbourlesse, and ye toke me in:

36 Naked, and ye clothed me: Sicke, and ye visited me: [Note: Eccle.vii.d. ii.Tim.i.d. ] I was in pryson, and ye came vnto me.

D  
37 Then shall the ryghteous aunswere hym, saying: Lorde, when sawe we thee an hungred, & fedde thee? or thirstie and gaue thee drynke?

38 When sawe we thee harbourlesse, and toke thee in? or naked, and clothed thee?

39 Or when sawe we thee sicke, or in prison, and came vnto thee?

40 And the kyng shall aunswere, and say vnto them: Ueryly I say vnto you, in as much as ye haue done it vnto one of the least of these my brethren, ye haue done [it] vnto me.

41 Then shall he saye vnto them on the left hande: Depart from me ye cursed [Note: Psal.vi.d. Math.vii.d. Luk.xiii.f. Esay.xxx.g Dani. vii.d. ] into euerlasting fire, which is prepared for the deuyll and his angels.

42 For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me no meate: I was thirstie, and ye gaue me no drynke.

43 I was harbourlesse, and ye toke me not in: I was naked, and ye clothed me not: I was sicke, and in prison, and ye visited me not.

44 Then shall they also aunswere hym, saying: Lorde, when sawe we thee an hungred, or a thirstie, or harbourlesse, or naked, or sicke, or in pryson, and did not minister vnto thee?

45 Then shall he aunswere them, saying: Ueryly I say vnto you, in as much [Note: Prou.xiii.e. and .xvii.a. ] as ye dyd it not to one of the least of these, ye dyd it not to me.

46 And [Note: Iohn.v.c. ] these shall go into euerlastyng payne: the ryghteous into lyfe eternall. >  
[Page]



## ¶ The .xxvj. Chapter.

¶ 10 Marie Magdalene annoynted Christe. 26 They eate the Easter lambe. 31 Christe prayeth in the garden, 48 Iudas betrayeth hym, 62 Peter smyteth of Malchus eare, 64 Christe is accused by false witnesses, 69 Peter denyeth hym.

A

1 **And** it came to passe, when Iesus had finished all these sayinges, he sayde vnto his disciples:

2 < [Note: Math.xiii.a Luk.xxii.a. ] Ye knowe, yt after two dayes is ye feast of Passouer, and the sonne of man is betrayed, to be crucified.

3 [Note: Iohn.xi.f. ] Then assembled together the chiefe priestes, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, vnto the palace of the hye prieste, which was called Caiaphas:

4 And helde a councell, that they might take Iesus by subiltie, and kyll hym.

5 But they sayde: Not on the feast [day] lest there be an vprore among ye people.

6 When [Note: Mar.xiiii.a. Iohn.xii.a. ] Iesus was in Bethanie, in the house of Simon the leper,

7 There came vnto him a woman, [Note: Luk.vii.f. ] hauing an Alabaster boxe of precious oyntment, and powred it on his head, as he sate [at the boorde.]

8 But when his disciples sawe it, they had indignation, saying: to what purpose [is] this waste?

9 This oyntment might haue ben well solde, and geuen to the poore.

10 When Iesus vnderstode that, he saide vnto them: Why trouble ye the woma? for she hath wrought a good worke vppon me.

11 [Note: Deut.xv.b. ] For ye haue the poore alwayes with you: but me shall ye not haue alwayes.

12 For in that she hath cast this oyntment on my body, she dyd it to bury me.

13 Ueryly I say vnto you, wheresoeuer this Gospell shalbe preached in the world, there shall also this that she hath done, be tolde for a memoriall of her.

B

14 [Note: Mar.xiiii.b. Luk.xxii.a. Ioh.xii.a. ] Then one of the twelue, called Iudas Iscariot, wet vnto ye chiefe priestes,

15 And sayde [vnto them:] What wyll ye geue me, and I wyll delyuer hym vnto you? And they appoynted vnto hym thirtie peeces of syluer.

16 And from that tyme foorth, he sought oportunitie to betray hym.

17 [Note: Mar.xiiii.b. Luk.xxiii.a ] The first day of sweete bread, the disciples came to Iesus, saying vnto him: Where wylt thou that we prepare for thee, to eate the Passouer?

18 And he saide: Go into the citie, to such a man, and say vnto hym, the maister sayth, my tyme is at hand, I wyll kepe the Passouer at thy house, with my disciples.

19 And the disciples dyd as Iesus had appoynted them: and they made redye the Passouer.

20 [Note: Mar.xiiii.c Luk.xii.b. ] When the euen was come, he sate downe with the twelue.

21 And as they dyd eate, he sayde: Ueryly I say vnto you, that [Note: Iohn.xiii.c ] one of you shall betray me.

22 And they were exceedyng sorowfull, and began euery one of them to say vn hym, Lorde is it I?

23 He aunswered, and saide: He that dippeth his hand with me in the disshe, the same shall betray me.  
C

24 [Note: Psal.xli.b. ] The sonne of man truely goeth, as it is writte of him: but wo vnto that man by whom the sonne of man is betrayed: It had ben good for that man, yf he had not ben borne.

25 Then Iudas, which betrayed [hym] aunswered and sayde: Maister, is it I? He sayde vnto hym, thou hast sayde.

26 When they were eatyng, Iesus toke bread, and when he had geuen thankes, he brake [it,] and gaue [it] to the disciples, and saide: [Note: i.Cor.xi.c Luk.xxii.b. Mar.xiiii.c. ] Take, eate, this is my body.

27 And he toke the cuppe, and after he had geuen thankes, gaue it them, saying: Drinke ye all of this,

28 For this is my blood, whiche [is] of the newe testament, that is shedde for many, for the remission of sinnes.

29 But I say vnto you, I wyll not drinke henceforth of this fruite of the vine tree, [Page] vntyll that day when I shall drynke it newe with you, in my fathers kyngdome.

30 [Note: Mark.xiiii c. ] And when they hadde praysed [God] they wet out vnto the mount of Oliues.

31 Then sayth Iesus vnto them: All ye shalbe offeded because of me this night. For it is written: [Note: Zach.xiii.c. Mark.xiiii c ] I wyll smyte the shepherde, and the sheepe of the flocke shalbe scattered abrode.

32 But after I am rysen againe, I wyll go before you into Galilee.

33 Peter aunswered, and said vnto him: [Note: Mar.xiiii.c. Luk.xxii.d. ] though all men be offended, because of thee, yet wyll I neuer be offended.

34 Iesus sayde vnto hym: Ueryly I say vnto thee, that in this same nyght, before the Cocke crowe, thou shalt denie me thryse.

35 Peter sayde vnto hym: Though I shoulde dye with thee, yet wyll I not denie thee. Lykewyse also sayde all the disciples.

D

36 [Note: Mar.xiiii.d. ] Then came Iesus with them vnto a place, which is called Gethsemane, and sayde vnto the disciples: Sit ye here, whyle I go and pray yonder.

37 And he toke with him Peter, and the two sonnes of Zebedee, and began to waxe sorowfull and heauy.

38 Then sayde Iesus vnto them: [Note: Mar.xiiii.d Iohn.xii.b. ] My soule is heauy, euen vnto the death, tary ye here, and watche with me.

39 And he went a litle farther, and fell flat on his face, and prayed, saying: O my father, if it be possible, [Note: Luk.xxii.d. Mark.xiii.d ] let this cuppe passe from me: Neuerthelesse, not as I wyll, but as thou wylt.

40 And he came vnto the disciples, and founde them a slepe, and sayth vnto Peter: What, coulde ye not watche with me one houre?

41 Watche, and praye, that ye enter not into temptation: [Note: Galath.v.c. ] The spirite in deede is wylling, but the fleshe is weake.

42 [Note: Mar.xiiii.c. ] He went away once againe, & prayed, saying: O my father, if this cuppe may not passe away fro me, except I drinke it, thy wyll be fulfilled.

43 And he came, and founde them a slepe agayne: for, their eyes were heauy.

44 And he left them, and went agayne, and prayed the thirde tyme, saying the same wordes.

E

45 Then commeth he to his disciples, and sayth vnto them: Slepe hencefoorth, & take your rest, beholde, the houre is at hande, and the sonne of man is betrayed into the handes of synners.

46 Ryse, let vs be goyng: beholde, he is at hande that doth betray me.

47 [Note: Mar.xiiii.c. Luk.xxii.c. ] Whyle he yet spake, loe Iudas, one of the twelue, came, and with hym a great multitude, with swordes & stauers, from the chiefe priestes and elders of the people.

48 But he that betrayed him, gaue them a token, saying: Whomsoeuer I kysse, that same is he, holde hym fast.

49 And fourthwith, he came to Iesus, and sayde, haile maister: and kyssed hym.

50 And Iesus sayde vnto hym: Frende, wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and layed handes on Iesus, and toke hym.

51 And beholde, one of them which were with Iesus, stretched out his hande, and drewe his sworde, and stroke a seruaunt of the hie priestes, and smote of his eare.

52 Then saide Iesus vnto hym: Put vp thy sworde into his sheathe. [Note: Genes.ix.a. Ioh.xviii.b. Apoc.xiii.c Ezech.xi.b. ] For all they that take the sworde, shall peryshe with the sworde.

53 Thynkest thou that I can not nowe pray to my father, and he shall geue me more then twelue legions of Angels?

54 But howe then shall the scriptures be fulfilled? For [Note: Lu.xxiiii.d. ] thus must it be.

55 In that same houre, sayde Iesus to the multitudes: [Note: Mar.xiiii.f. Luk.xxii.f. ] Ye be come out, as it were vnto a thiefe, with swordes and staues, for to take me. I sate dayly with you, teachyng in the temple, and ye toke me not.

F

56 [Note: Psal.xxi. and .lxix. ] But all this is done, that the scriptures of the prophetes myght be fulfilled. [Note: Mar.xiiii.f. Luk.xxii.f. Ioh.xviii.e. ] Then all the disciples forsoke him, and fledde.

57 And they toke Iesus, and ledde hym to Caiaphas the hie prieste, where the scribes and the elders were assembled.

58 But Peter folowed hym a farre of, vnto the hie priestes palace, and went in, and sate with the seruautes to see the ende.

59 [Note: Mar.xiiii.f. Actes.vi.d. ] The chiefe priestes, and elders, and all the councell, sought false witnessse agaynst Iesus, for to put hym to death,

60 But founde none: yea, when many false witnesses came, yet founde they none. At the last, came two false witnesses,

[Page]

61 And sayde: This [felowe] sayde: [Note: Mar.xiiii.f. Iohn.ii.d. ] I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to buylde it agayne in three dayes.

62 [Note: Mar.xiiii.f. ] And the chiefe priest arose, and sayde vnto hym: Aunswerest thou nothyng? Why do these beare witnessse agaynst thee?

63 But Iesus helde his peace. [Note: Mar.xiiii.f. ] And the chiefe priest aunswered, and sayde vnto hym: I charge thee by the liuing God, that thou tel vs, whether thou be Christ the sonne of God?

64 Iesus saith vnto him: thou hast said. Neuerthelesse, I saye vnto you, [Note: Mar.xiiii.g Luk.xxii.g ] hereafter shall ye see the sonne of man sitting on the ryght hande of power, and commyng in the cloudes of the skye.

G

65 [Note: Mar.xiiii.g. ] Then the hie priest rent his clothes, saying: He hath spoken blasphemie, what nede we of any mo witnesses? Beholde, now ye haue hearde his blasphemie,

66 What thynke ye? They aunswered and sayde: he is worthy to dye.

67 [Note: Esay.i.c. ] Then dyd they spyt in his face, and buffeted hym with fistes. And other smote hym on his face with the paulme of their handes,

68 Saying: prophecie vnto vs, O Christ, who is he that smote thee?

69 Peter sate without in the palace: And a damsell came to hym, saying, Thou also wast with Iesus of Galilee.

70 But he denied before them all, saying: I wote not what thou sayest.

71 When he was gone out into the porch, another wenche sawe hym, and sayde vnto them that were there: This felowe was also with Iesus of Nazareth.

72 And agayne he denyed with an oth: I do not knowe the man.

73 And after a whyle, came vnto hym they that stode by, and sayde vnto Peter: [Note: Mar.xiiii.g. Luk.xxii.g. Ioh.xviii.c. ] Surely thou art euen one of them, for thy speache bewrayeth thee.

74 Then began he to curse, & to sweare, that he knewe not the man. And immediatly [Note: Mat.xxvi.c ] the Cocke crewe.

75 And Peter remembred the worde of Iesu, which sayde vnto hym, before the Cocke crowe, thou shalt denie me thrise: and he went out, and wept bytterly.

## ¶ The .xxvij. Chapter.

¶ 2 Christe is delyuered vnto Pilate. 5 Iudas hangeth hym selfe. 24 Christe is crucified among thieues, 57 he dyeth, and is buried, 64 watchmen kepe the graue.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **When** the mornyng was come, [Note: Psal.ii.a. Mark.xv.a. Luk.xxiii.a ] all the chiefe priestes, and the elders of the people, helde a councell agaynst Iesus to put hym to death.

2 And brought hym bounde, [Note: Actes.iii.c. Ioh.xviii.c. ] and deliuered hym to Pontius Pilate the deputie.

3 Then Iudas, whiche had betrayed hym, seyng that he was condempned, repented hym selfe, and brought agayne the thirtie peeces of syluer, to the chiefe priestes and elders,

4 Saying: I haue synned, betraying the innocent blood. And they said: what is that to vs? see thou to that.

5 And he cast downe the peeces of siluer in the temple, and departed, [Note: 2.Reg.xvii b Actes.i.c. ] and went and hanged hym selfe.

6 And the chiefe priestes toke the peeces of syluer, and sayde: It is not lawfull for to put the into the treasurie, because it is the price of blood.

7 And they toke councell, and bought with them a potters fielde, to burye straungers in.

8 Wherefore that fielde is called the fielde of blood, vntyll this day.

9 (Then was fulfilled that, which was spoken by Ieremie the prophet, saying: [Note: Zach.xi.c. ] And they toke thirtie siluer peeces, the price of hym that was valued, whom they bought of the children of Israel:  
B

10 And gaue them for the potters fielde, as the Lorde appoynted me.)

11 [Note: Mark.xv.a. Luk.xxiii.a Ioh.xviii.f. ] Iesus stode before the deputie, and the deputie asked him, saying: Art thou the king of the Iewes? Iesus saith vnto hym: thou sayest.

12 And when he was accused of the chiefe priestes and elders, he aunswered nothyng.

13 Then sayth Pilate vnto him: hearest [Page] thou not how many witnesses they lay agaynst thee?

14 [Note: Esay.liiii.c. ] And he aunswered hym to neuer a worde: insomuch, that the deputie marueyled greatly.

15 [Note: Mark.xv.a. ] At that feast, the deputie was wont to delyuer vnto the people a prysoner, whom they woulde desire.

16 He had then a notable prysoner, called Barabbas.

17 Therefore, when they were gathered together, Pilate saide vnto them: [Note: Mark.xv.a Ioh.xviii.g. ] whether wyll ye that I geue loose vnto you Barabbas, or Iesus, whiche is called Christe?

18 For he knewe, that for enuy they had delyuered hym.

19 When he was set downe to geue iudgment, his wyfe sent vnto hym, saying: haue thou nothing to do with that iuste man: For I haue suffred many thynges this day in a dreame because of him.

C

20 [Note: Math.xv.a. Luk.xxiii.b ] But the chiefe priestes & elders perswaded the people, that they shoulde aske Barabbas, and destroy Iesus.

21 The deputie aunswered, and saide vnto them: Whether of the twayne wyll ye that I let loose vnto you? They saide, [Note: Actes.iii.c. Math.xv.a. ] Barabbas.

22 Pilate sayde vnto them: What shall I do then with Iesus, whiche is called Christe? They all sayde vnto hym: let hym be crucified.

23 The deputie sayde: What euyll hath he done? But they cryed the more, saying: let hym be crucified.

24 When Pilate sawe that he coulde preuayle nothyng, but that more busynesse was made, he toke water, and washed his handes before the people, saying: I am innocent of the blood of this iust person, see ye to it.

25 Then aunswered all the people, and sayde: [Note: Actes.v.e. ] His blood be on vs, and on our chyldren.

26 [Note: Mark.xv.a. Luk.xxiii.d ] Then let he Barabbas loose vnto them, and scourged Iesus, and deliuered hym to be crucified.

27 [Note: Mark.xv.b ] Then the souldiours of the deputie toke Iesus in the common hall, and gathered vnto hym all the bande [of souldiours.]

28 And they stripped hym, and put on hym a skarlet robe:

29 And platted a crowne of thornes, and put vpon his head, and a reede in his right hande, and bowed the knee before hym, and mocked hym, saying: Hayle kyng of the Iewes.

30 And when they had spyt vpon hym, they toke the reede, and smote hym on the head.

D

31 And after that they had mocked him, they toke the robe of hym agayne, and put his owne rayment on hym, and led hym away, to crucifie hym.

32 And as they came out, [Note: Mark.xv.b. Lu.xxiii.d. ] they founde a man of Cyrene, named Simon: hym they compelled to beare his crosse.

33 [Note: Mark.xv.b. Iohn.xix.d ] And they came vnto the place, which is called Golgotha, that is to say, a place of [dead mens] skulles.

34 And gaue him vineger to drinke, mingled with gall: And when he had tasted therof, he woulde not drynke.

35 When they had crucified hym, they parted his garmentes, & did cast lottes, that it myght be fulfilled whiche was spoken by the prophete: [Note: Psal.xxii.b. Mark.xv.c. Luk.xxiii.e ] They departed my garmentes among them, & vpon my vesture dyd they cast lottes.

36 And they sate, & watched him there.

37 And [Note: Luk.xxiii.e Iohn.xix.d. ] set vp ouer his head, the cause [of his death] written: This is Iesus, the king of the Iewes.

38 [Note: Mark.xv.c. Luk.xxiii.d ] Then were there two thieues crucified with hym: one on the ryght hande, and another on the left.

E

39 [Note: Esay.liiii.e. ] They that passed by, reuyled hym, waggyng their heades,

40 And saying: Thou that destroyedst the temple, & buyldest it in three dayes, saue thy selfe. [Note:

Sapientia.ii.b. ] If thou be the sonne of God, come downe from the crosse.

41 Lykewyse also the hie priestes, mockyng hym, with the scribes, and elders, [and pharisees] sayde:

42 He saued other, hym selfe can he not saue. If he be the kyng of Israel, let him nowe come downe from the crosse, and we wyll beleue hym.

43 [Note: Psal.xxii.b. ] He trusted in God, let hym delyuer hym nowe, yf he wyll haue hym: for he sayde, I am the sonne of God.

44 The thieues also which were crucified with hym, cast the same in his teeth.

45 [Note: Mar.xv.c. Luk.xxiii.a ] Fro the sixth houre, was there darknesse ouer all the lande, vnto the nynth houre.

F

46 And about the nynth houre, Iesus cried with a loude voyce, saying: Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani, that is to say: [Note: Mark.xv.c. Psal.xxii.a. ] My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

[Page]

47 Some of them that stode there, when they hearde that, saide: This man calleth for Elias.

48 And straightway [Note: Mar.xv.d. Iohn.xix.f. ] one of them ranne, and toke a sponge, and when he had filled it full of vineger, he put it on a reede, and gaue hym to drynke.

49 Other sayde, let be, let vs see whether Elias wyll come and saue hym.

50 Iesus, when he had cryed agayne with a loude voyce, yeelded vp ye ghost.

51 And beholde, the [Note: Mark.xv.d. Luk.xxiii.f ] vayle of the temple dyd rent into two partes, fro the toppe to the bottome, and the earth did quake and the stones rent.

52 And graues dyd open, and many bodyes of saintes which slept, arose:

53 And went out of the graues, after his resurrection, and came into the holy citie, and appeared vnto many.

54 [Note: Mark.xv.d. Luk.xxiii.g ] When the [Note: [a] A capitaine of one hundreth men ] Centurion, and they that were with hym watchyng Iesus, sawe the earthquake, and those thynges that were done, they feared greatly, saying: truely, this was the sonne of God.

55 [Note: Mark.xv.d. Luk.xxiii.g ] And many wome were there (beholdyng hym a farre of) whiche folowed Iesus fro Galilee, ministring vnto him.

56 Among which, was Marie Magdalene, and Marie the mother of Iames and Ioses, & the mother of Zebedees chyldren.

G

57 When the euen was come, [Note: Mark.xv.d. Luk.xxiii.g Iohn.xix.g. ] there came a ryche man of Aramathia,



named Ioseph, which also hym selfe was Iesus disciple.

58 He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Iesus. Then Pilate comaunded the body to be delyuered.

59 And when Ioseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a cleane lynnene cloth:

60 And layde it in his newe tombe, which he had hewen out, euen in the rocke, and rolled a great stone to the dore of the sepulchre, and departed.

61 And there was [Note: Mark.xv.d ] Marie Magdalene, & the other Marie, syttyng ouer against the sepulchre.

62 The next day that folowed the day of preparyng, the hye priestes and pharisees came together vnto Pilate,

63 Saying. Sir, we remember that this deceauer sayde whyle he was yet aliue: [Note: Math.xvi c &.xvii.b. Mark.ix.a. Luk.xviii.f. ] After three dayes I wil arise agayne.

64 Commaunde therefore, that the sepulchre be made sure, vntyll the thirde day: lest his disciples come by nyght & steale hym away, and say vnto the people, he is rysen from the dead: & the last error shalbe worse then the first.

65 Pilate sayde vnto them: Ye haue the watche, go your way, make it as sure as ye knowe.

66 So they went, and made the sepulchre sure with the watch, and sealed the stone. >

## The .xxviij. Chapter.

¶ 6 The Resurrection of Christe. 12 The hye priestes geue the souldiers money, to say that Christe was stolen out of his graue. 17 Christe appeareth to his disciples, and sendeth them forth to preache, and to baptize.

A

1 [Note: Mark.xv.a. Lu.xxiiii.a. Iohn.xx.a. ] **In** the later ende of the Sabboth day, whiche dawneth the first daye of the weke, came Marie Magdalen, and the other Marie, to see the sepulchre.

2 And behold, there was a great earthquake, for the Angell of the Lorde descended from heauen, and came & roulled backe the stone from the doore, and sate vpon it.

3 His countenance was lyke lyghtnyng, and his rayment white as snowe.

4 And for feare of him, the kepers were astonyed, and became as dead men.

5 [Note: Mar.xvi.b. Lu.xxiii.a. ] The Angell aunswered, and sayde vnto the women, feare ye not: For I knowe that ye seke Iesus whiche was crucified.

B

6 He is not here, he is rysen, as he saide. Come, se the place where that the Lord was layde.

7 And go quickly, & tell his disciples that he is rysen agayne from the dead. And beholde, he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see hym. Loe, I haue tolde you. >

8 < [Note: Mar.xvi b Lu.xxiii.b. ] And they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with feare, and great ioy, and dyd runne, to bryng his disciples worde.

9 And as they went to tell his disciples, beholde, Iesus met them, saying: All hayle. And they came and helde him by [Page] the feete, and worshypped hym.

10 Then sayde Iesus vnto them: be not afrayde. Go tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, & there shall they see me.

C

11 When they were gone, beholde, some of the watche came into the citie, and shewed vnto the hie priestes all the thynges that were done.

12 And they gathered the together, with the elders, and toke councell, and gaue large money vnto the souldiers,

13 Saying. Saye ye, that his disciples came by nyght, & stole hym away while ye slept.

14 And yf this come to the deputies [eares] we wyll perswade hym, and saue you harmelesse.

15 So they toke the money, & dyd as they were taught. And this saying is noysed among the Iewes, vntyl this day. >

D

16 < Then the eleuen disciples went awaye into Galilee, into a mountayne, where Iesus had appoynted them.

17 And when they sawe hym, they worshypped hym: But some doubted.

18 And Iesus came, and spake vnto the, saying: [Note: Math.xi.d. Ioh.xvii.a. ] All power is geuen vnto me in heauen and in earth.

19 [Note: Mar.xvi.c. ] Go ye therefore, & teache all nations, baptizing them in the name of the father, and of the sonne, and of the holye ghost:

20 Teachyng the to obserue all thynges, whatsoeuer I haue commaunded you. And loe, [Note: Ioh.xiii.b. ] I am with you alway, euen vnto the ende of the worlde. >

## ***The Gospell by Saint Marke.***

### **¶ The first Chapter.**

¶ 2 The office of Iohn the Baptist. 9 The baptisme of Christe, 13 his fastyng, 14 his preachyng, 17 and the calling of Peter, Andrewe, Iames, & Iohn. 23 Christe healeth the man with the vncleane spirite, 29 helpeth Peters mother in lawe, 41 and clenseth the leper.

A

1 **The** begynnyng of the Gospel of Iesu Christ, the sonne of God.

2 As it hath ben written in the prophetes: [Note: Mala.xiii.a Math.xi.b. Luk.vii.d. ] Beholde, I sende my messenger before thy face, whiche shall prepare thy waye before thee.

3 A voyce of hym that crieth in the wyldernesse: [Note: Esay.xl.a. Math.iii.a. Luk.iii.a. ] Prepare ye the waye of the Lorde, and make his pathes strayght.

4 [Note: Mark.iii.b. Luk.iiii.c. ] Iohn did baptize in the wyldernesse, [Page] and preached the baptisme of [Note: Mark.iii.b. Luk.iii.c. ] repentaunce, for the remission of sinnes.

5 And all the land of Iurie, and they of Hierusalem, went out vnto hym, and were all baptized of hym in the ryuer of Iordane, confessyng their synnes.

B

6 [Note: Math.iii.a. ] Iohn was clothed with Camelles heere, and with a girdle of a skynne about his loynes: and he did eate locustes and wylde hony.

7 And preached, saying: [Note: Mar.iii.b. Luk.iii.c. Iohn.i.d. ] He that is stronger then I, commeth after me, whose shoe latchet I am not worthy to stowpe downe, and vnloose.

8 I haue baptized you with water: but he shal baptize you with the holy ghost.

9 And it came to passe in those dayes, that Iesus came fro Nazareth, of Galilee, [Note: Math.iii.c. ] & was baptized of Iohn in Iordane.

10 And assone as he was come vp out of the water, [Note: Math.iii.d. ] he sawe heauen open, & the spirite descending vpon him like a doue.

11 And there came a voyce from heauen: [Note: Math.iii.d. xii.b. xvii.b ] Thou art my deare sonne, in whom I am well pleased.

12 And immediatly [Note: Math.iii.a. Esay.xlii.a. Mark.ix. a. ] the spirite driueth hym into wyldernesse.

13 And he was there in the wyldernesse fourtie dayes, and was tempted of Satan, & was with wylde beastes. [Note: Math.iii.b. ] And the Angels ministred vnto hym.

14 After that Iohn was deliuered [to prison] [Note: Math.iii.c. ] Iesus came into Galilee, [Note: Luk.iii.b. ] preaching the Gospell of the kyngdome of God,

15 And saying: The tyme is come, and the kyngdome of God is at hande: [Note: Math.iii.b. ] repent, and beleue the Gospell.

16 [Note: Math.iii.a. Mat.iii.c. ] As he walked by the sea of Galilee, he sawe Simon, and Andrewe his brother, castyng nettes into the sea (for they were fysshers.)

17 And Iesus saide vnto them: Folowe me, and I wyll make [Note: Ier.xvi.c. ] you to become fysshers of men.

18 And strayghtway they forsoke their nettes, and folowed hym.

19 And when he had gone a litle further thence, he saw Iames the sonne of Zebedee, and Iohn his brother, which also were in the shippe, mendyng their nettes.

20 And anone he called them: And they lefte their father Zebedee in the shippe with the hired seruauntes, and folowed hym.

C

21 [Note: Math.iii.b. ] And they came into Capernaum, & strayghtway, on the Sabboth dayes, he entred into the synagogue, & taught.

22 And they were astonyed at his learnyng: [Note: Math.vii.d. Luke.iii.c. ] For he taught them, as one that had auctoritie, & not as the Scribes.

23 [Note: Math.vii.d. Luk.iii.c. ] And there was in their synagogue, a man vexed with an vncleane spirite, & he cried,

24 Saying: Alas, what haue we [to do] with thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy vs? I knowe thee what thou art, euen that holy one of God.

25 And Iesus rebuked hym, saying: holde thy peace, and come out of hym.

26 And when the vncleane spirite hadde torne hym, & cryed with a loude voyce, he came out of hym.

27 And they were all amased, insomuch that they demaunded one of another among them selues, saying: What thing is this? What newe doctrine is this? For with auctoritie commaunded he the fowle spirites, and they obeyed him.

28 And immediatly his fame spread abrode throughout all the region bordering on Galilee.

29 And fourthwith, when they were come out of the synagogue, [Note: Mat.viii.b. Luk.iiii.f. ] they entred into the house of Simon, and Andrewe, with Iames, and Iohn.

30 But Simons wyues mother lay sicke of a feuer: & anone they tell hym of her.

31 And he came, & toke her by the hande, and lyft her vp: and immediatly the feuer forsoke her, and [she] ministred vnto them.

32 And at euen, when the sonne was downe, they brought vnto hym all that were diseased, and them that were vexed with deuyls:

D

33 And all the citie was gathered together at the dore.

34 And he healed many, that were sicke of diuers diseases, and [Note: Luk.iiii.e Mark.iii.b. ] caste out many deuyls: and suffred not the deuyls to speake, because they knewe hym.

35 And in the mornyng, before day, Iesus, when he was rysen vp, departed, and went out into a solitarie place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, & they that were with hym, folowed after hym:

37 And when they had founde hym, they sayde vnto hym: all men seke for thee.

38 And he saide vnto them: let vs go into [Page] the nexte townes, that I may preache there also: for, therfore am I come.

39 And he preached in their synagogues, in all Galilee, and cast the deuyls out.

40 [Note: Math.viii.a Luk.v.c. ] And there came a leper to hym, besechyng him, and knelyng downe to him, and saying vnto hym: If thou wylt, thou canst make me cleane.

41 And Iesus had compassion on hym, and put forth his hande, touched hym, and sayth vnto hym: I wyll, be thou cleane.

42 And assoone as he had spoken, immediatly the leprosie departed from hym, and he was made cleane.

43 And after he had geuen hym a strayte commaundement, he sent hym away fourthwith.

44 And sayth vnto hym: [Note: Mark.vii.d. ] See thou saye nothing to any man, but get thee hence, shew thy

selfe to the priest, and offer for thy clensyng those thynges which Moyses commaunded, for a witnesse vnto them.

45 But he, assoone as he was departed, began to tell many thynges, and to publishe the saying: insomuch, that Iesus could no more openly enter into the citie, but was without in desert places: And they came to him from euery quarter.

## ¶ The .ij. Chapter.

¶ He healeth the man of the paulsie, 14 calleth Leui the customer, 16 eateth with open synners, 18 and excuseth his disciples.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **After** [a few] dayes also, he entred into Capernaum agayne, and it was noysed yt he was in the house.

2 And anone many were gathered together, in somuch that nowe there was no rowme to receaue them, no, not so muche as about the dore: and he preached the word vnto them.

3 [Note: Math.ix.a. Luk.v.d. ] And they came vnto hym, bryngyng one sicke of the paulsie, whiche was borne of foure men.

4 And when they coulde not come nye vnto hym for prease, they vncovered the roofe [of the house] that he was in: And whe they had broken vp the roofe, they dyd [with cordes] let downe the bedde, wherin the sicke of the paulsie lay.

5 When Iesus sawe their fayth, he saide vnto the sicke of the paulsie: [Note: Esay.xliii.c. and .xliiii.d. Luk.v.d. ] Sonne, thy synnes be forgeuen thee.

<sup>B</sup>  
6 But there were certayne of the scribes syttyng there, and reasonyng in theyr heartes:

7 Why doeth he thus speake blasphemies? Who can forgeue synnes, but God only?

8 And immediatly, when Iesus perceaued in his spirite, that they so reasoned within them selues, he saith vnto them: why reason ye suche thynges in your heartes?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the sicke of the paulsie, thy synnes be forgeuen thee: or to say, aryse, take vp thy bedde, and walke?

10 But that ye may know, that the sonne of man hath power in earth to forgeue synnes (He spake vnto the sicke of the paulsie)

11 I saye vnto thee, [Note: Math.ix.a. Luk.v.e. Iohn.v.b. ] aryse, and take vp thy bedde, and get thee hence vnto thine house.

12 And immediatly he arose, toke vp the bedde, and went foorth before them all: insomuch that they were all amazed, & glorified God, saying: we neuer sawe it on this fashion.

C

13 [Note: Math.ix.a. ] And he went againe vnto the sea: and all the people resorted vnto him, and he taught them.

14 And as Iesus passed bye, he sawe Leui [the sonne] of Alphee, sitting at the receipt of custome, and sayde vnto hym: folowe me. And he arose, and folowed hym.

15 And it came to passe, that when Iesus sate at meate in his house, many publicanes and sinners sate also together at meate with Iesus and his disciples: for there were many that folowed him.

16 And when the scribes and pharisees sawe hym eate with publicanes and sinners, they saide vnto his disciples: howe is it that he eateth and drynketh with publicanes and synners?

17 When Iesus hearde that, he saide vnto them: They that be whole, haue no [Page] nede of the phisition, but they that are sicke: [Note: i.Tim.i.c. Math.ix.b. Luk.v.f. ] I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentaunce.

18 And the disciples of Iohn, & the Pharisees dyd fast. And they come, and say vnto him: Why do ye disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not?

19 And Iesus sayde vnto them: Can the chyldren of the brydechaumber fast, whyle the brydegrome is with them? As long as they haue the brydegrome with them, they can not fast.

20 But the dayes wyll come, when the brydegrome shalbe taken awaye from them, and then shall they fast in those dayes.

D

21 No man also soweth a peece of newe cloth, vnto an olde garment: otherwayes, his newe peece taketh awaye from the olde, and so the rent is made worse.

22 And no man powreth newe wine into olde vessels: els the newe wine doth burst the vessels, and the wine runneth out, and the vessels are marred: But newe wine, must be put into newe vessels.

23 [Note: Math.xii.a. Luk.vi.a. ] And it came to passe, that he went thorowe the corne fieldes on the Sabboth dayes, and his disciples began by ye way to plucke the eares of corne.

24 And the pharisees sayde vnto hym: Beholde, why do they on the Sabboth dayes, that which is not lawfull?

25 And he sayde vnto them: Haue ye neuer read what Dauid did, when he had nede, and was an hungred, both he, and they that were with hym?

26 [Note: i.Reg.xxi b ] Howe he went into the house of God [in the dayes] of Abiathar the hye prieste, and dyd eate the shewe bread, which is not lawfull to eate, but for the priestes, and gaue also to them which

were with hym?

27 And he sayde vnto them: The Sabboth was made for man, and not man for the Sabboth.

28 Therefore is the sonne of man, Lorde also of the Sabboth.

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

¶ 1 He helpeth the man with the dried hande, 14 choseth his Apostles, 22 and casteth out the vnclene spirite, whiche the pharisees ascribe vnto the deuyll. 35 The brother, sister, and mother of Christe.

A

1 **And** he entred agayne into the synagogue, & a man was there whiche had a [Note: Math.xii.a. Luk.vi.a. ] wythered hande:

2 And they watched hym, whether he woulde heale hym on the Sabboth daye, that they myght accuse hym.

3 And he saide vnto the man which had the wythered hande: Aryse, [and stande] in the myddes.

4 And he saide vnto them: Is it lawful to do good on the Sabboth dayes, or to do euyl? to saue lyfe, or to kyll? But they helde their peace.

5 And when he had loked rounde about on them with anger, mournyng for the hardnesse of their heartes, he sayth to the man: [Note: Math.xii.b. Luk.vi.b. ] stretch fourth thyne hande. And he stretched it out: [Note: 3.Reg.xiii.b. ] And his hande was restored, euen as whole as the other. >

6 [Note: Math.xii.b. ] And the pharisees departed, and strayghtway gathered a councell, with the Herodians, agaynst hym, that they myght destroy hym.

7 But Iesus auoyded, with his disciples, to the sea: [Note: Math.iii.d. Luk.vi.c. ] And a great multitude folowed hym from Galilee, and from Iurie,

8 And from Hierusalem, & from Idumea, and from beyonde Iordane, [Note: Math.iiii.b. Luk.vi.c. Iohn.vi.a. ] and they that dwelled about Tyre & Sidon, a great multitude [of men:] Which, whe they had hearde what thynges he dyd, came vnto hym.

B

9 And Iesus comaunded his disciples, that a shippe shoulde wayte on hym, because of the people, leste they shoulde thronge hym.

10 For he had healed many: insomuche, that they preassed vpon him for to touch hym, as many as had plagues.



11 And when the vnclene spirites sawe hym, they fell downe before hym, and cryed, saying: Thou art the sonne of God.

12 And he straytely charged them, that they shoulde not make hym knowen.

[Page]

13 And he went vp into a mountayne, & called vnto him whom he woulde: and they came vnto hym.

C

14 [Note: Math.x.a. ] And he ordeyned twelue, that they shoulde be with him, and that he might sende them forth to preache,

15 And that they myght haue power to heale sicknesses, and to cast out deuyls.

16 And he gaue vnto Simon to name, Peter.

17 And he called Iames [the sonne] of Zebedee, and Iohn, Iames brother (and gaue them to name Boanarges, which is to say, the sonnes of thunder.)

18 And Andrewe, and Philip, and Bartholomewe, and Matthewe, and Thomas, and Iames the sonne of Alphee, and Thaddeus, and Simon Cananite,

19 And Iudas Iscariot, which also betrayed hym. And they came into the house:

20 And the people assembled together agayne, so that they had no leysure so much as to eate bread.

21 And when they that belonged vnto hym, hearde of it, they went out to laye handes vpon hym: For they sayde, he is madde.

22 And the scribes whiche came downe from Hierusalem, sayde: He hath Beelzebub, and [Note: Math.ix.d. and .xii.b. Luk.xi.b. ] by the chiefe deuyl, casteth he out deuyls.

D

23 And he called them vnto hym, & sayde vnto them in parables: Howe can Satan driue out Satan?

24 And yf a realme be deuided agaynst it selfe, that realme can not endure.

25 And yf a house be deuided agaynst it selfe, that house can not continue.

26 And yf Satan make insurrection agaynst him selfe & be deuided, he can not continue, but hath an ende.

27 No man can enter into a strong mans house, and take away his goodes, except he first bynde the strong man, and then spoyle his house.

28 Ueryly I say vnto you, al sinnes shalbe forgeuen vnto the chyldren of men, & blasphemies wherewith so euer they haue blasphemed:

29 [Note: Math.xii.c. Luk.xii.b. ] But he that speaketh blasphemie agaynst the holy ghoste, hath neuer forgeuenesse, but is in daunger of eternall dampnation.

30 For they sayde: he hath an vncleane spirite.

31 [Note: Math.xii.d. Luk.viii.c. ] There came also his mother, and his brethren, and stode without, and sent vnto hym, to call hym out.

32 And the people sate about him, & saide vnto hym: Beholde, thy mother and thy brethren seke for thee without.

33 And he aunswered them, saying: who is my mother, and my brethren?

34 And when he had loked rounde about on his disciples, which sate in compasse about hym, he sayde: Beholde my mother, and my brethren.

35 For whosoeuer doeth the wyl of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

¶ 2 The parable of the sower. 37 Christe styllerh the tempest of the sea, which obeyed hym.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **And** he began agayne to teache by the sea syde: And ther gathered vnto hym much people, so greatly, that he entred into a shippe, [Note: Mat xiii.a. ] and sate in the sea: and all the people was by the sea syde on the shore:

2 And he taught them many thinges by parables, and sayde vnto them in his doctrine.

3 Hearken: Beholde, [Note: Luk.viii.a. ] there went out a sower to sowe:

4 And it fortunod as he sowed, that some fell by the way syde, and the fowles of the ayre came, and deuoured it vp.

5 Some fell on stonie grounde, where it had not mucche earth: and immediatly sprange vp, because it had not deapth of earth.

6 But assoone as the sonne was vp, it caught heate: and because it hadde not roote, it wythered away.

7 And some fell among thornes: and the thornes grewe vp, and choked it, and it gaue no fruite.

8 And some fell vpon good grounde, and [Page] dyd yelde fruite, that sprang vp, and grewe, and brought forth, some thirtie folde, and some sixtie folde, and some an hundred folde.

9 And he saide vnto them: He that hath eares to heare, let hym heare. >

10 And when he was alone, they that were about hym, with the twelue, asked of hym the parable.

11 And he sayde vnto them: [Note: Math.xiii.b Luk.viii.b. ] To you it is geuen to knowe the misterie of the kingdome of God: But vnto them that are without, all thynges are done by parables,

B

12 That when they see, they may see and not discerne: and whe they heare, [Note: Esay.vi.c. Mat.xiii.b. Luk.viii.b. Ioh.xii.f. Act.xxviii f Rom.xi.b. ] they may heare and not vnderstande, lest at any tyme, they shoulde turne, and their sinnes shoulde be forgeuen them.

13 And he sayde vnto them: Knowe ye not this parable? And howe then wyll ye knowe all other parables?

14 [Note: Math.xiii.c Luk.viii.b. ] The sower, soweth the worde.

15 And they [that receaued seede] by the way side, are those where the worde is sowe: but when they haue hearde, Satan cometh immediatly, and taketh away the word that was sowed in their heartes.

16 And lykewyse they that receaue seede into the stonie ground, are they, which when they haue hearde the worde, at once receaue it with gladnesse.

17 Yet haue no roote in them selues, and so endure but a tyme: and anone when trouble and persecution aryseth for the wordes sake, immediatly they are offended.

18 And those be they that receaue seede among thornes: and those [I saye] are such as heare the worde,

19 And the cares of this worlde, and the deceytfulnesse of ryches, and the lustes of other thynges enter in, and choke the worde, and it is made vnfruitefull.

20 And they whiche receaue seede into good ground, are suche as heare the worde, and receaue it, so that one corne doth bryng fourth thirtie, some sixtie, some an hundred.

C

21 And he saide vnto them: [Note: Math.v.d. Luk.viii.c. and .xi.e. ] Is the candle lyghted to be put vnder a busshell, or vnder the table? And not to be put on a candelsticke?

22 [Note: Math.x.c. Luk.viii.d. and .xii.a. ] For there is nothing so priue that shal not be opened: neither hath it ben so secrete, but that it shall come abrode.

23 If any man haue eares to heare, let hym heare.

24 And he sayde vnto them, take heede what ye heare: [Note: Math.vii.a. Luk.vi.f. ] With what measure ye meate, with the same shall it be measured to you agayne. And vnto you that heare, shall more be geuen.

25 For [Note: Math.xiii.b and .xxv.c. Luk.viii.c. and .xix.d. ] vnto hym that hath, shall it be geuen: and from hym that hath not, shalbe taken away, euen that which he hath.

26 And he sayde, so is the kyngdome of God: euen as [Note: Math.xiii.d ] yf a man shoulde sowe seede in

the grounde,

27 And shoulde slepe, and ryse vp nyght and day, and the seede shoulde spryng & growe vp, he knoweth not howe.

28 For the earth bringeth fourth fruite of her selfe, first the blade, then the eare, after that, the full corne in the eare.

29 But when the fruite is brought fourth, anone he thrusteth in the sickle, because the haruest is come.

30 And he sayde: Wherevnto shall we lyken the kyngdome of God? Or with what comparyson shall we compare it?

31 [Note: Math.xii.d. Luk.iii.d. ] It is like a grayne of mustarde seede, whiche when it is sowen in the earth, is lesse then all seedes that be in the earth.

32 When it is sowen, it groweth vp, and is greater then all hearbes, and beareth great braunches, so that the fowles of the ayre may make their nestes vnder the shadowe of it.

33 [Note: Math.xiii.c ] And with many such parables preached he the worde vnto them, as they were able to heare it.

34 But without parable spake he nothing vnto them. But when they were alone, [Note: Math.xiii.c ] he expounded all thynges to his disciples.

35 And the same day, when euen was come, he saide vnto them: Let vs passe ouer vnto the other syde.

36 And they left the people, and toke him, euen as he was in the shippe. And there were also with him, other litle shippes.

D  
37 [Note: Math.viii.c Luk.viii.c. ] And there arose a great storme of wynde, and the waues dassed into the shippe, so that it was nowe full.

38 And he was in the sterne a slepe on a pelowe. And they awaked hym, and sayde vnto hym: Maister, carest thou not that we peryshe?

39 And he arose, and rebuked the wynde, and saide vnto the sea, peace and be styll. [Page] And the wynde ceased, & there folowed a great calme.

40 And he sayde vnto them: why are ye so fearefull? Howe is it, that ye haue no fayth?

41 And they feared exceedyngly, and sayde one to another: Who is this? For both wynde and sea obey hym.

## The .v. Chapter.

¶ 8 Christe delyuereth the possessed from the vncleane spirite, 25 the woman from the bloody issue, 41 and rayseth the captaynes daughter.

A

1 < **And** they came [Note: Mat.viii.d. Luk.viii.d. ] ouer to the other syde of the sea, into the countrey of the Gadarenites.

2 And when he was come out of the shippe, immediatly there met hym from among the tombes, a man [possessed] of an vncleane spirite:

3 Which had his abidyng among the tombes: And no man coulede bynde him, no not with cheynes,

4 Because, that when he was often bounde with fetters and cheynes, he plucked the cheynes a sunder, and brake the fetters in peeces: Neither coulede any man tame hym.

5 And alwayes, nyght and day, he was in the mountaynes, and in the tombes, crying, and beatyng hym selfe with stones.

6 But when he had spied Iesus a farre of, he ranne, and worshypped hym,

7 And cried with a loude voyce, & sayde: [Note: Mat.viii.d. Actes xvi.c ] what haue I to do with thee Iesus thou sonne of the most hyst God? I require thee in the name of God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For he sayde vnto hym: come out of the man thou foule spirite.)

9 And he asked hym, what is thy name? And he aunswered and sayd vnto hym: my name is legion, for we are many.

10 And he prayed hym instantly, that he woulde not sende them away, out of the countrey.

B

11 But there was there, nye vnto the mountaynes, [Note: Math.viii.d. Luk.viii.d. ] a great hearde of swyne feedyng.

12 And all the deuyls besought hym, saying: sende vs into the swyne, that we may enter into them.

13 And anone Iesus gaue them leaue. And the vncleane spirites went out, and entred into the swyne: And the hearde ran headlong into the sea, (they were about two thousande,) & were drowned in the sea.

14 And the swyneheardes fled, and tolde it in the citie, and in the countrey. And they went out for to see what was done:

15 And came to Iesus, and sawe hym that was vexed with the fiende, and had the legion, syt, both clothed,

and in his right mynde: & they were afraide.

16 And they that sawe it, tolde them, howe it came to passe to hym that was possessed with the deuyll: and also of the swyne.

17 [Note: Luk.viii.e. ] And they beganne to pray hym, that he woulde depart out of their coastes. >

18 [Note: Math.viii.d ] And when he was come into the shippe, he that had [ben possessed] with the deuyll, prayed hym, that he myght be with hym.

19 Howebeit, Iesus woulde not suffer hym, but sayde vnto hym: go home to thy frendes, and shewe them howe great thynges the Lorde hath done for thee, and howe he had compassion on thee.

20 And he departed, and beganne to publyshe in the ten cities, howe great thynges Iesus had done for hym: and all men dyd maruayle.

C

21 And when Iesus was come ouer agayne by shippe, vnto the other syde, much people gathered vnto hym, and he was nye vnto the sea.

22 [Note: Math.ix.e. Luk.viii.f. ] And beholde, there came one of the rulers of the synagogue, whose name was Iairus: and when he sawe hym, he fell downe at his feete,

23 And besought hym greatly, saying: my young daughter lieth at poynt of death, [I pray thee] come and lay thy hande on her, that she may be safe, and lyue.

24 And he went with hym, and much people folowed him, and thronged him.

25 [Note: Math.ix.c. Luk.viii.f. ] And there was a certayne woman, which had ben diseased of an issue of blood twelue yeres,

26 And had suffred many thynges, of [Page] many phisitions, and had spent all that she had, and felt none amendemet at all, but rather the worse.

27 When she had hearde of Iesus, she came in the prease behynde hym, and touched his garment.

28 For she sayde: yf I may but touche his clothes, I shalbe whole.

29 And strayghtway the fountayne of her blood was dryed vp: & she felt in her body, that she was healed of ye plague.

30 And Iesus immediatly, knowyng in hym selfe, that vertue proceded from hym, turned hym about in the prease, and sayde: who touched my clothes?

31 And his disciples sayde vnto hym: thou seest the people thrust thee, & askest thou, who dyd touche me?

32 And he loked rounde about, for to see her that had done this thyng.

33 But the woman, fearyng & tremblyng, knowyng what was done within her, came, and fell downe before hym, and tolde hym all the trueth.

34 And he sayde vnto her: Daughter [Note: Luk.iiii.g. ] thy fayth hath saued thee, go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

D

35 [Note: Math.ix.c. Luk.viii.g. ] Whyle he yet spake, there came from the ruler of the synagogues [house], certayne, which sayde: thy daughter is dead, why diseasest thou the maister any further?

36 Assoone as Iesus hearde the worde that was spoken, he sayde vnto the ruler of the synagogue, be not afrayde, only beleue.

37 And he suffred no man to folowe him, saue Peter, and Iames, and Iohn the brother of Iames.

38 [Note: Math.ix.c. Luk.viii.g. ] And he came to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and sawe the tumult, and them that wept & wayled greatly.

39 And went in, and sayde vnto them: why make ye this a doe, and wepe? the damsell is not dead, but slepeth.

40 And they laught hym to scorne: But he put them all out, and taketh the father and the mother of the damsell, and them that were with hym, and entreth in where the damsell laye,

41 And taketh the damsell by the hande, and sayth vnto her. Talitha cumi, which is, yf one do interprete it, damsell (I say vnto thee) aryse.

42 And strayghtway the damsell arose, and walked: For she was of the age of twelue yeres. And they were astonyed out of measure.

43 And he charged them straytly, that no man shoulde knowe of it: and commaunded to geue her meate.

## ¶ The .vj. Chapter.

¶ 4 Of Christes doynge and estimation in his owne cuntry, 7 he sendeth forth his Apostles, 15 diuers opinions of Christe, 25 howe Herode beheaded Iohn Baptiste, 38 of the miracle of fyue loaves and two fisshes, 48 Christe walketh vpon the sea, 55 and healed them that touched hym.

A

1 **And** he [Note: Mat.xiii.g. Luk.iiii.c. ] departed thence, & came into his owne cuntry, and his disciples folowed him.

2 And when the sabboth day was come, he beganne to teache in the synagogue: And many that hearde hym, were astonyed, and sayde: from whence hath he these thynges? And what wisdome is this that is geuen vnto hym? and such myghtie workes that are wrought by his handes?

3 [Note: Mat.xiii.g. ] Is not this the carpenter Maries sonne, the brother of Iames & Ioses, and of Iuda and Simon? and are not his sisters here with vs? And they were offended at hym.

4 Iesus sayde vnto them, [Note: Mar.xiii.g. Luk.iiii.d. Iohn.v.f. ] that a prophete is not without honour, but in his owne countrey, and among his owne kynne, and in his owne house.

5 And he coulde there shewe no mightie worke: but layde his handes vpon a fewe sicke folke, and healed them.

B

6 And he marueyled, because of their vnbeliefe. > [Note: Mark.ix.d ] And he went about by the townes that lay on euery syde, teachyng.

7 [Note: Math.x.e. ] And he called the twelue, and beganne to sende them foorth, two and two, and gaue the power ouer vnclene spirites.

8 And commaunded them, that they shoulde take nothyng in their iourney, [Page] saue a staffe [Note: [a] They may take a staffe for their ease, and not to defende them selues, as in Math.x. ] only: no scrippe, no bread, no money in their purse.

9 But shoulde be shoed with sandales: And that they shoulde not put on two coates.

10 And he sayde vnto them: Whersoever ye enter into an house, there abyde tyll ye depart thence.

11 [Note: Mark.x.b. Luk.ix.a. ] And whosoever shall not receaue you nor heare you, when ye depart thence, shake of the dust that is vnder your feet, for a witness vnto them: [Note: Mat.xi d. Luk.x.a. ] I say verily vnto you, it shalbe easier for the Sodomites and the Gomorrheans in the day of iudgement, then for that citie.

12 [Note: Math.x.a. ] And they went out, & preached, that men should repent.

13 And they cast out many deuyls, and annoynted many that were sicke, with oyle, and healed them.

14 [Note: Mat.xiii.a. Luk.ix.a. ] And king Herode hearde [of hym] for his name was spread abrode: And he sayde, Iohn Baptist is rysen agayne from the dead, and therefore myghtie workes do shewe foorth them selues in hym.

C

15 Other saide, it is Elias. Some saide, it is a prophete, or as one of the prophetes.

16 But when Herode hearde of hym, he saide: It is Iohn, whom I beheaded, he is rysen from death agayne.

17 < For Herode himselfe had sent foorth, and layde handes vpon Iohn, & bounde hym in pryson, for



Herodias sake, his brother Philippes wyfe, because he had maryed her.

18 For Iohn sayde vnto Herode: [Note: Leui.xviii.d and .xx.d. ] It is not lawful for thee to haue thy brothers wyfe.

D

19 Therefore Herodias layde wayte for hym, and woulde haue kyllled hym: but she coulde not.

20 For Herode feared Iohn, knowyng that he was a iuste man and an holye, and gaue hym reuerence: and when he hearde hym, he dyd many thynges, and hearde hym gladly.

21 And whe a conuenient day was come, that Herode on his [Note: Gene.xl.d. ] birth daye made a supper to the lordes, hye captaynes, and chiefe estates of Galilee.

22 And when the daughter of the same Herodias came in, and daunced, and pleased Herode, and them that sate at boorde also, the kyng said vnto the damsell: Aske of me what thou wylt, and I wyll geue it thee.

23 [Note: Math.xiiii.a ] And he sware vnto her: Whatsoeuer thou shalt aske of me, I wyll geue it thee, euen vnto the one halfe of my kingdome.

24 And she went foorth, & sayde vnto her mother: What shall I aske? She saide, Iohn Baptistes head.

25 And she came in strayghtwaye, with haste, vnto the kyng, and asked, saying: I wyll, that thou geue me by and by in a charger, the head of Iohn Baptist.

26 And the kyng was sory, howbeit, for his othes sake, & for their sakes whiche sate at supper also, he woulde not caste her of.

E

27 And immediatlye the kyng sent the hangman, and commaunded his head to be brought in: And he went, and beheaded hym in the pryson,

28 And brought his head in a charger, & gaue it to the damsell, and the damsell gaue it to her mother.

29 And when his disciples hearde of it, they came, and toke vp his body, and layed it in a tombe. >

30 And the Apostles gathered themselues together vnto Iesus, and tolde hym all thynges, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

31 And he sayde vnto them: [Note: Mat.xiiii.b. Luk.ix.b. Iohn.vi.a. ] Come ye alone out of the way, into ye wyldernesse, and rest awhyle: For there were many commers and goers, and they had no leysure, so much as to eate.

32 [Note: Mat.xiiii.b. ] And he wet by shippe out of the way, into a desert place.

33 And the people spyed them, when they departed, and many knewe hym, and ranne a foote thyther, out of all cities, & came thyther before them, and came together vnto hym.

34 And Iesus went out, and sawe much people, [Note: Math.ix.d. and .xiii.b. ] and had compassion on them, because [Note: Ezech.34.a. ] they were lyke sheepe, not hauyng [Page] a sheeheard: And he began to teache them many thynges.

F

35 [Note: Mat.xiii.b Luk.ix.b. Iohn.vi.a. ] And when the day was nowe farre spent, his disciples came vnto hym, saying: This is a desert place, & nowe the tyme is farre passed:

36 Let them departe, that they may go into the countrey rounde about, and into the townes, and bye them bread: for they haue nothyng to eate.

37 He aunswered and sayde vnto them: geue ye them to eate. And they saide vnto him: Shall we go and bye two hundred penyworth of bread, & geue them to eate?

38 He sayde vnto them: [Note: Mat.viii.a. ] Howe many loaues haue ye, go loke? And when they had searched, they sayde, fyue, and two fisshes.

39 And he commaunded them, to make them all sit downe by companies vpon the greene grasse.

40 And they sate downe, here a rowe, and there a rowe, by hundredes, & by fifties.

41 And when he had take the fiue loaues and the two fisshes, and loked vp to heauen, he blessed, and brake the loaues, & gaue them to his disciples to set before them: and the two fisshes deuided he among them all.

42 And they all did eate, & were satisfied.

43 And they toke vp twelue baskets full, of the fragmentes, & of the fisshes.

44 And they that dyd eate, were about fyue thousande men.

F

45 [Note: Mat.xiii.c. ] And straightway, he constrayned his disciples to go into the shippe, and to go ouer the sea before, vnto Bethsaida, whyle he sent away the people.

46 [Note: Mat.xiii.c. Iohn.vi.b. ] And assoone as he had sent them away, he departed into a mountayne to pray.

47 < And when euen was come, the ship was in the myddes of the sea, and he alone on the lande.

48 And he sawe them troubled in rowyng (for the wynde was contrary vnto them:) And about the fourth watche of the nyght, he came vnto them, walking vppon the sea, and woulde haue passed by them.

49 But when they sawe hym walkyng vpon the sea, they supposed it had ben a spirite, and cryed out.

50 For they all sawe him, & were afraide. And anone he talked with them, & saide vnto them: Be of good cheare, it is I, be not afrayde.

G

51 [Note: Mat.xiii.c. ] And he went vp vnto them into the shippe, and the wynde ceased, and they were sore amased in themselues beyond measure, and marueyled.

52 For they vnderstoode not [the miracle] of the loaues, because their heart was hardened.

53 And when they had passed ouer, they came into the lande of Genezareth, and drewe vp into the hauen.

54 And assoone as they were come out of the shippe, straightway they knew him,

55 And ranne forth throughout all the region rounde about, & began to carry about in beddes those that were sicke, thither, where they heard that he was.

56 And whethersoouer he entred, into townes, cities, or villages, they layde the sicke folkes in the streates, & prayed him that they myght touche and it were but the hemme of his garment: And as many as touched it, were made whole. >

## The .vij. Chapter.

¶ 2 The pharisees fynde fault at the disciples eatyng of meate with vnwasshen handes. 8 The commaundement of God is transgressed by mans traditions. 22 Meate defileth not a man: but that which commeth from hym. 24 Of the woman of Syrophenissa. 32 The healyng of the deafe and dumbe.

A

1 **And** [Note: Math.xv.a. ] the pharisees came together vnto hym, & certayne of the scribes which came from Hierusalem.

2 And whe they sawe some of his disciples eate bread with common [that is to say, with vnwasshen] hands, they founde fault.

3 For the pharisees and all the Iewes, except they wasshe their handes oft, eate not, obseruing the traditions of ye elders.

4 And [when they come] from the market, except they wasshe, they eate not. And many other things there be, which they haue taken vpon them to obserue [as] the wasshyng of cuppes and pottes, and brasen vessels, and of tables.

B

5 Then asked hym the pharisees and scribes: Why walke not thy disciples accordyng to the traditio of the elders, but [Page] eate bread with vnwasshen handes?

6 He aunswered, and sayde vnto them, that Esaias hath prophesied well of you hypocrites, as it is written: [Note: Esa.xxix b Math.xv.a. ] This people honoreth me with their lippes, but their heart is farre from me.

7 Howebeit, in vayne do they worship me, teachyng doctrines, the commaundementes of men.

8 For ye laye the commaundement of God apart, and obserue the tradition of me: as the wassing of pottes & cuppes. And many other such like thinges ye do.

9 And he sayde vnto them: Well, ye cast asyde the commaundement of God, to mayntayne your owne tradition.

10 [Note: Exod.xxi.b Deut.b. Ephe.vi.a. Exod.xx.b. Leuit.xx.b. Prou.xx.c. ] For Moyses sayde, Honor thy father and thy mother: and, [Note: Exod.xxi.b Deut.b. Ephe.vi.a. Exod.xx.b. Leuit.xx.b. Prou.xx.c. ] who so curseth father or mother, let him dye the death.

11 But ye say, yf a man shall say to father or mother Corban (that is, by the gyft) that [is offred] of me, thou shalt be helped.

12 And so ye suffer hym no more to do ought for his father or his mother.

13 And make the worde of God of none effect, through your tradition, which ye haue ordeyned. And many such thinges do ye.

C

14 And when he had called all the people vnto hym, he saide vnto them: Hearken vnto me, euery one of you, and vnderstande.

15 [Note: Math.xv.b. ] There is nothyng without a man, that can defyle hym, when it entreth into hym: But the thynges whiche proceade out of a man, those are they that defyle the man.

16 If any man haue eares to heare, let hym heare.

17 And when he came into the house, away from the people, his disciples asked hym of the similitude.

18 And he sayde vnto them: Are ye also so without vnderstandyng? Do ye not yet perceaue, that whatsoever thing fro without, entreth into a man, it can not defyle hym,

19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purgyng all meates?

20 And he sayde: That which commeth out of a man, defyleth the man.

21 For from within, euen out of the heart of men, proceade euyll thoughtes, adulterie, fornication, murther,

22 Theft, couetousnes, wickednes, deceit, wantonnes, a wicked eye, blasphemies, pride, foolyshnes.

23 All these euyll thynges come fro within, and defyle a man.

24 And from thence he rose, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon, & entred into an house, and

woulde that no man shoulde haue knowen: but he coulde not be hyd.

25 For a certayne woman, whose young daughter hadde an vncleane spirite, assoone as she hearde of hym, came, & fell at his feete.

26 The woman was a Greke, out of the nation of Syrophenissa: & she besought hym, that he woulde cast out the deuyll from her daughter.

27 But Iesus saide vnto her, let the children first be fedde: For it is not meete to take the chyldrens bread, and to caste it vnto litle dogges.

D

28 She aunswered, and saide vnto hym, euen so Lorde: [Note: Math.xv.c. ] neuerthelesse, the litle dogges also eate vnder the table, of the chyldrens crumbes.

29 And he sayde vnto her: For this saying, go thy way, the deuyll is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when she was come home to her house, she founde that the deuyll was departed, and her daughter lying on the bedde.

31 < [Note: Math.xv.c. ] And he departed agayne from the coastes of Tyre and Sidon, & came vnto the sea of Galilee, through the middes of the coastes of the ten cities.

32 [Note: Math.ix.d. ] And they brought vnto hym one that was deafe, and had an impediment in his speache: and they prayed him to put his hande vpon hym.

33 And when he had taken hym asyde from the people, he put his fyngers into his cares, and dyd spyt, and touched his tongue,

34 And loked vp to heauen, and syghed, and sayde vnto him Ephphatha, that is to say, be opened.

35 And straightway his eares were opened, and the stryng of his tongue was loosed, and he spake playne.

36 [Note: Mark.i. d. ] And he commaunded them, that they shoulde tell no man: But the more he forbad them, so much the more a great deale they published it.

37 And were beyonde measure astonyed, saying: He hath done all thynges well, he hath made both the deafe to heare, and the dumbe to speake. >

[Page]

## The .viij. Chapter.

¶ 2 The miracle of the seuen loaves. 11 The pharisees aske a signe. 15 The leuen of the pharisees. 22 The blinde receaueth his sight. 29 Peter confesseth Christe, 33 and is rebuked of Christe. 34 Howe we should

folowe Christe, 35 lose our lyfe, 38 and not be ashamed of the Gospell.

A

1 **In** those dayes, [Note: Math.xv.d. ] when there was a very great company, and had nothyng to eate, Iesus called his disciples to him, & saide vnto them:

2 I haue compassio on the people, because they haue nowe ben with me three dayes, and haue nothyng to eate:

3 And yf I sende them away fastyng to their owne houses, they shall faynt by the way: [Note: Esay.ix.a. Toby.xiii.b ] for diuers of them came fro farre.

4 And his disciples aunswered hym: From whence can a man satisfie these men with bread here in the wilderness?

5 And he asked the: Howe many loaues haue ye? They sayde, seuen.

6 And he commaunded the people to sit downe on the grounde: And he toke the seuen loaues, and when he had geuen thanks, he brake, and gaue to his disciples, to set before them: And they dyd set them before the people.

7 And they hadde a fewe small fysshes: And when he had blessed, he commaunded them also to be set before them.

8 So they dyd eate, and were suffised: And they toke vp of the broken meate that was left, seuen baskettes full.

9 And they that had eaten, were about foure thousand: And he sent the away.

B

10 And anone he entred into a shippe, with his disciples, and came into the parties of Dalmanutha.

11 [Note: Math.xvi.a Luke.xi.d. Iohn.vi.d. ] And the Pharisees came foorth, and began to dispute with hym, sekyng of him a signe from heauen, tempting him.

12 And when he had sighed depely in his spirite, he sayth: Why doth this generatio seke a signe? Ueryly I say vnto you, there shall no [Note: [a] It is in ye Greke texte, yf a signe, whiche the Hebrewes vse as a vehement negation. ] signe be geue vnto this generation.

13 And he lefte them, and went into the ship agayne, & departed ouer the water.

14 And they had forgotten to take bread [with them] neither had they in the ship with them more then one loafe.

15 And he charged the, saying: < [Note: Math.xvi b Luk.xii.a. ] Take heede, beware of the leuen of the pharisees, and of the leuen of Herode.

16 And they reasoned among them selues, saying: We haue no bread.

17 And Iesus knewe it, and sayth vnto them: Why reason ye, because ye haue no bread? Perceauē ye not yet, neither vnderstande? Haue ye your heart yet hardened?

18 Haue ye eyes, and see not? and haue ye eares & heare not? Do ye not remember?

19 [Note: Math.xiiii.c.] When I brake fyue loaues among fyue thousande men, howe many baskettes full of broken meate toke ye vp? They say vnto hym, twelue.

20 [Note: Math.xv.d.] When I brake seuen among foure thousande, howe many baskettes of the leauynges of the broken meate toke ye vp? They sayde, seuen.

21 And he sayde vnto them: Howe happeneth it, that ye do not vnderstande?

C

22 < And he came to Bethsaida, & they brought a blynde man vnto hym, and desired hym to touche hym.

23 And he caught the blinde by the hand, and led him out of the towne: and whe he had spyt in his eyes, & put his handes vpon him, he asked him if he saw ought.

24 And he loked vp, & saide, I see men: for I perceiue the walke as [they were] trees.

25 After that, he put his handes agayne vpon his eyes, & made hym see: And he was restored, & saw euery man clearely.

26 And he sent hym home to his house, saying: neither go into the towne, nor tell it to any in the towne. >

27 [Note: Math.xvi.c. Luke.ix.c.] And Iesus went out, & his disciples, into the townes that long to Cesarea Philippi: And by the way he asked his disciples, saying vnto them: Whom do men say that I am?

28 And they aunswered: [Some saye that thou art] Iohn Baptist, and some saye, Elias: Agayne, some saye that thou art one of the prophetes.

29 And he sayde vnto them: But whom say ye that I am? Peter aunswereth, & saith vnto him: [Note: Mat.xvi.c. Luk.ix.c. Iohn.vi.g.] Thou art very Christe.

D

30 And he charged them, that they should tell no man of hym.

31 And he began to teache them, [Note: Math.xvi.c. and .xx.c. Luk.ix.c.] howe that the sonne of man must suffer many thynges, & be reprobued of the elders, and of the hie priestes, & scribes, and be killed, [Page] and after three dayes, aryse agayne.

32 And he spake that saying openly: And Peter toke hym asyde, and began to rebuke hym.

33 But he turned about, and loked on his disciples, and rebuked Peter, saying, go after me Sata: for thou sauerest not the thinges that be of God, but the thinges that be of men.

34 [Note: Mat.xvi.d. Luk.ix.c. and .xiii.f. ] And when he had called the people vnto hym, with his disciples also, he said vnto them: Whosoeuer wyll folow me, let hym forsake hym selfe, and take vp his crosse, and folowe me.

35 For whosoeuer wyll saue his life, shall lose it: But whosoeuer shall lose his life, for my sake & the Gospels, the same shall saue it.

36 For what shall it profite a man, yf he wyne all the worlde, and lose his owne soule?

37 Or what shall a man geue, for a raunsome of his soule?

38 [Note: Math.x.c. Luk.xii.b. ] Whosoeuer therefore shalbe ashamed of me, and of my wordes, in this adulterous and synnefull generation: of hym also shall the sonne of man be ashamed, when he commeth in the glorie of his father, with the holy Angels.

## ¶ The .ix. Chapter.

¶ 2 The transfiguration of Christe. 13 Elias is come. 26 A dumbe spirite is cast out. 29 Why the disciples coulde not cast it out. 33 The disciples contende for superioritie. 38 One casteth out deuyls that folowed not Christes disciples. 43 Of the offences of hande, foote, or eye. 49 Of seasonyng with salt.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **And** he saide vnto them: Ueryly I say vnto you, [Note: Mat.xvi.d. Luk.ix.c. ] ther be some of them that stande here, whiche shall not taste of death, tyll they haue seene ye kyngdome of God come, with power.

2 [Note: Mat.xvii.a. Luke.ix.c. ] And after sixe dayes, Iesus taketh Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and leadeth them vp into an hye mountayne, out of the way, alone: and he was transfigured before them.

3 And his rayment dyd shyne, & became very whyte, euen as snowe: so whyte, as no fuller can make vpon the earth.

4 And there appeared vnto them Elias, with Moyses: And they talked with Iesu.

5 And Peter aunswered, and sayth to Iesu: Maister, here is good beyng for vs, let vs make also three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moyses, and one for Elias.

6 For he wist not what he saide, for they were afrayde.

7 And there was a cloude that shadowed them: and a voyce came out of the cloude, saying, [Note: Math.iii.d. and .xvii.b. Luk.iii.c. Mark.ib. Esay.xlii.a. ] This is my beloued sonne, heare hym.

8 And sodenly, when they had loked rounde about, they sawe no man, more then Iesus only, with them.



9 [Note: Mat.xvii.b. Mark.i.d. ] And as they came downe from the hyll, he charged them, that they should tell no man those thynges that they had seene, tyll the sonne of man were rysen from the dead agayne.

10 And they kept that saying with them, and demaunded one of another, what the rysing from the dead againe, should meane?

B

11 And they asked hym, saying: Why then say the scribes that Elias must first come?

12 He aunswered, and sayde vnto them: [Note: Mala.iiii.b. ] Elias veryly when he commeth firste, restoreth all thynges: And the sonne of man, as it [Note: Esay.liii.a. ] is written of hym, shall suffer many thynges, & be set at naught.

13 But I saye vnto you, that Elias is come, & they haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they would, as it is writte of him.

14 And when he came to his disciples, he sawe much people about them, and the scribes disputyng with them.

15 And strayghtway all the people, whe they behelde hym, were amased, & ran to hym, and saluted hym.

C

16 And he asked the scribes, what dispute ye with them?

17 < [Note: Mat.xvii.c. Luk.ix.c. ] And one of the companie aunswered, & sayde: Maister, I haue brought vnto thee my sonne, whiche hath a dumbe spirite:

18 And whensoeuer he taketh hym, he teareth hym, & he fometh, and gnasheth with his teeth, & pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples, that they should cast hym out, and they coulde not.

[Page]

19 He aunswereth hym, and sayth: O faythlesse nation, howe long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? Bryng hym vnto me.

20 And they brought him vnto him: And when he sawe hym, strayghtway the spirite tare hym: And he fell downe on the grounde, wallowyng and fomyng.

21 And he asketh his father, howe longe it is a go sence this came vnto hym? And he sayde, of a chylde.

22 And oft tymes it hath cast hym into the fire, and into the water, to destroye hym: But yf thou canst do any thyng, haue mercy on vs, and helpe vs.

23 Iesus sayde vnto hym: this thyng yf thou cans beleue, [Note: Mat.xvii.d. ] all thynges are possible to hym that beleueth.

24 And strayghtwaye the father of the childe cryed with teares, saying: Lorde I beleue, helpe thou mine vnbeliefe.

D

25 When Iesus sawe that the people came runnyng together, he rebuked the foule spirite, saying vnto

hym: Thou dumbe and deafe spirite, I charge thee come out of hym, and enter no more into hym.

26 And the spirite, when he had cryed and rent him sore, came out of hym: and he was as one that had ben dead, insomuch that many sayde, he is dead.

27 But Iesus caught hym by the hande, and lyft hym vp: and he rose.

28 And whe he was come into the house, [Note: Mat.xvii.d. ] his disciples asked hym secretely: Why coulde not we cast hym out?

29 And he saide vnto them: This kynde can come foorth by nothing, but by prayer and fastyng. >  
E

30 < And they departed thence, and toke their iorney thorowe Galilee: and he would not yt any man should knowe it.

31 For he taught his disciples, and sayde vnto them: [Note: Mat.xvi.c. Luk.ix.c. ] The sonne of man, shalbe deliuered into the handes of men, & they shall kyll him: and, after that he is kyllled, he shall ryse agayne the thirde day.

32 But they vnderstoode not that saying, and were afrayde to aske hym.

33 And he came to Capernaum: And when he was come into the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among your selues by the way?

34 And they helde their peace: For by the way, they had reasoned among them selues, who shoulde be the chiefest.

35 And when he was set downe, he called the twelue to hym, and sayde vnto them: If any man desire to be first, the same shalbe last of al, & seruaut vnto al.  
F

36 [Note: Mat.xviii.a. Luk.ix.f. ] And he toke a young childe, & set him in the myddes of them: and when he had taken hym in his armes, he sayde vnto them.

37 Whosoeuer receaueth any such a young chylde in my name, receaueth me: And whosoeuer receaueth me, receaueth not me, but hym that sent me. >

38 < Iohn aunswered him, saying: Maister, we sawe one caste out deuylls in thy name, & he foloweth not vs: and we forbad him, because he foloweth vs not.

39 But Iesus sayde, forbyd hym not: [Note: i.Cor.xii.a. ] For there is no man, whiche, yf he do a miracle in my name, can lyghtly speake euyll of me.

40 For he that is not against vs, is on our part.

41 [Note: Math.x.d. ] Whosoeuer shall in my name geue you a cup of colde water to drynke, because ye belong to Christe: veryly I say vnto you, he shall not lose his rewarde.

42 [Note: Mat.xviii.a ] And whosoeuer shall offende one of these litle ones, that beleue in me, it were better for him, if a mylstone were hanged about his necke, and he were cast into the sea.

G

43 [Note: Mat.xviii.b ] And yf thy hande offende thee, cut it of: It is better for thee to enter into lyfe maymed, then hauyng two handes, to go into hell, into fire that neuer shalbe quenched:

44 Where [Note: Esay.lxvi.g. ] their worme dyeth not, & the fire goeth not out.

45 And yf thy foote offende thee, cut it of: It is better for thee to go halt into lyfe, then hauyng two feete, to be cast into hell, into fire that neuer shalbe queched:

46 Where their worme dyeth not, and the fire goeth not out.

47 [Note: Math.v.c. ] And if thine eye offend thee, plucke it out: It is better for thee to go into the kyngdome of God with one eye, then hauing two eyes, to be cast into hell fire:

48 Where their worme dyeth not, and the fire goeth not out. >

49 Euery man shalbe salted with fire: [Note: Leuit.ii.d. ] and euery sacrifice shalbe seasoned with salt.

50 [Note: Math.v.b. Luk.xiii.g. ] Salt is good: But if the salt be vnsauerie, with what thyng shall you season it? Haue salt in your selues, and haue peace among your selues, one with an other.

[Page]

## ¶ The .x. Chapter.

¶ 2 Of diuorcement, 13 chyl dren are brought to Christe, and blessed. 17 A riche man questioneth howe he shoulde inherite eternall lyfe, 30 the rewarde of them that forsake all thynges for the Gospel, 33 Christe telleth before of his passion. 35 the request of the sonnes of Zebedeus, 52 blynde Bartimeus receaueth his syght.

A

1 **And** when he rose from thence, he [Note: Math.xix.a ] went into the coastes of Iurie, through the region [that is] beyonde Iordane: And the people resorted vnto hym a freshe, and as he was wont, he taught them agayne.

2 And the pharisees came, and asked hym: Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wyfe? temptyng hym.

3 And he aunswered, and sayde vnto them: [Note: Deu.xxiiii a Math.xix.a ] What did Moyses commaunde you to do?

4 And they sayde: Moyses suffred to write a booke of diuorcement, and to put her away.

5 And Iesus aunswered, and sayde vnto the: For the hardnesse of your heart, he wrote this precept vnto you.

6 But from the begynnyng of the creation, [Note: Gen.i.d. ] God made them male & female.

7 [And sayde] for this cause [Note: i.Cor.vi.d. Mat.xix.a. ] shall a man leaue his father and mother, and byde by his wyfe:

8 [Note: Ephe.v.g. Gen.ii.d. ] And they twayne shalbe one fleshe. So then are they no more twayne, but one fleshe.

9 Therefore, what God hath coupled together, let not man seperate.

B

10 And in the house, his disciples asked hym agayne, of the same matter.

11 And he sayth vnto them: [Note: Math.v.c. and xix a. Luk.xvi.b. ] Whosoeuer putteth away his wyfe, & maryeth another, committeth adulterie agaynst her.

12 And yf a woman put away her husbände, and be maryed to another, she committeth adulterie. >

13 [Note: Math.xix.b Luk.xviii.d ] And they brought young chyl dren to hym, that he shoulde touche them: And his disciples rebuked those that brought them.

14 But when Iesus sawe it, he was sore displeased, and sayde vnto them: Suffer the young children to come vnto me, forbyd them not: For of such, is the kyngdome of God.

15 Ueryly I say vnto you, whosoeuer doth not receaue ye kingdome of God [Note: Mat.xviii.a. Luk.xvii.a. ] as a young childe, he shall not enter therin.

16 And when he had taken them vp in his armes, he put his handes vpon the, and blessed them. >

17 < And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one runnyng, and kneeled to hym, and asked hym: [Note: Mar.xix.d. Luk.xviii.d ] good Maister, what shall I do, that I may inherite eternall lyfe?

18 Iesus sayde vnto hym: Why callest thou me good? There is no man good but one, which is God.

C

19 Thou knowest the commaundementes: Thou shalt not commit adulterie, Thou shalt not kyll, Thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witnesse, Thou shalt defraude no man, Honour thy father and mother.

20 He aunswered, and sayde vnto hym: Maister, all these haue I obserued from my youth.

21 Iesus behelde hym, and loued hym, and sayde vnto hym, one thyng thou lackest: [Note: Mat.xix.b. Luk.xviii.d ] Go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and geue to the poore, & thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come folowe me, and take vp the crosse. >

22 But he was discomforted because of that saying, and went away mournyng: for he had great possessions.

23 And when Iesus had loked rounde about, he sayde vnto his disciples: [Note: Mat.xix.e. Luk.xviii.e. ] Howe hardly shall they that haue riches, enter into the kyngdome of God?

24 And the disciples were astonyed at his wordes. But Iesus aunswereth agayne, and sayth vnto them: Children, howe harde is it for the that trust in ryches, to enter into ye kyngdome of God.

D  
25 It is easier for a camel to go thorowe the eye of a needle, then for the riche to enter into the kyngdome of God.

26 And they were astonyed out of measure, saying betwene them selues: who then can be saued?

27 Iesus loked vpon them, & sayde: with men it is vnpossible, but not with God: for [Note: Mat.xix.c ] with God all thynges are possible.

28 And Peter began to say vnto him: Lo, [Note: Luk.xviii. ] we haue forsaken all, & haue folowed thee.

29 Iesus aunswered, & sayde: Ueryly I say vnto you, there is no man that hath forsaken house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wyfe, or chyldren, or landes, for my sake and the Gospels, [Page]

30 But he shall receaue an hundreth folde nowe at this present, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and chyldren, and landes, with persecutions, and in the worlde to come, eternall lyfe.

31 [Note: Mat.xxv.b Luk.xiii.f. ] But many that are first, shalbe last: and the last, first.

E  
32 And they were in the way, goyng vp to Hierusalem: And Iesus went before them, and they were amazed, and folowed, and were afrayde. And Iesus toke the twelue agayne, and beganne to tell them what thynges shoulde happen vnto hym.

33 [Note: Mat.xvi.c.17.c.&.20.c. Luk.xv.f. and xxii.c. ] Beholde, we go vp to Hierusalem, and the sonne of man shalbe delyuered vnto the hye priestes, & vnto the scribes and they shall condenme hym to death, and shall delyuer hym to the Gentiles.

34 And they shall mocke hym, & scourge hym, spit vpon hym, and kyll hym: And the thirde day he shall ryse agayne.

35 [Note: Math.xx.e. ] And Iames and Iohn, the sonnes of Zebedee, came vnto hym, saying: Maister, we would that thou shouldest do for vs, whatsoeuer we desyre.

36 He sayde vnto them: What woulde ye, that I shoulde do for you?

37 They sayde vnto hym: graunt vnto vs, that we may sit, one on thy ryght hande, and the other on thy left hande, in thy glory.

38 But Iesus sayde vnto them, Ye wote not what ye aske: Can ye drynke of the cuppe that I drynke of? and be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with?

39 And they sayde vnto hym: that we can. Iesus sayde vnto them: ye shall in deede drynke of the cup that I drynke of, and with the baptisme that I am baptized withall, shall ye be baptized:

F

40 But to syt on my ryght hande, and on my left hande, is not myne to geue, but vnto them, for whom it is prepared.

41 [Note: Math.xx.d ] And when the ten hearde it, they began to disdaine at Iames and Iohn.

42 But Iesus, when he had called them to hym, sayde vnto them: ye knowe, that [Note: Math.xx.d Luk.xxii.c. ] they which seeme to beare rule among the Gentiles, raigne as Lordes ouer them: And they that be great among them, exercise auctoritie vpon them.

43 Neuerthelesse, so shall it not be among you: but whosoeuer of you, wyll be great among you, shalbe your minister:

44 And whosoeuer of you wyll be the chiefest, shalbe seruaunt of all.

45 For [Note: Math.xx.d. ] the sonne of man also came not to be ministred vnto: but to minister, & to geue his lyfe, a raunsome for many.

46 And they came to Hierico: [Note: Math.xx.d. Luk.xviii.g ] And as he went out of ye citie of Hierico with his disciples, and a great number of people, blynde Bartimeus the sonne of Timeus, sate by the hye wayes syde beggyng.

47 And when he hearde that it was Iesus of Nazareth, he beganne to cry, and say: Iesus, thou sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

48 And many rebuked hym, that he shoulde holde his peace: But he cryed the more a great deale, thou sonne of Dauid haue mercy on me.

49 And Iesus stode styll, and commaunded hym to be called. And they called the blynde, saying vnto hym: Be of good comfort, ryse, he calleth the.

50 And he threwe away his cloke, & rose, and came to Iesus.

51 And Iesus aunswered, and sayde vnto hym: what wylt thou that I do vnto thee? The blynde sayde vnto hym: Maister, that I myght see.

52 Iesus sayde vnto hym: Go thy way, thy fayth hath saued thee. And immediatly he receaued his sight, & folowed Iesus in the way.

## The .xj. Chapter.

¶ 11 Christe rideth to Hierusalem, 13 the vnfruitfull fygge tree is cursed, 15 byers & sellers are cast out of the temple, 17 the house of God, is the house of prayer, 24 the strength of faith, 25 forgeue other whe thou prayest, 27 the pharisees aske Christe of his auctoritie.

A

1 [Note: Math.xxi.a Luk.xix.c. ] **And** when they came nye to Hierusalem, vnto Bethphage & Bethanie, at the mount of Oliues, he sendeth foorth two of his disciples,

2 And sayth vnto them. Go your way into the towne, that is ouer against you: And assoone as ye be entred into it, ye shall fynde a colte bounde, wheron neuer man sate: loose hym, and bryng hym hyther.

3 And yf any man say vnto you, why [Page] do ye so? Say ye, that the Lorde hath neede of hym: and straghtway he wyll sende hym hyther.

4 And they went their way, and founde the colt tyed by the doore without, in a place where two wayes met: and they loosed hym.

5 And diuers of them that stode there, sayde vnto them: [Note: Ioh.xii.b. ] What do ye loosyng the colte?

6 And they sayde vnto them, euen as Iesus had commaunded: And they let them go.

7 And they brought the colt to Iesus, and cast their garmentes on hym, and he sate vpon hym.

B

8 And many spred their garmentes in the way: Other cut downe braunches of the trees, & strawed the in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that folowed, cryed, saying, Hosanna, [Note: Psa.cxviiij.d Math.xi.b. Luk.xix.f. Iohn.xi.b. ] blessed is he that commeth in the name of the Lorde.

10 Blessed be the kyngdome, that commeth in the name of hym that is Lorde of our father Daud: Hosanna in the hiest.

11 And the Lorde entred into Hierusalem, and into the temple: And when he had loked rounde about, vpon all thynges, and nowe the euen tyde was come, he went out vnto Bethanie with the twelue.

12 [Note: Mat.xxi.b. ] And on the morowe, when they were come out from Bethanie, he hungred.

13 And when he had spyed a fygge tree a farre of, hauyng leaues, he came to see if he myght fynde any thyng theron: And when he came to it, he founde nothyng but leaues: for the tyme of figges was not yet.

14 And Iesus aunswered, and sayde vnto the fygge tree: neuer man eate fruite of thee hereafter, whyle the worlde standeth. And his disciples hearde it.

C

15 [Note: Math.xi.b. Luk.xix.g. Iohn.ii.c. ] And they came to Hierusalem: And Iesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that solde and bought in the temple, & ouerthrewe the tables of the money changers, and the seates of them that solde doues:

16 And woulde not suffer, that any man shoulde cary a vessell through ye temple.

17 And he taught, saying vnto them: [Note: Esay.li.c. 3.Reg.ii.b.c. Iere.vii.c. ] Is it not written, My house shalbe called the house of prayer vnto all nations? But ye haue made it a denne of thieues.

18 And the scribes & hye priestes hearde it, and sought howe to destroy hym: [Note: Math.xxi.d ] For they feared hym, because all the people was astonyed at his doctrine.

19 And when euen was come, Iesus went out of the citie.

20 [Note: Math.xxi.d Luk.xi.g. and .xx.c. ] And in the mornyng, as they passed by, they sawe the fygge tree dried vp by the rootes.

21 And Peter remembred, and sayde vnto hym: Maister, beholde, the fygge tree which thou cursedst, is withered away.

22 And Iesus aunswered, and sayde vnto them: haue fayth in God.

23 < For, verily I say vnto you, that whosoeuer shall say vnto this mountayne: Be thou remoued, and be thou cast into the sea, & shall not doubt in his heart, but shall beleue yt those thynges which he sayth shall come to passe, whatsoeuer he sayth, shalbe vnto hym.

D

24 Therefore I say vnto you, [Note: Mat.xxi.c. Iohn.xiii.c. ] what thynges so euer ye desyre when ye pray, beleue that ye receaue [them,] & ye shall haue [them].

25 And when ye stande & pray, [Note: Math.vi.d. and xviii.d ] forgeue, yf ye haue ought agaynst any man: that your father also which is in heauen, may forgeue you your trespasses.

26 But yf you do not forgeue: neither wyll your father, which is in heauen, forgeue you your trespasses.

27 And they came agayne to Hierusalem: [Note: Luk.xx.a. Math.xxi.c ] And as he walked in the temple, there came to hym the hye priestes, and the scribes, and the elders.

28 And say vnto him: By what auctoritie doest thou these thynges? & who gaue thee this auctoritie, to do these thynges?

29 Iesus aunswered, & sayde vnto them: I wyll also aske of you one question: and aunswere me, and I wyll tell you by what auctoritie I do these thynges.

30 The baptisme of Iohn, whether was it from heauen, or of men? Aunswere me.



31 And they reasoned with them selues, saying, yf we shall say from heauen: he wyll say, why then dyd ye not beleue hym?

32 But yf we shal say, of men, [Note: [a] This is the thirde person in Greke. ] we feare the people. For all men counted Iohn, that he was a very prophete.

33 And they aunswered, and sayde vnto Iesus: we can not tell. And Iesus aunswered and sayde vnto them: neither wyll I tell you by what auctoritie I do these thynges. >

[Page]

## ¶ The .xij. Chapter.

¶ 1 The vineyarde is let out to husbände men, 3 who euyll entreated them that were sent to receaue fruite, 8 and kylled the heire, 14 tribute is due to Caesar, 25 Christe proueth the resurrection by Scripture, agaynst the Saducees, 28 the chiefe commaundementes of the lawe, 35 Christe is the sonne of Dauid, 38 the hypocriticall vsage of the scribes, 41 the poore widdowes farthyng.

A

1 **And** he beganne to speake vnto them by parables. A [certayne] man planted [Note: Mat.xxi.d. ] a vineyarde, and compassed [Note: [a] Or, digged a pyt to receaue, the wyne from the presse. ] it about with an hedge, and ordeyned a wynepresse, and built a towre, and let it out vnto husbände men: and went into a straunge countrey.

2 And when the tyme was come, he sent to the husbände men a seruaunt, that he myght receaue of the husbandmen, of the fruite of the vineyarde.

3 And they caught hym, and beat hym, and sent hym away emptie.

4 And moreouer, he sent vnto them another seruaunt: and at hym they cast stones, and brake his head, and sent him away agayne, all to reuiled.

5 And agayne, he sent another, and hym they kylled: and many other, beatyng some, and kyllyng some.

6 And so, when he had yet but one beloued sonne, he sent hym also at the last vnto them, saying: they wyll stande in awe of my sonne.

7 [Note: Mat.xxi.d. Gen.37.d. Luk.xx.c. ] But the husbandmen saide amongst them selues: this is the heyre, come, [Note: Mat.xxi.d. Gen.37.d. Luk.xx.c. ] let vs kyl him, and the inheritaunce shalbe ours.

8 And they toke hym, and kylled hym, and cast hym out of the vineyarde.

9 What shall therefore, the Lorde of the vineyarde do? He shal come, and destroy the husbandmen, and wyll geue the vineyarde vnto other.

10 Haue ye not read this Scripture? [Note: Psa.cxviii.c. Mat.xxi.d. Actes.iii.b. ] The stone which the builders dyd refuse, is become the chiefe stone of the corner:

11 This is the Lordes doynge, and it is marueylous in our eyes.

12 They went about also to take hym, and feared the people: For they knewe, that he had spoken the parable agaynst them. And they left hym, and went their way.

13 [Note: Mat.xxii.d. Luk.xx.b. ] And they sent vnto hym, certayne of the pharisees, and of the Herodians to take hym in his wordes.

B

14 And assoone as they were come, they sayde vnto hym: Maister, we knowe that thou art true, & carest for no man, for thou considerest not the persons of men, but teachest the way of god truely: Is it lawfull to pay tribute to Caesar, or not?

15 Ought we to geue, or ought we not to geue? But he seeyng their hypocrisie, sayde vnto them: Why tempt ye me? Bryng me a penie, that I may see it.

16 And they brought it: And he sayth vnto them, Whose is this image and superscription? And they sayde vnto hym: Caesars.

17 And Iesus aunswered, and sayde vnto them: [Note: Rom.xiii.b Mat.xvii.c. and xx.c. ] Geue to Caesar [the thynges] that belong to Caesar: and to God, [the thynges] which pertayne to God. And they marueyled at hym.

18 There came also vnto hym, the Saducees, [Note: Mat.xxii.a. Act.xxiii.b Luk.xx.c. Deu.xxv b ] which say that there is no resurrection, and they asked hym, saying:

19 Maister, [Note: Mat.xxii.a. Act.xxiii.b. Luk.xx.c. Deu.xxv b ] Moyses wrote vnto vs, yf any mans brother dye, and leaue his wyfe behynde hym, & leaue no chyl dren: that his brother shoulde take his wyfe, and rayse vp seede vnto his brother.

20 There were seuen brethren: and the first toke a wyfe, and when he dyed, left no seede behynde hym.

21 And the seconde toke her, and dyed, neither left any seede: And the thirde lykewyse.

22 And seuen had her, and left no seede behynde them: Last of all, the wyfe dyed also.

23 In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise agayne, whose wyfe shall she be of them? for seuen had her to wife.

24 And Iesus aunswered, and sayde vnto the: Do ye not therefore erre, because ye vnderstande not the Scriptures, neither the power of God?

C

25 For when they shall ryse agayne from the dead, they neither marry, nor are geuen in maryage: but are as the Angels which are in heauen.

26 As touchyng the dead, that they ryse [Page] agayne: haue ye not read in the booke of Moyses, howe in the bushe, God spake vnto him, saying: [Note: Exod.iii.b. Mat.xxii.c. Luk.x.f. ] I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob?

27 He is not the God of the dead, but God of the lyuyng. Ye therefore do greatly erre.

28 [Note: Mat.xxii.d ] And when there came one of the scribes, & had heard them disputyng together, and perceaued that he had aunswered them well, he asked him: which is the first of all the commaundementes.

29 Iesus aunswered hym, the first of all the commaundementes is: Heare O Israel, [Note: Deut.vi.a. Mat.xxii.d. ] The Lorde our God, is one Lorde:

30 And thou shalt loue the Lorde thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy mynde, and with all thy strength. This is the first commaundement.

31 And the seconde is lyke vnto this: [Note: Leuit.xix.d Mat.xxii.b. Rom.xiii.c. Galath.v.c. Iacob.ii.b. Math.v.g. ] Thou shalt loue thy neyghbour as thy selfe. There is none other commaundement greater then these.

32 And the scribe sayde vnto hym: well maister, thou hast sayde the trueth, for there is one God, & there is none but he.

33 And to loue hym with all the heart, and with all the vnderstandyng, & with all the soule, and with all the strength, and to loue a [mans] neyghbour as hym selfe, is greater then all the burnt offerynges and sacrifices.

34 And when Iesus sawe that he aunswered discretely, he sayde vnto hym: Thou art not farre from the kingdome of God. And no man after that, durst aske hym any question.

35 And Iesus aunswered and sayde, teachyng in the temple: howe say the scribes that Christe is ye sonne of Daud?

D

36 For Daud hym selfe, inspired with the holy ghost, sayde: [Note: Mat.xxii.d. Psal.cx.a. ] The Lorde saide to my Lorde, sit on my right hande, tyll I make thyne enemies thy footstoole.

37 Daud hym selfe calleth hym Lorde: and howe is he then his sonne? And much people hearde hym gladly.

38 And he sayde vnto them in his doctrine, beware of the scribes, whiche [Note: Mat.xxiii.a Luk.xx.g. ] desire to go in long clothyng, and salutations in the market places,

39 And the chiefe seates in the congregations, and the vppermost rowmes at feastes,

40 Which deuoure widdowes houses, & vnder a pretence, make long prayers: These shal receaue greater dampnatio.

41 < And when Iesus sate ouer agaynst the tresurie, he behelde [Note: Luk.xxi.a. ] howe the people put money into the tresurie: And many that were rich, cast in much.

42 And there came a certayne poore widdowe, & she threwe in two mites, which make a farthyng.

43 And he called vnto hym his disciples, and sayth vnto them: Ueryly I say vnto you, that this poore widdowe hath cast more in, then all they which haue cast into the tresurie.

44 For they all, dyd cast in of their superfluitie: but she, of her pouertie, dyd cast in all that she had, euen all her lyuyng. >

## ¶ The .xiiij. Chapter.

¶ 2 The destruction of the temple, 24 signes before Christes comyng, 32 the day and houre thereof is vnknown, 31 Gods worde shall not passe away, 35 watche and pray.

A

1 **And** as he went out of the temple, [Note: Mat.24.a. Luk.xxi.a. ] one of his disciples sayde vnto hym: Maister, see what stones, & what buildynges [are here.]

2 And Iesus aunswered, & sayde vnto hym: Seest thou these great buildynges? There shall not be left one stone vpon another, that shall not be throwen downe.

3 And as he sate vpon the mount of Oliues, ouer agaynst the temple, Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrewe, asked hym, secretly:

4 Tell vs, when shall these thynges be? And what shalbe the signe when all these thynges shalbe fulfilled?

5 And Iesus aunswered them, and began to say: [Note: Mat.24.a. Luk.xxi.b. ] take heede, lest any man deceaue you.

6 For many shall come in my name, saying I am [Christe:] and shall deceaue many.

[Page]

7 When ye shall heare of warres, and tidynges of warres, be ye not troubled: For such thynges must nedes be, but the ende is not yet.

B

8 For there shall nation aryse agaynst nation, and kyngdome agaynst kyngdome: And there shalbe earthquakes in diuers places, and famine shall there be, and troubles. These are the begynnyng of sorowes.

9 [Note: Iohn.xvi.a. ] But take ye heede to your selues: [Note: Mat.x.b. Luk.xxi.c. Iohn.xvi.a. ] For they shall

deliuer you vp to counceles, and to synagogues, and ye shalbe beaten, yea, and shalbe brought before rulers & kynges for my sake, for a testimoniall vnto them.

10 [Note: Math.24.b. ] And the Gospel must first be published among all nations.

11 [Note: Math.x.c. ] But when they leade you, and present you, be not carefull aforehande, neither take thought what ye shall speake: but whatsoever is geuen you in the same houre, that speake ye. For it is not ye that speake, but the holy ghost.

12 The brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the sonne: and the chyldren shall ryse agaynst their fathers and mothers, and shall put them to death.

13 And ye shalbe hated of all men for my names sake: But who so endureth vnto the ende, the same shalbe safe.

14 [Note: Math.24.b. Luk.xxi.d. Daniel.ix.g ] Moreouer, when ye see the abomination of desolation, wherof is spoken by Daniel the prophete, stande where it ought not (let hym that readeth vnderstande) then let them that be in Iurie, flee to the mountaynes:

15 And let hym that is on ye house toppe, not go downe into the house, neither enter therin, to fetch any thyng out of his house.

16 And let hym that is in the fielde, not turne backe agayne vnto the thynges which he left behynde hym, for to take his garmente with hym.

17 Wo [shalbe] then to them that are with chylde, and to them that geue sucke in those dayes.

18 But pray ye that your flyght be not in the Wynter:

19 For there shalbe in those dayes such tribulation, as was not from the begynnyng of creatures, which God created, vnto this tyme, neither shalbe.

20 And except that the Lorde shoulde shorten [those] dayes, no fleshe shoulde be sau'd: But for the electes sake, whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened [those] dayes.

C  
21 [Note: Math.24.b. Luk.xvii.c. ] And then, yf any man say to you, lo here is Christe, lo he is there, beleue not.

22 For false Christes, and false prophetes shall ryse, and shall shewe signes and wonders, to deceaue, yf it were possible, euen the elect.

23 But take ye heede: Beholde, I haue shewed you all thynges before.

24 [Note: Math.24.c. Ioel.ii.c. Luk.xxi.c. ] Moreouer, in those dayes, after that tribulation, the sunne shall waxe darke, and the moone shall not geue her light.

25 And the starres of heauen, shall fall: and the powers which are in heauen, shalbe shaken.

26 [Note: Daniel.vii.c ] And then shall they see the sonne of man commyng in the cloudes, with great power and glory.

27 And then shall he sende his Angels, and shall gather together his elect, from the foure wyndes, from the ende of the earth, to the vtmost part of heauen.

D

28 [Note: Math.24.d. Luk.xxi.f. ] Learne a parable of the fygge tree. When his braunche is yet tender, and hath brought fourth leaues, ye knowe that sommer is neare:

29 So ye in lyke maner, when ye see these thynges come to passe, vnderstand, that [he] is nye, euen at the doores.

30 Ueryly I say vnto you, that this generation shall not passe, tyll all these thynges be done.

31 Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my wordes shall not passe away.

32 But of that day and tyme knoweth no man: no not the Angels which are in heauen, neither the sonne him selfe, saue the father only.

33 [Note: Math.24.d. Luk.xii.c. ] Take heede, watche and pray: for ye knowe not when the tyme is.

34 [Note: Mat.xxv.b. Luk.xix.b. ] As a man which is gone into a straunge countrey, and hath left his house, and geuen auctoritie to his seruautes, and to euery man his worke, and commaunded the porter to watche:

35 Watche ye therefore, (for ye knowe not whe the maister of the house wyl come, at euen, or at mydnyght, whether at the cocke crowyng, or in the dawnyng.)

36 Lest yf he come sodenly, he fynde you slepyng.

37 And that I say vnto you, I say vnto all, watche.

[Page]

## ¶ The .xiiiij. Chapter.

¶ 1 The hygh priestes conspire agaynst Christe, 3 A woman powreth precious oyntment on Christes head, 10 Iudas for money betrayeth Christe. 12 the Passouer is prepared and eaten, 22 the institution of the Lordes Supper, 25 Christes prayers and agonie in Gethsemani, 46 the takyng and examinyng of Christe before the hygh priest, 67 Peter denieth Christe, 72 and weepeth.

A

1 < **After** two dayes was [the feaste] of the Passouer, & of vnleuened bread. [Note: Mat.xxvi.a Luk.xxii.a. ]  
And the hie priestes and the scribes, sought howe they myght take him by craft, and put hym to death.

2 But they sayde: not in the feast day, lest any busines arise among the people.

3 [Note: Mat.xxvi.a Iohn.xi.f. ] And when he was at Bethanie, in the house of Simon the leper, euen as he sate  
at meate, there came a woman hauyng an alabaster boxe of very precious oyntment, [called] Narde  
pisrike, and she brake the boxe, and powred it on his head.

4 And there were some, that had indignation within them selues, and sayde: what neded this waste of  
oyntment?

5 For it myght haue ben solde for more then three hundred pence, and haue ben geuen to the poore. And  
they grudged agaynst her.

6 And Iesus sayde: let her alone, why trouble ye her? She hath done a good worke on me.

7 [Note: Deut.xv.c. ] For ye haue poore with you alwayes, and whensoever ye wyll, ye may do the good: but  
me haue ye not alwayes.

8 She hath done that she coude: she came aforehande, to annoynt my body to the burying.

9 Ueryly I say vnto you, whersoever this Gospel shalbe preached, throughout the whole worlde, this also  
that she hath done, shalbe rehearsed, in remembraunce of her.

B

10 [Note: Mat.xxvi.b Luk.xxii.a. Iohn.xiii.a. ] And Iudas Iscariot, one of the twelue, went away vnto ye hie  
priestes, to betray hym vnto them.

11 When they hearde that, they were glad, and promised that they woulde geue hym money. And he  
sought howe he myght conueniently betray hym.

12 [Note: Mat.xxvi.b Luk.xxii.a. ] And the first day of vnleuened bread, when they dyd sacrifice the Passouer,  
his disciples sayde vnto hym: Where wylt thou that we go and prepare, that thou mayest eate the  
Passouer?

13 And he sendeth foorth two of his disciples, and sayth vnto them: Go ye into the citie, & there shall  
meete you a man bearing a pitcher of water, folowe him.

14 And whyther soeuer he goeth in, say ye to the good man of the house, the maister sayth: Where is the  
ghest chaumber, where I shall eate the Pasouer with my disciples?

15 And he wyll shewe you a large vpper chaumber, pauered and prepared: there make redy for vs.

16 And his disciples went foorth, & came into the citie, & founde as he had sayd vnto them: & they made  
redy the Passouer.

C

17 [Note: Mat.xxvi.b Luk.xxii.b. ] And when it was nowe euen tyde, he came with the twelue.

18 And as they sate at boord & dyd eate, Iesus sayde: Ueryly I say vnto you, [Note: Iohn.xiii.c. ] one of you, that eateth with me, shall betray me.

19 And they began to be sory, and to say to hym one by one, is it I? And another sayde, is it I?

20 He aunswered and sayde vnto them: It is one of the twelue, euen he that dyppeth with me in the platter.

21 The sonne of man truely goeth as it is written of hym: but wo to that man by whom the sonne of man is betrayed. Good were it for that man, yf he had neuer ben borne.

22 [Note: Mat.xxvi.e. Luk.xiii.b. i.Cor.xi.e. ] And as they dyd eate, Iesus toke bread: and whe he had blessed, he brake [it] and gaue to them, and sayde: Take, eate, this is my body.

23 And he toke the cup, and when he had geuen thankes, he toke it to them: and they all dranke of it.

24 And he sayde vnto them: This is my blood, of the newe Testament, which is shed for many.

25 Ueryly I say vnto you, I wyll drinke no more of the fruite of the vine, vntyll that day, that I drinke it newe in the kyngdome of God.

26 [Note: Mat.xxvi.c ] And when they had prayسد [God,] they went out into ye mount of Oliues.

[Page]

27 And Iesus sayth vnto them: All ye shalbe offended because of me this nyght. For it is written: [Note: Zach.xii.c. Mat.xxvi.c Luk.xxii.d. Iohn.xiii.d. ] I wyll smyte the sheepehearde, and the sheepe shalbe scattered.

28 But after that I am risen agayne, I wyll go into Galilee before you.

29 Peter sayde vnto hym: And though all men be offended, yet [wyll] not I.

30 And Iesus sayth vnto hym: Ueryly I say vnto thee, that this day, euen, in this night, before the cocke crowe twise, thou shalt deny me three tymes.

31 But he spake more vehemently: no, yf I shoulde dye with thee, I wyll not deny thee. Likewise also sayde they all.

D

32 [Note: Math.26.d. ] And they came into a place which was named Gethsemani, and he sayth to his disciples: Sit ye heare, whyle I shall pray.

33 And he taketh with hym, Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and began to waxe abasshed, and to be in an agonie.

34 And sayth vnto them: [Note: Math.26.d. Iohn.xii.d. ] My soule is heauie, euen vnto the death, tarry ye here and wachte.



35 And he went foorth a litle, and fell flat on the grounde, and prayed: that yf it were possible, the houre myght passe from hym.

36 And he sayde: [Note: Math.26.d. Luk.xxii.d. ] Abba father, all thynges are possible vnto thee, take away this cup from me. Neuerthelesse, not that I wyll: but that thou [wylt, be done.]

E

37 And he came & founde them slepyng, and sayth vnto Peter: Simon, slepest thou? Coudest not thou watche one houre?

38 Watche ye, and pray, lest ye enter into temptation: the spirite truely is redy, but the fleshe is weake.

39 [Note: Math.26.d. ] And agayne he went asyde, & prayed, and spake the same wordes.

40 And he returned, and founde them a slepe agayne. For their eyes were heaueie: neither wist they what to aunswere hym.

41 And he came the thirde tyme, & sayde vnto them: slepe hencefoorth, and take your ease, it is inough: The houre is come, beholde, the sonne of man is betrayed into the handes of sinners.

42 Ryse vp, let vs go: Lo, he that betrayeth me, is at hande.

43 [Note: Mat.xxvi.e Luk.xxii.c. ] And immediatly whyle he yet spake, commeth Iudas, which was one of the twelue, and with hym a great number of people, with swordes & staues, from the hye priestes, and scribes, and elders.

44 And he that betrayed hym, had geuen them a general token, saying: Who soeuer I do kysse, that same is he, take hym, and leade hym away warely.

45 And assoone as he was come, he goeth strayghtway to hym, and sayth vnto hym: Maister, Maister, and kissed hym.

46 And they layde their handes on hym, and toke hym.

F

47 And one of them that stode by, drewe out a sworde, & smote a seruaunt of the hye priest, and cut of his eare.

48 And Iesus aunswered, and saide vnto them: [Note: Mat.xxvi.c Luk.xxii.f. ] Ye be come out as vnto a thiefe with swordes and with staues, for to take me.

49 I was dayly with you in the temple, teachyng, and ye toke me not, [but these thynges come to passe,] that the Scriptures shoulde be fulfilled.

50 [Note: Mat.xxvi.c Luk.xxii.f. Ioh.xviii.b. ] And they all forsooke hym, & ranne away.

51 And there folowed hym, a certayne young man, clothed in lynnyn vpon the bare: and the young men

caught hym.

52 And he left his lynnen garment, and fled from them naked.

53 [Note: Mat.xxvi.f Luk.xxii.f Ioh.xviii.b. ] And they ledde Iesus away to the hiest priest, and with hym came all the hie priestes, and the elders, and the scribes.

54 And Peter folowed hym a great way of, euen tyl he was come into the palace of the hie priest, and he sate with the seruauntes, and warmed hym selfe at the fyre.

55 [Note: Mat.xxvi.f Actes.vi.d. ] And the hie priestes, and all the councell sought for wnesse agaynst Iesus, to put hym to death, and founde none.

56 For many bare false wnesse agaynst hym, but their wnesse agreed not together.

57 And there arose certayne, and brought false wnesse agaynst hym, saying.

58 We hearde hym say: [Note: Mat.xxvi.f Iohn.ii.d. ] I wyll destroy this temple that is made with handes, and within three dayes I wyll buylde another, made without handes.

59 But yet their wnesse agreed not together.

60 [Note: Mat.xxvi.f ] And the hie priest stode vp amongst them, and asked Iesus, saying: Aunswerest thou nothyng? Howe is it that these beare wnesse agaynst thee?

[Page] G

61 But he helde his peace, & aunswered nothyng. Agayne, [Note: Mat.xxvi.f ] the hiest priest asked hym, and sayde vnto hym: Art thou Christe, the sonne of the blessed?

62 And Iesus sayde, I am: [Note: Mat.xxvi.f Luk.xxi.g. Iohn.vi.g. ] And ye shall see the sonne of man sitting on the ryght hande of power, and commyng in the cloudes of heauen.

63 Then the hie priest rent his clothes, and sayde: What neede we any further witnesses?

64 Ye haue hearde blasphemie: what thinke ye? And they all condemned him to be worthy of death.

65 And some began to spyt at hym, and to couer his face, and to beate hym with fistes, and to say vnto hym, prophecie. And the seruauntes dyd beate hym with roddes.

66 And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there came one of the wenches of the hiest priest:

67 And [Note: Mat.xxvi.g Luk.xxii.f Iohn.xviii.c ] when she sawe Peter warmyng hym selfe, she loketh on hym, and sayth: And thou also wast with Iesus of Nazareth.

68 And he denied, saying: I knowe hym not, neither wote I what thou sayest. And he went out into the porche, and the cocke crewe.

69 And a damsell, when she sawe hym agayne, began to say to the that stode by, this is one of them.

70 And he denyed it agayne. And anone after, they that stode by, sayde agayne to Peter: Surely, thou art one of the, for thou art of Galilee, and thy speache agreeth therto.

71 But he began to curse, and to sweare, [saying]: I knowe not this man of whom ye speake.

72 And the seconde tyme [Note: Mat.xxvi.g Luk.xxii.g ] the cocke crewe, & Peter remembred the worde that Iesus sayde vnto hym, before the cocke crowe twise, thou shalt deny me three tymes: And he began to weepe.

## ¶ The .xv. Chapter.

¶ 1 Iesus is delyuered bounde to Pilate, 2 and aunswereth hym nothyng, 15 Barabbas is loosed, and Iesus is deliuered vp to be crucified, 16 the maner of Christes passion & death, 39 the Centurions confession of Christe, 43 Ioseph beggeth Christes body, and buryeth it, 47 women that behelde his passion and sepulchre.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **And** anone in the dawnyng, [Note: Math.27.a. Luk.xxiii.a Ioh.xviii.c. ] the hye priestes held a councel, with the elders, and the scribes, and the whole congregation, and bound Iesus, and ledde hym away, and deliuered hym to Pilate.

2 And Pilate asked hym: Art thou the kyng of the Iewes? And he aunswered and sayde vnto hym: thou sayest it?

3 And the hye priestes accused hym of many thynges.

4 So Pilate asked hym agayne, saying: [Note: Math.27.b. Luk.xxiii.b ] Aunswerest thou nothyng? Beholde, howe many thynges they witnesse agaynst thee.

5 Iesus yet aunswered nothyng, so that Pilate marueyled.

6 At that feast, Pilate dyd delyuer vnto them a prisoner, whomsoeuer they woulde desire.

7 And there was one, that was named Barabbas, which lay bounde, with them that made insurrection: Which [men] had committed murther also in the insurrection.

8 And the people crying aloude, began to desire [hym] that he woulde do, according as he had euer done vnto them.

9 Pilate aunswered them, saying: Wyll ye that I let loose vnto you the kyng of the Iewes?

10 For he knewe, that the hie priestes had delyuered hym of enuie.

11 But the hie priestes moued the people, that he shoulde rather delyuer Barabbas vnto them.

12 Pilate aunswered agayne, and sayde vnto them: [Note: Math.27.b. Luk.xxiii.c ] What wyll ye then that I do vnto hym, whom ye call the kyng of the Iewes?

13 And they cryed agayne, crucifie hym.

14 Pilate sayde vnto them: What euyll hath he done? And they cryed the more feruently, crucifie hym.

15 And so Pilate, wylling to content the people, [Note: Math.27.c, ] let loose Barabbas vnto them, and deliuered vp Iesus, when he had scourged hym, for to be crucified.

B

16 And the souldiers led hym away, into the hall, called Prætorium, and called together the whole bande [of souldiers:]

[Page]

17 And they clothed hym with purple, and they platted a crowne of thornes, and crowned hym withall,

18 And began to salute hym: Hayle kyng of the Iewes.

19 And they smote hym on the head with a reede, & did spit vpon him, and bowed their knees, and worshipped hym.

20 And when they had mocked hym, they toke the purple of hym, and put his owne clothes on hym, and led hym out to crucifie hym.

21 [Note: Math.27.d. Luk.xxiii.d ] And they compelled one that passed by, called Simon of Cyrene (commying out of the fielde, the father of Alexander and Rufus) to beare his crosse.

C

22 [Note: Mat.27.d. ] And they brought hym to a place named Golgotha, which is, if a man interprete it, the place of [dead mens] sculles.

23 And they gaue hym to drynke, wyne myngled with myrre: but he receaued it not.

24 And when they had crucified hym, [Note: Math.27.d. Psal.xxii.d. ] they parted his garmentes, castyng lottes vpon them, what euery man shoulde take.

25 And it was the thyrde houre, and they crucified hym.

26 And the title of his cause was written: THE KYNG OF THE IEVVES.

27 [Note: Math.27.d. Luk.xxiii.d ] And they crucifed with hym two thieues: the one on the ryght hande, and the other on his left.

28 And the Scripture was fulfilled which sayth: [Note: Esay.liiii.d. Math.27.d. ] He was counted among the wycked.

29 [Note: Math.27.d. Luk.xxiii b ] And they that went by, rayled on him, wagging their heades, and saying: A wretche, thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three dayes,

30 Saue thy selfe, and come downe from the crosse.

31 Lykewyse also mocked hym the hye priestes among them selues, with the scribes, and sayde: He saued other men, hym selfe he can not saue.

32 Let Christe the kyng of Israel descende nowe from the crosse, that we may see, and beleue. And they that were crucified with hym, checked hym also.

33 [Note: Mat 27.e. Luk.xxiii.f ] And when the sixth houre was come, darknesse arose ouer all the earth, vntill the nynth houre.

34 And at the nynth houre, Iesus cryed with a loude voyce, saying: Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is, yf one interprete it, [Note: Math.27.f. Psal.xxi.a. ] My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

D

35 And some of them that stode by, whe they hearde that, sayde: Beholde, he calleth for Elias.

36 [Note: Math.27.c. ] And one ran, and fylled a sponge full of vineger, and put it on a reede, & gaue hym to drynke, saying: let hym alone, let vs see whether Elias wyll come and take hym downe.

37 But Iesus cryed with a loude voyce, and gaue vp the ghost.

38 [Note: Math.27.f. Luk.xxiii.g ] And the vayle of the temple dyd rent in two peeces, from the toppe to the bottome.

39 [Note: Math.27.f. Luk.xxiii.g ] And when the Centurion, which stode before hym, sawe, that he so cryed, and gaue vp the ghost, he sayde: Truely this man was the sonne of God.

40 [Note: Math.27.f. Luk.xxiii.g ] There were also women a good way of, beholdyng hym: among whom was [Note: Math.27.g. ] Marie Magdalene, and Marie the mother of Iames the litle, and of Ioses, and Salome.

41 [Note: Luk.viii.a. ] Which also when he was in Galilee, had folowed hym, and ministred vnto hym: and many other women, which came vp with hym vnto Hierusalem.

42 And nowe when the euen was come, (because it was the day of preparyng, that goeth before the Sabboth)

43 [Note: Math.27.g. Luk.xxiii.g Ioh.xix.g. ] Ioseph [of the citie] of Aramathia, a noble councellour, which also loked for the kyngdome of God, came, and went in boldely vnto Pilate, and begged of hym the body of Iesu.

44 And Pilate marueyled that he was alreedy dead: and called vnto hym the Centurion, and asked of hym, whether he had ben any whyle dead.

45 And when he knewe the trueth of the Centurion, he gaued the body to Ioseph.

46 And he bought a linnen cloth, & toke hym downe, and wrapped hym in the linnen cloth, & layde him in a sepulchre, that was hewe out of the rocke, & roulled a stone vnto the doore of ye sepulchre.

47 And Marie Magdalene, and Marie Ioses, behelde where he was layde. >

[Page]

## ¶ The .xvj. Chapter.

¶ 1 The women come to the sepulchre, 5 an Angel telleth them that Christe is rysen. 9 Christe appeareth to Marie Magdalene, 12 to two goyng into the countrey, 14 then to the eleuen, 15 whom he commaundeth to preache the Gospell. 19 Christe is receaued into heauen. 20 The signes that folowe the preachyng of the Gospell.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **And** whe the Sabboth day was past, Marie Magdalen and Marie [the mother] of Iames, & Salome, bought sweete smellynge oyntmentes, that they myght come and annoynt hym.

2 [Note: Math.28.a. Luk.xxiiii. Ioh.xx a. ] And early in the mornyng, the [Note: [a] That is, Sunday, the first day of the weeke. ] first day of the Sabbothes, they came vnto the sepulchre, when the sunne was rysen:

3 And they sayde among them selues, who shall roule vs away the stone from the doore of the sepulchre?

4 And when they loked, they sawe how that the stone was rouled awaye, for it was a very great one.

5 And they went into the sepulchre, and sawe a young man syttyng on the ryght syde, clothed in a long whyte garment, and they were amased.

6 [Note: Math.28.b. Luk.xxiiii a ] And he sayth vnto them, be not amased: ye seke Iesus of Nazareth, which was crucified: He is risen, he is not here, beholde the place where they had put hym.

<sup>B</sup>  
7 But go your way, & tell his disciples, and Peter, that he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see hym, as he saide vnto you. >

8 [Note: Math.28.a. Luk.xxiiii a ] And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulchre, for they trembled & were amased: neither sayde they any thing to any man, for they were afraide.

<sup>C</sup>  
9 < When [Iesus] was rysen early, the first [day] after the Sabboth, he appeared firste to Marie Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seuen deuils.

10 And she went & tolde them that were with hym, as they mourned & wept.

11 And they, when they hearde that he was alyue, and had ben seene of her, beleued it not.

12 [Note: Luk.xxiii.b ] After that, appeared he vnto two of them in another fourme, as they walked and went into the countrey.

13 And they went and tolde it vnto the residue: and [they] beleued not these also.

14 < Afterwarde, he appeared vnto the eleuen, as they sate at meate, and cast in their teeth their vnbeliefe and hardnes of heart, because they beleued not them whiche had seene that he was rysen agayne from the dead.

15 And he sayde vnto them: [Note: Math.28. d. ] Go ye into all the worlde, and preache the Gospell to all creatures.

D

16 He that beleueth, and is baptized, shalbe saued: But he that beleueth not, shalbe dampned.

17 And these tokens shall folowe them that beleue. [Note: Actes.viii.b xvi.b. xx.c. ] In my name they shal cast out deuils, they [Note: Actes.ii.a. and .xix.b. Luk.x.c. and .xxiii.b. ] shall speake with newe tongues,

18 They shall driue away serpentis: and yf they drinke any deadly thyng, it shall not hurte them: They shall lay their handes on the sicke, & they shal recouer.

19 So then, when the Lorde had spoken vnto them, [Note: Lu.xxiiii.g. Actes.i.b. ] he was receaued into heauen, and sate hym downe on the ryght hande of God.

20 And they went forth, and preached euerywhere, the Lorde workyng with them, [Note: Heb.ii.a. ] and confirmyng the worde with signes folowyng.

Here endeth the Gospell by Saint Marke.

[Page]

## ¶ The Gospell by Saint Luke.

### The first Chapter.

¶ 1 The peface of Luke. 5 Of Zacharias and Elizabeth. 11 The Angel sheweth the natiuitie of Iohn Baptist. 20 The incredulitie of Zacharie is punysshed. 28 The Angel saluteth Marie, and sheweth the natiuitie of Christe. 40 Marie visiteth Elizabeth. 46 The songue of Marie. 57 The birth, circumcision, and graces of Iohn Baptist. 68 The prophesie of Zacharie. 80 The office of Iohn.

A

1 **Forasmuche** as manye haue taken in hande, to set foorth in order, ye declaration of those thynges whiche are moste surelye to be beleued among vs,

2 Euen as they deliuered them vnto vs, which from the begynnyng sawe them them selues with their eyes, and were ministers of the [Note: [a] That is, they were doers in suche thynges as be set foorth in the Gospel. ] worde:

3 I determined also, assoone as I had searched out diligently all thinges from the begynnyng, that then I woulde write vnto thee, moste excellent Theophilus.

4 That thou myghtest knowe the certentie of those thinges wherof thou hast ben infourmed.

5 There was in the dayes of Herode the kyng of Iurie, a certaine priest, named Zacharias, [Note: 1.Par.24.a. ] of the course of Abia, & his wyfe was of the daughters of Aaron, & her name was Elizabeth.

6 They were both ryghteous before God, and walked in all the lawes and ordinaunces of the Lorde, that no man coulde fynde fault with them.

7 And they had no chylde, because that Elizabeth was barren: and they both were nowe well stricken in age.

8 And it came to passe, that when Zacharie executed the priestes office before God, as his course came,

9 [Note: Exo.xxx.b Hebr.ix.b. ] Accordyng to ye custome of the priestes office, his lot was to burne incence, whe he went into the temple of the Lorde.

10 And the whole multitude of the people were without in prayer, whyle the incence was burnyng.

11 And there appeared vnto hym an Angel of the Lorde, standyng on the ryght syde of the aulter of incence.

12 And when Zacharias sawe him, he was troubled, and feare came vpo him.

B

13 But the Angel sayde vnto him: Feare not Zacharie, for thy prayer is hearde: and thy wyfe Elizabeth shall beare thee a sonne, & thou shalt cal his name Iohn.

14 And thou shalt haue ioy and gladnesse, and many shall reioyce at his birth.

15 For he shalbe great in the syght of the Lorde, and shall neither drynke wine nor strong drynke: and he shalbe fylled with the holy ghost, euen from his mothers wombe.



[Page]

16 And many of the chyldren of Israel, shall he turne to their Lorde God.

17 And he shall go before hym, with the spirite and power of [Note: Math.xi.b. ] Elias, to turne the heartes of the fathers to the chyldren, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the iust men, to make redy a perfect people for the Lorde.

18 And Zacharias saide vnto the Angel: By what token shall I know this? For [Note: Gen.xvii.c. and .xviii b. ] I am olde, and my wyfe well stricken in yeres.

19 And the Angel aunswered, and sayde vnto hym: I am Gabriel that stande in the presence of God, and am sent to speake vnto thee, and to shewe thee these glad tydynges.

20 And beholde, thou shalt be dumbe, & not be able to speake, vntyll the day that these thynges be performed, because thou beleuedst not my wordes, whiche shalbe fulfilled in their season.

21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marueyled that he taried so long in the temple.

22 And when he came out, he coulde not speake vnto them. And they perceaued that he had seene a vision in the temple: For he beckened vnto them, and remayned speachlesse.

C

23 < And it came to passe, that assoone as the dayes of his office were out, he departed into his owne house.

24 And after those dayes, his wyfe Elizabeth conceaued, and hyd her selfe fiue monethes, saying:

25 Thus hath the Lorde dealt with me, in the dayes wherein he loked on me, to take fro me my rebuke [Note: [b] For it was a chiefe blessing of god to be fruitfull in chyldren. Gen.vii. Exo.xxiii. Psa.127 &128 because it was a multiplying of the lordes people, & fufylling of gods promise. Gen.xiii. and therefore was taken amonge the Iewes for a reproche to be barren. ] among men.

26 And in the sixth moneth, the Angel Gabriel was sent from God, vnto a citie of Galilee, named Nazareth,

27 To a virgin, spoused to a man whose name was Ioseph, of the house of Daud, and the virgins name was Marie.

28 And the Angel went in vnto her, and sayde: Hayle [thou that art] freelie beloued, the Lorde is with thee, blessed art thou among women.

29 And when she sawe hym, she was troubled at his saying, and caste in her mynde what maner of salutation that shoulde be.

30 And the Angel saide vnto her: Feare not Marie, for thou hast founde grace with God.

31 For beholde, [Note: Esai.vii.c. ] thou shalt conceaue in thy wombe, and beare a sonne, & [Note: Math.i.c.

Luk.ii.c. ] shalt call his name Iesus.

32 He shalbe great, & shalbe called ye sonne of the hiest: & the Lord God shall geue vnto him the seate of his father Dauid:

33 And [Note: Esai.ix.b. ] he shall reigne ouer the house of Iacob for euer, and of his kyngdome there shalbe none ende.

34 [Note: Dani.vii.b. Mich.iiii.b. ] Then said Marie vnto ye Angel: How shall this be, seing I knowe not a man?

D

35 And the Angel aunswered, & saide vnto her: The holy ghost shall come vpon thee, & the power of the hiest shall ouersadowe [Note: [c] shall work secretelye in thee aboue all reason. ] thee. Therefore also that holy thyng whiche shalbe borne, shalbe called the sonne of God.

36 And beholde, thy cosin Elizabeth, she hath also conceaued a sonne in her olde age: & this is her sixth moneth, whiche was called barren.

37 For with [Note: Zach.viii.b. Math.xix.c Mark.x b. Luk.xviii.c ] God, shall nothyng be vnpossible.

38 And Marie saide: Beholde the handmayden of the Lorde, be it vnto me accordyng to thy worde. > And the Angel departed from her.

39 < And Marie arose in those dayes, & went into the hyll countrey with haste, into a citie of Iuda,

40 And entred into the house of Zacharie, and saluted Elizabeth.

41 And it came to passe, that when Elizabeth hearde the salutation of Marie, the babe sprang in her wombe, and Elizabeth was fylled with the holy ghost.

E

42 And she cryed with a loude voyce, and saide: Blessed art thou among women, because ye fruite of thy wombe is blessed.

43 And whence commeth this to me, that ye mother of my lord should come to me?

44 For loe, assoone as the voyce of thy salutation sounded in mine eares, the babe sprang in my wombe for ioy.

45 And blessed is she that beleued: For those thinges shalbe perfourmed, which were tolde her from the Lorde.

46 [Note: Esai.lxi.d. ] And Marie saide: My soule magnifieth the Lorde.

47 And my spirite reioyceth in God my sauour.

48 For he hath loked on the lowe degree of his handmayden: For loe, now from hencefoorth shal all

generations call me blessed.

49 Because, he that is mightie, hath done to me great thinges, & holy is his name,

50 And his mercy is on them that feare [Page] him, from generation to generation.

51 He hath shewed stregth with his arme, he hath scattered them that are proude, in the imagination of their heartes.

52 [Note: i.Reg.ii.b. Eccle.x.c. ] He hath put downe the myghtie fro their seates, and exalted them of lowe degree.

53 He hath fylled the hungry with good thynges, & sent away the riche emptie.

54 He hath helped his seruaunt Israel, in remembraunce of his mercy,

55 ( [Note: Gen.xxii.c. ] Euen as he promised to our fathers, Abraham, and to his seede) for euer.

56 And Marie abode with her about three monethes, and returned agayne to her owne house.

57 < Elizabethes tyme came, that she shoulde be deliuered, and she brought foorth a sonne.

58 And her neyghbours, and her cosins hearde howe the Lorde hadde shewed great mercy vpo her, and they reioyced with her.

F

59 And it came to passe, that on the eyght day they came [Note: Gen.xvii.b. and .xxi.a. Leuit.xii.a. ] to circumcise the chylde, and called his name Zacharias, after the name of his father.

60 And his mother aunswered, and said: not so, but he shalbe called Iohn.

61 And they sayde vnto her: There is none in thy kinrede that is named with this name.

62 And they made signes to his father, howe he woulde haue hym called.

63 And he asked for wrytyng tables, and wrote, saying, his name is Iohn. And they marueyled all.

64 And his mouth was opened immediatly, and his tounge [loosed] & he spake, and praysed God.

65 And feare came on all them that dwelt nye vnto them: And all these sayinges were noysed abrode throughout all the hyll countrey of Iurie.

66 And all they that hearde them, layde them vp in their heartes, saying: What maner of chylde shall this be? And the hande of the Lorde was with hym.

67 And his father Zacharias was filled with ye holy ghost, & prophesied, saying.

68 Prayed be ye Lord God of Israel, for he hath visited & redeemed his people.

69 And hath rayseed [Note: Psal.13.c. ] vp an [Note: [d] That is, his kingdome and power. 1.Sam.xvi. and Dan.vii. ]  
horne of saluation vnto vs, in the house of his seruaunt Dauid.

70 Euen as he promised by the mouth of his holy prophetes, whiche were sence the worlde began.

G

71 That he would saue vs from our enemies, and from the hande of all that hate vs.

72 That he would deale mercyfully with our fathers, and remember his holy couenaunt.

73 [Note: Gen.xxiii c ] And that he woulde perfourme the oth, which he sware to our father Abraham, for to  
geue vs.

74 [Note: Esaias.38.c. ] That we, beyng deliuered out of the handes of our enemies, might serue him without  
feare,

75 All the dayes of our life, in [such] holynesse and righteousnes [as are accepted] before hym.

76 And thou childe shalt be called the prophete of the hyghest: for thou shalt go before the face of the  
Lorde, to prepare his wayes.

77 To geue knowledge of saluation vnto his people, by the remission of their sinnes.

78 Through ye tender mercy of our God, wherby the day spryng from an hygh hath visited vs.

79 [Note: Esai.ix.c. Math.iii.c. ] To geue lyght to them that sitte in darknesse, and in the shadowe of death, to  
guide our feete into the way of peace.

80 And the chylde grewe, and waxed strong in spirite, and was in wilderness till the day came when he  
should shewe hym selfe vnto the Israelites.

## ¶ The seconde Chapter.

¶ 1 The taskyng of the worlde by Augustus Cesar. 7 Christe is borne, 10 he is shewed vnto the  
sheephardes. 14 The songue of the Angels. 21 The circumcision of Christ. 28 Simeon and Anna  
prophesie of hym. 40 Christe increaseth in wysdome, 46 disputeth with the doctours, 51 and was  
obedient to his parentes.

A

1 **And** it came to passe in those dayes, yt there went out a commaundement fro Augustus Cesar, that all  
the [Note: [a] So much as was subiect to the Romans. ] world should be taxed.

2 (And this first taxing was made, when Syrenius was liefetenaunt in Syria.)

3 And euery man went vnto his owne citie, to be taxed.

4 And Ioseph also went vp from Galilee, out of the citie Nazareth, into [Page] Iurie, vnto [Note: 1 Reg.xx.b. ] the citie of Daud, whiche is called Bethlehem, because he was of the house and image of Daud,

5 To be taxed with Marie his spoused wyfe, which was with chylde.

6 And so it was, that whyle they were there, the dayes were accomplysshed, that she shoulde be deliuered.

B

7 And she brought foorth her first begotten [Note: [b] He is called the first begotte, because he had none before. ] sonne, and wrapped him in swadlyng clothes, & layde hym in a manger, because there was no rowme for them in the Inne.

8 There were in ye same countrey sheeheardes, abydyng in the fieldes, & watchyng their flocke by nyght.

9 And loe, the Angel of the Lorde stode harde by them, and the glorie of the Lorde shone rounde about them, & they were sore afrayde.

10 And the Angel sayde vnto them, be not afrayde: For beholde, I bryng you tydynges of great ioy, that shall come to all people.

11 For vnto you is borne this daye, in the citie of Daud, a sauour, which is Christ the Lorde.

12 And take this for a signe: Ye shal finde the childe wrapped in swadling clothes, and layde in a manger.

13 And straightway, there was with the Angel, a multitude of heauenly souldiers, praysyng God, and saying.

14 Glorie to God on hye, and peace on the earth, and vnto men a good wyll. >

C

15 And it came to passe, assoone as the Angels were gone away from them into heauen, < the sheeheardes said one to another: Let vs go nowe euen vnto Bethlehem, and see this thyng that is come to passe, whiche the Lorde hath shewed vnto vs.

16 And they came with haste, and founde Marie and Ioseph, and the babe layde in a manger.

17 And when they had seene it, they publisshed abrode the saying whiche was tolde them, of that childe.

18 And all they that hearde it, wondred at those thinges which were tolde them of the sheeheardes.

19 But Marie kept al those sayynges, and pondered them in her heart.

20 And the sheepearde returned, prayeing & lauding God, for all the thinges that they had heard and seene, euen as it was tolde vnto them. >

D  
21 < And when the eyght day was come, that the chylde shoulde be [Note: Gen.xvii.b. ] circumcised, [Note: Math.i.c. ] his name was called Iesus, [Note: Luk.i.c. ] whiche was so named of the Angel, before he was conceaued in the wombe. >

22 < And when the dayes of her purification, after the lawe of Moyses, were accomplished, they [Note: Leuit.xii.d. 1.Reg.i.d. ] brought hym to Hierusalem, to present him to the Lord.

23 (As it is written in the lawe of ye Lord: [Note: Exod.xiii.a Num.viii.g. ] Euery man chylde that firste openeth the wombe, shalbe called holy to ye lord)

24 And to offer, as it is sayde in the lawe of the Lorde, a payre of turtle doues, or two young pigions.

25 And beholde, there was a man in Hierusalem, whose name was Simeon: and the same man was iust and godlye, and loked for the consolation of Israel, and the holy ghost was vpon hym.

E  
26 And a reuelation was geuen hym of the holy ghost, not to see death, before he had seene the Lordes Christe.

27 And he came by inspiration into the temple: And when the father & mother brought in the chylde Iesus, to do for hym after the custome of the [Note: Leui.xxii.d ] lawe,

28 Then toke he hym vp in his armes, & prayesed God, and sayde:

29 Lord nowe lettest thou thy seruaut depart in peace, accordyng to thy promise.

30 For mine eyes haue seene thy saluatio,

31 Whiche thou hast prepared before the face of all people:

32 [Note: Esai.xlix.b Act.xiii.g. ] A light to be reuealed to the gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel. >

33 < And Ioseph and his mother marueyled at those thinges which were spoken of hym.

34 And Simeon blessed [Note: [c] That is, prayed to god for them, & for the prosperitie of Christes kyngdome. ] them, & saide vnto Marie his mother: beholde, this chylde is set to be the fall & [Note: [d] Christ is ye head corner stone, vpo the which ye electe are buylded: but ye wicked, vpon the same stone stumble, fall, and brust in peeces. Esaias.8. Rom.9 ] vprysyng agayne of many in Israel, & for a signe which is spoken agaynst.

35 And moreouer, the sworde [Note: [e] Great sorowe shall pearce ye hart, eue as a sword ] shall pearce thy soule, that the thoughtes of many heartes [Note: [f] When the crosse & affliction is layed vpon vs, then the heartes of gods electe is made manifest ] may be opened.

F  
36 And ther was a prophetisse, one Anna, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser, which was of a

great age, and had lyued with an husbande [Note: [g] That is, she was seuen yeres maried. ] seuen yeres from her virginite.

37 And she had ben a wydowe about fourescore and foure yeres, whiche departed not from the temple, but serued God with fastynges and prayers nyght and day.

[Page]

38 And she, commyng at the same instant vpon them, confessed lykewise the Lorde, and spake of hym, to all them that loked for redemptio in Hierusalem.

39 And when they had perfourmed all thynges, accordyng to the lawe of the Lorde, they returned into Galilee, to their owne citie Nazareth.

40 And [Note: i.Reg.ii.c. ] the chylde grewe, and waxed strong in spirite, and was fylled with wisdome: & the grace of God was vpon hym. >

41 Nowe, his parentes went to Hierusale euery yere, [Note: Exod.xii.e. Leui.xxiii.a ] at the feast of ye Passouer.

42 < And when he was twelue yere old, they ascended vp to Hierusalem, after the custome of the feast day:

43 And whe they had fulfilled the dayes, as they returned home, the chylde Iesus abode styll in Hierusalem: & Ioseph and his mother knewe not of it.

G

44 But they, supposyng hym to haue ben in the company, came a dayes iourney, and sought hym among their kinsfolke and acquayntaunce.

45 And when they founde hym not, they turned backe againe to Hierusalem, and sought hym.

46 And it came to passe, that after three dayes, they founde hym in the temple, sitting in the myddes of the doctours, hearyng them, and posyng them.

47 [Note: Math.vii.d. Mark.i.c. Luk.iii.c. ] And all that hearde hym, were astonied at his vnderstanding & aunsweres.

48 And when they sawe hym, they were amased. And his mother said vnto him: Sonne, why hast thou thus dealt with vs? Beholde, thy father and I haue sought thee, sorowyng.

49 And he sayde vnto them: Howe is it that ye sought me? Wyste ye not, that I must go about my fathers busnesse?

50 And [Note: Luk.ix.c. and .xxiii.f. ] they vnderstoode not that saying which he spake vnto them.

52 And he went downe with them, and came to Nazareth, & was obedient vnto them: But his mother kepte all these sayinges in her heart.

53 And Iesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God & men.

## ¶ The thirde Chapter.

¶ 3 The preaching and baptisme of Iohn, 7 he sharplye rebuketh the hypocrites, 15 he is thought to be Christe, 16 Iohns testimonie of Christe, 20 his imprisonment, 21 Christe is baptized, 23 the age and genealogie of Christe.

A

1 **Nowe**, in the fifteenth yere of ye raigne of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being lieftenaut of Iurie, and [Note: Luk.xxiii.a ] Herode being tetrarch of Galilee, & his brother Philip tetrarch of Iturea, and of the region of ye Trachonites, and Lysanias the tetrarch of Abiline,

2 When Annas and Caiaphas were the hye [Note: [a] By ye law there shoulde haue ben but one hye priest only: but corruption of the tyme, by reaso yt Romaynes had rule, & the brybery of Caiaphas, brought to passe, that the office was deuided. ] priestes, the worde of the Lorde came vnto Iohn, the sonne of Zacharias, in the wyldernesse.

3 And he came into all the coastes about Iordane, preaching the baptisme of repentaunce, for the remission of sinnes:

4 As it is writte in ye booke of the wordes of Esaias the prophete, saying: [Note: Esay.xl.a. ] The voyce of a cryer in wyldernesse, prepare ye the way of ye Lorde, make his pathes strayght.

B

5 Euery valley shalbe fylled, and euery mountayne & hyll shalbe brought lowe: And thynges that be croked, shalbe made [Note: [b] All impedimentes shal be take away that may hyde vs from our saluation in Christe, so yt Christes way to vs, and our way to hym, shalbe playne and manifest. ] strayght, and the rough wayes shalbe made playne.

6 And all flesshe, shall see the saluation of God. >

7 Then saide he to the people that were come forth to be baptized of hym: [Note: Math.iii.b. ] O generations of vipers, who hath forewarned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bryng forth therefore due fruites of repentaunce, and begyn not to say within your selues, we haue Abraham to our father: For I saye vnto you, that God is able of these stonnes, to rayse vp childe vnto Abraham.

9 Nowe also is the [Note: [c] The vengeance of God is at hande. ] axe layed vnto the roote of the trees: [Note: Math.iii.b. ] Euery tree therfore which bryngeth not forth good fruite, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

C

10 And the people asked hym, saying: [Note: Actes.ii.f. ] What shall we do then?



11 He aunswereth, and sayth vnto them: He that hath two [Note: [d] He wylleth the ryche should be liberall and helpe the poore, as their abilitie wyl serue, & nede requireth ] coates, let him part with hym that hath none: and he that hath meate, let hym do lykewyse.

12 Then came publicanes [Note: [e] whose office was to receaue the tribute money, and tolles. ] also to be baptized, and saide vnto him: Maister, [Page] what shall we do?

13 And he sayde vnto them: Require no more then that which is appoynted vnto you.

14 The souldiours lykewyse demaunded of hym, saying: And what shall we do? And he saide vnto them: Do violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely, and be content with your wages.

15 As the people wayted, & all men mused in their heartes of Iohn, whether he were very Christe:

16 Iohn aunswered, and said vnto them all, [Note: Math.iii.b. Mark.i.a. Iohn.i.d. ] In deede I baptize you with water: but one stronger then I commeth, whose shoes latched I am not worthy to vnlose, he shall baptize you with the holy ghost, and with fire.

17 [Note: Math.iii.b. ] Which hath his fanne in his hande, & wyll purge his floore, & wyll gather the wheate into his barne: but ye chaffe wyl burne vp, with fire that neuer shalbe quenched.

D

18 And many other thinges, in his exhortation, preached he vnto the people.

19 [Note: Mat.xiiii.a. Mark.vi.c. ] Then Herode the tetrarch, when he was rebuked of hym for Herodias, his brother Philippes wyfe, and for all the euyls which Herode dyd,

20 Added this aboue all, & shut vp Iohn in pryson.

21 Nowe it came to passe, as all the people were baptized, and [Note: Math.iii.b. Mark.i.b. Iohn.i.e. ] when Iesus was baptized, and dyd praye, that the heauen was opened,

22 And the holy ghost came downe, in a bodyly shape lyke a Doue, vpon hym: and a voyce came from heauen, which sayde, [Note: Esai.xlii.a. ] Thou art my beloued sonne, in thee I am well pleased.

E

23 And Iesus him selfe began to be about thirtie yeres of age, [Note: Mat.xiii.g. Mark.iiii.a. Luk.iiii.c. Iohn.vi.c. ] beyng (as he was supposed) the sonne of Ioseph: whiche was [the sonne] of Heli,

24 Whiche was the sonne of Matthat, whiche was the sonne of Leui, whiche was the sonne of Melchi, whiche was the sonne of Ianna, whiche was the sonne of Ioseph:

25 Whiche was ye sonne of Matthatias, whiche was the sonne of Amos, whiche was the sonne of Naum, whiche was the sonne of Hesly, which was the sonne of Nagge:

26 Whiche was the sonne of Maath, which was the sonne of Matthatias, which was the sonne of Semei, whiche was the sonne of Ioseph, whiche was the sonne of Iuda:

27 Whiche was the sonne of Ioanna, which was the sonne of Rhesa, whiche was the sonne of Zorobabel, whiche was the sonne of Salathiel, which was the sonne of Neri:

F

28 Whiche was the sonne of Melchi, whiche was the sonne of Addi, whiche was the sonne of Cosam, whiche was the sonne of Elmodam, whiche was the sonne of Er:

29 Whiche was the sonne of Iose, which was the sonne of Eliezer, whiche was sonne of Iorim, whiche was ye sonne of Matthat, which was ye sonne of Leui:

30 Whiche was the sonne of Simeon, whiche was the sonne of Iuda, whiche was the sonne of Ioseph, whiche was the sonne of Ionan, whiche was the sonne of Eliacim:

31 Whiche was the sonne of Melea, whiche was ye sonne of Menam, whiche was ye sonne of Matthatha, which was the sonne of Nathan, whiche was the sonne of Dauid:

G

32 Whiche was ye sonne of Iesse, whiche was the sonne of Obed, which was the sonne of Booz, whiche was the sonne of Salmo, which was ye sonne of Naasso:

33 Whiche was the sonne of Aminadab, whiche was the sonne of Aram, whiche was the sonne of Esron, whiche was the sonne of Phares, whiche was the sonne of Iuda:

34 Whiche was ye sonne of Iacob, whiche was the sonne of Asaac, which was the sonne of Abraham, whiche was ye sonne of Thara, which was the sonne of Nachor:

35 Which was ye sonne of Saruch, which was the sonne of Ragau, whiche was the sonne of Phaleg, which was ye sonne of Heber, which was the sonne of Sala:

36 whiche was the sonne of Arphaxad, whiche was the sonne of Sem, whiche was the sonne of Noe, whiche was the sonne of Lamech:

37 Whiche was the sonne of Mathusala, whiche was the sonne of Enoch, which was the sonne of Iared, whiche was the sonne of Maleleel, whiche was the sonne of Cainan:

38 Which was the sonne of Henos, which was ye sonne of Seth, which was ye sonne of Adam, which was the sonne of God.

[Page]

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

¶ 1 The temptation and fastyng of Christe, 13 he ouercommeth the deuyll, 16 he teacheth at Nazareth with great admiration of the people. 24 A prophete is despysed, teaching in his owne countrey. 33 He healeth the man possessed with a deuill, 34 the deuill confesseth him to be Christe, 38 he healeth Peters

wyues mother, 40 he healed many of diuers diseases, 41 the deuyls confesse Christe, and are of hym reprobred, 43 and he preacheth through the cities.

A

1 **Iesus**, being full of the holy ghost, returned from Iordane, [Note: Math.iii.a. Mark.i.b. ] & was ledde by the spirite into wyldernesse,

2 And was fourtie dayes tempted of the deuyll, and in those dayes dyd he eate nothyng: And when they were ended, he afterwarde hungred.

3 And the deuyll sayde vnto hym: If thou be the sonne of God, commaunde this stone that it be made bread.

4 And Iesus aunswered hym, saying: It is written, that [Note: Deut.viii.a. Math.iii.a. ] man shall not lyue by bread only, but by euery word of god.

5 And the deuyll toke hym into an hye mountayne, & shewed hym all the kingdomes of ye worlde in a moment of time.

B

6 And the deuyll saide vnto hym: all this power wyll I geue thee euerywhy, & the glory of them, for that is deliuered vnto me, and to whomsoeuer I wyll, I geue [Note: [a] Satan betrayeth hymselfe, shewing his bold sacralege, vsurping the empire of the earth. ] it.

7 If thou therefore wilt fall downe before me, & worship me, they shalbe all thine.

8 Iesus aunswered, & sayde vnto hym, Hence from me Satan: For it is writte, [Note: Deut.vi.c. and .x.d. Math.iii.b. ] Thou shalt worship the Lorde thy God, and hym only shalt thou serue.

9 And he caryed hym to Hierusalem, & set hym on a pinnacle of the temple, and sayde vnto him: If thou be the sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe from hence.

10 [Note: Psal.xxi.c. ] For it is written, that he shall geue his Angels charge ouer thee, to kepe thee.

11 [Note: [b] How Satan is prince of the worlde. Iohn.xiiii. ] And in their handes they shall beare thee vp, that thou dasshe not thy foote at any tyme agaynst a stone.

12 And Iesus aunswered, and sayde vnto hym: It is sayde, [Note: Deut.vi.c. Math.iii.g. ] Thou shalt not tempt the Lorde thy God.

13 And assoone as all the temptatio was ended, the deuyll departed from hym for a season.

C

14 < And Iesus returned, by the power of the spirite, into Galilee: & there went a fame of hym, throughout all the region rounde about.

15 And he taught in their synagogues, & was commended of all men.

16 [Note: Math.xiii.g Mark.vi.a. ] And he came to Nazareth, where he was nursed: and, as his custome was, he

wet into the synagogue on the Sabboth day, and stode vp for to reade.

17 And there was deliuered vnto hym the booke of the prophete Esaias: [Note: ii.Esd. viii.b ] And whe he had opened the booke, he founde the place where it was written,

18 [Note: Esay.lxi.a. ] The spirite of the Lord vpon me, because he hath annoynted me, to preache the Gospel to the poore he hath sent me, to heale the broken hearted, to preache deliuerance to the captiue, & recouering of syght to the blynde, freely to set at libertie them that are bruised:

19 And to preache the acceptable yere of the Lorde.

D

20 And he closed the booke, and gaue it agayne to the minister, and sate downe: And the eyes of all them that were in ye synagogue, were fastened on hym.

21 And he began to say vnto the: this day is this scripture fulfilled in your eares.

22 And all bare him witnesse, [Note: Math.vii.g. Mark.i.c. Luk.ii.c. ] & wondred at ye gracious wordes whiche proceded out of his mouth. > And they sayde, is not this Iosephes sonne?

23 And he saide vnto them: Ye wyll vtterly say vnto me this prouerbe, phisition heale thy selfe: < Whatsoever we haue heard done in Capernau, do ye same here lykewyse in thine owne countrey.

24 And he saide: Ueryly I say vnto you, [Note: Math.xiii.g Mark.vi.a. ] no prophete is accepted in his owne countrey.

E

25 But I tell you of a trueth, [Note: 3.Reg.vii.b. Iacob.v.d. ] many wydowes were in Israel, in the dayes of Elias, when heauen was shutte three yeres & sixe monethes, when great famishment was throughout all ye lande:

26 And vnto none of the was Elias sent, saue vnto Sarepta, a citie of Sidon, vnto a woman that was a wydowe.

27 [Note: 4.Reg.v.d. ] And many lepers were in Israel, in the tyme of Elizeus the prophete: and none of them was clensed, sauynge Naaman the Syrian.

[Page]

28 And all they in the synagogue, when they hearde these thynges, were fylled with wrath:

29 And rose vp, and thrust hym out of the citie, and led hym euen vnto the edge of the hyll (wheron their citie was built,) yt they might cast him downe headlong.

F

30 But he, passyng through the myddes of them, went his way: >

31 < And came downe to Capernaum, a citie of Galilee, and there taught them on the Sabboth dayes.

32 [Note: Math.vii.d. and .xiii.g. ] And they were astonyed at his doctrine: For his preachyng was with power.

33 [Note: Mark.x.c. Mark.i.c. ] And in the synagogue, there was a man, which had an vncleane spirite of a deuyll, and cryed with a loude voyce,

34 Saying: Oh what haue we to do with thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy vs? I knowe who thou art, euen the holy one of God.

35 And Iesus rebuked hym, saying: Holde thy peace, and come out of hym. And when the deuyll had throwen him in the middes, he came out of hym, and hurt hym not.

36 And feare came on them all, and they spake among them selues, saying: What maner a thyng is this? For with auctoritie and power he commaundeth the foule spirites, and they come out.

37 And the fame of hym spread abrode, throughout euery place of the countrey rounde about. >

38 < [Note: Mat.viii.b. Mark.i.e. ] And when he was risen vp, and come out of the synagogue, he entred into Simons house: And Simons wiues mother was taken with a great feuer, & they made intercession to hym for her.

39 And he stoode ouer her, and rebuked the feuer, and the feuer left her: And immediatly she arose, and ministred vnto them.

G

40 When the Sunne was downe, all they that had sicke, taken with diuers diseases, brought them vnto hym: And he layde his handes on euery one of them, and healed them.

41 [Note: Math.i.a. and .xiii.d. ] And deuyls also came out of many, crying & saying: Thou art that Christe, the sonne of God. And he rebuked the, and suffred them not to speake: For they knewe that he was Christe.

42 As soone as it was day, he departed, and went into a desert place: And the people sought hym, and came to hym, and kept hym, that he shoulde not depart from them.

43 And he sayde vnto them, I must preache the kyngdome of God to other cities also: > For therefore am I sent.

44 And he preached in the synagogues of Galilee.

## ¶ The .v. Chapterr.

¶ 1 Christe teacheth out of a shippe, 6 the great draught of fishe, 10 certayne disciples are called, 12 he clenseth the leper, 16 he prayeth in the wildernesse, 18 he healeth the man of the paulsie, 27 calleth Matthewe the publican, 29 he eateth with sinners, 30 the pharisees murmure, 34 he excuseth his disciples, 35 shewyng their afflictions after his assention, 36 newe and olde agree not.

A

1 **It** came to passe, that when ye people preassed vpon hym, to heare the worde of God, he stode by the lake of Genezareth,

2 [Note: Mark.iiii.a. ] And sawe two shippes stande by the lakes syde: But the fisshermen were gone out of them, and were wasshyng their nettes.

3 And he entred into one of the shippes, which pertayned to Simon, and prayed hym that he woulde thrust out, a litle from the lande: And he sate downe, and taught the people out of the shippe.

4 When he had left speakyng, he sayde vnto Simon: Launche out into the deepe, and let slip your nettes, to make a draught.

5 And Simon aunswered, and sayde vnto hym: Maister, we haue laboured all nyght, and haue taken nothyng: Neuerthesse, at thy commaundement I wyll loose foorth the nette.

6 And when they had this done, they inclosed a great multitude of fisses: But their nette brake.

7 And they beckened vnto their felowes, which were in the other shippe, that they shoulde come, and helpe them. And they came, and fylled both the shippes, that they suncke agayne.

B

8 When Simon Peter sawe this, he fell downe at Iesus knees, saying: Lorde, go from me, for I am a sinfull man.

9 For he was vtterly astonyed, and all that were with hym, at the draught of fisses, which they had taken. [Page]

10 And so was also Iames and Iohn the sonnes of Zebedee, whiche were parteners with Simon. And Iesus sayde vnto Simon: Feare not, from hencefoorth thou shalt [Note: [a] By the preachyng of the Gospel, as one then appoynted to be an Apostle. ] catch men.

11 And when they had brought vp their boates to the shore, [Note: [b] That is, notyng that they possessed, was an impediment, wherby they might be let or hyndred from the preachyng of the Gospel. ] they forsoke all, and folowed hym. >

C

12 And it came to passe, that whe he was in a certayne citie: Beholde, [there was] a man full of leprosie, and when he had spyed Iesus, he fell flat on his face, and besought hym, saying: Lorde, yf thou wylt, thou canst make me cleane.

13 And he stretched foorth his hande, and touched hym, saying: I wyll, be thou cleane. And immediatly the leprosie departed from hym. And he charged hym, that he shoulde tell no man:

14 But go [sayth he] [Note: Leui.xiiii.a ] and shewe thy selfe to the priest, and offer for thy clensyng, accordyng as Moyses commaunded, for a witnesse vnto them.

15 But so much the more went there a fame abrode of hym, and much people came together to heare, and to be healed of hym, from their infirmities.

16 And he kept hym selfe a part in the wildernesse, and prayed.

D

17 < And it came to passe, on a certayne day, as he was teachyng, that there were pharisees & doctours of the lawe, sitting by, which were come out of all the townes of Galilee and Iurie, and Hierusalem: And the power of the Lorde was present, to heale them.

18 [Note: Math.ix.a. Mark.ii.a. ] And beholde, men brought in a bed, a man which was taken with a paulsie, and they sought meanes to bryng hym in, and to lay hym before hym.

19 And when they coude not fynde on what syde they myght bryng hym in, because of the prease, they went vpon the toppe of the house, and let hym downe through the tylyng, bed and all, euen in the myddes before Iesus.

E

20 Whe he sawe their faith, he saide vnto him: Man, thy sinnes are forgeuen thee.

21 And the scribes and the pharisees, began to thynke, saying: What felowe is this, which speaketh blasphemies? [Note: Mark.ii.c. Esay.xliii.d. and .xliiii.d. ] Who can forgeue sinnes but God only?

22 But when Iesus perceaued their thoughtes, he aunswered, & sayde vnto them: What thynke ye in your heartes?

23 Whether is easier to say, thy sinnes be forgeuen thee: or to say, ryse vp & walke?

24 [Note: Math.ix.a. Mark.ii.c. Act.ii.a.ix.f ] But that ye may knowe that the sonne of man hath power to forgeue sinnes on earth (he sayde vnto the sicke of the paulsie) I say vnto thee, aryse, take vp thy bed, and go vnto thy house.

25 And immediatly he rose vp before them, and toke vp his bed, wheron he lay, and departed to his owne house, praysyng God.

26 And they were all amazed, and they gaue the glory vnto God, and were fylled with feare, saying: Doutlesse we haue seene straunge thynges to day. >

F

27 [Note: Math.ix.a. Mark.ii.b. ] After these thynges, he went foorth, & sawe a publicane named Leui, sitting at the receipt of custome: and he sayde vnto hym, folowe me.

28 And he left all, rose vp, & folowed him.

29 And Leui made hym a great feast in his owne house. And there was a great companie of publicanes, and of other that sate [at meate] with them.

30 [Note: Math.ix.a. Mark.ii.b. Luk.vii c. and .xv a. ] But they that were scribes and pharisees among them, murmured agaynst his disciples saying: Why do ye eate and drynke with publicanes and sinners?

31 And Iesus aunswered, and saide vnto them, They that are whole, neede not the phisition: But they that

are sicke.

32 I came not to call the [Note: [c] Those whiche accompt them selues, or woulde seeme in the eyes of the worlde, to be ryghteous. ] ryghteous: but sinners to repentaunce.

G

33 And they sayde vnto hym: Why do the disciples of Iohn fast often, & pray, and the disciples of the pharisees also: but thyne eate and drynke?

34 He sayde vnto them. [Note: Math.ix.b. Mark.ii.c. ] Can ye make the chyldren of the weddyng chaumber fast, whyle the brydegrome in with the?

35 But the dayes wyll come, when the brydegrome also shalbe taken away fro them: then shall they fast in those dayes.

36 He spake also vnto them a similitude. No man putteth a peece of a newe garment, into an olde vesture: For then the newe renteth [the olde,] and the peece that was [taken] out of the newe, agreeth not with the olde.

37 And no man powreth newe wyne into olde vessels: For yf he do, the newe wyne wyll burst the vessels, and runne out it selfe, and the vessels shall perishe.

38 But newe wine must be put into newe vessels, and both are preserued.

39 No man also that drinketh olde wyne, strayghtway can awaye with newe: For he sayth, the olde is better.

[Page]

## The .vj. Chapter.

¶ 1 The disciples plucke eares of corne on the Sabboth, 6 he healeth the man with the withered hand, 13 the chosyng of his Apostles, 20 of blessynges and cursynges, 27 the loue of our enemies, 29 to forgeue one another, 37 rashe iudgement reprehended, 44 the tree is knowen by his fruite, 45 the hearte knowen by the workes, 47 with what fruite the worde of God is to be hearde.

A

1 **And** it came to passe, on the seconde Sabboth, after the first, that he went [Note: Math.xii.a. Mark.ii.d. ] through the corne fieldes: and his disciples plucked the eares of corne, and dyd eate, and rubbed them in their handes.

2 And certayne of the pharisees sayde vnto them: Why do ye that, which is not lawfull to do on ye Sabboth dayes?

3 And Iesus aunswered them, & sayde: [Note: i.Reg.xxi.a. ] Haue ye not read what Dauid dyd, when he hym selfe was an hungred, and they which were with hym:



4 Howe he went into the house of God, and dyd take and eate the shewe [Note: i Reg.xxi.a. ] bread, and gaue also to them that were with hym, which was not lawfull to eate, but for the [Note: Exod.xxv.c ] priestes only?

B

5 And he sayde vnto them: The sonne of man is Lord also of ye [Note: [a] That is, hauing power to dispence with the keypyng of the Sabboth day ] Sabboth day.

6 < [Note: Math.xii.a. Mark.iii.a. ] And it came to passe also in another Sabboth, that he entred into the synagoge, and taught: And there was a man, whose right hand was dried vp.

7 And the scribes & pharisees watched hym, whether he woulde heale on the Sabboth day: that they myght fynde howe to accuse hym.

8 But he knewe their thoughtes, and said to the man which had the withered hande: Ryse vp, and stande forth in the myddes. And he arose, and stode forth.

9 Then sayde Iesus vnto them, I wyll aske you a question: Whether is it lawfull on the Sabboth dayes to do good, or to do euyl? to saue ones lyfe, or to destroy it?

10 And he behelde them all in compasse, & sayde vnto the man: Stretche forth thy hande. And he dyd so: [Note: 3 Reg.xiii.b Math.xii.b. Mark.iii.a. ] & his hande was restored agayne as whole as the other.

11 And they were fylled with madnesse, and communed together among them selues, what they myght do to Iesus. >

C

12 And it came to passe in those dayes, [Note: Math.xiiii.c ] yt he wet out into a mountayne to pray, & continued all nyght in prayer to God.

13 And assoone as it was day, he called his disciples: [Note: Math.x.a. Mark.iii.b. ] And of them he chose twelue, whom he called Apostles:

14 (Simon, whom he also named Peter, and Andrewe his brother: Iames and Iohn, Philip and Barthelmewe,

15 Matthewe and Thomas, Iames the sonne of Alpheus, & Simon, which is called Zelotes:

16 And Iudas, Iames [brother] and Iudas Iscariot, which also was the traytour.)

17 < And he came downe with them, and stode in the playne fieldes, and the company of his disciples, [Note: Math.iiii.d. Mark.iii.a. Math.iiii.d. ] and a great multitude of people, out of all Iurie & Hierusalem, and fro the sea coast [Note: Iohn.vi.a. ] of Tyre and Sidon, which came to heare hym, and to be healed of their diseases,

18 And they that were vexed with foule spirites: and they were healed.

19 And all the people pressed to touche hym: for there went vertue out of hym, and healed them all.

D

20 And he lyft vp his eyes vpon his disciples, and sayde: [Note: Math.v.a. ] Blessed be ye poore, for yours is the kyngdome of God.

21 Blessed are ye that hunger nowe, for ye shalbe satisfied. Blessed are ye that weepe nowe, for ye shall laugh.

22 Blessed shall ye be when men hate you, & seperate you [from their companie] and raile on you, & put out your names as an euyll thyng, for the sonne of mans sake.

23 Reioyce ye in that day, and be glad: For beholde, your rewarde is great in heauen: > For thus dyd their fathers vnto the prophetes.

24 [Note: Amos.vi.a. ] But wo vnto you that are riche: for ye haue your consolation.

25 Wo vnto you that are full: for ye shall hunger. Wo vnto you that nowe laugh: for ye shall wayle and weepe.

26 Wo vnto you when all men prayse you: for so dyd their fathers to the false prophetes.

[Page]

27 But I say vnto you which heare: Loue your enemies, Do good to them which hate you.

28 Blesse them that curse you: And pray for the which wrongfully trouble you.

29 And vnto hym that smyteth thee on the one cheeke, offer also the other. [Note: Math.v.f. ] And hym that taketh away thy cloke, forbyd not to take thy coate also.

30 Geue to euery man that asketh of thee: And of hym that taketh away thy goodes, aske them not agayne.

31 [Note: Mat.vii.b. Eccle 31.b. Tobi.iiii.c. ] And as ye woulde that men shoulde do to you, do ye also to them lykewyse.

32 [Note: Mark.v.g. ] For yf ye loue them which loue you, what thanke haue ye? For sinners also loue their louers.

33 And yf ye do good for them which do good for you, what thanke haue ye? For sinners also do euen the same.

34 And yf ye lende to them, of whom ye hope to receaue, what thanke haue ye? For synners also lende to sinners, to receaue such lyke agayne.

35 But loue ye your enemies, & do good, and lende, loking for nothyng agayne: and your rewarde shalbe great, and ye shalbe the chyl dren of the hyst: for he is kynde vnto the vnkynde, & to the euyll.

E

36 < Be ye therefore mercifull, as your father also is mercifull.

37 [Note: Mat.vii.a. ] Iudge not, & ye shall not be iudged: Condemne not, and ye shall not be condemned: Forgeue, & ye shalbe forgeuen.

38 [Note: Prou.xi.d. ] Geue, and it shalbe geuen vnto you: good measure, pressed downe, & shaken together, and runnyng ouer, shall men geue into your bosomes. [Note: Math.vii.a. Mark.iii.c. ] For with the same measure that ye meate withall, shall other men meate to you agayne.

39 And he put foorth a similitude vnto them: [Note: Math.xv.b. ] Can the blynde leade the blynde? Do they not both fall into the ditche?

40 [Note: Iohn.xiii.g. ] The disciple is not aboute his maister: But whosoeuer wylbe a perfect disciple, shalbe as his maister is.

F

41 [Note: Math.vii.a. ] And why seest thou a moate in thy brothers eye: but considerest not the beame that is in thyne owne eye?

42 Either, howe canst thou say to thy brother: Brother, let me pull out the moate that is in thyne eye, when thou seest not the beame that is in thyne owne eye? Thou hypocrite, caste out the beame out of thyne owne eye first, & then shalt thou see perfectly, to pul out the moate that is in thy brothers eye. >

G

43 [Note: Math.xi.i.c. ] For it is not a good tree, that bryngeth foorth euyll fruite: Neither is that an euyll tree, that bryngeth foorth good fruite.

44 For euery tree is knowen by his fruite: for of thornes do not me gather fygges, nor of busshes, gather they grapes.

45 A good man, out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth foorth that which is good: And an euyll man, out of the euyll treasure of his heart, bryngeth foorth that which is euyll. [Note: Math.xii.c. Psal.xl.b. ] For of the aboundaunce of the heart, his mouth speaketh.

46 Why call ye me [Note: Math.vii.b. and xxv.b. ] Lorde, Lorde, and do not as I byd you?

47 Whosoeuer commeth to me, & heareth my sayinges, and doth the same, I wyll shewe you to whom he is lyke.

48 [Note: Math.vii.d. Iacob.i.d. ] He is lyke a man which built an house, and digged deepe, and layde the foundation on a rocke. And when the waters arose, the fludde beat vpon that house, and coulde not moue it: For it was grounded vpon a rocke.

49 But he that heareth and doeth not, is lyke a man, that without foundation, built an house vpon the earth, agaynst which the fludde dyd beate, and it fell immediatly: And the fall of that house was great.

## ¶ The .vij. Chapter.

¶ 2 He healed the captaynes seruaunt, 6 the fayth of the Centurion, 11 he rayseed vp the widdowes sonne, 16 he is confessed to be a great prophete, 19 Iohn Baptist sent his disciples to Christe, 24 Christes testimonie of Iohn, 31 he rebuketh the Iewes for their vnfaythfulnesse, 36 he eateth with the pharisee, 37 the woman wassheth his feete with her teares.

A

1 **When** he had ended all his sayinges, in the audience of the people, [Note: Mat.viii.a. Iohn.iiii.f. ] he entred into Capernaum.

2 And a certayne Centurions seruaunt, which was deare vnto hym, lay sicke, and was in peryll of death.

3 And when he hearde of Iesus, he sent vnto hym the elders of the Iewes, besechyng hym that he woulde come, and [Page] heale his seruaunt.

4 And when they came to Iesus, they besought hym instantly, saying he is worthy that thou shouldest do this for hym.

5 For he loueth our nation, and hath built vs a synagogue.

B

6 Then Iesus went with them. And when he was nowe not farre from the house, the Centurion sent friendes to hym, saying vnto hym: [Note: Math.viii.a. ] Lorde, trouble not thy selfe, for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter vnder my roofe.

7 Wherefore I thought not my selfe worthy to come vnto thee: but say thou the worde, & my seruaunt shalbe whole.

8 For I also am a man, set vnder power, and haue vnder me souldiers: and I say vnto one go, and he goeth: and to another, come, and he commeth: and to my seruaunt, do this, and he doth it.

9 When Iesus hearde these thynges, he marueyled at hym, and turned hym about, and sayde to the people that folowed hym: I say vnto you, I haue not founde so great fayth, no, not in Israel.

10 And they that were sent, turned backe home agayne, and founde the seruaunt whole, that had ben sicke.

C

11 < And it came to passe the [day] after, that he went into a citie, which is called Naim: and many of his disciples went with hym, and much people.

12 When he came nye to the gate of the citie, beholde, there was a dead man caryed out, [which was] the only sonne of his mother, and she was a widdowe: And much people of the citie was with her.

13 And when the Lorde sawe her, he had compassion on her, and sayde vnto her: Weepe not.

14 And he came nye, & touched the beere, (and they that bare hym stode styll) And he sayde: Young

man, I say vnto thee, aryse.

15 And he that was dead, sate vp, and began to speake: [Note: 3 Reg.17.d. 4 Reg.4.f. Actes.ix.c. ] And he delyuered hym to his mother.

16 And there came a feare on them all, & they gaue the glory vnto God, saying: [Note: Iohn.iiii.c. and .vi.b. ] A great prophete is risen vp among vs, and veryly God hath visited his people.

17 < And this rumour of hym went foorth throughout all Iurie, & throughout all the regions which lye rounde about.

18 And the disciples of Iohn, shewed hym of all these thynges.

19 [Note: Math.xi.a. ] And Iohn called vnto hym two of his disciples, and sent them to Iesus, saying: Art thou he that shoulde come, or shall we loke for another?

20 When the men were come vnto hym, they sayde, Iohn Baptiste sent vs vnto thee, saying: Art thou he that shoulde come, or shall we loke for another?

21 And in that same houre, he cured manye of their infirmitie & plagues, and of euyll spirites, and vnto many that were blynde, he gaue sight.

D

22 Then Iesus aunswered, and sayde vnto them: Go your way, and bryng worde agayne to Iohn, what thynges ye haue seene and hearde, howe that [Note: Esa.xxxv.a. and .xli.a. ] the blynde see, the halt go, the lepers are clensed, the deafe heare, the dead ryse agayne, to the poore is the Gospell preached,

23 And happy is he, that is not offended at me.

24 [Note: Math.xi.c. ] And when the messengers of Iohn were departed, he began to speake vnto the people concernyng Iohn: What went ye out into the wilderness for to see? a reede shaken with the wynde?

25 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft rayment? Beholde, they which are gorgeously appared, & lyue delicately, are in kynges courtes.

26 But what went ye foorth to see? A prophete? Yea, I say to you, and more then a prophete.

27 This is he, of whom it is written: [Note: Mark.xi.a. Mala.iii.a. ] Beholde, I sende my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

E

28 For I say vnto you, among womens chylde, is there not a greater prophete then Iohn Baptist. Neuerthesse, he that is lesse in the kyngdome of God, is greater then he. >

29 And all the people, and the publicanes that hearde hym, [Note: [a] That is, prayes God, and acknowledged hym to be most faythfull, good, and mercifull. ] iustified God, and were baptized with the baptisme of Iohn.

30 But the pharisees and lawyers despised the counsel of God, agaynst them selues, and were not baptized

of hym.

31 And the Lorde sayde: [Note: Math.xi.b. ] Whervnto shall I lyken the men of this generation? and what [thyng] are they lyke?

32 They are lyke vnto chyldren, sittying [Page] in the market place, and crying one to another, and saying: We haue pyped vnto you, and ye haue not daused: We haue mourned to you, and ye haue not wept.

F  
33 For Iohn Baptist came, neither [Note: Math iii.a. ] eatyng bread nor drynkyng wyne, and ye say he hath the deuyll.

34 The sonne of man is come, and eateth and drynketh, and ye saye, beholde a gluttonous man, and an [vnmeasurable] drynker of wyne, a frende of publicanes and sinners.

35 And wisdom is iustified of [Note: [b] That is, the children of wisdom or ye wyse, which beleue the Gospel, do acknowledge the wisdom of god therin, which the pharisees condemne, so that wisdom is then iustified of her childe, when the gospell is receued. ] all her chyldren.

36 < And one of the pharisees desired hym, that he woulde eate with hym. And he went into the pharisees house, and sate downe to meate.

37 And beholde, a woman in that citie, which was a sinner, assoone as she knewe that Iesus sate at meate in the pharisees house, she brought an alabaster boxe of oyntment:

38 And stode at his feete behynde hym, weepyng, and began to washe his feete with teares, & dyd wpe them with the heeres of her head, and kyssed his feete, and anoynted them with the oyntment.

39 When the pharisee which had bydden hym, sawe, he spake within hym selfe, saying: If this man were a prophete, he woulde surely knowe who, & what maner of woman this is, that touched hym, for she is a sinner.

40 And Iesus aunswered, and sayde vnto hym: Simon, I haue somewhat to say vnto thee. And he sayde: Maister, say on.

41 There was a certayne lender, which had two detters: The one ought fyue hundred pence, and the other fyftie.

42 When they had nothyng to pay, he forgaued them both. Tell me therefore, which of them wyll loue hym most?

43 Simon aunswered and sayde: I suppose, that he to whom he forgaued most. And he sayde vnto hym: Thou haste truely iudged.

G  
44 And he turned to the woman, & sayde vnto Simon: Seest thou this woman? I entred into thyne house, thou gauest me no water for my feete, but she hath washed my feete with teares, & wyped them with the heeres of her head.

45 Thou gauest me no kysse: but she, sence the tyme I came in, hath not ceassed to kysse my feete.

46 Myne head with oyle thou dyddest not anynt: but she hath anynted my feete with oyntment.

47 Wherefore I say vnto thee, many sinnes are forgeuen her: for she loued much. To whom lesse is forgeuen, the same doth lesse loue.

48 And he sayde vnto her: thy sinnes are forgeuen thee.

49 And they that sate at meate with hym, began to say within them selues, Who is this that forgeueth sinnes also?

50 And he sayde to the woman: [Note: Mark.v.c. ] Thy fayth hath saued thee, go in peace. >

## ¶ The .viiij. Chapter.

¶ 2 Christe and his Apostles go from towne to towne, and preache, 3 the women minister of their goodes to Christe, 5 the parable of the seede, 16 of the candle, 21 who are his mother and brethren, 24 Christe ceaseth the tempest, 27 he casteth the legion out of the man possessed, into the hearde of swyne, 37 the Gadarenites pray hym to go out of the countrey, 43 he healed the woman of her bloody issue, 49 he raysed Iairus daughter from death.

A  
1 **And** it came to passe afterwarde, that he him selfe wet throughout euery citie & towne preachyng, & shewyng the kingdome of god, & the twelue with hym.

2 And also [Note: Lu.xxiii.d. ] certayne women, which were healed of euyll spirites, and infirmities, Marie which is called Magdalene, out of whom went seuen deuyls.

3 And Ioanna the wyfe of Chusa Herodes stewarde, and Susanna, & many other which ministred vnto hym of their substaunce.

4 < When much people were gathered together, & were come to hym out of all cities, he spake by a similitude.

5 [Note: Math.xiii.b Mark.iiii.a. ] The sower wet out to sowe his seede: and as he sowed, some fell by the way syde, and it was troden downe, and the foules of the ayre deuoured it vp.

6 And some fell on stones, and assoone as it was sprong vp, it withered away, because it lacked moystnes.

[Page]

7 And some fell among thornes, [Note: [a] Or rather thus. And some fel amog thistels & the thistels sprang vp with it,

& choked it. ] and the thornes sprang vp with it, and choked it.

8 And some fell on good ground, and sprang vp, and bare fruite, an hundred folde. And as he sayde these thynges, he cryed: He that hath eares to heare, let hym heare.

B

9 [Note: Mat.xiii.d. Mark.iii.a. ] And his disciples asked hym, saying what maner of similitude is this?

10 And he sayde, Unto you it is geuen to knowe the secretes of the kyngdome of God: but to other by parables, that when they see, they shoulde not see, [Note: Esay.vi.c. Math.xiii.d ] and when they heare, they shoulde not vnderstande.

11 The parable is this. [Note: Mark.iii.d. Iohn.xii.f. Act.xxviii f Rom.xi.b. Mat.xiii.c. Mark.iii.b. ] The seede, is the worde of God.

12 Those that are besyde the way, are they that heare: then commeth the deuyll, and taketh away the worde out of their heartes, lest they shoulde beleue, and be saued.

13 They on the stones, [are they] which when they heare, receaue the worde with ioy: & these haue no rootes, which for a whyle beleue, and in tyme of temptation go away.

14 And that which fell among thornes, are they, which whe they haue hearde, go foorth, and are choked with cares & ryches, and voluptuous lyuyng, & bring foorth no fruite.

15 But that [which fell] on ye good groude, are they, which with a pure and good hearte heare the worde, and kepe it, and bryng foorth fruite through pacience. >

C

16 [Note: Math.v.b. Mark.iii.b. and .xi.e. ] No man when he lyghteth a candel, couereth it with a vessell, or putteth it vnder a table, but setteth it on a candlesticke, that they which enter in, may see the lyght.

17 [Note: Math.x.c. Mark.iii.c. Luk.xii.a. ] For nothyng is secrete, that shall not come abrode: Neither any thyng hyd, that shall not be knowen, and come to lyght.

18 Take heede therefore, howe ye heare. For whosoeuer hath, to hym shalbe geuen: [Note: Mat.xiii.b. and .xxv.c. Mark. iii.c. ] And whosoeuer hath not, from hym shalbe take, euen that same which he supposeth that he hath.

19 [Note: Luk.xix.d. Math.xii.d. Mark.iii.d. ] Then came to hym his mother and his brethren, and coulde not come at hym for prease.

20 And it was tolde hym [by certayne] which sayde: Thy mother and thy brethren stande without, & woulde see thee.

21 He aunswered, and sayde vnto them: My mother & my brethren [Note: [a] The spiritual kinreds, to be preferred before the carnall. ] are these, which heare the worde of God, & do it.

22 < And it came to passe on a certayne day, that he went into a shippe, and his disciples also: and he



sayde vnto them, Let vs go ouer vnto the other syde of the lake.

23 And they lauched foorth: But as they sayled he fell a slepe, [Note: Math.viii.e. Mark.iiii.d. ] and there came downe a storme on the lake, and they were fylled [with water], and were in ieoperdie.

D

24 And they came to hym, and awoke hym, saying: Maister, Maister, we are lost. Then he arose, and rebuked the wynde, & the tempest of water, and they ceased, and it waxed calme.

25 And he sayde vnto them: Where is your fayth? And they feared, and wondred among them selues, saying: Who is this? For he commaundeth both the wyndes & water, and they obey hym. >

26 [Note: Mat.viii.d. Mark.v.a. ] And they sayled vnto the region of the Gadarenites, which is ouer agaynst Galilee.

27 And when he went out to lande, there met hym out of the citie a certayne man, which had deuyls long tyme, and ware no clothes, neither abode in [any] house: but in graues.

28 When he sawe Iesus, and had cryed, he fell downe before hym, and with a loude voyce sayde: [Note: Math.viii.d. Mark.v.a. ] What haue I to do with thee Iesus, thou sonne of God most hiest? I besече thee torment me not.

29 (For he commaunded the foule spirite to come out of the man: For oftentimes he had caught him, and he was bounde with chaynes, and kept with fetters: & he brake the bandes, and was caryed of the fiende into wildernesse.)

E

30 And Iesus asked hym, saying: What is thy name? And he sayde, Legion: because many deuyls were entred into hym.

31 And they besought hym, that he woulde not commaunde them, to go out into the deepe.

32 And there was there, an hearde of many swyne, feedyng on an hyll: and they besought hym, that he woulde suffer them to enter into them: and he suffered them.

33 Then went the deuyls out of the man, and entred into the swyne: And the [Page] heard ran headlong with violence into the lake, and were choked.

34 When the heardmen sawe what was done, they fled: and when they were departed, they tolde it in the citie, & in the villages.

35 Therefore they came out to see what was done, and came to Iesus, & founde the man out of whom the deuyls were departed, sittyng at the feete of Iesus, clothed, & in his ryght mynde, and they were afrayde.

36 They also which sawe it, tolde them by what meanes he that was possessed of the deuyls, was healed.

37 Then the whole multitude of the countrey about the Gadarenites, besought hym that he woulde departe from them, for they were taken with great feare. [Note: Mat.viii.d. Mark.v.b. ] And he gat hym vp into the

shippe, and returned backe agayne.

F

38 Then the man out of whom the deuyls were departed, besought hym that he myght be with hym. But Iesus sent hym away, saying:

39 Go home agayne to thine owne house, and shewe what [Note: Or, what great thynges God hath done vnto thee. ] thynges so euer God hath done for thee. And he went his way, and preached throughout all the citie, what thynges so euer Iesus had done vnto hym.

40 And it came to passe, yt when Iesus was come agayne, the people receaued hym: For they all wayted for hym.

41 [Note: Math.ix.d. Mark.v.c. ] And behold, ther came a man named Iairus, & he was a ruler of ye synagoge, & he fell downe at Iesus feete, praying him that he would come into his house:

42 For he had but one daughter only, vpon a twelue yeres of age, and she lay a dying. (But as he went, the people thronged hym.

43 [Note: Math ix.c. Mark.v.c. ] And a woman, hauyng an issue of blood twelue yeres, which had spent all her substaunce vpon phisitions, neither coulde be holpen of any,

44 Came behynde hym, and touched the hemme of his rayment: and immediatly her issue of blood stauched.

45 And Iesus sayde: Who is it that touched me? Whe euery man denied, Peter and they that were with hym, sayde: Maister, the people thrust thee, and vexe thee, and sayest thou, who touched me?

46 And Iesus sayde, Some body hath touched me: For I perceauē that vertue is gone out of me.

47 When the woman sawe that she was not hyd, she came trembling, and fell [at his feete] and tolde him before al the people, for what cause she had touched him, and howe she was healed immediatly.

48 And he sayde vnto her: Daughter, be of good comfort, [Note: Math.ix.d. Mark.v.d. ] thy fayth hath sauēd thee, go in peace.)

G

49 Whyle he yet spake, there came one from the ruler of the synagogues house, which sayde to hym: Thy daughter is dead, disease not the Maister.

50 But when Iesus hearde that worde, he aunswered him, saying: [Note: Math.ix.c. Mark.v.d. ] Feare not, beleue only, & she shalbe made whole.

51 And when he came to the house, he suffered no man to go in with hym, saue Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and the father and the mother of the mayden.

52 Euery body wept, & sorowed for her. And he sayde: Weepe not, the damsell is not dead, [Note: Iohn.xi.d. ] but slepeth.

53 And they laughed hym to scorne, knowyng that she was dead.

54 And he thrust them all out, and toke her by the hande, and cryed, saying: Mayde, aryse.

55 And her spirite came agayne, and she rose straightway: And he commaunded to geue her meate.

56 And the father and the mother of her, were astonyed: But he warned the that they should tel no man what was done.

## The .vj. Chapter.

¶ 2 The Apostles are sent to preache. 7 Herode hearde of Christe. 12 Fiue thousande fedde with fiue loaues & two fisshes. 19 Diuers opinions of Christ. 20 The confession of the Apostles. 28 The transfiguration of Christe. 35 Christe is to be heard. 42 The lunatike is healed. 43 The infidelitie of the Apostles, 46 they stryue who shoulde be greatest. 49 Of one castyng out deuyls in Christes name. 53 The Samaritanes woulde not receaue Christe. 54 The disciples desire vengeance, and are of hym reproued. 57 Of three that woulde folowe Christe, but after diuers sortes of lokyng backe.

A

1 **Iesus** called the [Note: Math.x.c. Mark.iii.b. and .vi b. Luk.vi.c. ] twelue together, and gaue the power and authoritie ouer al deuils, and that they might heale diseases.

2 And he sent them to preache the kyngdome of God, and to heale the sicke.

3 And he saide vnto the: Take nothing to [Note: [a] Because this iourney was short, & but for a tyme, Christ wyllled that they shoulde make haste, & take nothyng with them, wherby they myght be letted any thyng at all from the bussines, ] your iourney, neither staues, nor scrippe, neither bread, neither money, [Page] neither haue two coates.

4 [Note: Math.x b. ] And whatsoeuer house ye enter into, there abyde, and thence depart.

5 And whosoever wyll not receaue you, when ye go out of that citie, shake of the very dust from your feete, for a testimonie agaynst them.

6 And they departed, and went through the townes, preachyng the Gospell, and healyng euerywhere. >

7 [Note: Mark.xiii.a Math.vi.b. ] And Herode the tetrarche heard of all that was done by hym, and doubted, because that it was sayde of some, that Iohn was rysen agayne from death:

8 And of some, that Elias had appeared, and of some, that one of the olde prophetes was rysen agayne.

9 And Herode sayde, Iohn haue I beheaded, but who is this of who I heare such thinges? And he desired to see him.

B

10 And the apostles returned, & tolde him all that they had done. [Note: Mat.xiii.b. Mark.vi.d. Iohn.vi.a. ] And he toke the and went aside into a solitarie place, nye vnto the citie that is called Bethsaida.

11 Which whe the people knew, they folowed him: And he receaued them, and spake vnto the of the kingdome of God, & healed the that had nede to be healed.

12 And when the day began to weare away, then came the twelue and sayde vnto hym: Sende the people away, that they may go into the townes and vyllages rounde about, and lodge, and get meate: for we are here in a place of wyldernesse.

13 But he said vnto them: Geue ye the to eate. And they said: We haue no mo but fyue loaues and two fisshes, excepte we should go & bye meate for al this people.

14 And they were about fyue thousande men. And he said to his disciples: Cause the to sit downe by fifties in a companie.

15 And they dyd so, and made them all to sit downe.

16 And he toke the fyue loaues and the two fisshes, and loked vp to heauen, and blessed them, and brake, and gaue to the disciples to set before the people.

17 And they dyd all eate, and were satisfied. And there was taken vp of that remayned to them, twelue baskettes full of broken meate.

C

18 [Note: Math.xvi.c Mark.viii.c Math.xvi.c. Mark.viii.c. ] And it came to passe, as he was alone praying, his disciples were with hym, and he asked them, saying: [Note: Math.xvi.c Mark.viii.c Math.xvi.c. Mark.viii.c. ] Who say the people that I am?

19 They aunswered and sayde, Iohn Baptist: some say, Elias: and some say that one of the olde prophetes is rysen.

20 He sayde vnto them: But whom say ye that I am? [Simon] Peter aunswered, & saide: [Thou art] Christe, [Note: Math.xvi.c Iohn.vi.g. ] of God.

21 And he warned & commaunded them, that they should tell no man that thing,

22 Saying: [Note: Math.xviii.e Mark.viii.d Luk.xvii.c. ] The sonne of man must suffer many thynges, and be reprovod of the elders, and of the hye priestes and scribes, and be slayne, and ryse agayne the thirde day.

23 And he said to the all: If any man wyl come after me, let him denie him selfe, & take vp his crosse dayly, & folowe me.

24 [Note: Math.xvi.a Iohn.vi.d. Luk.xvii.g. ] For whosoeuer wyl saue his lyfe, shal lose it: But whosoeuer shal lose his lyfe for my sake, the same shall saue it.

25 For what auauntageth it a man yf he wyne the whole worlde, and lose hym selfe, or runne in daunger of hym selfe?

26 For [Note: Math.x.e. Mark.viii.d Luk.xii.a. ] whosoeuer shalbe ashamed of me, and of my wordes, of hym shall the sonne of man be ashamed, whe he commeth in his maiestie, and in the maiestie of his father, and of the holy angels.

D

27 I tell you of a trueth, [Note: Math.xvi.d Mark. viii.c ] there be some standyng here, whiche shall not taste of death, tyl they see the kingdome of God.

28 [Note: Mat.xvii.a. Mark.ix.g. ] And it came to passe, about an eyght dayes after these sayinges, he toke Peter, and Iohn, and Iames, and went vp into a mountayne to pray.

29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenaunce was chaunged, & his garment was whyte, and shone.

30 And beholde, there talked with hym two men, which were Moyses & Elias:

31 That appeared in the maiestie, & spake of his departyng, which he shoulde end at Hierusalem.

32 But Peter, and they that were with him, were heauie with sleepe: and whe they awoke, they sawe his maiestie, and two men standyng with hym.

33 [Note: Mat.xvii.a. Mark.x.a. ] And it came to passe, as they departed fro him, Peter said vnto Iesus: Maister it is good beyng here for vs, let vs make three tabernacles, one for thee, & one for Moyses, and one for Elias: and wyst not what he sayde.

34 Whyle he thus spake, there came a cloude, and ouershadowed them, & they feared whe they wer come into ye cloude

35 And there came a voyce out of the cloude, saying: [Note: ii.Pet.i.d. Mat.xvii.b. Mark.i.b. Luk. iii.d. ] this is my deare sonne, [Note: Deu.xviii.c ] heare him.

[Page]

36 And assoone as the voyce was paste, Iesus was founde alone: and they kept it close, and tolde no man in those dayes any of those thynges which they hadde seene.

E

37 [Note: Mat.xvii.b. Mark.ix.b. ] And it came to passe, that on the next day, as they came downe from the hyll, much people met hym.

38 And beholde, a man of the companie cried out, saying: Maister, I besech thee behold my sonne, for he is all yt I haue:

39 And see, a spirite taketh hym, and sodenly he cryeth, and teareth hym, that he fometh agayne, & with much payne departeth from him, when he hath rent hym.

40 [Note: Math.xvii c Mark.ix.c. ] And I besought thy disciples to cast hym out, and they coulde not.

41 Iesus aunswered, and saide: O faithlesse and croked nation, howe long shall I be with you, and shall suffer you? Bryng thy sonne hyther.

42 As he was yet a commyng, the fiende rent hym, and tare hym: And Iesus rebuked the vncleane spirite, and healed the chylde, and deliuered hym to his father.

F

43 [Note: Mark.i.c. Luk.iiii.d. ] And they were all amased at the mightie power of God: But whyle they wondred euery one at all thinges which he dyd, he sayde vnto his disciples,

44 Let these sayinges sincke downe into your eares: For it wyll come to passe, that [Note: Mat.xvi.c. Mark.viii.d Luk.ix.c. ] the sonne of man shalbe deliuered into the handes of men.

45 [Note: Luk.ii.g. and .xviii.f. ] But they wyst not what that worde meant, and it was hydde from them that they vnderstoode it not: And they feared to aske hym of that saying.

46 Then there arose a disputatio among them, which of them should be the greatest.

47 When Iesus perceaued the thought of their heartes, [Note: Mat.xviii.a Mark.ix.c. Luk.xxii.f. ] he toke a chylde, and set hym harde by hym,

48 And sayde vnto them: Whosoeuer receaueth this chylde in my name, receaueth me: [Note: Math.x.d. Luk.x.c. Iohn.xiii.c. ] And whosoeuer receaueth me, receaueth him that sent me. For he that is least among you all, the same shalbe great.

49 And Iohn aunswered, and sayde: Maister, we sawe one castyng out deuyls in thy name, and we forbad hym, because he foloweth not with vs.

G

50 And Iesus sayde vnto hym, [Note: Num.xi.g. ] Forbyd ye [hym] not: For he that is not against vs, is with vs.

51 And it came to passe, when the tyme was come that he shoulde be receaued vp, he set his face to go to Hierusalem.

52 And sent messengers before him: And they went, & entred into a towne of the Samaritanes, to make redy for hym.

53 And they woulde not receaue him, because [Note: [b] Because they knewe that he was a Iewe, & the Samaritans could not agree with the Iewes. Iob. iiii. for yt they differed in religion. ] his face was as though he woulde go to Hierusalem.

54 When his disciples, Iames & Iohn, sawe this, they sayde: Lord, wylt thou that we comaunde fire to come downe from heauen and consume them, euen as [Note: 4.Reg.i.c. ] Elias dyd?

55 Iesus turned about, & rebuked them, saying: Ye wote not what maner spirite ye are of.

56 For the sonne of man is not come to destroye mens lyues, but to saue them. And they went to another towne.

57 < And it came to passe, that as they went walkyng in the way, a certayne man sayde vnto hym: [Note: Math.viii.c. ] I wyll folowe thee Lorde whyther so euer thou go.

58 And Iesus sayde vnto hym: Foxes haue holes, and byrdes of the ayre haue nestes: but the sonne of man, hath not where to lay his head.

59 And he sayde vnto another, folowe me. And the same sayde: Lorde, suffer me first to go and burie my father.

60 Iesus sayde vnto hym, [Note: Leuit.xxi.b ] Let the dead burie their dead: but go thou & preache the kyngdome of God.

61 And another sayde: Lorde [Note: 3.Reg.xix.d ] I wyll folowe thee, but let me first go byd them farewell, [Note: [c] When Christe calleth, we may not looke at any thyng which may hynder vs fro our vocation, but with all speede folow it. ] which are at home at my house.

62 Iesus sayde vnto hym: No man that putteth his hande to the plowe, and loketh backe, is apt to the kyngdome of God. >

[Page]

## The .x. Chapter.

1 He sendeth seuentie disciples to preache, geuyng them charge howe to behaue themselues, 13 He threatneth the obstinate and vnthankfull cities, 16 He admonisheth his disciples of humilitie. 20 Wherof we shoulde reioyce. 21 He geueth thanks to his father. 26 He aunswered the lawyer that tempted hym, 33 Who is our neyghbour. 38 Of Martha and Marie.

A

1 < **After** these thynges, the Lorde appoynted other seuentie also, and sent them two and two before hym, into euery citie and place, whyther he hym selfe woulde come.

2 Therefore sayde he vnto them: [Note: Math.ix.d. ] The haruest is great, but the labourers are fewe. Pray ye therfore the Lorde of the haruest, to sende [Note: Or thrust foorth. ] foorth labourers into his haruest.

3 Go your wayes: [Note: Math.x.b. ] beholde, I sende you foorth as lambes among wolves.

4 Beare no wallet, neither scrippe, nor shoes, & [Note: 4.Reg.iiii.e ] salute [Note: [a] He wylleth that they should dispach this iourney with diligence and speede, & not occupy the selues aboute other dueties. ] no man by the way.

5 [Note: 2.Reg.4. ] Into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, peace be to this house.

6 And yf the sonne [Note: [b] which loueth the doctrine of peace, that is, the Gospell. ] of peace be there, your peace shall rest vpon hym: yf not, it shall turne to you agayne.

7 And in the same house tary styll, eatyng and drinking such thynges as they [shall set before you.] For the labourer is worthy of his rewarde. > Go not from house to house.

B

8 And into whatsoever citie ye enter, and they receaue you, eate such thynges as are set before you:

9 And heale the sicke that are therin, and say vnto them, the kyngdome of God is come nye vpon you.

10 [Note: Math.x.a. ] But into whatsoever citie ye enter, & they receaue you not, go your ways out into the streates of the same, and saye:

11 Euen the very dust of our citie, which cleaueth on vs, we do wype of agaynst you: Notwithstandyng, be ye sure of this, that the kyngdome of God was come nye vpon you.

12 I say vnto you, that it shalbe easier in that day for Sodome, then for that citie.

C

13 [Note: Mark.xi.c. ] Wo vnto thee Chorazin, wo vnto thee Bethsaida: For if the miracles had ben done in Tyre and Sidon, whiche haue ben done in you, they had a great whyle ago repented [of their sinnes] syttyng in sackcloth and ashes.

14 Therefore it shalbe easier for Tyre and Sidon at the iudgement, then for you.

15 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted to heauen, shalt be thrust downe to hell.

16 [Note: Math.x.b. Iohn.xiii.e. ] He that heareth you, heareth me, and he that despiseth you, despiseth me: and he that despiseth me, despiseth hym that sent me.

17 And the seuentie turned agayne with ioy, saying: Lord, euen the [very] deuils are subdued to vs through thy name.

18 And he said vnto them: [Note: Esai.xiiii.c. ] I sawe Satan [Note: [c] The power of Satan is beaten downe by preachyng the Gospell. ] as it had ben lyghtnyng, fallyng downe from heauen.

19 [Note: Actes.28. b. ] Beholde, I geue vnto you power to treade on serpentis, and scorpions, and ouer all maner power of the enemye, & nothyng shall hurt you.

20 Neuerthesse, in this reioyce not, that the spirites are subdued vnto you: but rather reioyce, because [Note: Phil.iiii.a. Apo.xvii.b ] your names are written in heauen.

D

21 That same houre reioyced Iesus in the spirite, and sayde: I confesse vnto thee father, [Note: Math.xi. d. ] Lorde of heauen & earth, that thou hast hyd these thynges from the wise and prudent, and hast opened them vnto babes: Euen so father, for so it pleased thee.

22 [Note: Mat.xvi.d. and .xviii.d. ] All thynges are geuen me of my father. [Note: Math.xi.d. Iohn.vii.d. and .viii.c. ]



No man knoweth who the sonne is, but the father, and who the father is, but the sonne, and he to whom the sonne wyll shewe hym.

23 And he turned to his disciples, & sayde secretly: < [Note: Mat.xiii.d. ] Happy are the eyes which see the thynges that ye see.

24 For I tell you, that many prophetes and kynges haue desired to see those thynges whiche ye see, & haue not seene them, and to heare those thinges which ye heare, and haue not hearde them.

E

25 And beholde, a certayne lawyer stode vp, and tempted him, saying: [Note: Mat.xxii.d. ] Maister, what shall I do to inherite eternal lyfe? He sayde vnto hym:

26 What is written in the lawe, howe readest thou?

27 And he aunswered, and saide: [Note: Deut.vi.a. Mat.xxii.d. Mark.xii.c. ] Thou shalt loue the Lorde thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soule, & with all thy strength, and with al thy mynde, and thy neyghbour as thy selfe.

28 And he sayde vnto hym, Thou hast [Page] aunswered ryght: this do, and thou shalt lyue.

29 But he, wylling to iustifie hym selfe, said vnto Iesus: and who is my neyghbour?

30 And Iesus aunswered, and sayde. A certayne man descended from Hierusalem to Hierico, and fell among thieues, which robbed hym of his rayment, and wounded hym, and departed, leauyng hym halfe dead.

31 And it befell, that there came downe a certayne priest that same way, and whe he sawe hym, he passed by on the other syde.

F

32 And likewise a Leuite, when he went nye to the place, came and loked on him, and passed by the other syde.

33 But a certayne Samaritane, as he iourneyed, came vnto hym, and when he saw him, he had compassion on him.

34 And went to hym, and bounde vp his woundes, and powred in oyle and wine, and set hym on his owne beast, and brought hym to a [common] Inne, and made prouision for hym.

35 And on the morowe when he departed, he toke out [Note: which was about .ix.d. of sterlyng money. ] two pence, and gaue them to the hoste, and sayde vnto hym, take cure of hym, and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come agayne, I wyll recompence thee.

36 Which nowe of these three, thinkest thou, was neyghbour vnto hym that fell among the thieues?

37 And he sayde: He that shewed mercy on hym. Then sayde Iesus vnto hym: Go, and do thou lykewyse.

>

G

38 < Nowe it came to passe, that as they went, he entred into a certayne towne: And a certayne woma, named Martha, receaued hym into her house.

39 And this woman had a sister called Marie, whiche also sate at Iesus feete, and hearde his worde.

40 But Martha was cumbred about much seruing, and came to hym, & saide: Lorde, doest thou not care that my sister hath lefte me to serue alone? Byd her therfore that she helpe me.

41 And Iesus aunswered, and sayde vnto her: Martha, Martha, thou art carefull, and troubled about many thynges:

42 Ueryly one is needefull. Mary hath chosen the good part, [Note: [d] That is, the hearing of the worde of God, from which it was not meant, yt she should be drawen, hauyng not alwayes oportunitie to heare the same. ] which shall not be taken away from her. >

## ¶ The .xj. Chapter.

2 Christe teacheth his disciples to pray, and to continue in prayer, 14 he dryueth out a dumbe deuyll, 15 and rebuketh the blasphemous pharisees. 28 Who are blessed. 29 The Iewes aske a signe. 37 Christe vnwashed eateth with the pharisee, 39 and reproueth the outwarde shewe of holynesse in the pharisees, scribes, and hypocrites.

A

1 **And** so it was, that as he was praying in a certayne place, when he ceased, one of his disciples sayde vnto hym: Lord teache vs to pray, as Iohn also taught his disciples.

2 And he said vnto them, When ye pray, say: [Note: Mark.vi. b. ] O our father which art in heauen, halowed be thy name, thy kyngdome come, thy wyll be fulfilled, euen in earth also, as it is in heauen.

3 Our dayly breade geue vs this day.

4 And forgeue vs our synnes: For euen we forgeue euery man that trespasseth vs. And leade vs not into temptation, but delyuer vs from euyll.

5 And he sayde vnto them: < Whiche of you shall haue a friende, and shall go vnto hym at mydnyght, and saye vnto hym, friende lende me three loaues,

B

6 For a friende of mine is come out of the way to me, and I haue nothyng to set before hym:

7 And he within aunswere, & say, trouble me not, the doore is nowe shut, and my children are with me in bedde, I can not ryse and geue thee.

8 I saye vnto you, though he wyll not ryse and geue hym, because he is his friende: yet because of his importunitie he wyll ryse, and geue hym as many as he needeth.

9 And I say vnto you, [Note: Math.vii.a. Iohn.xvi.f. Iacob.i.a. ] aske, and it shalbe geuen you, seke, and ye shall fynde, knocke, and it shalbe opened vnto you.

10 For euery one that asketh, receaueth, and he that seketh, fyndeth, and vnto hym that knocketh, shall it be opened.

11 If the sonne shall aske breade, of any of you that is a father, wyll he geue him a stone? Or yf he aske fische, wyll he for fische geue hym a serpent?

[Page]

12 Or yf he aske an egge, wyll he offer hym a scorpion?

13 If ye then, being euyll, can geue good gyftes vnto your chyldren, howe muche more shall your father of heauen geue the holy spirite, to them that desire [it] of hym. >

C

14 < [Note: Math.ix.d. Mark.vii.d. ] And he was castyng out a deuyll, and the same was dumbe. And it came to passe, when the deuyll was gone out, the dumbe spake, & the people wondred.

15 But some of the sayde, [Note: Math.ix.d. Mark.iii.d. ] he casteth out deuils through Beelzebub, the chiefe of the deuils.

16 And other tempted him, and required of hym a signe from heauen.

17 But he knowyng their thoughtes, sayde vnto them: Euery kyngdome deuided agaynst it selfe, is desolate: and a housed [deuided] agaynst a house, falleth. [Note: Math.ix.d. Mark.iii.d. ]

18 If Satan also be deuided against him selfe, howe shall his kyngdome endure? Because ye saye that I cast out deuils through Beelzebub.

19 If I by the helpe of Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whose helpe do your chyldren cast them out? Therefore shall they be your iudges.

20 But yf I with the fynger of God cast out deuyls, no doubt the kyngdome of God is come vpon you.

D

21 [Note: Math.xii.c. ] When a strong man armed, kepeth his palace, ye thynges that he possesseth are in peace.

22 But whe a stronger then he commeth vpon hym, and ouercommeth hym, he taketh from him all his harnesse, wherin he trusted, and deuideth his goodes.

23 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth [abrode.]

24 [Note: Mark.xii.d. ] When the vnclene spirite is gone out of a man, he walketh through drye places, sekyng rest: and when he fyndeth none, he sayth, I wyll returne vnto my house, whence I came out.

25 And when he commeth, he fyndeth it swept and garnished.

26 Then goeth he, and taketh to hym seuen other spirites, worse then him selfe, and they enter in, and dwell there: and the ende of that man, is worse then the begynnyng.

27 And it came to passe, that as he spake these thynges, a certayne woman of the company lyft vp her voyce, & saide vnto hym: Happy is the wombe that bare thee, and the pappes whiche gaue thee sucke.

28 But he sayde: Yea rather happy are they that heare the worde of God, and kepe it. >

29 When the people were gathered thicke together, he began to saye: This is an euyll natio, [Note: Math.xii.c. Mark.viii.b ] they seke a signe, and there shall no signe be geuen them, but the signe of Ionas the prophete.

30 For as [Note: Iohn.vi. d. Ionas.ii.c. ] Ionas was a signe to the Niniuites, so shall also the sonne of man be to this nation.

31 [Note: 3.Reg.x.a. ii.Para.ix.a. Math. xi.d. ] The Queene of the south shall ryse in iudgement with the men of this nation, and condempne them: for she came from the vtmost partes of the earth, to heare the wisdomes of Solomon: And beholde, a greater then Solomon is here.

32 The men of Niuiue shall rise in iudgement with this nation, and shall condempne them, for they repented at the preachyng of Ionas: and beholde, a greater then Ionas is here.

E

33 < [Note: Math.v.b. Mark iiiii.b. Luk.viii.c. ] No man lyghteth a candle, & putteth it in a priuie place, neither vnder a busshell: but on a candlesticke, that they which come in may see the lyght,

34 [Note: Math.vi.c. ] The lyght of the body, is the eye: Therefore when thyne eye is single, all thy body also shalbe full of lyght. But if thyne eye be euyll, thy body also shalbe full of darknesse.

35 Take heede therefore, that the lyght which is in thee, be not darknes.

36 If all thy body therfore be cleare, hauyng no part darke, then shall it all be full of lyght, euen as when a candle doth lyght thee with bryghtnes. >

37 And as he spake, a certayne pharisee besought hym to dyne with hym: and Iesus went in, & sate downe to meate.

38 When the pharisee sawe it, he marueyled that he had not first washed before dynner.

F

39 And the Lorde said vnto him: [Note: Mat.xxiii.c ] Now do ye pharisees make cleane the outsyde of the cuppe, and the platter, but the inward part is full of your rauenyng and wickednesse.

40 Ye fooles, dyd not he that made that whiche is without, make that which is within also?

41 **But** rather [Note: [a] Christe requireth here two thynges. First, that we come truly by our meate: next, that we geue almes, for charitie is the perfection of the lawe. ] geue almes of those thynges which are within, and beholde all thynges are cleane vnto you.

[Page]

42 [Note: Mat.xxiii.c ] **But** wo vnto you pharisees: for ye tithe mint & rue, and al maner hearbes, and passe ouer iudgement, and the loue of God: These ought ye to haue done, and yet not to leaue the other vndone.

43 [Note: Mat.xxiii.c ] **Wo** vnto you pharisees: for ye loue the vppermost seates in ye synagogues, and greetynge in the markettes.

44 **Wo** vnto you scribes and pharisees, ye hypocrites: for ye are as graues which appeare not, and the men that walke ouer them, are not ware of them.

45 Then aunswered one of the lawyers, and sayde vnto him: Maister, thus saying, thou putttest vs to rebuke also.

G

46 **And** he sayde, [Note: Esaias.x.a. Mat.xxiii.b ] **Wo** vnto you also ye lawyers: for ye lade me with burthens greuous to be borne, and ye your selues touche not ye burthens with one of your fyngers.

47 **Wo** vnto you, [Note: Mat.xxiii.d ] ye buylde the sepulchres of the prophetes, and your fathers kylled them.

48 Truly, ye beare wnesse that ye alowe the deedes of your fathers: for they kylled them, and ye buylde their sepulchres.

49 Therefore saide the wisdome of God, [Note: Mat.xxiii.d ] I wyl sende them prophetes and apostles, and some of them they shall slaye and persecute:

50 That the blood of all the prophetes, which is shedde, from the foundation of the worlde, may be required of this generation,

51 From the blood of [Note: Gen.iiii.b. 2.Para.24.f. ] Abel, vnto ye blood of Zacharie, whiche perished betwene the aulter & the temple: Ueryly I saye vnto you, it shalbe required of this nation.

52 **Wo** vnto you lawyers: for ye haue taken away the [Note: [b] the pure doctrine. the pure doctrine, and true vnderstadyng of the scriptures. ] keye of knowledge, ye entred not in your selues, and them that came in, ye forbad.

53 When he thus spake vnto them, the lawyers & the pharisees began to vrge hym vehemently, and to prouoke hym to speake many thynges.

54 Laying wayte for hym, and sekyng to catche somethyng out of his mouth, wherby they myght accuse hym.

## The .xij. Chapter.

1 The leuen of the pharisees is to be auoyded. 5 Who is to be feared. 8 To confesse gods name, or to denie it. 10 Blasphemie agaynst the spirite. 11 He comforteth the disciples agaynst affliction, 15 and warneth them to beware of couetousnes by the similitude of a ryche man. 20 Agaynst care of earthly thynkes. 31 To geue our selues to ryghteousnes, almes, watchyng, pacience, wysdome, and concorde.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 < **In** ye meane tyme, whe ther were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people [insomuch] that they trode one another, he began to saye vnto his disciples. First of all, [Note: Math.xvi.a Mar.viii.b. ] beware of the leuen of the pharisees, which is hypocrisie.

2 [Note: Math.x.c. Mark.iiii.c. Luk.viii.c. Math.x.c. Luk.viii.b. ] For there is nothyng couered, that shall not be vncouered, neither hyd, that shall not be knowen.

3 Therefore, whatsoeuer you haue spoken in darkenesse, shalbe hearde in the light: and that which ye haue spoken in the eare, euen in secrete places, shalbe preached on the toppe [Note: [a] Openly, that all men may heare. ] of the houses.

4 [Note: Math.x.b. ] And I say vnto you my friendes, be not afrayde of them that kyll the body, and after that, haue no more that they can do.

<sup>B</sup>  
5 But I wyll forewarne you who you shall feare: Feare hym, which after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell, yea I say vnto you, feare hym.

6 Are not fyue sparowes bought for two farthynges? and not one of them is forgotten before God.

7 Also, eue the very heeres of your head are all numbred. Feare not therefore, ye are more of value the many sparowes.

8 Also I say vnto you, [Note: Math.x.c. ] whosoever confesseth me before men, hym shall the sonne of man knowledge also, before the angels of God.

9 But he that denyeth me before men, shalbe denyed before the angels of God.

10 [Note: Math.xii.c. Mark.iii.d. Math.xii.c. Luk.xii.b. ] And whosoever speaketh a worde agaynst the sonne of man, it shalbe forgeuen hym: But vnto hym that blasphemeth the holy [Note: [b] He that shall resist agaynst ye word of God purposely of malice, or against his owne conscience. ] ghost, it shall not be forgeuen.

11 And when they bryng you vnto the synagogues, and vnto the rulers and officers, take ye no thought, how or what thyng ye shall aunswere, or what ye [Page] shall speake.

12 For the holy ghost shall teache you in the same houre what ye ought to say.

<sup>C</sup>

13 < One of the companie sayde vnto hym: Maister, speake to my brother, that he deuide the inheritauce with me.

14 And he sayde vnto hym: Man, who made me a iudge or a deuider ouer you?

15 And he sayde vnto them, Take heede & beware of couetousnes: For no mans lyfe standeth in the aboundaunce of the thynges which he possesseth.

16 And he put foorth a similitude vnto the, saying: The grounde of a certaine ryche man brought foorth plentifull fruites.

17 And he thought within him selfe, saying, What shall I do, because I haue no rowme where to bestow my fruites?

18 And he sayde, this wyll I do, I wyll destroy my barnes, and buylde greater, and therin wyll I gather all my fruites and my goodes.

19 And I wyll saye to my soule: Soule, [Note: Eccle.xi.c. ] thou hast much goods layed vp [in store] for many yeres, take thyne ease, eate, drynke, and be mery.

20 But God sayde vnto hym: [Note: Iere.xvii.b. ] Thou foole, this nyght wyll they fetch awaye thy soule againe fro thee: [Note: Psal.39.b. ] Then whose shall those thynges be, which thou hast prouided?

21 So is he that gathereth riches to him selfe, and is not ryche towards God.

22 And he spake vnto his disciples: Therefore I say vnto you, [Note: Math.vi.d. i.Peter.v.c. ] take no thought for your lyfe, what ye shall eate, neither for the body what ye shall put on.

23 The lyfe is more then meate, and the body is more then rayment.

24 Consider the Rauens, for they neither sowe nor reape, whiche neither haue storehouse nor barne, and God feedeth them: > Howe much more are ye better then [fethered] fowles?

D

25 [Note: Math.vi.d. ] Which of you, with takyng thought, can adde to his stature one cubite?

26 If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least: why take ye thought for the remnaunt?

27 Consider the Lylies how they growe, they labour not, they spinne not: and yet I say vnto you, that Solomon in al his royaltie was not clothed lyke one of these.

28 If God so clothe the grasse, whiche is to daye in the felde, and to morowe is cast into the furnasse, howe much more wyll he clothe you, O ye of litle fayth?

29 And aske not ye what ye shall eate, or what ye shall drynke, neither be ye of doubtfull mynde:

30 For all suche thynges do the [Heathen] people of the worlde seke for: and your father knoweth that ye haue neede of these thynges.

31 But rather [Note: Math.vi.c. i.Tim.vi.b. Eccl.xxix.b Pro.xxiii.a. ] seke ye after ye kyngdome of God, and all these thinges shalbe ministred vnto you.

32 Feare not litle flocke, for it is your fathers pleasure to geue you a kyngdome.

33 [Note: Math.xix.c. Mark.x.c. ] Sell that ye haue, and geue almes: and prepare you bagges whiche waxe not olde, euen a treasure that fayleth not in heauen, where no thiefe cometh, neither moth corrupteth.

34 For where your treasure is, there wyl your hearte be also.

E

35 [Note: Eph.vi.c. i.Peter.i.c. ] Let your loynes be girde about, and your lyghtes brennyng,

36 And ye your selues like vnto men, that wayte for their Lorde, when he wyl retourne from the weddyng, that when he commeth, and knocketh, they maye open vnto hym immediatly.

37 Happy are those seruauntes, who the Lorde, when he commeth, shall fynde wakyng. Ueryly I say vnto you, that he shall girde him selfe, and make them to syt downe to meate, and wyl come forth, and minister vnto them.

38 And yf he come in the seconde watche, yea if he come in the thirde watche, and fynde them so, happye are those seruauntes.

39 This vnderstande, that yf the good man of the house knew what houre the thiefe woulde come, he woulde surely watche, and not suffer his house to be dygged through.

40 [Note: Math.24.d. Mark.xiii.d ] Be ye therefore redy also, for ye sonne of man wyl come at an houre when ye thynke not. >

41 Then Peter saide vnto him: [Note: Math.24.d. Mark.xiii.c ] Maister, tellest thou this similitude vnto vs, or to all [men?]

42 And the Lorde saide: Who is a faythfull and wyse stewarde, whom his lorde shall make ruler ouer his housholde, to geue them their portion of meate in due season?

43 [Note: Apoc.xvi c ] Happye is that seruaunt, whom his lorde when he commeth, shall fynde so doying.  
[Page] F

44 Of a trueth I saye vnto you, that he wyl make hym ruler ouer all that he hath.

45 But & yf that seruaut say in his heart, [Note: Math.24.d. ] my lorde wyl deferre his commyng, and shall begyn to smyte the seruauntes and maydens, and to eate and drynke, and to be dronken,

46 The Lord of that seruaunt wyl come in a day when he thynketh not, and at an houre when he is not



ware, and wyll hewe hym in peeces, and geue hym his portion with the vnbeleuers.

47 [Note: Iacob.iiii.d. ] And the seruaunt that knewe his maisters wyll, and prepared not hym selfe, neither dyd accordyng to his wyll, shalbe beaten with many strypes.

48 But he that knewe not, [Note: [c] Ignoraunce wyll not excuse. ] and did comit thynges worthy of strypes, shalbe beaten with fewe strypes. For vnto whosoeuer much is geuen, of him shalbe much required: and to whom men haue committed much, of hym wyl they aske the more.

49 I am come to sende fire [Note: [d] That is, the Gospell, which is as a vehemet fire, and maketh a chaunge of thynges, thorowe all the worlde. ] on ye earth, and what is my desire, [Note: 49 The Greke readeth, () ye it be alrede kindled? ] but that it be alrede kindled?

50 Notwithstandyng, I must be baptized with a baptisme, [Note: [e] He compareth afflictions and his death, to baptisme. ] and howe am I payned tyll it be ended?

51 [Note: Mark.x.d. ] Suppose ye that I am come to sende peace on earth? I tell you naye, [Note: [f] Christe is not the cause that there is destruction for the Gospell, but the wickednesse of worldynges, which by malice contemnyng ye Gospell, be at variaunce with all that professe it. ] but rather deuision.

G

52 For fro hencefoorth there shalbe fyue in one house deuided, three against two, and two against three.

53 The father shalbe deuided against the sonne, and the sonne against the father: The mother agaynst the daughter, and the daughter agaynst the mother: The mother in lawe against her daughter in lawe, and the daughter in lawe against her mother in lawe.

54 He sayde also to the people: [Note: Math.xvi.a ] When ye see a cloude rise out of the west, straightway ye say there cometh a showre, and so it is.

55 And whe ye see the south wynd blow, ye say it wyll be hotte, and it commeth to passe.

56 Ye hypocrites, ye can discerne the outwarde appearaunce of the skye, and of the earth: but howe is it that ye cannot discerne this tyme?

57 Yea, and why iudge ye not of your selues what is ryght?

58 [Note: Math.v.d. Prou.xxv b ] When thou goest with thine aduersarie to the ruler, as thou art in the waye, geue diligence that thou mayest be deliuered from hym, lest he bryng thee to the iudge, and the iudge deliuer thee to the iayler, and the iayler caste thee into prison.

59 I tel thee, thou shalt not depart thence, tyll thou haue made good the vtmost mite.

## ¶ The .xiiij. Chapter.

1 Of the Galileans, 4 and those that were oppressed at Siloe. 6 Of the figge tree that bare no fruite. 11 The woman hauyng a spirite of infirmitie healed. 15 The vse of the Sabboth. 18 He declareth by diuers similitudes what the kyngdome of God is. 24 Fewe enter into the kyngdome of Christe. 32 He reprobeth Herode and Hierusalem.

A

1 **There** were present at the same seaso, certaine men, that shewed him of ye Galileans, whose blood [Note: [a] Pilate murdered them, as they were sacrificyng. ] Pilate hadde myngled with their owne sacrifice.

2 And Iesus aunswered, and sayde vnto them: Suppose ye that these [Note: Actes.v.f. ] Galileans, were greater sinners then all the others Galileans, because they suffred such punishment?

3 I tell you naye: but except ye repent, ye shall all lykewyse peryshe.

4 Or those eyghteene vpon whiche the towre in [Note: [b] whiche towre stoode by the fisse poole or riuier syloam in Hierusalem. ] Siloe fell, and slewe them, thynke ye that they were sinners aboue all men that dwelt in Hierusalem?

5 I tell you naye: but except ye repent, ye shall all lykewyse peryshe.

B

6 < He tolde also this similitude. A certaine man had a [Note: Math.xxi.b ] figge tree planted in his vineyarde, and he came, and sought fruite thereon, and founde none.

7 Then sayde he to the dresser of his vineyarde: Beholde, this three yere I haue come & sought fruite in this figge tree, and finde none: cut it downe, why cumbreth it the grounde?

8 And he aunswered, & sayde vnto him: Lorde, let it alone this yere also, tyll I dygge rounde about it, & dongue it.

9 And yf it beare fruite [thou mayest] let it alone: and yf it beare not then, after [Page] that shalt thou cut it downe.

C

10 And he taught in one of their synagogues on the Sabboth dayes.

11 And beholde, there was a woman, which had a spirite of infirmitie eyghteene yeres, and was bowed together, and coulde in no wyse lyft vp her head.

12 When Iesus sawe her, he called her to hym, and sayde vnto her: Woman, thou art loosed from thy disease.

13 And he layde his handes on her, and immediatly, she was made strayght, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the synagogue aunswered with indignation, because that Iesus had healed on the Sabboth day, & sayde vnto the people: There are sixe dayes, in which men ought to worke, in them therefore come, that ye may be healed, and not on the Sabboth day.

15 But the Lorde aunswere hym, and sayde: Thou hypocrite, doth not eche one of you on the Sabboth day, [Note: Math.xii.a. Luk.xiiii.a. ] loose his ox or his asse from the staule, and leade hym to the water?

16 And ought not this daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bounde, lo eyghteene yeres, be loosed from this bonde on the Sabboth day?

17 And when he sayde these thynges, all his aduersaries were ashamed, and all the people reioyced on all the excellent deedes that were done by hym. >

18 Then sayde he: What is the kyngdome of God lyke? or whereto shall I compare it?

D

19 [Note: Math.xvi.d Mark.iiii.c. ] It is like a grayne of mustarde seede, whiche a man toke & sowed in his garden: and it grewe, and waxed a great tree, and the foules of the ayre made nestes in the braunches of it.

20 And agayne he sayde: Whervnto shall I lyken the kyngdome of God?

21 [Note: Math.xiiii c ] It is lyke leuen, which a [Note: Gen.xviii.a ] woman toke, and hyd in three peckes of meale, tyll all was leuened.

22 And he went through all cities and townes, teachyng, and iourneyng towardes Hierusalem.

23 Then sayde one vnto hym: Lorde, are there fewe that be saued? And he sayde vnto them:

24 Stryue [Note: [c] We muste endeouour to cut of all impedimentes yt let vs. ] to [Note: Math.xii.b. ] enter in at the strayte gate: for many I say vnto you, wyll seke to enter in, and shall not be able.

E

25 When the good man of the house is risen vp, and hath shut to the doore, and ye begyn to stande without, & to knocke at the doore, saying, Lorde, Lorde, open vnto vs: and he shall aunswere, and say vnto you, I knowe you not whence ye are.

26 Then shall ye begyn to say: We haue eaten and dronken in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streates.

27 And he shall say, I tell you, I knowe you not, whence ye are: depart from me all ye that worke iniquitie.

28 There shalbe weepyng & gnasshyng of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, and all the prophetes, in the kyngdome of God, and ye your selues thrust out.

29 [Note: Math.viii. b ] And they [Note: [d] The Getiles, whiche then were straungers. ] shall come from the east and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall syt downe in the kyngdome of God.

30 And beholde, [Note: Math.xix.d. ] there are last, which shalbe [Note: [e] That is, the Gentiles which beleue the Gospell, that were called after the Iewes. ] first: And there are first, which shalbe [Note: [f] the iewes which though

they had the lawe, yet refusyng ye Gosspele, are shut out. ] last.

31 The same day, came there certayne of the pharisees, and sayde vnto hym: Get thee out, and depart hence, for Herode wyll kyll thee.

32 And he sayde vnto them: Go ye, and tell that foxe, beholde, I cast out deuyls, & heale the people to day & to morowe, and the thirde day I shalbe perfected.

33 Neuerthelesse, I must walke to day and to morowe, and the day folowyng: For it can not be, that a prophete perishe any other where, saue at Hierusalem.

34 [Note: Mat.xxiii.d ] O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest prophetes, and stonest them that are sent vnto thee, howe often woulde I haue gathered thy children together, as a henne doth gather her young vnder her wynges, and ye woulde not?

35 Beholde, your [Note: [g] That is, the temple at Hierusalem shoulde be destroyed. ] house is left vnto you desolate. Ueryly I say to you, ye shall not see me, vntyll the tyme come that ye shall say, [Note: Math.xxi.b ] Blessed is he that commeth in the name of the Lorde.

[Page]

## The .xiiij. Chapter.

¶ 1 Christe eateth with the pharisee. 4 Healeth the dropsie on the Sabboth. 8 Teacheth humilitie. 12 To feast the poore. 15 Of the great Supper, 28 He warneth those that wyll folowe hym, to make their accomptes before, by the parable of the sower. 34 The salt of the earth.

A

1 < **And** it came to passe, that he went into the house of one of ye chiefe pharisees, to eate bread on the Sabboth day, & they watched hym.

2 And beholde, there was a certayne man before hym, which had the dropsie.

3 And Iesus aunswered, and spake vnto the lawyers & pharisees, saying: [Note: Math.xii a. Mark.iii.a. Luk.vi.a. ] Is it lawful to heale on the Sabboth day?

4 And they helde their peace. And he toke hym, & healed him, and let him go,

5 And aunswered them, saying: Which of you shal haue [Note: Exo.xxiii.a Deut.xxii a Math. xii.a. ] an asse or an oxe fallen into a pyt, and wyll not strayghtway pull hym out, on the Sabboth day?

6 And they coulde not aunswere hym agayne to these thynges.

B

7 He put foorth also a similitude to the ghestes, when he marked howe they chose out the chiefe rowmes, and sayde vnto them:

8 When thou art bydden of any man to a weddyng, syt not downe in the hiest rowme: lest a more honourable man then thou, be bydden of hym,

9 And he, that bad hym and thee, come, and say to thee, geue this man rowme: & thou then begyn with shame, to take the lowest rowme.

C

10 But when thou art bydden, go and syt in the lowest rowme, that when he that bad thee cometh, he may say vnto thee, [Note: Prou.xxv.a ] friende syt vp hyer: Then shalt thou haue worshyppe in the presence of them that syt at meate with thee.

11 [Note: Mat.xxiii b Luk.xviii.c ] For whosoeuer exalteth hym selfe, shalbe brought lowe: And he that humbleth hym selfe, shalbe exalted. >

12 Then sayde he also to hym that bad hym [to meate:] < When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friendes, nor thy brethren, neither thy kynsemen, nor thy ryche neyghbours, lest they also byd thee agayne, and a recompence be made thee.

13 But when thou makest a feast, call the poore, the feeble, the lame, & the blynde,

14 And thou shalt be happy, for they can not recompence thee: For thou shalt be recompenced at the resurrection of the iust [men.]

15 When one of them, that sate at meate also, hearde these thynges, he sayde vnto hym: Happy is he that eateth bread in the kyngdome of God. >

D

16 Then sayde he vnto hym. < [Note: Mat.xxii.a. Apoc.xix.b ] A certayne man ordayned a great supper, and bad many,

17 And sent his seruaunt at supper tyme, to say to them that were bydden, come, for all thynges are nowe redy.

18 And they all at once began to make excuse. The first sayde vnto hym: I haue bought a farme, & I must needes go & see it, I pray thee haue me excused.

19 And another sayde: I haue bought fiue yoke of oxen, and I go to proue them, I pray thee haue me excused.

20 And another sayde: I haue maryed a wyfe, and therefore I can not come.

E

21 And the seruaunt returned, & shewed his maister these thynges. Then was the good man of the house displeased, & sayde to his seruaunt: Go out quickly into the brode streates and lanes of the citie, and bryng in hyther the poore, and the feeble, and the halt, and the blynde.

22 And the seruaunt sayde: Lorde, it is done as thou hast commaunded, and yet there is rowme.

23 And the Lorde sayde to the seruaunt: Go out into the hye wayes & hedges, and [Note: Gen.xix.a. ] [Note: [a] By the power of Gods worde preached. ] compell them to come in, that my house may be fylled.

24 For I say vnto you, that none of those men which were bydden, shall taste of my supper. >

25 There went a great companie with hym: and he returned, and sayde vnto them,

F

26 < [Note: Math.x.d. Luk.ix.c. ] If any man come to me, and hate [Note: [b] We must cast away all affection and desyre that draweth vs from Christe. ] not his father and mother, and wyfe, and chyldren, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his owne lyfe also, he can not be my disciple.

27 And whosoeuer doth not beare his crosse, and come after me, can not be my disciple.

28 For which of you, disposed to buylde [Page] a towre, sitteth not downe before, and counteth the cost, whether he haue sufficient to perfourme it?

29 Lest after he hath layde the foundation, and is not able to perfourme it, all that beholde it, begyn to mocke hym,

30 Saying: this man began to buylde, and was not able to make an ende?

G

31 Or what kyng, goyng to make battell against another kyng, sitteth not downe first, and casteth in his mynde, whether he be able with ten thousande, to meete hym, that commeth agaynst hym with twentie thousande?

32 Or els, whyle the other is yet a great way of, he sendeth an imbassage, and desireth conditions of peace.

33 So lykewyse, whosoeuer he be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, he can not be my disciple. >

34 [Note: Math.v.d. Mark.ix.g. ] Salt is good, but if ye salt haue lost the saltnes, what shalbe seasoned therwith?

35 It is neither good for the lande, nor yet for the doung hyll: but men cast it out [at the doores.] He that hath eares to heare, let hym heare.

## ¶ The .xv. Chapter.

¶ 2 The pharisees murmure because Christe receaueth sinners. 4 The great mercie of God is set foorth in the parable of the lost sheepe, 8 and of the peece of siluer lost, 12 and of the prodigall sonne.

A

1 **Then** resorted vnto hym [Note: Math.ix.b. Mark.ii.b. Luk.v.f. ] all the publicanes and sinners, for to heare

hym.

2 And the pharisees & scribes murmured, saying: he receaueth sinners, and eateth with them.

3 But he put foorth this parable vnto them, saying:

4 [Note: Mat.xviii.b ] What man of you, hauyng an hundred sheepe, if he loose one of them, doth not leaue ninetie and nine in the wildernesse, and go after that which is lost, vntyll he fynde it?

5 And when he hath founde it, he layeth it on his shoulders with ioy:

6 And assoone as he commeth home, he calleth together his louers and neyghbours, saying vnto them: Reioyce with me, for I haue founde my sheepe which was lost.

B

7 I say vnto you, that lykewyse ioy shalbe in heauen ouer one sinner that repenteth, more then ouer ninetie and nine iust persons, which neede no repentaunce.

8 Either what woman, hauyng tenne peeces of siluer, [Note: One peece of this money, is somewhat more then fiue pence of olde sterlyng money. ] yf she loose one, doth not lyght a candle, and swepe the house, and seke diligently tyll she fynde it?

9 And when she hath founde it, she calleth her louers & her neyghbours together, saying: Reioyce with me, for I haue founde the peece which I had lost.

C

10 Lykewyse I say vnto you, shall there be ioy in the presence of the Angels of God, ouer one sinner that [Note: Luk.v.f. ] repenteth. >

11 < And he sayde. A certayne man had two sonnes:

12 And the younger of them sayde to his father: father, geue me the portion of the goodes, that to me belongeth. And he deuided vnto them his substaunce.

13 And not long after, when the younger sonne had gathered all that he had together, he toke his iourney into a farre countrey, and [Note: Pro.xxix.a ] there wasted his goodes with riotous luyyng.

14 And when he had spent all, there arose a great dearth in all that lande, and he began to lacke.

15 And he ioyned hym selfe to a citizen of that countrey: and he sent hym to his farme, to feede swyne.

16 And he woulde fayne haue fylled his belly with the coddles that the swyne dyd eate: and no man gaue vnto hym.

17 Then he came to hym selfe, and sayde: Howe many hyred seruauntes at my fathers house haue bread inough, and I perishe with hunger?

18 I wyll aryse, and go to my father, and wyll say vnto hym: Father, I haue sinned agaynst heauen, and

before thee,

19 And am no more worthy to be called thy sonne, make me as one of thy hyred seruauntes.

20 And he arose, and came to his father. [Note: Iob.xiii.c. Psa.xxxii.a ] But when he was yet a great way of, his father sawe him, & had compassion, and ranne, and fell on his necke, and kissed hym.

21 And the sonne sayde vnto him: Father, I haue sinned agaynst heauen, and in thy syght, and am no more worthy to be [Page] called thy sonne.

E

22 But the father saide to his seruauntes: bryng foorth the best garment, and put it on hym, and put a ryng on his hande, and shoes on his feete:

23 And bryng [hyther] that fat calfe, and kyll it, and let vs eate and be mery:

24 For this my sonne was dead, and is aliue agayne, he was lost, and is founde. And they began to be mery.

25 The elder brother was in the fielde: and when he came and drewe nye to the house, he hearde minstrelsie & daunsing,

26 And called one of his seruauntes, and asked, what those thynges meant.

27 And he sayde vnto hym: thy brother is come, and thy father hath kylled the fat calfe, because he hath receaued hym safe and sounde.

F

28 And he was angry, and woulde not go in: Therefore came his father out, and entreated hym.

29 He aunswered and sayde to his father: Lo, these many yeres haue I done thee seruice, neither brake I at any tyme thy commaundement, and yet thou neuer gauest me a kidde to make mery with my friendes:

G

30 But assoone as this thy sonne was come, which hath deuoured thy goodes with harlottes, thou hast for his pleasure kylled that fat calfe.

31 And he sayde vnto hym: Sonne, thou art euer with me, and all that I haue, is thyne,

32 It was meete that we shoulde make mery and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alyue agayne: and was lost, and is founde. >

## ¶ The .xvj. Chapter.

¶ 1 Christe exhorteth to liberalitie, by the example of the stewarde. 10 Who is a faythfull stewarde. 13 No



man can serue two maisters. 14 He reproueth the hypocrisie of those that iustifie them selues before men. 16 The ende and force of the lawe. 18 The state of mariage. 19 Of the riche glutton, & Lazarus. 29 Moyses & the prophetes to be hearde.

A

1 < **And** he sayde also vnto his disciples. There was a certayne riche man, which had a stewarde, and the same was accused vnto hym that he had wasted his goodes.

2 And he called hym, and sayde vnto hym: Howe is it, that I heare this of thee? Geue accomptes of thy stewardshyppe, for thou mayest be no longer stewarde.

3 The stewarde sayde within hymselfe: What shall I do, for my maister taketh away from me the stewardshyppe? I [Page] can not digge, & to begge I am ashamed.

4 I wote what to do, that when I am put out of the stewardshippe, they may receaue me into their houses.

B

5 So, whe he had called all his maisters detters together, he sayde vnto the first: Howe muche owest thou vnto my maister?

6 And he sayde, an hundreth measures of oyle. And he sayde vnto hym: Take thy byll, and syt downe quickly, and write fiftie.

7 Then sayde he to another: Howe much owest thou? And he sayde, an hundreth measures of wheate. He sayde vnto hym: Take thy byll, and write fourescore.

8 And the Lord commended [Note: [a] He speaketh after the common sort, not yt such vntruth is praiseworthy, but because it is thought wisdome in the eyes of the worlde. ] the vniuste stewarde, because he had done wisely. For the chyldren of this worlde are in their nation, wiser then the chyldren of lyght.

9 And I saye vnto you, make you [Note: [b] Laye vp your treasure in heauen. ] friends of the vnrighteous [Note: [c] Not that riches are euil of the selues, but that for the most part they be occasions of euyll. ] Mammo, that when ye shall haue neede, they may receaue you into euerlastyng [Note: [d] God for that cause shal receaue you vnto life euerlastyng, and rewarde your good doinges, not for ye worthines therof, but for his promise sake. ] habitations. >

C

10 < He that is faythfull in that which is least, is faythfull also in much. And he that is vnrighteous in the least, is vnrighteous also in much.

11 So then, yf ye haue not ben faythfull in the vnryghteous Mammon, who shall trust you in the true treasure?

12 And yf ye haue not ben faythfull in another mans businesse, who shall geue you that which is your owne?

13 [Note: Mark.vi.e. ] No man can serue two maisters: For either he shall hate the one, and loue the other: or els, he shall leane to the one, and despise the other. Ye can not serue God, and Mammon.

14 All these thynges heard the pharisees also, which were couetous, and they mocked hym.

D

15 And he sayde vnto them, Ye are they which iustifie your selues before men: but God knoweth your heartes. For that which is hyghly esteemed among men, is abhominable in the syght of God. >

16 [Note: Math.xi.b. ] The lawe & the prophetes [raigned] vntyll Iohn, and sence that tyme, the kyngdome of God is preached, & euery man stryueth to go in.

17 [Note: Esaias.xl.a Math.v.c. ] Easier is it for heauen and earth to perishe, the one title of the lawe to faile.

18 [Note: Math.xix.a Mark.x.b. ] Whosoeuer forsaketh his wyfe, and marieth another, committeth adulterie. And he that maryeth her that is deuorced from her husbände, committeth adulterie [also.]

E

19 < Ther was a certayne riche man, whiche was clothed in purple & fine whyte, and fared very deliciously euery day.

20 And there was a certayne begger, named Lazarus, which was layde at his gate full of sores:

21 And desiring to be refresshed with the crumbes which fell from ye riche mans boorde [And no man gaue vnto hym]: but the dogges came and licked his sores.

22 And it came to passe, that the begger dyed, and was caryed by the Angels into [Note: [e] the kingdome of heauen. ] Abrahams bosome. The riche man also dyed, and was buried.

F

23 And beyng in hell in tormentes, he lyft vp his eyes, and sawe Abraham a farre of, and Lazarus in his bosome,

24 And he cryed and sayde: father Abraham, haue mercie on me, and sende Lazarus that he may dippe the tippe of his fynger in water, and coole my tongue: for I am tormented in this flambe.

25 But Abraham sayde: Sonne, [Note: Galat.vi.a. ] remember that thou in thy lyfe tyme, receuedst thy pleasure, and lykewyse Lazarus paynes: But nowe is he comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 Beyonde all this, betweene vs & you there is a great gulfe set, so that they which woulde go from hence to you, can not, neither may come from thence to vs.

G

27 Then he sayde: I pray thee therfore father, sende hym to my fathers house.

28 For I haue fyue brethren, that he may witnesse vnto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham sayde vnto hym: they haue Moyses and the prophetes, let them heare them.

30 And he sayde, nay father Abraham: but yf one come vnto them from the dead, they wyll repent.

31 He sayde vnto hym: If they heare not Moyses & the prophetes, [Note: [f] we must seke for trueth in Gods worde, & not of the dead. ] neither wyll they beleue, though one rose from death agayne.

## The .xvij. Chapter.

¶ 2 Christe teacheth to auoyde offences. 3 One to forgeue another. 5 To pray for the increase of fayth. 10 We are but vnprofitable seruauntes, 12 Of the tenne lepers, 20 Of the commyng of the kyngdome of God. 23 Of false Christes. 10 The maner of Christes commyng.

A

1 **He** sayde vnto the disciples, it can not be but offences wyll come, neuerthelesse, [Note: Mat.xviii.a. Mark.ix.f. ] wo vnto hym, through whom they come.

2 It were better for hym, that a mylstone were hanged about his necke, & he cast into the sea, then that he shoulde [Note: [a] To geue occasio wherby any do turne from God, or his worde. ] offende one of these litle ones.

3 Take heede to your selues: [Note: Mat.xviii.c. Leuit.xix.d Eccle.ix.b. ] If thy brother trespasse agaynst thee, rebuke hym: and yf he repent, forgeue hym.

4 And though he sinne agaynst thee seuen tymes in a day, and seuen [Note: [b] That is, often or many tymes. ] tymes in a day turne agayne to thee, saying, it repenteth me: thou shalt forgeue hym.

5 And the Apostles sayde vnto the Lorde: increase our fayth.

B

6 And the Lorde sayde: [Note: Mat.xvii.d. and xxi.c. ] If ye had fayth [as much] as a grayne of mustarde seede, & should say vnto this Sycamine tree, plucke vp thy selfe by the rootes, and plant thy selfe in the sea, it shoulde obey you.

7 But which of you, hauyng a seruaunt plowyng, or feedyng cattell, woulde say vnto hym by & by when he were come from the fielde, go and syt downe at the table:

8 And woulde not rather say vnto hym, dresse, wherwith I may suppe, & gyrde vp thy selfe, and serue me, tyll I haue eaten and dronken, and afterward eate thou, and drynke thou?

9 Doth he thanke that seruaunt, because he dyd the thynges that were commaunded vnto hym? I trowe not.

10 So lykewyse ye, when ye haue done all those thynges which are commaunded you, say, We are vnprofitable seruauntes, We haue done that which was our duetie to do.

11 < And so it was, as he went to Hierusalem, that he passed through the myddest of Samaria and Galilee.

12 And as he entred into a certayne towne, there met hym ten men that were lepers, which stode a farre of,

13 And put forth their voyces, & sayde: Iesu maister, haue mercie on vs.

D

14 When he sawe them, he sayde vnto them: [Note: Leuit.xiii.a Math.viii.a ] Go shewe your selues vnto the [Note: [c] That is, the priestes of Moyses law, both that they myght iudge of the leprosie. Leuit.4. And also for yt they shoulde not murmure and grudge. ] priestes. And it came to passe, that as they went, they were censed.

15 And one of them, when he sawe that he was healed, turned backe [agayne] and with a loude voyce praised God:

16 And fell downe on his face at his feete, and gaue hym thanks: And the same was a Samaritane.

17 And Iesus aunswered, and sayde: Are there not ten censed? But where are those nine?

18 There are not founde that returned agayne, to geue God prayse, saue [only] this straunger.

19 And he sayde vnto hym: aryse, go thy way, thy fayth hath made thee whole.

E

20 < When he was demaunded of the pharisees, when the kyngdome of God shoulde come: he aunswered them, and sayde, The kyngdome of God shall not come with obseruation.

21 Neither shall they say, lo here, or lo there: For beholde, the kyngdome of God is [Note: [d] Yt can not be decteneth by any outwarde shewe. ] within you.

22 And he sayde vnto the disciples: the dayes wyll come, when ye shall desyre to see one [Note: [e] either because yt Gods worde was preached among them, or els, because that Christe was among the, who they thought was absent. ] day of the sonne of man, and ye shall not see it.

23 And they shall say to you, See here, see there: Go not after them, nor folowe them.

24 For as the lyghtnyng, that lyghtneth out of the one part that is vnder heauen, and shyneth vnto the other part which is vnder heauen: so shall the sonne of man be in his [Note: [f] Meanyng of his seconde commyng. ] daye, when he shall come with glory.

25 But first must he suffer many thynges, and be refused of this nation.

F

26 And as it was in the [Note: Gen.vii.b. ] dayes of Noe: so shall it be also in the dayes of the sonne of man.

27 They dyd eate, and drynke, they maryed wiues, and were maryed, euen vnto the same day that Noe went into the Arke: and the fludde came, & destroyed them all.

28 Lykewyse also as it was in the dayes of Lot: they dyd eate, they dranke, they [Page] bought, they solde, they planted, they buylded:

29 But euen the same day that Lot went out of Sodome, it rayned fire and brimstone from heauen, [Note: Gen.xix.f. ] and destroyed them all.

30 Euen thus shall it be, in the day when the sonne of man shalbe reuealed.

G

31 [Note: Math.24.b. ] At that day, he which is on the house [top,] and his stuffe in the house, let him not come downe to take it out: And let not him that is in the fielde, turne backe agayne lykewyse, to the thynges that he left behynde.

32 [Note: Gen.xix.f. ] Remember lottes wyfe.

33 [Note: Math.xvi.d Iohn.vi.d. Luk.ix.c. ] Whosoouer wyll go about to saue his lyfe, shall loose it: and whosoouer shall loose his lyfe, shall quicken it.

34 I tell you, in that nyght [Note: Math.24.d. ] there shalbe two in one bed, the one shalbe receaued, the other shalbe forsaken.

35 [Note: Math.24.d. ] Two [women] shalbe gryndyng together: the one shalbe receaued, and the other forsaken.

36 Two [men] shalbe in the fielde: the one shalbe receaued, & the other forsake.

37 And they aunswered, and sayde vnto hym: Where Lorde? He sayde vnto the: Whersoouer the body shalbe, thyther wyll also the Egles [Note: [g] That is, the faythfull that beleue the Gospel, wyll repayre vnto hym as rauennyng birdes to the carcass. ] be gathered together.

## ¶ The .xviij. Chapter.

¶ 2 Christe teacheth to continue in prayer, by the example of the wicked Iudge and the widdowe. 10 The prayers of the pharisee and the publicane. 16 To chyldren belongeth the kyngdome of God. 18 Of the way to saluation, 20 and what thynges hynder the reward promised to his seruauntes. 31 He foresheweth his death. 35 He restored a blynd man to his syght.

A

1 **And** he put foorth a parable vnto them, to this ende that me ought [Note: i Thess.v.d. ] alwayes to pray, & not to be [Note: [a] The greeke worde signifieth, not to shrinke backe, as cowardes, in warre or in daungers. ] weery,

2 Saying: There was in a certayne citie, a iudge, whiche feared not God, neither regarded man.

3 And there was a certayne widdowe in the same citie, and she came vnto him, saying: Auenge [Note: Or, do me iustice agaynst my aduersarie. ] me of mine aduersarie.

4 And he woulde not for a whyle. But afterwarde he sayde within hym selfe: Though I feare not God, nor care for man,

5 Yet because this widdowe [much] troubleth me, I wyll auenge [Note: Or, do her ryght. ] her: leste she come

at the last, & make me weery.

6 And the Lorde sayde: heare what the vuryghteous iudge sayeth.

7 And shall not God auenge his elect, which crye day and nyght vnto hym? yea, though [Note: [b] That is, although he seeme slowe in reuengyng their iniuries. ] he deferre them,

8 I tell you he wyll auenge them, and that quickly. > Neuertheless, when the sonne of man commeth, shall he fynde fayth on the earth?

9 < And he tolde this parable vnto certayne which trusted in them selues, that they were perfect, and despised other.

10 Two men went vp into the temple to pray: the one a pharisee, and the other a publicane.

C

11 The pharisee stode and prayed thus with hym selfe: God, I thanke thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, vniust, adulterers, or as this publicane.

12 I fast twise in the weeke, [Note: Deut.xvi.c. Eccle.vii.a. ] I geue tith of all that I possesse.

13 And the publicane standyng a farre of, woulde not lyft vp his eyes to heauen, but smote vpon his brest, saying: God be mercifull to me a sinner.

14 I tell you, this man departed [home] to his house iustified, rather then the other. [Note: Math.24.a. Luk.xiiii.c. ] For euery one that exalteth hym selfe, shalbe brought lowe: And he that humbleth hym selfe, shalbe exalted.

D

15 They brought vnto him also [Note: [c] The worde signifieth, suckyng babes. ] infantes that he should touch them: Which, whe his disciples sawe it, they rebuked the.

16 But Iesus, when he had called them [Note: [d] That is, those that cary the babes. ] vnto hym, saide, Suffer chylde [Note: Or sucking babes. ] to come vnto me, and forbyd them not: For of such [Note: [e] Both Infantes in age, and also in simplicitie & playnesse. ] is the kyngdome of God.

17 Ueryly I say vnto you: Whosoeuer receaueth not the kyngdome of God, as a [Note: [f] Laying aside al malice and pryde. ] chylde, shall not enter therin.

18 [Note: Mat.xviii a Mar.x.b. Mat.xix.b. ] And a certayne ruler asked hym, saying: Good maister, what ought I to do, to possesse eternall lyfe?

19 Iesus sayde vnto hym: Why callest [Page] thou me good? None is good, saue God onely.

20 Thou knowest the commaundementes: [Note: Exod.xx.c. Math.v.c. Deut.v.b. ] Thou shalt not commit adultrie, thou shalt not kyll, thou shalt not steale, thou shalt not beare false witnesse, honour thy father and thy mother.

21 And he sayde: all these haue I kept from my youth vp.

22 When Iesus hearde that, he sayde vnto hym: Yet lackest thou one thyng. [Note: Mat.xix.c. Mark.x.c. ] Sell all that thou hast, and distribute vnto the poore, & thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come, folowe me.

23 When he hearde this, he was very sory, for he was very riche.

E

24 When Iesus sawe that he was sory, he sayde: [Note: Math.xix.c. Mark.x.c. ] With what difficultie shall they that haue money, enter into the kyngdome of God?

25 For it is easier for a camel to go through a nedles eye, then for a riche man to enter into the kyngdome of God.

26 And they that hearde it, sayde: And who can then be saued?

27 And he sayde: [Note: Zach.viii.b. ] The thynges which are vnpossible wih men, are possible with God.

F

28 Then Peter sayde: [Note: Math.xix.c. Mark.viii.b ] Lo, we haue forsaken all, and folowed thee.

29 He sayde vnto them. Ueryly I say vnto you: there is no man that hath forsaken house, either father, or mother, either brethren, or wyfe, or chyldren, for the kyngdome of Gods sake.

30 Which shall not receaue much more in this worlde, and in the worlde to come, lyfe euerlastyng.

31 < Iesus toke vnto hym the twelue, and sayde vnto them: [Note: Mat.xvii.d. Mark.viii.d lx.d. & xc. Luk.ix.c. and .xvii.c. ] Beholde, we go vp to Hierusalem, and all thynges shalbe fulfilled to the sonne of man, that are written by the prophetes.

32 For he shalbe deliuered vnto the gentiles, and shalbe mocked, and spitefully entreated, and spitted on:

33 And when they haue scourged hym, they wyll put hym to death. [Note: Mat.xvi.d. and. xvii.b. Mark.ix.a. Luk.ii.g. and. ix.f. ] And the thyrde day he shall aryse agayne.

34 And they vnderstoode none of all these thynges. And this saying was hyd from them, so that they perceaued not the thynges which were spoken.

G

35 [Note: Math.xx.b. Mark.x.d. ] And it came to passe, that as he was come nie vnto Hierico, a certayne blynde man sate by the wayes syde, beggyng.

36 And when he hearde the people passe by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they sayde vnto hym, that Iesus of Nazareth passed by.

38 And he cryed, saying: Iesu thou sonne of Daudid, haue mercie on me.

39 And they which went before, rebuked hym, that he shoulde holde his peace: But he cryed so much the more, [Note: Mark.x.g. ] thou sonne of Daud, haue mercie on me.

40 And Iesus stode styll, & commaunded hym to be brought vnto hym. And whe he was come neare, he asked him,

41 Saying: What wylt thou that I do vnto thee? And he saide: Lorde, that I may receaue my syght.

42 And Iesus sayde vnto hym: receaue thy syght, thy fayth hath saued thee?

43 And immediatly he receaued his sight, and folowed hym, praysyng God: And all the people, when they sawe [it,] gaue prayse vnto God. >

## ¶ The .xix. Chapter.

¶ 2 Of Zacheus. 12 The ten peeces of money delyuered to the seruauntes. 28 Christ rydeth into Hierusalem, & weepyng ouer it, foresheweth the destruction therof. 45 He casteth byers and sellers out of the Temple.

A

1 **And** he entred in, and went through Hierico.

2 And beholde, there was a man named Zacheus, which was the chiefe among the publicanes, and was riche [also]:

3 And he sought [meanes] to see Iesus, what he shoulde be, & coulde not for the preasse, because he was litle of stature.

4 And he ran before, and clymed vp into a wylde fygge tree, to see hym: for he was to come that way.

5 And when Iesus came to the place, he loked vp and sawe hym, and sayde vnto hym: Zache, come downe at once, for to day I must abyde at thy house.

6 And he came downe hastyly, and [Note: Actes.xvi.g ] receaued hym ioyfully.

[Page]

7 And when they al saw it, they murmured, saying that he was gone in to tary with a man that is a synner.

B

8 And Zache stode foorth, and sayde vnto the Lorde: Beholde Lorde, the halfe of my goodes I geue to the poore, and yf I haue taken from any man by forged [Note: Or, false accusation. ] cauillation, I restore him foure folde.

9 Iesus sayde vnto hym: This daye is saluation come to this [Note: [a] That is to say, Zacheus famyly, & that by the meanes of the leage that God made to Abraham and his seede. ] house, because that he also is become the



childe of [Note: [b] To be the chylde of Abraham, is to be freely elect. Rom.9.3. & to continue in ye steppes of Abrahams faith Rom.4. and to do the workes of Abraham. Joh.8. ] Abraham.

10 For the sonne of man is come to seke, and to saue that which was lost. >

11 And as they hearde these thynges, he added & spake a parable, because he was nye to Hierusale, & because they thought that the kingdome of God should shortly appeare.

12 He sayde therfore: < [Note: Math.xx.b Mark.xiii.b ] A certayne noble man went into a farre countrey, to receaue for hym selfe a kyngdome, and to come agayne.

C  
13 And he called his ten seruauntes, & deliuered the ten peeces of money, saying vnto them, Occupie [Note: [c] God wyll not haue his seruaunts idle and his graces idle in them. ] tyl I [Note: [d] That is, tyll his second comyng whiche shalbe, when he commeth to iudgement. ] come.

14 But his citezins hated hym, and sent a message after hym, saying: We wyll not haue this man to raigne ouer vs.

15 And it came to passe, that whe he had receaued his kyngdome and returned, he commaunded these seruauntes to be called vnto him, to whom he had geuen the money, to wyt howe mucche euery man had done in occupying.

16 Then came the first, saying: Lorde thy peece hath gayned ten peeces.

17 And he sayde vnto hym: [Note: Mat.xxv.b ] Well thou good seruaunt, because thou hast ben faythfull in a very litle thing, haue thou auctoritie ouer ten cities.

18 And the seconde came, saying: Thy peece hath encreased fiue peeces.

19 And to the same he sayde, be thou also ruler ouer fyue cities.

D  
20 And another came, saying: Lorde beholde here is thy peece, whiche I haue layed vp in a napkin.

21 For I feared thee, because thou art a strayte man: Thou takest vp that thou laydest not downe, & reapest that thou dydest not sowe.

22 He sayth vnto hym: [Note: ii.Reg.i.c. Math.xii.d. ] Of thyne owne mouth wyll I iudge thee, thou euyll seruaunt. Knewest thou that I am a straitte man, taking vp that I layed not downe, & reapyng that I dyd not sowe:

23 And wherfore gauest not thou my money into the banke, and at my comyng I myght haue required myne owne with vauntage?

24 And he sayde vnto them that stode by: Take from hym that peece, and geue it to hym that hath ten peeces.

25 And they sayde vnto hym: Lorde he hath ten peeces.

26 For I say vnto you, that [Note: Math.xiii.b and .xxv.c. Mark.iiii.c. Luk.viii.c. ] vnto euery one which hath, shalbe geuen: and fro hym that hath not, shalbe taken away euen that he hath.

E

27 Moreouer, those mine enemies, which woulde not that I shoulde raigne ouer the, bring hyther, & slea them before me.

28 [Note: Math.xxi.c Mark.xi.a. ] And when he hadde thus spoken, he went fourth before, ascending vp to Hierusalem. >

29 [Note: Math.xxi a Mark.xi.a. ] And it came to passe, when he was come nye to Bethphage & Bethanie, besides the mount which is called Oliuet, he sent two of his disciples,

30 Saying: Go ye into the towne which is ouer agaynst you, into the whiche, assoone as ye are come, ye shall fynde a coult tyed, wheron yet neuer man sate: loose hym, and bryng hym hyther.

31 And yf any man aske you, why do ye loose hym, thus shall ye say vnto hym: because the Lorde hath neede of hym.

32 They that were sent, went their way, & founde euen as he had said vnto them.

33 And as they were a loosyng the coult, the owners therof said vnto them, why loose ye the coult?

34 And they sayde: For the Lorde hath neede of hym.

35 And they brought hym to Iesus, and cast their rayment on the coult, and set Iesus thereon.

36 And as he went, they spread their clothes in the way.

F

37 And when he was nowe come nye to the going downe of the mount Oliuete, the whole multitude of the disciples began to reioyce, and to prayse God with a loude voyce, for all the miracles that they had seene.

38 Saying: [Note: Math.xxi.b ] Blessed be the kyng that cometh in the name of the Lorde, peace in [Note: [e] That is, by Christ we are reconciled to God, and Gods wrath is pacified toward vs. ] heauen, and glory in the hiest.

39 And some of the Pharisees of the companie sayde vnto hym: Maister, rebuke thy disciples.

40 He saide vnto them: I tell you, that if [Page] these holde their peace, [Note: Abacuc.ii.c. ] then shall the stonnes crye.

41 < And when he was come neare, he behelde the citie, and [Note: Iohn.xi.a. ] wept on it.

42 Saying: If thou haddest knowen those thynges whiche belong vnto thy peace, euen in this thy day: But nowe are they hyd from thyne eyes.

43 For the dayes shall come vpon thee, [Note: Ierem. lii.a. Math. 24.a. ] that thyne enemies also shall caste a banke about thee, and compasse thee rounde, and kepe thee in on euery syde:

G

44 And make thee euen with ye grounde, and thy chyldren which are in thee: and [Note: Miche.iii.d. Mark.xiii.a Luk.xxi.a. ] they shall not leaue in thee one stone vpo another, because thou knowest not the tyme of thy visitation.

45 [Note: Math.xxi b Mark.xi.c. Iohn.ii.c. ] And he went into the temple, and began to cast out them that solde therin, & them that bought,

46 Saying vnto them, it is written: [Note: 4.Reg.8.d. Esaias.lvi.c Ierem.vii.c. ] My house is the house of prayer, but ye haue made it a denne of thieues.

47 And he taught dayly in the temple. > [Note: Iohn.vii.d Mark.xi.c. Luk.xx c. and .xxii.c. ] But the hye priestes and the scribes, & the chiefe of the people, went about to destroy hym,

48 And coude not fynde what to do: For all the people stacke by hym, when they hearde hym.

## ¶ The .xx. Chapter.

4 Christe stoppeth the pharisees mouthes with another question, 9 he sheweth their destructio by a parable of the vineyarde. 17 Christe the stone reprod, 19 the priestes seke to kyll hym. 22 Tribute to be payde. 25 Geue to Caesar, and to God, whiche to them belongeth. 27 He disputeth with Saducees of the resurrection. 41 Christe the sonne of Daud, 46 he describeth the scribes.

A

1 **And** it came to passe, that on one of those dayes, as he taught ye people in the temple, & preached the Gospell, the hie priestes and the scribes came vpo hym, with the elders.

2 And spake vnto him, saying: [Note: Math.xxii c Mark.xi.d. ] Tell vs by what auctoritie doest thou these thynges? Eyther who is he that gaue thee this auctoritie?

3 Iesus aunswered, & sayde vnto them: I also wyll aske you one thyng, & aunswere me.

4 The baptisme of [Note: [a] That is, the whole ministerie of Iohn. ] Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men?

5 And they reasoned within the selues, saying, Yf we say from heauen, he wyll say, why then beleued ye hym not?

6 But and yf we say of men, all the people wyll stone vs: For they be perswaded that Iohn is a prophete.

7 And they aunswered, that they coude not tell whence it was.

8 And Iesus saide vnto them: Neither tell I you by what auctoritie I do these thynges. >

B

9 [Note: Mat.xxi.d. Mark.xii.a. Esaias.v.a. Gene.ix.c. Ierem.vii.c ] Then began he to put foorth to the people this parable. < A certayne man planted a vineyarde, and let it foorth to husbände men, and went hym selfe into a straunge cuntry for a great season.

10 And when the time was come, he sent a seruaunt to the husbände men, that they shoulde geue hym of the fruite of the vineyarde. And they beat hym, and sent hym away emptie.

11 And agayne, he sent yet another seruaunt: and hym they did beate, and entreated hym shamefully, and sent hym away emptie.

12 Agayne, he sent the thirde also: and hym they wounded, and cast hym out.

13 Then said the Lord of the vineyarde: What shal I do? [Note: Iohn.iii.b. Rom. viii.a. Gala.iiii.a. ] I wyl send my deare sonne, it may be they wyll reuerence hym, when they see hym.

C

14 But when the husbände men sawe him, they reasoned within them selues, saying: This is the heyre, [Note: Gen.37.c. Math.xxi.d Mark.xii.a. ] come, let vs kyll hym, that the inheritaunce may be ours.

15 And they cast him out of the vineyard, and kylled hym. What shall the Lorde of the vineyarde therefore do vnto them?

16 He shall come and destroye these husbände men, & shall let out his vineyarde to other. When they hearde this, they sayde, God forbyd.

17 [Note: Psal.cxviii. ] And he behelde them, & sayde: What is this then that is written, The stone that [Note: [b] By the corner stone, he meaneth Christe hymself, who was refused of the Iewes. ] the buylders refused, the same is become the head of the corner.

18 Whosoeuer doth stumble vpon that stone, shalbe broken: but on whosoeuer it falleth, it wyll grinde hym to powder.

19 And the hie priestes & the scribes, the [Page] same houre went about to laye handes on hym: [Note: Math.xxi.d Mark.xi.c. Luk.xix. g. ] and they feared the people. For they perceaued that he had spoken this similitude agaynst them.

D

20 And they watched hym, & sent foorth spyes, which shoulde fayne them selues ryghteous men, [Note: Mat.xxii.b. Mark.xiii.b ] to take hym in his wordes, and to delyuer hym vnto the power and auctoritie of the deputie.

21 And they asked him, saying: Maister, we knowe that thou sayest and teachest ryght, neither considerest thou the outwarde appearaunce of any man, but teachest the way of God truely:

22 Is is lawfull for vs to geue tribute vnto Caesar, or no?

23 He perceaued their craftynesse, & saide vnto them: [Note: Mat.xxii.c. Mark.xii.b. ] why tempt ye me?

24 Shewe me a penie, whose image and superscription hath it? They aunswere and sayde, Caesars.

25 And he sayde vnto them: Geue then vnto Caesar, the thynges which belong vnto Caesar, and to God the thynges that perteyne vnto God.

26 And they coulde not reprove his saying before the people: and they marueyled at his aunswere, & helde their peace.

E

27 Then [Note: Mat.xxii.c. ] came to hym certayne of the saducees, [Note: Mark.xii.b. Act.xxiii.b ] which denie that there is any resurrection, and they asked hym,

28 Saying: [Note: Deut.xxv b ] Maister, Moyses wrote vnto vs, yf any mans brother dye, hauyng a wyfe, and he dye without chyldren: that then his brother shoulde take his wyfe, & rayse vp seede vnto his brother.

29 There were therefore seuen brethren, and the first toke a wyfe, & dyed without chyldren.

30 And the seconde toke her, and he dyed chyldlesse.

31 And the thirde toke her, & in lykewise the residue of the seuen, and left no chyldren behynde them, and dyed.

32 Last of all, the woman dyed also.

33 Nowe in the resurrection, whose wife of them shall she be? For seuen had her to wyfe.

F

34 Iesus aunswere and saide vnto the: The chyldren of this [Note: [c] That is, all yt remayne in the world, and are abydyng therin. ] worlde marrye wyues, and are marryed:

35 But they which shalbe counted worthy to enioy that worlde, and the resurrection from the dead, do not marrye wyues, neither are marryed,

36 Nor yet can dye any more: For they are equall vnto the angels, and are [Note: Iohn.iii.a. i.Iohn.i.b. ] the sonnes of God, inasmuche as they are chyldren of the resurrection.

37 And that the dead shall ryse agayne, Moyses also sheweth besides the bushe, when he calleth the Lorde [Note: Exod.iii.c. Mat.xxii.c. Mark.xii.c. ] the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, & the God of Iacob.

38 For he is not a God of dead, but of lyuyng: For all lyue vnto hym.

39 Then certayne of the pharisees aunswere, and sayde? Maister, thou hast well sayde.

40 And after that, durst they not aske him any question at all.

G

41 And he sayde vnto them: [Note: Mat.xxii.d Mark.xii.d. ] Howe saye they that Christe is Dauids sonne:

42 And Daudid hym selfe sayeth in the booke of the psalmes: [Note: Psal cx. a. ] The Lord saide to my Lord, syt thou on my right hand,

43 Tyll I make thine enemies thy footestoole?

44 Daudid therefore calleth hym Lorde, & howe is he then his [Note: [d] For the sonne is not lord ouer his father, & therefore it foloweth yt Christe is God. ] sonne?

45 Then in the audience of all the people, he saide vnto his disciples.

46 [Note: Mat.xxiiii a Mark.xii.d. ] Beware of the scribes, whiche wyll go in long robes, and loue greetinges in the markets, and the hiest seates in the synagogues, and the chiefe rowmes at feastes:

47 Which deuour widowes howses vnder colour of longe prayers: The same shall receaue greater dampnation.

## ¶ The .xxj. Chapter.

2 The liberalitie of the poore wydowe. 6 He forewarneth of the destruction of Hierusalem, 8 of false teachers, 9 of tokens & troubles to come, 27 of the ende of the worlde, 34 of ryot and dronkenesse, 36 he taught in the temple.

A

1 As he beheld, [Note: Mark.xii.d. ] he sawe the ryche men whiche caste their gyftes into the treasurie.

2 He saw also a certaine poore wydowe, which caste in thyther two unites.

3 And he sayde, Of a trueth I say vnto you, [Note: i.Cor.viii.c. ] that this poore wydowe hath put in more then they all.

4 For they all haue of their superfluitie added vnto the offerynges of God: but she of her penurie hath cast in al the substaunce that she had.

[Page]

5 And vnto some, that spake of the temple, howe it was garnished with goodlie stones and gyftes, he sayde.

6 Are these the thynges whiche ye loke vpo? [Note: Math.24.c. Mark.xiii.a ] The dayes wyll come, in ye which there shall not be left one stone vpo another, that shall not be throwen downe.

7 And they asked him, saying: Maister when shall these thynges be? and what signe wyll there be, when these thynges shall come to passe?

B

8 And he sayde: [Note: Coloss.ii.b. Ephe.v.b. i.Ioh.iiii.a. ] Take heede, that ye be not deceaued. For many shall come in my name, saying I am Christe, and the tyme draweth neare. Folowe ye them not therfore.

9 But when ye heare of warres, and seditios, be not afraide: For these thinges must first come to passe, but the ende foloweth not by and by.

10 Then sayde he vnto them: [Note: Esaias.xix.a 4.Esd.xiii.c ] Nation shall ryse agaynst nation, & kyngdome agaynst kyngdome.

11 And great earthquakes shalbe in diuers places, and hunger, and pestilence, and fearefull thynges, and great signes shall there be from heauen.

C  
12 But before all these, [Note: Math.x.b. Mark.xiii.b Iohn.xvi.a. ] they shall laye their handes on you, and persecute you, deliuryng you vp to the synagogues, & into prisons, and shall bryng you vnto kynges and rulers for my names sake.

13 And it shall turne to you for a testimoniall.

14 Be at a sure poynt therefore in your heartes, not to studie before what ye shall aunswere:

15 For [Note: Exod.iiii.b. Math. x.c. ] I wyll geue you a mouth, and wysedome, where agaynst, all your aduersaries shall not be able to speake nor resist.

16 [Note: Actes.vi.c. Mich. vii.b. ] Yea ye shalbe betrayed also of your parentes, and brethren, and kynsfolke, and friendes, and [some] of you shal they put to death.

17 And hated shal ye be of all men for my names sake.

18 And there shall not one heere of your head peryshe.

D  
19 Possesse ye your soule by [Note: [a] Those possesse their soules in pacience, vnto whom God geueth a ioyful minde vnder the crosse, euen vnto the ende. ] patience.

20 And whe ye see Hierusalem besieged with an hoast, then be sure that the desolation of the same is nye.

21 Then let them which are in Iurie, flee to the mountaynes, and let them which are in the myddes of it, depart out: and let not them that are in other countreys enter therin.

22 For these be the dayes of vengeance, that all thinges which are written, may be fulfilled.

23 But wo vnto the that are with childe, & to them that geue sucke in those days: For there shalbe great distresse in the lande, and [Note: i.Thes.ii.d. ] wrath ouer this people.

24 And they shall fall through the edge of the sworde, and shalbe led away captiue into all nations: And Hierusalem shalbe troden downe of the gentiles, vntyll the tyme of the gentiles be fulfilled.

E

25 < [Note: Math.24.c. Mark.xiii.c. Ioel.ii.c. Ezech.28.f. ] And there shalbe signes in the sunne and in the moone, & in the starres: and vpon the earth trouble among the nations, with perplexitie. The sea and the water shall rore.

26 And mens heartes shal fayle them for feare, and for loking after those thinges which shall come on the world: For the powers of heauen shalbe shaken.

27 And then shall they see the sonne of man come in a cloude, with power and great glorie.

28 And when these thynges begyn to come to passe, then loke vp, and lyft vp your heades, for your redemptio draweth nye.

F

29 [Note: Math.24.c. Mark.xiii.c. ] And he shewed them a similitude: Behold the figge tree, & all the trees.

30 When they shoote foorth [their buddes] ye see and knowe of your owne selues that sommer is then nye at hande.

31 So likewise ye, when ye see these thinges come to passe, be ye sure that the kyngdome of God is nye.

32 Ueryly I say vnto you, this generation shall not passe, tyll all be fulfilled.

G

33 Heauen and earth shall passe, but my wordes shall not passe. >

34 < [Note: Ecclesi.31.c. & .xxxvii.d. Rom.xiii.d. ] Take heede to your selues, lest at any tyme your heartes be ouercome with surfettyng and dronkenesse, and cares of this lyfe, and so the daye come vpon you vnwares.

35 For as a snare shall it come on al them that dwell on the face of ye whole earth.

36 [Note: Math.24.d. Mark.xiii.d. ] Watche ye therefore, and pray continually, that ye may be accompted worthy to escape all these thinges yt shall come, & that ye may stand before ye sonne of man.

37 In the day time he taught in the temple: and at nyght he went out, & abode in the mount that is called Oliuete.

38 [Note: Iohn.viii.a. ] And all the people came in ye mornyng to hym in the temple, for to heare hym.

[Page]

## ¶ The .xxij. Chapter.

4 Iudas selleth Christe. 7 They eate the Passouer. 19 The institution of the Lordes supper. 24 They stryue who shoulde be greatest. 31 Satan tempteth them. 42 Christe prayeth in the mount, and sweateth blood. 47 Iudas betrayeth him with a kisse. 51 Christe setteth on Malchus eare. 60 Peter denieth Christe thrise,



and repenteth hym. 67 Christe is mocked, and confesseth hym selfe to be the sonne of God.

A

1 **The** [Note: Mat.xxvi.a Mar.xiiii.a. Iohn.vii.d. ] feast of sweete breade drewe nye, which is called the Passouer.

2 And ye hie priestes and scribes sought howe they myght kyll hym, for they feared the people.

3 [Note: Ioh.xiii.c. ] Then entred Satan into Iudas, whose sirname was Iscariot, whiche was of the number of the twelue.

4 And he went his waye, and communed with the hie priestes and officers, howe he myght betray him vnto them.

5 And they were glad, and promised to geue him money.

6 And he consented, and sought oportunitie to betray him vnto them, when the people were away.

7 [Note: Mat xxvi.c Mar.xiiii.b. ] Then came the day of sweete breade, when [of necessitie] the Passouer must be offered.

B

8 And he sent Peter and Iohn, saying: Go and prepare vs the Passouer, that we may eate.

9 They sayde vnto hym: Where wylt thou that we prepare?

10 And he sayde vnto them: Beholde, when ye enter into the citie, there shall a man meete you, bearyng a pitcher of water, hym folowe into the same house that he entreth in.

11 And ye shall say vnto the good man of the house, the maister saith vnto thee, where is the ghest chamber, where I shall eate ye Passouer with my disciples?

12 And he shal shew you an vpper chamber prepared, there make redye.

13 And they went, and founde as he had sayde vnto them: and they made redye the Passouer.

14 [Note: Math.26. b. Mar.xiiii.c. ] And when the houre was come, he sate downe, & the twelue apostles with hym.

15 And he sayde vnto them: I haue earnestly desired to eate this Passouer with you, before that I suffer.

16 For I saye vnto you, hencefoorth I wyll not eate of it any more, vntyll it be fulfilled in the kyngdome of God.

17 And he toke the cuppe, & gaue thankes, and sayde, Take this, and deuide it aamong you:

18 For I say vnto you, I wyll not drinke of the fruite of the vine, vntyll the kyngdome of God come.

C

19 [Note: Mat.xxvi.c. Mar.xiii.c. i.Cor.xi.c. ] And he toke bread, and when he had geue thankes, he brake [it] and gaue vnto the, saying, This is my body, which is geuen for you: This do in the remembraunce of me.

20 Lykewise also, when he had supped, he toke the cuppe, saying: This cuppe is the new testamet in my blood, which is shed for you.

21 Yet beholde, the hande of hym that betrayeth me, is with me on the table.

22 And truely the sonne of man goeth as it is appoynted: but wo vnto that man by whom he is betrayed.

23 And they began to enquire among them selues, which of them it was that shoulde do it.

24 < And there was a stryfe among the, which of them shoulde seeme to be the greatest.

25 And he saide vnto them: The kinges of nations raigne ouer them, and they that haue auctoritie vpo them, are called gracious Lordes.

26 But ye shall not be so. [Note: Math.xx.d ] But he that is greatest among you, shalbe as the younger, and he that is chiefe, shalbe as he that doth minister.

27 For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meate, or he that serueth? Is not he that sitteth at meate? But I am among you, as he that ministreth.

28 Ye are they, which haue bydden with me in my temptations.

29 And I appoynt vnto you a kingdome, as my father hath appoynted vnto me.

[Page]

30 That ye may eate and drynke at my table in my kyngdome, [Note: Mat.xix.d. ] & sit on seates iudgyng the twelue tribes of Israel. >

31 And the Lord saide: Simon, Simon, beholde Satan hath desired to sift you, as it were wheate:

32 But I haue prayed for thee, that thy fayth fayle not: And when thou art couerted, strength thy brethren.  
D

33 And he sayde vnto him: [Note: Mat. xxvi.c Mar. xiii c. Iohn. xiii.d. ] Lord I am redy to go with thee into pryson, and to death.

34 And he sayde: I tell thee Peter, the Cocke shal not crowe this day, tyll thou hast thryse denyed that thou knewest me.

35 And he said vnto them: [Note: Math.x.c. Mark.vi.b. Luk.ix.a. ] When I sent you without wallet, and scrippe, and shoes, lacked ye any thyng? And they sayde, no.

36 Then saide he vnto them: But nowe he that hath a wallet, let him take it vp, and lykewyse his scrippe: and he that hath none, let him sell his coate, and bye a sworde.

37 For I say vnto you, that yet the same whiche is written, must be perfourmed in me: [Note: Esaias.liiii.b. Math.27.b. Mark.xv.c. Ioh.xviii.f. ] Euen among the wicked was he reputed. For those thynges whiche are written of me, haue an ende.

38 And they sayde: Lorde, beholde here are two swordes. And he sayde vnto them, it is enough.

39 [Note: Mat.xxvi.c Mar.xiiii.c. ] And he came out, and went as he was wont, to mount Oliuete: and the disciples folowed hym.

40 And when he came to the place, he sayde vnto them: [Note: Math.vi.b. Luk.xi a. ] pray, lest ye fall into temptation.

E

41 [Note: Mat.xxvi d ] And he gate hym selfe from them about a stonys caste, and kneeled downe, and prayed,

42 Saying: Father, yf thou wylt, remoue this cuppe from me. Neuerthelesse, [Note: Iohn.vi.d. ] not my wyl, but thine be fulfilled.

43 And there appeared an angell vnto hym from heauen, comfortyng hym.

44 And he was in an [Note: [a] He felt the horroure of Gods wrath & iudgement agaynst sinne. ] agonie, and he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was lyke droppes of blood, tricklyng downe to the grounde.

45 And when he rose vp from prayer, and was come to his disciples, he founde the slepyng for heauynesse,

46 And sayde vnto them, why slepe ye? Rise, & pray lest ye fall into temptation.

47 [Note: Mat.xxvi.c Mar.xiiii.b. ] Whyle he yet spake, behold [there came] a company, and he that was called Iudas, one of the twelue, went before the, & preassed nye vnto Iesus to kisse hym.

48 But Iesus sayde vnto hym: Iudas, betrayest thou the sonne of man with a kisse?

49 When they whiche were about hym sawe what woulde folowe, they sayde vnto hym: Lorde, shall we smyte with sworde?

50 [Note: Mat.xxvi.c Mar. xiiii.f. Iohn.xviii b ] And one of them smote a seruaunt of the hie priest, & stroke of his right eare.

51 Iesus aunswered and saide, Suffer ye thus farre foorth. And whe he touched his eare, he healed hym.

F

52 Then Iesus said vnto the hie priestes and rulers of the temple, and the elders which were come to hym: Be ye come out as vnto a thiefe, with swordes and stauers?

53 When I was dayly with you in the temple, ye stretched foorth no handes agaynst me: But this is euen

your very houre, and the power of darknesse.

54 Then toke they hym, and ledde hym, & brought him to the hye priestes house: and Peter folowed a farre of.

55 And when they had kyndeled a fire in the myddes of the hall, and were set downe together, [Note: Mat.xxvi.c Mar.xiiii.f. Ioh. xviii.c. ] Peter also sate downe among them.

56 But when a certayne wenche behelde hym, as he sate by the fire [and earnestlye loked vpon hym] she sayde: This same felowe was also with hym.

57 [Note: Mat.xxvi.c Mark.xiiii c ] And he denyed hym, saying, woman I knowe hym not.

58 And after a litle whyle, another sawe hym, and saide: Thou art also of them. And Peter sayd, man I am not.

59 And about the space of an houre after, an other affirmed saying: Ueryly this felowe was with hym also, for he is of Galilee.

60 And Peter sayde: Man I wote not what thou sayest. And immediatlye whyle he yet spake, the Cocke crewe.

61 And the Lorde turned backe, & loked vpon Peter: [Note: Luk.xxii.c. Mat.xxvi.c Mark.xiiii c ] And Peter remembred the worde of the Lorde, howe he hadde sayde vnto hym, before the Cocke crowe thou shalt denie me thrise.

62 And Peter went out, & wept bitterlye.

G

63 And the men that helde Iesus, mocked hym, and smote hym.

64 And when they had blindfolded him, they stroke hym on the face, and asked [Page] him, saying: Arede, who is it that smote thee?

G

65 And many other things blasphemouslye spake they against hym.

66 And assoone as it was day, the elders of the people, and the hye priestes, and scribes, came together, and led hym into their counsell, saying:

67 Art thou [very] Christe, tell vs? And he sayde vnto them: If I tell you, you wyll not beleue:

68 And if I aske you, you wyll not aunswere me, nor let me go.

69 [Note: Mat.xxvi.f Mar xiiii.g. ] Hereafter shall the sonne of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.

70 Then said they all: Art thou then the sonne of God? He sayde: Ye say yt I am.

71 And they sayd? [Note: Mat xxvi g Mar.xiii.g. ] What neede we any further witsesse? For we our selues haue hearde of his owne mouth.

## The .xxiii. Chapter.

1 Iesus is accused before Pilate, and is sent to Herode. 8 Herode mocketh hym. 25 Barabas is set at libertie, and Iesus geuen to be crucified. 26 Simon of Cyrene. 27 The women lament Christe crucified, 34 he prayeth for his enemies. 40 One of the thieues rayleth on hym, 41 and the other is saued by fayth. 46 He geueth vp the ghost, and is buryed.

A

1 **And** [Note: Math.26.a. Mark.xv.a. Iohn.xviii.c ] the whole multitude of them arose, & led hym vnto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse hym, saying: We founde this felow peruerting the people, and forbyddyng to paye tribute to Ceasar, saying that he is Christe, a kyng.

3 And Pilate apposed hym, saying: Art thou the kyng of the Iewes? He aunswered hym, and sayde: Thou sayest it.

4 Then saide Pilate to the hye priestes, and to the people: I finde no fault in this man.

5 And they were the more fierce, saying: He moueth the people, teaching thorowout al Iurie, and began at Galilee, euen to this place.

6 When Pilate hearde [mention] of Galilee, he asked whether the man were of Galilee.

B

7 [Note: Luke.iii.a. ] And assoone as he knewe that he belonged vnto Herodes iurisdiction, he sent hym to Herode, whiche was also at Hierusalem at that tyme.

8 And when Herode sawe Iesus, he was exceeding glad: For he was desirous to see hym of a long season, because he had hearde many thinges of hym, and he trusted to haue seene some miracle done by hym.

9 Then he questioned with hym many wordes: But he aunswered hym nothing.

10 The hye priestes and scribes stode foorth, and accused hym straytely.

11 And Herode with his men of warre despised him: and when he had mocked hym, he arayed hym in whyte clothing, and sent hym agayne to Pilate.

12 [Note: Actes. iiii.a. ] And the same day Pilate and Herode were made friendes together: For before they were at variaunce.

13 And Pilate called together the hye priestes, and the rulers, and the people,

C

14 And said vnto them: Ye haue brought this man vnto me, as one yt peruerteth the people: and behold, I examine him before you, & finde no fault in this man of those thinges wherof ye accuse hym:

15 No, nor yet Herode: For I sent you to hym, and loe nothing worthy of death is done to hym.

16 I wyll therefore chasten hym, and let hym loose.

17 [Note: Math.27 d. Mark.xv.a. Ioh.xviii.a. ] For of necessitie he must haue let one loose vnto them at the feast.

18 And all the people cryed at once, saying: Away with him, and deliuer to vs Barabbas.

19 Which for a certaine insurrection made in the citie, and for murther, was cast in pryson.

20 Pilate spake agayne to them, wylling to let Iesus loose.

21 But they cryed, saying: Crucifie hym, crucifie hym.

22 He sayde vnto them the thirde tyme: What euyll hath he done? I finde no cause of death in hym, I wyll therefore chasten hym, and let hym go.

23 [Note: Math.27.c. Mark.xv.a. Iohn.xix.a. ] And they were instant with loude voyces, requiring that he might be crucified. And the voyces of them, and of the hye priestes preuayled.

24 And Pilate gaue sentence, that it should be as they required.

[Page] c

25 [Note: Mat. 27.c. Mark.xv.a. ] And he let loose vnto them, him that for insurrection and murther was caste into prison, whom they had desired, & he deliuered [vnto them] Iesus, to do with hym what they woulde.

26 [Note: Mat. 27.c. Mark.xv.b. ] And as they ledde hym away, they caught one Simon of Cyrene comming out of the field, and on hym layde they the crosse, that he myght beare it after Iesus.

27 And there folowed hym a great companie of people, and of women, [Note: Luke.viii.a. ] which bewayled and lamented hym.

28 But Iesus turned backe vnto them, and sayde: [Ye] daughters of Hierusalem, wepe not for me, but wepe for your selues, and for your chyldren:

29 For beholde, the dayes wyll come, in the which they shal say [Note: Esai.liiii.a. Sapi.iii c. Galat.iiii.d. ] : Happy are the barren, & the wombes that neuer bare, & the pappes which neuer gaue sucke.

30 Then shall they begin to say to the mountaynes, fall on vs, & to the hylles, couer vs.

31 For if they do these thinges in a greene tree, what shalbe done in the drye?

32 And there were two euyl doers, led with hym to be slayne.

33 [Note: Mat.27.d. Mark.xv.c. Iohn.xix.d. ] And after that they were come to the place whiche is called Caluarie, there they crucified hym, and the euyl doers, one on the right hand, and the other on the left.

34 Then said Iesus, Father forgeue the, for they wote not what they do. [Note: Mat.xvii.d. Mark.xv.c. Psal.xxi.d. ] And they parted his rayment, & cast lottes.

D  
35 And the people stode, and behelde: and the rulers mocked him with them, saying: He saued other [men] let hym saue him selfe, if he be very Christe the chosen of God.

36 The souldiours also mocked him, and came and offred him vineger,

37 And sayd: If thou be the kyng of the Iewes, saue thy selfe.

38 [Note: Mat 27 b. Iohn.xix.d. ] And a superscription was written ouer him, with letters of greke, and latin, and hebrue, This is the king of the Iewes.

39 And one of the euyl doers whiche were hanged, rayled on hym, saying: If thou be Christe, saue thy self and vs.

40 But the other aunswered, and [Note: Mat.xxvii.c. Mark.xv.c. ] rebuked hym, saying: Fearest thou not God, seing thou art in the same dampnation?

41 We are righteously [punished] for we receaue according to our deedes: But this man hath done nothing amisse.

42 And he sayde vnto Iesus: Lorde, remember me, when thou comest into thy kyngdome.

43 And Iesus sayde vnto hym: Ueryly I say vnto thee, to day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

44 [Note: Mat.27.c. Mark.xv.c. ] And it was about the sixth houre: and there was a darknesse ouer al the earth vntyll the ninth houre.

45 And the sunne was darkned, [Note: Mat.27.f. Mark xv.d. ] and the vayle of the temple dyd rent, euen thorowe the middes.

46 And when Iesus had cryed with a loude voyce, he sayde: Father into thy handes I commende my spirite. And when he thus had sayde, he gaue vp the ghost.

47 [Note: Mat.27.f. Mark.xv.d. ] When the Centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying: Ueryly this was a righteous man.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, & sawe the thinges whiche were done, smote their brestes, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintaunce, [Note: Mat.27.f. Mark.xv.d. ] and the women that folowed him from Galilee stode a farre of, beholding these thinges.

E

50 And beholde, [Note: Mat.27.g. Mark.xv.d. Iohn.xix.g. ] there was a man named Ioseph, a counsellour, and he was a good man and a iust:

51 The same had not consented to the counsell and deede of them, which was of Aramathia a citie of the Iewes, whiche same also wayted for the kyngdome of God.

52 He went vnto Pilate, and begged the body of Iesus,

53 And toke it downe, and wrapped it in a linnen cloth, and layde it in a sepulchre that was hewen in stone, wherin neuer man before was layde. >

54 And that day was the preparing of the Sabbath, & the Sabbath drew on.

55 The women that folowed after, whiche had come with hym from Galilee, behelde the sepulchre, and how his body was layde.

56 And they returned, and prepared sweete odours and oyntmentes: but rested the Sabbath day, according to the commaundement.

[Page]

## The .xxiii. Chapter.

1 The women come to the sepulchre, 9 they shewe to the Apostles that which the angels tolde them. 13 Christe appeareth to the two Disciples that went to Emaus, and interpreteth the Scriptures. 16 He appeareth to the Apostles, and reproueth their incredulitie. 49 He promiseth the holy ghost, and geueth them their charge 51 He ascendeth into heauen.

A

1 [Note: Mat. 28.a. Mar.xvi.a. Iohn.xx.a. ] < **But** vpon the first day of the Sabbathes, [very] early in the mornyng, they came vnto the sepulchre, & brought ye sweete odours which they had prepared, and other women with them.

2 And they founde the stone rolled away from the sepulchre,

3 And they went in: but founde not the body of the Lorde Iesu.

4 And it came to passe, as they were amased therat: Beholde, two men stode by them in shynyng garmentes.

5 [Note: Mat.28 a. Mar.xvi.a. ] And as they were afrayde, and bowed downe their faces to the earth, they said



vnto them: Why seeke ye the lyuyng among the dead?

6 He is not here, but is risen: Remember howe he spake vnto you, when he was yet in Galilee,

B

7 Saying: that the sonne of man must be deliuered into the handes of sinfull men, and be crucified, and the thirde day rise agayne.

8 And they remembred his wordes,

9 And returned from the sepulchre, and tolde all these thinges vnto those eleuen, and to all the remnaunt.

10 [Note: Mat.28.c. Mar.xvi.c. ] It was Marie Magdalene, and Ioanna, and Marie Iacobi, and other that were with them, which tolde these thinges vnto the Apostles.

11 And their wordes seemed vnto them fayned thynges, neither beleued they them.

12 Then arose Peter, and ran vnto the sepulchre, and loked in, and sawe the linnen clothes layde by them selues, and departed, wondryng in him selfe at that which was come to passe. >

13 < [Note: Mar.xvi.c. ] And beholde, two of them went that same day to a towne called Emaus, which was from Hierusalem about threescore [Note: [a] That is, seuen miles & a halfe. ] furlonges.

14 And they talked together of all these thynges that were done.

15 And it came to passe, that whyle they communed together & reasoned, Iesus him selfe drewe neare, [Note: Mat.xviii.c ] and went with them.

C

16 But their eyes were holden, that they shoulde not knowe him.

17 And he sayde vnto them: What maner of communications are these that ye haue one to another as ye walke, and are sad?

18 And the one of them, whose name was Cleophas, aunswered, and sayde to him: Art thou only a straunger in Hierusalem, & hast not knowen the thinges which are come to passe there, in these dayes?

19 He sayde vnto them: what thynges? And they sayde vnto him: Of Iesus of Nazareth, whiche was a prophete, mightie in deede and worde before God and all the people:

20 And howe the hye priestes, and our rulers deliuered him to be condempned to death, and haue crucified him.

21 But we trusted that it had ben he which shoulde haue redeemed Israel: And as touchyng all these thynges, to day is euen the thirde day, that they were done.

22 [Note: Luk.24.c. Iohn.xx.a. ] Yea, and certayne women also of our companie made vs astonied, which came early vnto the sepulchre,

23 And founde not his body, and came, saying that they had seene a vision of angels, which sayde that he was alyue.

24 And certayne of them which were with vs, went to the sepulchre, & founde it euen so as the women had sayde: but hym they sawe not.

25 And he sayde vnto them: O fooles and slowe of heart, to beleue all that the prophetes haue spoken.

26 [Note: Mat xxvi.c Esai. liii.c. ] Ought not Christe to haue suffered these thinges, & to enter into his glory?

27 And he began at Moyses, and all the prophetes, and interpreted vnto them in all Scriptures which were writen of hym.

28 And they drewe nye vnto the towne which they went vnto, and he made as though he would haue gone further.

29 And they [Note: Gen xix.a Luk.24.c. ] constrayned hym, saying: [Page] abyde with vs, for it draweth towarde nyght, and the day is farre passed. And he went in to tary with them.

30 [Note: Mark.xv.b. ] And it came to passe, as he sate at meate with them, he toke bread, and [Note: [b] This word blessed, signifieth here nothyng els, but to geue thankes, as appeareth by diuers places of scripture. Luk. xxij. ] blessed it, and brake, and gaue to them.

31 And their eyes were opened, and they knewe him: and he vanished out of their syght.

32 And they sayde betweene them selues: Dyd not our heartes burne within vs, whyle he talked with vs by the way, and opened vnto vs the scriptures?

33 And they rose vp the same houre, and returned [agayne] to Hierusalem, and founde the eleuen gathered together, and them that were with them,

34 Saying: The Lorde is rysen in deede, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 And they tolde what thynges were done in the way, and howe they knewe him in breakyng of bread. >  
D

36 And as they thus spake, Iesus him selfe stode in the [Note: Iohn.xx.c. ] middes of them, and saith vnto them: Peace be vnto you.

37 But they were abasshed and afrayde, & supposed that they had seene a spirite.

38 And he sayde vnto them: Why are ye troubled, and why do thoughtes arise in your heartes?

39 Beholde my handes and my feete, that it is euen I my selfe: Handle me and see, for a spirite hath not fleshe and bones, as ye see me haue.

40 And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them his handes and his feete.

41 And whyle they yet beleued not for ioy, and wondred, he sayde vnto them: [Note: Iohn.xx.b. ] Haue ye heare any meate?

42 And they offered him a peece of a broyled fishe, and of an hony combe.

43 And he toke it, and dyd eate before them.

44 And he sayde vnto them: [Note: Mat.xvi.c. ] These are the wordes which I spake vnto you, whyle I was yet with you, that all must [needes] be fulfilled, which were written of me in the law of Moyses, and in the prophetes, and in the psalmes.

E

45 [Note: Act.xvii.a. ] Then opened he their [Note: Or, mindes ] wittes, that they myght vnderstande the scriptures.

46 And sayde vnto them: Thus is it written, and thus it behoued Christe to suffer, and to rise agayne from death the thirde day:

47 And that repentaunce and remission of sinnes shoulde be preached in his name among all nations, > and must begyn at Hierusalem.

48 And ye are witnesses of these thynges.

49 < And beholde I wyll sende the promise of my father vpon you: [Note: Actes.i.b. ] But tary ye in the citie of Hierusalem, vntyll ye be endued with power from an hye.

50 And he led them out into Bethanie, and lift vp his handes, & blessed them.

51 [Note: Actes.i.b. Mark.xvi.e ] And it came to passe, as he blessed them, he departed from them, and was caryed vp into heauen.

52 And they worshipped him, and returned to Hierusalem with great ioy,

53 And were continually in the temple, praysyng and laudyng God. Amen. >

Here endeth the Gospell by Saint Luke.

[Page]

## ¶ The Gospell by Saint Iohn.

## The first Chapter.

¶ 1 The diuinitie, humanitie, and office of Christe. 15 The testimonie of Iohn. 39 The callyng of Andrewe, Peter, Philip, and Nathaniel.

A

1 < **In** the begynnyng was the worde, & the worde was with God: and that worde was God.

2 The same was in the begynnyng with God.

3 [Note: Gen.i.a. Prou viii d. ] All thynges were made by it: and without [Note: [a] without Christe, no creature was made. ] it, was made nothyng that was made.

4 [Note: Ioh.xiiii.d. Iohn.viii.b. and .ix.a. ] In it was lyfe, and the lyfe was the lyght of men,

5 And the lyght shyneth in darkenesse: and the darknesse comprehended it not.

6 There was a man sent from God, whose name was Iohn:

7 The same came for a wisse, to beare wisse of the [Note: [b] That is, of Christe which is the true lyght. ] lyght, that all men through hym myght beleue.

8 [Note: Iohn.v.d. ] He was not that lyght: but was sent to beare wisse of the lyght.

9 That [lyght] was the true lyght, which lyghteth euery man that commeth into the worlde.

10 He was in the worlde, and the worlde was made by hym, and the worlde knewe hym not.

11 He came among his owne, and his owne receaued hym not.

12 But as many as receaued hym, [Note: Psal.lvii.b. ] to them gaue he [Note: [c] Meanyng priuelege, or dignitie. ] power to be the sonnes of God, euen them that beleued on his name.

13 Which were borne, not of blood, nor of the wyll of the fleshe, nor yet of the wyll of man, but of God.

B

14 And the same word [Note: Or was made. ] became [Note: [d] That is to say, man. ] fleshe, and dwelt among vs ( [Note: Baruc.ii.c. Math.27.a. ii.Peter.i.c. i.Iohn.i.a. ] and we sawe the glory of it, as the glory of the only begotten sonne of the father) full of grace and trueth. >

15 < [Note: Math iii.b. Mark.i.a. ] Iohn beareth wisse of hym, and cryeth, saying: This was he of whom I spake, he that commeth after me, is preferred before me, for he was before me.

16 [Note: Colloss.ii.b. ] And of his fulnesse haue all we receaued, and grace [Note: [e] That is, God doth fauour vs, and geueth grace to so many as beleue in Christe, and are become his members, that God in his sonne is well pleased. ] for grace.

17 For the lawe was geuen by Moyses: but grace and trueth came by Iesus Christe.

18 No man hath seene God at any tyme: The onely begotten sonne which is in the bosome of the father, he hath declared hym. >

19 < [Note: Iohn.v.d. ] And this is the recorde of Iohn: When the Iewes sent priestes and [Page] leuites from Hierusalem, to aske hym: What art thou?

20 And he confessed and denyed not, and sayde playnely, I am not that Christe.

21 And they asked hym: What then? [Note: Math.xi.b. ] art thou Elias? And he sayth, I am not. [Note: Det.xviii.c. ] Art thou that prophete? And he aunswered, no.

22 Then sayde they vnto hym: What art thou? that we may geue an aunswere to them that sent vs: What sayest thou of thy selfe?

23 He sayde: [Note: Math.iii.a. Mark.i.a. Luk.iii.a. ] I am the voyce of a cryer in the wilderness, make strayght the way of the Lorde, [Note: Esay.xl.a. ] as sayde the prophete Esaias.

24 And they which were sent, were of the pharisees.

C

25 And they asked hym, and sayde vnto hym: Why baptizest thou then, yf thou be not Christe, nor Elias, neither that prophete?

26 Iohn aunswered them, saying: [Note: Math.iiii.b. Mark.i.a. Luk.iii.c. Actes.xix.g ] I baptize with water, but there standeth one among you, whom ye knowe not,

27 He it is, which though he came after me, was before me, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to vnloose.

28 These thynges were done in Bethabara beyonde Iordane, [Note: Iohn.iii.d. and .x.d. ] where Iohn dyd baptize. >

29 < The next day, Iohn seeth Iesus comming vnto hym, and saith, [Note: Esay.liii.b. 2.Cor.v.b. ] beholde the lambe of God, which taketh away the sinne of the worlde.

30 This is he of whom I sayde, After me commeth a man, which is preferred before me, for he was before me.

31 And I knewe hym not: but that he shoulde be declared to Israel, therefore am I come, baptizing with water.

32 [Note: Math.iii.d. Mark.i.b. Luk.iii.d. ] And Iohn bare recorde, saying: I sawe the spirite descende from heauen, lyke vnto a doue, and abode vpon hym,

33 And knewe hym not. But he that sent me to baptize with water, the same saide vnto me: vpon whom thou shalt see the spirite descende, and tary styll on hym, the same is he which baptizeth with the holy ghost.

34 And I sawe, and bare recorde, that he is the sonne of God. >

D

35 The next day after, Iohn stode agayne, and two of his disciples.

36 And he behelde Iesus as he walked by, & sayth: beholde the lambe of God.

37 And the two disciples hearde hym speake, and they folowed Iesus.

38 And Iesus turned about, and sawe them folowe hym, & sayth vnto them: What seeke ye? They sayde vnto hym: Rabbi (which is to say yf one interprete it, Maister) where dwellest thou?

39 He sayeth vnto them: come and see. They came, and sawe where he dwelt, and abode with hym that day: For it was about the tenth [Note: That was about two houres before nyght. ] houre.

40 One of the two which hearde Iohn speake, & folowed hym, was Andrewe, Simon Peters brother.

41 The same founde his brother Simon first, and sayth vnto hym: We haue founde Messias, which is by interpretation, the [Note: Or, the Christe. ] annoynted.

42 And brought hym to Iesus. And Iesus behelde hym, and sayde: Thou art [Note: Mat.xvi.c. ] Simon the sonne of Iona, thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, a stone.

E

43 The day folowyng, Iesus woulde go into Galilee, & founde Philip, and sayth vnto hym, folowe me.

44 [Note: Iohn.xii.c. ] Philip was of Bethsaida, the citie of Andrewe and Peter.

45 Philip founde Nathanael, and sayth vnto hym: We haue founde hym, of whom [Note: Gen.iii.c. and. xxii.c. ] Moyses in the lawe, and the [Note: Deu.xviii.c ] prophetes, dyd write: Iesus of Nazareth, the sonne [Note: [f] He speaketh after the common opinion, for most men supposed hym to be Iosephes sonne. ] of Ioseph.

46 And Nathanael sayde vnto hym: Can there any good thyng come out of Nazareth? Philip sayth vnto him: come and see.

47 Iesus sawe Nathanael comyng to hym, & sayeth of hym: Beholde a ryght Israelite, in whom is no guile.

48 Nathanael sayth vnto hym: Whence knewest thou me? Iesus aunswered, and sayde vnto hym: Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast vnder the fygge tree, I sawe thee.

49 Nathanael aunswered, and sayde vnto hym: Rabbi, thou art euen the [very] sonne of God, thou art ye kyng of Israel.

50 Iesus aunswered, & sayde vnto hym: Because I sayde vnto thee, I saw thee vnder the fygge tree, thou [Note: Or, beleuest thou? ] beleuest: Thou shalt see greater thynges then these.

51 And he sayth vnto hym: Ueryly, veryly I say vnto you, hereafter shall ye see heauen open, and the Angels of God ascendyng & descendyng vpon the sonne of man. >

[Page]

## ¶ The .ij. Chapter.

¶ 7 Christe begynneth to worke miracles, and turned water into wyne, 12 he goeth to Capernaum, and so ascendeth to Hierusalem, 14 he casteth buyers and sellers out of the temple, 19 he forewarneth his death and resurrection, 23 and many beleue in hym when they see his miracles.

A

1 < **And** the thirde day, was there a mariage in Cana [a citie] of Galilee, and the mother of Iesus was there.

2 And Iesus was called, and his disciples vnto the mariage.

3 And whe the wyne fayled, the mother of Iesus sayth vnto hym: they haue no wyne.

4 Iesus saith vnto her: Woman, [Note: Luk.ii.g. ] what haue I to do with thee, myne houre is not yet come.

5 His mother sayth vnto the [Note: Or, seruautes. ] ministers: Whatsoeuer he sayth vnto you, do it.

6 And there were set there, sixe water pottes of stone, after the maner of the purifyng of the Iewes, conteynyng two or three [Note: Or, measures. ] firkins a peece.

B

7 Iesus sayth vnto them: fyll the water pottes with water. And they fylled them vp to the brym.

8 And he sayth vnto them: drawe out nowe, and beare vnto the gouernour of feast. And they bare it.

9 When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wyne, and knewe not whence it was (but the ministers which drewe the water knewe) the gouernour of the feast calleth the brydegrome:

10 And sayth vnto hym, Euery man at the begynnyng doth set foorth good wine, and when men haue well dronke, then that which is worse: But thou hast kept the good wyne vntyll nowe.

C

11 This begynnyng of miracles dyd Iesus in Cana of Galilee, and shewed his glory, & his disciples beleued on hym. >

12 [Note: Math.iii.b. Mark.i.b. Luk.iii.d. ] After this, he went downe to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples, and there continued not many dayes.

13 < [Note: Mat.xxi.b. Mark.xi.c. Luk.xix.g. ] And the Iewes Passouer was at hande, & Iesus went vp to Hierusalem,

14 And founde sitt yng in the temple, those that solde oxen, and sheepe, and doues, and chaungers of money.

15 And when he had made [as it were] a scourge of small cordes, he droue them all out of the temple, with the sheepe, & oxen, and powred out the chaungers money, and ouerthrewe the tables,

16 And saide vnto them that solde doues: Haue these thinges hence, and make not my fathers house an house of marchaundize.

17 And his disciples remembred that it was written: [Note: Psal.lxxix f ] The zeale of thine house hath euen eaten me.

D  
18 Then aunswered the Iewes, & sayde vnto hym: What token shewest thou vnto vs, seeing that thou doest these thynges?

19 Iesus aunswered, & sayde vnto them: [Note: Math.xvi.f Mark.xiiii.f ] Destroy this temple, & in three dayes I wyll reare it vp.

20 Then sayde the Iewes, fourtie and sixe yeres was this temple a buildyng, and wilt thou reare it vp in three dayes?

21 But he spake of the temple of his body.

22 Assoone therefore, as he was rysen from death [agayne,] his disciples remembred that he thus had sayde: And they beleued the scripture, & the wordes which Iesus had sayde.

23 When he was in Hierusalem at the Passouer, in the feast day, many beleued on his name, when they sawe his miracles which he dyd.

24 But Iesus dyd not commit hym selfe vnto them, because he knewe all men,

25 And neded not, that any shoulde testifie of man: [Note: Iere.xvii.b. Apoca.i.d. ] For he knewe what was in man. >

[Page]

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.



¶ 3 Christe teacheth Nicodemus. 15 Of fayth. 16 The loue of God towarde the worlde. 19 Condemnation. 25 Iohn baptizeth. 27 Iohn teacheth his disciples.

A

1 < **There** was a man of the pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Iewes.

2 [Note: Iohn.vii.g. ] The same came to Iesus by night, & said vnto him: Rabbi, we knowe that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man coulde do these miracles that thou doest, except God were with him.

3 Iesus aunswered, & sayde vnto hym: Ueryly, veryly, I say vnto thee, except a man be borne agayne, he can not see the kyngdome of God.

4 Nicodemus sayth vnto hym: Howe can a man be borne when he is olde? can he enter into his mothers wombe, and be borne agayne?

5 Iesus aunswered: [Note: Iohn.iiii.b. and .vii.d. Titus. iii.a. ] Ueryly, veryly, I say vnto thee, except a man be borne of water and of the spirite, he can not enter into the kyngdome of God.

6 [Note: Rom. viii.a. ] That which is borne of the fleshe, is fleshe: and that which is borne of the spirite, is spirite.

7 Maruayle not thou that I sayde to thee, ye must be borne agayne.

B

8 The wynde bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sounde therof: [Note: Eccle.xi.a. ] but canst not tell whence it commeth, and whither it goeth. So is euery one that is borne of the spirite.

9 Nicodemus aunswered, and sayde vnto hym: howe can these thynges be?

10 Iesus aunswered, & sayde vnto hym: Art thou a maister in Israel, and knowest not thesethynges?

11 Ueryly, veryly, I say vnto thee, we speake that we do knowe, & testifie that we haue seene: and ye receaue not our witsesse.

12 If I haue tolde you earthly thynges, and ye beleue not: howe shall ye beleue, yf I tell you of heauenly thynges?

13 And no man ascendeth vp to [Note: [a] No man by his owne wyt can know the misteryes of Christes kyngdome, but by Christ hym selfe. ] heauen, but he that came downe from heauen, euen the sonne of man which is in [Note: [b] This is spoken for the vntie of person, and that which is proper to one nature, is transferred to the other, as Act. xx. and .xxviii. and so Christe was in heaue, accordyng to his deuine. nature. ] heauen.

14 And as Moyses lyft vp the serpent in the wyldernesse: euen so must the sonne of man be lyft vp:

15 That whosoeuer beleueth in hym, perishe not, but haue eternall lyfe. >

16 < For God so loued the worlde, that he gaue his only begotten sonne, that whosoeuer beleueth in hym, shoulde not perishe, but haue euerlastyng lyfe.

17 [Note: Luk.xix.a. ] For God sent not his sonne into the worlde, to condempne the worlde: but that the [Note: [c] That is, all sortes of people that beleue, whether they be Iewes or Gentiles. ] worlde through hym myght be sauēd. He that beleueth on hym, is not condempned:

18 But he that beleueth not, is condempned alredy, because he hath not beleued in the name of the only begotte sonne of God.

19 And this is the condempnation: [Note: Iohn.i.a. and .xii.f. ] that lyght is come into the worlde, and men loued darknesse rather then lyght, because their deedes were euyll.

20 For [Note: Ephe.v.b. ] euery one that euyll doeth, hateth the lyght: neither commeth to the light, lest his deedes shoulde be reprovēd.

21 But he that doeth trueth, cometh to the lyght, yt his deedes may be knowen, howe that they are wrought in God. >

D  
22 After these thynges, came Iesus and his disciples into the lande of Iurie, and there he taryed with the, & [Note: [d] Christe hym selfe baptized not, but his disciples. Iohn.iiij. ] baptized.

23 And Iohn also baptized in Enon, besides Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized.

24 [Note: Mark.iii.b. ] For Iohn was not yet cast into prison.

25 < And there arose a question betwene Iohns disciples and the Iewes, about purifyng.

26 And they came vnto Iohn, and sayde vnto hym: Rabbi, he that was with thee beyonde Iordane, to whom thou barest witness, beholde the same baptizeth, [Note: Iohn.iii.a. ] and all men come to hym.

27 Iohn aunswered, and sayde: A man can receaue nothyng, except it be geuen hym from heauen.

28 Ye your selues are witnesses, [Note: Iohn.i.b. ] howe that I sayde I am not Christe, but am sent before hym.

29 He that hath ye bride, is the bridegrome. But the friende of the brydegrome, which standeth & heareth him, reioyceth greatly because of ye brydegromes voyce. This my ioy therfore is fulfilled.

30 He must increace, but I must decrease.

E  
31 He that commeth from an hye, is aboue all: He that is of the earth, is earthlye, and speaketh of the earth. He that commeth from heauen, is aboue all:

[Page]

32 And what he hath seene and hearde, that he testifieth: and no man receaueth his testimonie.

33 He that hath receaued his testimonie, [Note: Rom.iii.a. ] hath set to his seale, that God is true.

34 For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the wordes of God: [Note: Esai.lxi.a. Mark.xi.d. ] For God geueth not the spirite by measure vnto hym.

35 The father loueth the sonne, [Note: Luk.i.d. ] and hath geuen all thynges into his hande.

36 [Note: Iohn.vi.f. i.Iohn.v.b. ] He that beleueth on the sonne, hath euerlastyng lyfe: He that beleueth [Note: Or, he that obeyeth not the sonne. ] not the sonne, shall not see life, but the wrath of God abydeth on hym. >

## The .iiij. Chapter.

¶ 7 Christe weryed, asketh water of the woman of Samaria. 10 The liuely water. 24 He teacheth true worshippe. 26 He confesseth hym selfe to be Messias. 29 The woman sheweth the citizens that Christe is come. 32 Christes meate. 39 The Samaritanes beleue Christe. 45 Christe is receaued of the Galileans. 90 He healeth ye rulers sonne.

A

1 **Assoone** as the Lord knew, how the pharisees had heard that Iesus made and baptized mo disciples then Iohn,

2 (Though that Iesus hym selfe baptized not, but his disciples:)

3 [Note: Math.iiii.b. ] He left Iurie, and departed agayne into Galilee.

4 For [it was so that] he must needes go through Samaria.

5 Then came he to a citie of Samaria, which is called Sichar, besydes the possession [Note: Gen.48.d. ] that Iacob gaue to his sonne Ioseph.

6 And there was Iacobs well. Iesus then beyng wery of his iourney, sate thus on the well. And it was about the sixt [Note: That is, twelue of the clocke. ] houre:

7 And there came a woman of Samaria to drawe water: Iesus sayth vnto her, geue me drynke.

8 For his disciples were gone away, vnto the towne to bye meate.

9 Then sayth the woman of Samaria vnto hym: Howe is it, that thou beyng a Iewe, askest drynke of me, which am a Samaritane? [Note: 4.Reg.17. Iohn.vii.b ] For the Iewes meddle not with the Samaritanes.

B

10 Iesus aunswered, and sayde vnto her: yf thou knewest the gyft of God, & who it is that sayeth to thee geue me drynke, thou wouldest haue asked of hym, and he woulde haue geuen [Note: Iere.ii.b. Ioh.vii.b. ] thee water of lyfe.

11 The woman sayth vnto hym: Syr, thou hast nothyng to drawe with, and the well is deepe: from whence then hast thou that water of lyfe?

12 Art thou greater then our father Iacob, which gaue vs the well, and he hym selfe dranke therof, and his chyldren, and his cattell?

13 Iesus aunswered, and sayde vnto her: Whosoeuer drynketh of this water, shal thyrst agayne:

14 But whosoeuer drynketh of the water that I shall geue hym, shall neuer be more a thyrst: but the water that I shall geue him, shalbe in him a well of water, spryngyng vp into euerlastyng lyfe.

15 The woman sayth vnto hym: Syr, geue me of that water, that I thyrst not, neither come hyther to drawe.

16 Iesus sayth vnto her: Go, call thy husbände, and come hyther.

17 The woman aunswered, and sayde [vnto hym]: I haue no husbände. Iesus sayde vnto her: Thou hast well sayde, I haue no husbände.

18 For thou hast had fyue husbandes, and he whom thou now hast, is not thy husbände. In that saydest thou truely.

C  
19 The woman sayth vnto hym: [Note: Luk.vii.b. ] Syr, I perceaue that thou art a prophete.

20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountayne, [Note: 3.Reg.9.a. ii Par.vii.c. ] and ye say that in Hierusalem is the place, where men ought to worshippe.

21 Iesus sayth vnto her: woman beleue me, the houre commeth, when ye shall neither in this mountayne, nor yet at Hierusalem, worshippe the father.

22 Ye worshippe ye wote not what. We knowe what we worshippe: [Note: Exod.xxi.c ] For saluation commeth of the Iewes.

23 But the houre commeth, and nowe is, when the true worshippers, shall worshippe the father [Note: Rom.i.a. ] in spirite, and in the trueth: For such the father also requireth to worshippe hym.

24 [Note: i.Cor.iii.c. ] God is a spirite, and they that worshippe hym, must worshippe hym in [Page] spirite, and in the trueth.

D  
25 The woman sayth vnto hym, I wote that Messias shal come, which is called Christe: when he is come, he wyll tell vs all thynges.

26 Iesus sayth vnto her: [Note: Mat xxvi.f. Mat.xiiii.g. Luk.xxii.c. Iohn.ix.d. and .x.c. ] I that speake vnto thee, am he.

27 And immediatly came his disciples, and marueyled that he talked with the woman: Yet no man saide, what seekest thou, or why talkest thou with her?

- 28 The woman then left her water pot, and went her way into the citie, & sayth to the men:
- 29 Come, see a man which tolde me all thynges that euer I dyd: Is not he Christe?
- 30 Then they went out of the citie, and came vnto hym.
- 31 In the meane whyle his disciples prayed hym, saying: Maister, eate.
- 32 He sayde vnto them: I haue meate to eate that ye wote not of.
- 33 Therefore sayde the disciples among them selues: Hath any man brought hym ought to eate?
- 34 Iesus sayth vnto them: my meate is to do the wyll of hym that sent me, and to finishe his worke.
- 35 Say not ye, there are yet foure monethes, and then commeth haruest? Beholde, I say vnto you, lyft vp your eyes, and loke on the regions: for they are whyte alreedy vnto haruest.
- E
- 36 [Note: Math.ix.b. Luk.x.a. ] And he that reapeth, receaueth wages, and gathereth fruite vnto lyfe eternall: that both he that soweth, & he that reapeth, myght reioyce together.
- 37 And herein is the saying true, that one soweth, and another reapeth.
- 38 I sent you to reape that, wheron ye bestowed no labour. Other men [Note: [a] Meanyng the prophets. ] laboured, and ye are entred into their labours.
- 39 Many of the Samaritanes of that citie beleued on hym, for the saying of the woman, which testified that he tolde her all that euer she dyd.
- 40 So, when the Samaritanes were come vnto hym, they besought hym that he would tary with them: And he abode there two dayes.
- 41 And many mo beleued, because of his owne worde,
- 42 And sayde vnto the woman: Nowe we beleue, not because of thy saying: [Note: Ioh.xvii.b. ] for we haue heard him our selues, & know that this is euen Christe, the sauour of the worlde. >
- 43 After two dayes he departed thence, and went [away] into Galilee.
- 44 [Note: Math.xiii.g Mark.vi.a. Luk.iiii.c. ] For Iesus hym selfe testified, that a prophete hath none honour in his owne countrey.
- 45 Then, assoone as he was come into Galilee, the Galileans receaued hym, when they had seene all the thynges that he dyd at Hierusalem, at the day of the feast. For they went also vnto the feast day.

46 So Iesus came agayne into Cana of Galilee, [Note: Iohn.ii.a. ] where he turned the water into wyne. <  
And there was a certayne ruler, [Note: Math.viii.a. Luk.vii.a. ] whose sonne was sicke at Capernaum.

47 Assoone as the same hearde that Iesus was come out of Iurie into Galilee, he went vnto hym, and besought hym that he woulde come downe, and heale his sonne: For he was euen at the poynt of death.

48 Then sayde Iesus vnto hym: except ye see signes and wonders, ye wyll not beleue.

49 The ruler sayth vnto hym: Syr, come downe or euer that my sonne dye.

50 Iesus sayth vnto hym: Go thy way, thy sonne lyueth. The man beleued the worde that Iesus had spoken vnto hym, and he went his way.

51 And as he was nowe goyng downe, the seruauntes met hym, and tolde him, saying, thy sonne lyueth.

G

52 Then enquired he of them the houre, when he began to amende. And they sayde vnto hym: Yesterday at the seuenth houre, the feuer left hym.

53 So the father knewe, that it was the same houre, in the which Iesus sayde vnto hym thy sonne lyueth: [Note: Act.xviii.a. ] And he beleued, and all his householde. >

54 This is agayne the seconde miracle, that Iesus dyd, when he was come out of Iurie into Galilee.

[Page]

## ¶ The .v. Chapter.

7 Christe healed on the Sabboth the man that was sicke thirtie and eyght yeres, 10 the pharisees accuse hym. 19 Christe aunswereth for hym selfe, & reproueth them, 32 shewyng by the testimonie of his father, 33 of Iohn, 36 of his workes, 39 of the scriptures, 45 and of Moyses, who he is.

A

1 < **After** this, was there a feast day of the Iewes, and Iesus went vp to Hierusalem.

2 And there is at Hierusalem by the sheepe [Note: Where sheepe were solde. Or els, by the sheepe poole that is, where they washed sheep, or wher sheep dranke. ] market, a poole, which is called in the Hebrue tonge Bethesda, hauyng fyue porches.

3 In which lay a great multitude of sicke folke, of blynde, halt, & wythered, waytyng for the mouyng of the water.

4 For an Angel went downe at a certayne season into the poole, and stirred the water: Whosoouer then firste after the stirring of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he hadde.

5 And a certayne man was there, which had ben diseased thirtie & eyght yeres.

6 When Iesus sawe hym lye, & knewe that he nowe long tyme had ben diseased, he sayth vnto hym: Wylt thou be made whole?

7 The sicke man aunswered him: Sir, I haue no man whe the water is troubled to put me into the poole: But in the meane time, while I am about to come, another steppeth downe before me.

8 Iesus saith vnto him: [Note: Math.ix.a. Mark.ii. b. Luke.v.e. Actes.iii.b. and .ix.f. ] Ryse, take vp thy bedde, and walke.

9 And immediatly the man was made whole, and toke vp his bedde, & walked. And the same day was the Sabboth.

10 The Iewes therfore sayde vnto hym that was made whole: It is the Sabboth day, it is not lawfull for thee to carie thy bedde.

11 He aunswered them: He that made me whole, saide vnto me, take vp thy bedde and walke.

12 Then asked they hym: What man is that which sayde vnto thee, take vp thy bedde, and walke?

13 And he that was healed, wyste not who it was. For Iesus had gotten him selfe awaye, because that there was prease of people in that place.

B

14 [Note: Iohn.viii.a. ] Afterwarde, Iesus founde hym in the temple, and saide vnto him: behold, thou art made whole, sinne no more, lest a worse thyng come vnto you.

15 The man departed, & tolde the Iewes that it was Iesus which had made him whole. >

16 And therefore the Iewes dyd persecute Iesus, and sought [the meanes] to slea hym, because he hadde done these thynges on the Sabboth day.

17 And Iesus aunswered them: < [Note: i.Cor.xii.a. ] My father worketh hitherto, and I worke.

18 Therfore the Iewes sought the more to kyll him, not only because he had broken the Sabboth, but sayde also, [Note: Mat.xxvi.f Mar.xiiii.g. Luk.xxi.e. ] that God was his father, and made himselfe equall with God.

19 Then aunswered Iesus, & sayde vnto them: Ueryly veryly I say vnto you, [Note: Iohn.ix.a. ] the sonne can do nothyng of hym selfe, but that he seeth ye father do: For whatsoever he doeth, that doeth the sonne also.

20 For the father loueth the sonne, and sheweth hym all thynges that he hym selfe doeth: And he wyll shewe hym greater workes then these, because ye shoulde marueyle.

21 For lykewyse as the father rayseth vp the dead, and quickeneth them: euen so, the sonne quickeneth whom he wyll.

22 [Note: Math.xi.c. Luk. x.c. ] Neither iudgeth the father any man: but hath committed all iudgement vnto the sonne,

23 Because that all men shoulde honour the sonne, euen as they honour the father. He that honoureth not the sonne, the same honoureth not ye father which hath sent hym.

C

24 [Note: Iohn.vi.c. ] Ueryly veryly I say vnto you, he that heareth my worde, and beleueth on him that sent me, hath euerlastyng lyfe, and shall not come [Note: Luk.xxiii.c ] into dampnation, but is escaped from death vnto lyfe.

25 Ueryly veryly I saye vnto you, [Note: Math.v.e. i.Iohn.xi.c. ] the houre shall come, and nowe is, when the dead [Note: [a] Meaning those that are drowned in sinne. ] shall heare the voyce of the sonne of God: And they that heare, [Note: [b] That is, they that receaue it by fayth. ] shall lyue.

26 [Note: Iohn. i. a. ] For as the father hath lyfe in hym selfe: so lykewyse hath he geuen to the sonne, to haue lyfe in hym selfe:

[Page]

27 And hath geuen hym power also to iudge, because he is the sonne of man.

28 Marueyle not at this: For the [Note: Mat.xxv.d. ] houre shall come, in the whiche all that are in the graues shall heare his voyce.

29 And shall come foorth, they that haue done good, vnto the resurrection of lyfe, and they that haue done euyll, vnto the resurrection of dampnation. >

30 < I can of mine owne selfe do nothing: As I heare I iudge, and my iudgemet is iuste, because I seke not myne owne wyll, but the wyll of the father whiche hath sent me.

31 [Note: Iohn.viii.d. ] Yf I shoulde beare witnessse of my selfe, my witnessse were not true.

32 There is another that beareth witnessse of me, and I am sure that the witnessse which he beareth of me is true.

33 [Note: Iohn.i. b. ] Ye sent vnto Iohn, and he bare witnessse vnto the trueth.

34 But I receaue not the recorde of man: Neuerthelesse, these thinges I say, that ye myght be safe.

D

35 He was a burnyng & a shynyng lyght, and ye would for a season haue reioyced in his lyght.

36 [Note: Iohn.v.a. ] But I haue greater witnessse, then the witnessse of Iohn: [Note: Iohn.xx.c. ] For the workes whiche the father hath geuen me to finishe, the same workes that I do, beare witnessse of me, that the father hath sent me.

37 And the father hymselfe which hath sent me, [Note: Math.iii.d. and .xvii.b. Mark.i.b. Luk.iii.d. ii. Pet.i.d. ] hath borne witnessse of me. Ye haue not hearde his voyce at any tyme, nor seene his shape,



38 His worde haue ye not abydyng in you: For who he hath set, him ye beleue not.

39 Searche the scriptures, for in them ye thynke ye haue eternall lyfe: [Note: Act. xvii.b. Deu.xviii.c ] and they are they which testifie of me.

40 And yet wyll ye not come to me, that ye myght haue lyfe.

41 I receaue not prayse of men.

42 But I knowe you, that ye haue not the loue of God in you.

43 I am come in my fathers name, and ye receaue me not. [Note: Iohn.ii. c. i.Thess.ii.c. ] Yf another come in his owne name, hym wyll ye receaue.

44 Howe can ye beleue, whiche receaue honour one of another, and seke not the honour that commeth of God only?

45 Do not thinke that I wyll accuse you to my father: There is one that accuseth you, euen Moyses, in who ye trust.

46 For had ye beleued Moyses, ye would haue beleued me: [Note: Deut.xviii c ] for he wrote of me.

47 But yf ye beleue not his wrytynges, howe shall ye beleue my wordes? >

## ¶ The .vj. Chapter.

10 Christe feedeth fyue thousande with fyue loaues & two fisshes. 15 The people would haue made hym kyng. 19 He walkyng on the sea, folowed the disciples whiche were troubled in a shippe with a great tempest. 26 They seke Christ, to be fedde. 29 Fayth is the worke of God. 30 They aske signes and wonders. 35 Of the bread of lyfe. 40 Of fayth. 66 The carnall are offended at hym, 67 some of his disciples offended, forsake hym. 69 The apostles confesse hym to be the sonne of God. 71 Iudas is a deuyll.

A

1 **A**fter these thynges, [Note: Math.xiiii b Mark. vi.d. Math.iiii.d. Luk.vi.c. ] Iesus went his waye ouer the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias.

2 And a great multitude folowed hym, because they sawe his miracles whiche he dyd on them that were diseased.

3 And Iesus went vp into a mountayne, & there he sate with his disciples.

4 And the Passouer, a feast of ye Iewes, was nye. >

5 < [Note: Mat xiiii.b. Mark. vi. d. Luk.ix.b. ] When Iesus then lyft vp his eyes, and sawe a great company come vnto him, he saith vnto Philip: Whence shal we bye bread, that these may eate?

6 (This he sayde to proue hym: for he hym selfe knewe what he woulde do.)

7 Philip aunswered hym: [Note: 3.Reg.iiii.g ] Two hundred [Note: This sum amounteth to about fyue pound sterlyng. ] penie worth of bread are not sufficient for them, that euery man may take a litle.

8 One of his disciples, Andrewe, Simo Peters brother, sayth vnto hym:

9 There is a litle ladde here, whiche hath fyue barly loaues and two fisshes, but what are they among so many?

10 And Iesus sayde: Make the people syt downe. There was much grasse in the place. So the men sate downe, in number about fyue thousande.

11 And Iesus toke the bread, and when he had geue thankes, he gaue to the disciples, and the disciples to them yt were set downe, and lykewyse of the fisshes, as much as they woulde.

12 When they had eaten enough, he saide [Page] vnto his disciples: Gather vp the broke meate that remayneth, that nothyng be lost.

13 And they gathered it together, & fylled twelue baskettes with the broken meate of the fyue barly loaues, whiche [broken meate] remayned vnto them that had eaten.

B

14 Then those men, when they had seene the miracle that Iesus did, saide: This is of a trueth [Note: Luk.vii.c. Iohn.iiii.b. ] the same prophete that shoulde come into the worlde. >

15 When Iesus therfore perceaued, that they would come and take him, to make hym kyng, [Note: Luk. vi.d. ] he departed agayne into amountayne hym selfe alone.

16 [Note: Mat.xiiii.c. Mark.vi.f. ] And when euen was nowe come, his disciples went downe vnto the sea.

17 And gat vp into a shippe, and went ouer the sea, towardes Capernau: And it was nowe darke, and Iesus was not come to them.

18 And the sea arose, with a great wynde that blewe.

19 So, when they had rowed about xxv. or xxx. furlonges, they sawe Iesus walkyng on the sea, and drawyng nye vnto the shippe, and they were afrayde.

20 But he sayth vnto them: It is I, be not afrayde.

C

21 And they wyllingly receaued hym into the shippe, and immediatly the shippe was at the lande whyther

they went.

22 The day folowyng, when the people, whiche stode on the other syde of the sea, sawe that there was none other shippe there, saue that one whereinto his disciples were entred, and that Iesus went not in with his disciples into the shippe, but that his disciples were gone [awaye] alone:

23 Howebeit there came other shippes fro Tiberias, nye vnto the place, where they dyd eate bread, after that the Lord had geuen thanks.

24 When the people therefore sawe that Iesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also toke shippyng, and came to Capernaum, sekyng for Iesus.

25 And whe they had founde hym on the other side of the sea, they said vnto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hyther? Iesus aunswered them, and sayde:

26 Ueryly veryly I say vnto you, ye seke me, not because ye sawe the miracles, but because ye dyd eate of the loaues, & were fylled.

D

27 < Labour not for the meate whiche perisheth, but for that whiche endureth vnto euerlastyng lyfe, which [meate] the sonne of man shall geue vnto you: For hym hath God the father sealed.

28 Then saide they vnto him: What shall we do, that we myght worke ye workes of God?

29 Iesus aunswered, & sayde vnto them: This is the worke of God, that ye beleue on hym whom he hath sent.

30 They said therfore vnto hym: [Note: Math. xii.c. and .xvi. a. Mark.viii.b Luk.xi. d. ] What signe shewest thou then, yt we may see, & beleue thee? What doest thou worke?

31 Our fathers dyd eate Manna in the desert, as it is written: He gaue them [Note: Exod.xvi. b ] bread from heauen to eate.

32 Then Iesus sayde vnto them: Ueryly veryly I say vnto you, Moyses gaue you not yt bread fro heauen, [Note: Math.xvi.c ] but my father geueth you ye true bread fro heaue.

33 For the bread of God, is he which cometh downe from heauen, and geueth lyfe vnto the worlde.

34 Then sayde they vnto hym: Lorde, euermore geue vs this bread.

35 And Iesus sayde vnto them, I am the bread of lyfe: He that cometh to me, shall not hunger: and he that beleueth on me, shall neuer thirst. >

36 But I say vnto you, that ye also haue seene me, and yet ye beleue not.

37 All that the father geueth me, shall come to me: and hym that commeth to me, I cast not away.

38 For I came downe from heauen, [Note: Luk.xxii.c. ] not to do that I wyll: but that he wyll, which hath sent me.

39 And this is the fathers wyll whiche hath sent me: that of all which he hath geuen me, I shal lose nothing, but rayse it vp agayne at the last day.

40 And this is the wyll of him yt sent me: that euery one which seeth the sonne, [Note: Iohn.v.c. ] & beleueth on him, hath euerlastyng lyfe: And I wyll rayse him vp at ye last day.

41 The Iewes then murmured at him, because he sayde, I am the bread [of life] which came downe from heauen.

42 And they saide: [Note: Mat.xiii.g. Mark.vi.a. ] Is not this Iesus, ye sonne of Ioseph, whose father and mother we knowe? Howe is it then that he sayth, I came downe from heauen?

E

43 Iesus aunswered, & sayde vnto them: Murmure not among your selues. >

44 [Note: Iohn.vii.g. ] No man can come to me, except the father, whiche hath sent me, drawe [Page] hym: And I wyll rayse hym vp at the last day.

45 It is written in the prophetes: [Note: Esai.liiii.d. i.Iohn ii.d. ] And they shalbe all taught of God. Euery man therfore that hath heard, and hath learned of the father, cometh vnto me.

46 [Note: Exod.32 d. Deut. iiii.b. Iudg.vi.c. and .xiii.d. Iohn.i.c. ] Not that any man hath seene the father, saue he which is of God, the same hath seene the father.

47 Ueryly veryly I say vnto you, he that putteth his trust in me, hath euerlasting lyfe.

48 I am that bread of lyfe.

49 Your fathers dyd eate Manna in the wyldernesse, and are dead.

50 This is that bread, which commeth downe from heauen, that yf any man eate therof, [he] shoulde not dye.

F

51 I am that lyuyng bread, which came downe from heauen. Yf any man eate of this bread, he shall lyue for euer. [Note: Luk.xxii.c. ] And the bread that I wyl geue, is my fleshe, whiche I wyll geue for the lyfe of the worlde. >

52 The Iewes therefore stroue among them selues, saying: Howe can this felowe geue vs that fleshe of his to eate?

53 Then Iesus saide vnto them: < Ueryly veryly I saye vnto you, excepte ye eate the fleshe of the sonne of man, and drynke his blood, ye haue no lyfe in you.

54 Who so eateth my fleshe, and drinketh my blood, hath eternall lyfe, and I wyl rayse hym vp at the last day.

55 < For my fleshe is meate in deede, and my blood is drynke in deede.

56 He that eateth my fleshe, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, & I in hym.

57 As the lyuing father hath sent me, and I lyue by the father: Euen so, he that eateth me, shal liue by [the meanes of] me.

58 This is that bread, which came downe from heauen: Not as your fathers dyd eate Manna, and are dead. He that eateth of this bread, shall lyue euer. >

59 These thynges sayde he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therfore of his disciples, when they had hearde this, saide: This is an harde saying, who can abyde the hearyng of it?

G

61 Iesus knewe in hym selfe, that his disciples murmured at it, and he sayde vnto them, doth this offende you?

62 What and yf ye shall see the sonne of man ascende vp thither where he was before?

63 It is the spirite that quickeneth, the fleshe profiteth [Note: [a] To wyt, yf it be separte from the spirite, wherof it hath the force. For it cometh of the power of the spirite, that ye flesshe geueth vs lyfe, & feedeth vs: And therefore, that we may be truly fedde & norished with it, we must bring the spirituall mouth of faith to receaue it. ] nothyng. The wordes that I speake vnto you, are spirite and lyfe.

64 But there are some of you that beleue not. For Iesus knewe from the begynning, which they were that beleued not, and who shoulde betray hym.

65 And he sayde: Therfore saide I vnto you, that [Note: Iohn.vii.c. ] no man can come vnto me, except it were geue vnto him of my father.

66 From that time, many of his disciples wet backe, & walked no more with him.

67 Then sayde Iesus vnto the twelue: Wyll ye also go away?

68 Then Simon Peter aunswered him: Lorde, to who shall we go? Thou hast the wordes of eternall lyfe:

69 [Note: Mat.xvi.e. Mark.viii.c. Luk.ix.c. Iohn.xi.c. ] And we beleue and are sure that thou art Christe, the sonne of ye lyuyng God.

70 Iesus aunswereth them: Haue not I chosen you twelue, and [Note: Luk.xxii.a. Iohn.xiii.c. ] one of you is a deuyll?

71 He spake of Iudas Iscariot [the sonne] of Simon: For he it was, that shoulde betray hym, beyng one of the twelue.

## ¶ The .vij. Chapter.

1 Iesus fled the murmuryng Iewes. 5 Christes kynsemen beleued not in hym. 7 Why the worlde hateth Christe. 12 Diuers opinions of Christe. 14 Christ teacheth, geuing all to his father. 20 The blasphemie of the Iewes. 23 Of the Sabboth worke. 31 Manie of the people beleue on hym. 32 The pharisees & priestes sende to take hym. 39 The holye ghost. 40 Discention among the people for Christ. 47 The pharisees chyde with the seruautes, because they haue not brought hym. 52 They chyde with Nicodemus.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **After** these thynges, Iesus went about in Galilee: For he would not go about in Iurie, because that the Iewes sought to kyll hym.

2 The Iewes [Note: Leui.xxiii f ] feaste of tabernacles [Note: [a] At this feaste, they dwelled seuen dayes in their tentes. ] was at hande.

3 His brethren therfore sayde vnto him: Get thee hence, and go into Iurie, that thy disciples also may see thy workes that thou doest.

[Page]

4 For there is no man that doeth any thyng in secrete, and he hym selfe seketh to be knowen openly. Yf thou do suche thynges, shewe thy selfe to the worlde.

5 For his brethren beleued not in hym.

6 Then Iesus sayde vnto them, My tyme is not yet come: but your tyme is alway redy.

7 The worlde can not hate you, [Note: Iohn.xv.a. ] but me it hateth, because I testifie of it, that the workes therof are euyll.

8 Go ye vp vnto this feast: I wyll not go vp yet vnto this feast, for my tyme is not yet full come.

9 When he had saide these wordes vnto them, he abode styll in Galilee.

10 But assoone as his brethre were gone vp, then went he also vp vnto the feaste, not openly, but as it were priuilie.

<sup>B</sup>

11 Then sought hym the Iewes at the feaste, and sayde, [Note: Iohn.xi.f. ] where is he?

12 And much murmuryng of hym was there among the people: For some said, [Note: Math.xxi d Iohn.iiii.c. and .vi.c. ] he is good: other sayde, nay, but he deceaueth the people.

13 Howebeit, [Note: Iohn.xii.f. ] no man spake openlye of hym, for feare of the Iewes. >

14 < Nowe when halfe of the feast was done, Iesus went vp into the temple, and taught.

15 And the Iewes marueyled, saying: howe knoweth he the scriptures, seyng that he neuer learned?

16 Iesus aunswered them, & sayde: My doctrine is not myne, but his yt sent me.

17 Yf any man wyll do his wyll, he shall knowe of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speake of my selfe.

18 He that speaketh of hym selfe, seketh his owne praise: But he that seketh his praise that sent hym, the same is true, & no vnryghteousnes is in hym.

C

19 [Note: Exod.xx.a. Deut.v.a. ] Dyd not Moyses geue you a lawe, & [yet] none of you kepeth the lawe? Why go ye about to kyll me?

20 The people aunswered and sayde: Thou hast the deuyll, who goeth about to kyll thee?

21 Iesus aunswered, & said vnto the: [Note: Iohn.v.a. ] I haue done one worke, & ye al marueyle.

22 Moyses therefore gaue vnto you the circumcisio (not because it is of Moyses, but [Note: Gen.xvii.b. ] of the fathers) And yet ye on the Sabboth day, circumcise a man.

23 Yf a man on the Sabboth day receaue circumcision, without breakyng of the lawe of Moyses: disdayne ye at me, because I haue made a man euerywhyte whole on the Sabboth day?

24 [Note: Deut.i. c. Leuit.xix.c Pro.xxiiii c ] Iudge not after the [vtter] appearaunce, but iudge with a ryghteous iudgement.

25 The sayde some of them of Hierusale: Is not this he, whom they go about to kyll?

26 But loe, he speaketh [Note: or, openly. ] boldly, & they saye nothyng to hym. Do the rulers knowe in deede that this is very Christ?

D

27 Howbeit, [Note: Math.xiii.g Mark.vi.a. Iohn.vi.c. ] we know this man whence he is: but when Christe cometh, no man knoweth whence he is.

28 Then cryed Iesus in the temple, as he taught, saying: Ye both knowe me, and whence I am, ye knowe. And I am not come of my selfe: but he that set me is true, whom ye knowe not.

29 But I knowe him, for I am of him, and he hath sent me.

30 [Note: Mark.xi.c. Luk.xix.g. ] Then they sought to take hym: but no man layde handes on hym, because his houre was not yet come.

31 [Note: Iohn.viii.d. ] Many of the people beleued on hym, and saide: When Christe commeth, wyl he do mo miracles [then these] that this man hath done?

E

32 The pharisees hearde, that the people murmured such thinges concerning hym: < And the pharisees and the hye priestes [Note: Mat.xxii. b Mark.xii.a. Luk.xx.d. ] sent seruauntes to take hym.

33 Then sayde Iesus vnto them: yet am I a litle whyle with you, and then go I vnto hym that sent me.

34 Ye shall seke me, & shall not fynde me: [Note: Iohn. viii.c. and .xiii.d. ] & where I am thither can ye not come.

35 Then sayde the Iewes among them selues: Whyther wyll he go, that we shall not fynde hym? Wyll he go vnto the dispersed among the Gretians, & teache the gentiles?

36 What [maner of] saying is this that he sayde, ye shall seke me, and shall not fynde me: and where I am, thyther can ye not come?

37 In the last day, that great day of the feast, Iesus stode and cryed, saying: [Note: Esaias.lv.a. ] Yf any man thirste, let him come vnto me and drynke:

38 He that beleueth on me, as saith the scripture, out of his belly shall flowe ryuers of water of lyfe.

39 (But this spake he of the spirite, which they yt beleue on hym, should receaue. > For the holy ghost was not yet [Note: or, geuen, vnderstadyng by the holye ghost, the visible gyftes of the holy ghost ] [there] because Iesus was not yet glorified.)

[Page] F

40 < Many of the people therfore, when they hearde this saying, sayde: [Note: Io.iii.c.vi.b. Luk.vii.c. Math.xxi b ] Of a trueth this is the prophete.

41 But other sayde, this is Christe: But some saide, shall Christe come out of Galilee?

42 [Note: Mich.v.a. Math.ii.a. ] Sayth not the scripture, that Christe shall come of the seede of Daud, and out of the towne of Bethlehem, where Daud was?

43 So was there discention among the people, because of hym.

44 And some of them woulde haue taken hym, but no man layde handes on him.

45 Then came the seruauntes to the hye priestes & pharisees: and they sayde vnto them, why haue ye not brought him?

46 The seruauntes aunswered: Neuer man spake as this man doeth.

G

47 Then aunswered them the pharisees: Are ye also deceaued?

48 Doth any of the rulers or of the pharisees beleue on hym?



49 But this [common] people which know not the lawe, are cursed.

50 Nicodemus sayth vnto the, [Note: Iohn. iii.a. ] he that came to Iesus by nyght, and was one of them:

51 Doth our lawe iudge any man, before it heare hym, and knowe what he hath done?

52 They aunswered, and saide vnto him: Art thou also of Galilee? Search & loke: For out of Galilee aryseth no prophete.

53 And euery man went vnto his owne house. >

## ¶ The .viiij. Chapter.

2 Christe teacheth in the temple, 11 the sinnes of the woman taken in adulterie are forgeuen. 12 Christe the lyght of the worlde, 14 he sheweth from whence he came, and whyther he goeth, 32 Who are free, and who are bonde, 39 the children of Abraham, 42 the chyldren of God, 44 the deuyll the father of lyes, 45 who hateth God, and who hateth hym not. 56 Abraham dyd see Christes day. 59 Christe persecuted, conueyed hym selfe away.

A

1 **Iesus** went [Note: Math.xxi.a Mark.xi.a. Luk.xix.c. ] vnto mout Oliuete.

2 And early in the mornyng he came agayne into the temple, and all the people came vnto hym, & he sate downe and taught them.

3 And the scribes and pharisees brought vnto hym a woman taken in adulterie, & when they had set her in the middes,

4 They sayde vnto hym: Maister, this woman was taken in adulterie, euen as the deede was a doying.

5 [Note: Luk.xx.b. ] Moyses in the lawe commaunded vs that suche shoulde be stoned: But what sayest thou?

6 This they sayde to tempte hym, that they myght accuse hym. But Iesus stowped downe, and with his fynger wrote on the grounde.

7 So, when they continued asking him, he lyft vp hym selfe, & sayde vnto them: Let hym that is among you without sinne, caste the first stone at her.

8 And agayne he stowped downe, and wrote on the grounde.

B

9 And when they hearde this, beyng accused of their owne consciences, they went out one by one,

begynnyng at the eldest, euen vnto the last: and Iesus was left alone, & the woman standyng in the myddes.

10 When Iesus had lyft vp hym selfe, & sawe no man but the woman, he sayde vnto her: Woma where are those thine accusers? Hath no man condempned thee?

11 She sayde, No man Lorde. And Iesus sayde, Neither do I condempne thee: Go, and [Note: Iohn.v.c. ] sinne no more. >

12 [Note: Iohn. i.a. ix.a.xii.g. ] < Then spake Iesus agayne vnto them, saying, I am the light of ye world: He that foloweth me, doth not walke in darknesse, but shal haue the light of life.

13 The pharisees therefore said vnto him: Thou bearest recorde of thy selfe, thy recorde is not true.

14 Iesus aunswered, & saide vnto them: Though I beare recorde of my selfe, yet my recorde is true. For I knowe whence I came, & whyther I go: But ye can not tel whence I come, and whyther I go.

15 Ye iudge after the fleshe, I iudge no man.

16 And if I iudge, my iudgement is true: For I am not alone, but I and the father that sent me.

C

17 [Note: Num.35.d. Deut.xvii.a Mat.xviii.c ] It is also written in your lawe, that the testimonie of two men is true.

18 I am one that beareth witness of my [Page] selfe, & the father that sent me beareth witness of me.

19 Then sayde they vnto hym: Where is thy father? Iesus aunswered, Ye neither knowe me, nor yet my father: Yf ye had knowen me, ye should haue knowen my father also.

20 These wordes spake Iesus in ye treasurie, as he taught in the temple, and no man layde handes on hym, [Note: Math.vi.c. ] for his houre was not yet come. >

21 Then sayde Iesus againe vnto them: < I go my way, and [Note: Iohn.vii.c. and .xiii. d. ] ye shall seeke me, and shall dye in your synnes: Whyther I go, thyther can ye not come.

22 Then sayde the Iewes: Wyll he kyll hym selfe, because he saith, whyther I go, thyther can ye not come?

23 And he sayde vnto them: ye are from beneathe, I am from aboue: ye are of this worlde, I am not of this worlde.

D

24 I sayde therefore vnto you, that you shall dye in your synnes. For [Note: Math.xvi.d Iohn.iii. d. ] yf ye beleue not that I am he, ye shall dye in your synnes.

25 Then sayde they vnto hym: Who art thou? And Iesus saith vnto them: Euen the very same thyng that I sayde vnto you from the begynnyng.

26 I haue many thynges to saye, and to iudge of you. Yea, & he that sent me, is true: [Note: Iohn.xiiii.b ] And I speake to the world, those thynges which I haue hearde of hym.

27 Howebeit, they vnderstoode not that he spake to them of his father.

28 Then saide Iesus vnto them: When ye haue lift vp [an hye] the sonne of man, then shall ye knowe that I am he, and that I do nothyng of my selfe: [Note: Iohn.xiii. d. and .xiiii.b. ] but as my father hath taught me, euen so I speake these thynges.

29 And he that sent me, is with me. The father hath not left me alone: For I do alwayes those thynges that please him.

30 As he spake those wordes, [Note: Iohn.vii.d. ] many beleued on hym.

31 < Then sayde Iesus to those Iewes which beleued on him: Yf ye continue in my word, then are ye my very disciples.

32 And ye shall knowe the trueth, and the trueth shall make you free.

33 They [Note: [a] These were not those Iewes that beleued, but mockers that beleued not. ] aunswered hym: We be Abrahams seede, and were neuer bonde to any man: howe sayest thou then, ye shalbe made [Note: Rom.vii. c. and .viii.a. ] free?

34 Iesus aunswered them: Ueryly, veryly I say vnto you, that [Note: Rom.vi. c. ii.Pet.ii.d. ] whosoeuer comitteth sinne, is the seruaut of sinne.

E

35 And the seruaut abideth not in ye house for euer: but the sonne abydeth euer.

36 Yf the sonne therefore shall make you free, then are ye free in deede.

37 I know that ye are Abrahams seede, but ye seke [meanes] to kyll me, because my worde hath no place in you.

38 I speake that whiche I haue seene with my father: and ye do that whiche ye haue seene with your father.

39 They aunswered, and saide vnto him: Abraham is our father. Iesus saith vnto them: Yf ye were Abrahams childre, ye woulde do the workes of Abraham.

40 But now ye go about to kyll me, a ma that hath tolde you the trueth, which I haue heard of god: this did not Abraha.

41 Ye do the deedes of your father. Then said they to him: We be not borne of fornication, we haue one father, euen God.

42 Iesus saide vnto them: Yf God were your father, truely ye woulde loue me: For I proceded fourth, and came from God: neither came I of my selfe, but he sent me.

43 Why do ye not knowe my speache? euen because ye cannot heare my word.

F

44 Ye are of your father the deuyll, and the lustes of your father wyll ye do. [Note: Gen.iii.a. i.Iohn.iii.b. ] He was a murtherer from the begynnyng, and abode not in the trueth: because there is no trueth in hym. When he speaketh a lye, he speaketh of his owne: For he is a lyer, and the father of the same thyng.

45 And because I tel you the trueth, therefore ye beleue me not.

46 < Which of you rebuketh me of sinne? Yf I say the trueth, why do not ye beleue me?

47 [Note: Iohn.x.c. ] He that is of god, heareth gods wordes. Ye therefore heare the not, because ye are not of God.

48 Then aunswered the Iewes, & saide vnto hym: Say we not well that thou art a Samaritane, and [Note: Iohn.x.d. ] hast the deuyll?

49 Iesus aunswered, I haue not the deuyll: but I honour my father, and ye haue dishonoured me.

G

50 I seke not myne owne praise, there is one that seketh, and iudgeth.

51 Ueryly veryly I saye vnto you, yf a man kepe my saying, he shall neuer see death.

52 Then sayde the Iewes vnto hym: Now know we that thou hast ye deuyll. [Page] Abraham is dead, & the prophetes: and thou sayest, yf a man kepe my saying, he shall neuer taste of death.

53 Art thou greater the our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophetes are dead: whom makest thou thy selfe?

54 Iesus aunswered: Yf I honour my selfe, mine honour is nothing. It is my father that honoureth me, which ye say is your God:

55 And yet ye haue not knowen him, but I knowe hym: And if I say I knowe hym not, I shalbe a lyer lyke vnto you. But I knowe hym, & kepe his saying.

56 [Note: Gene.xvii.a ] Your father Abraham [Note: [b] To se the commyng of Christe in the fleshe, whiche thyng Abraham dyd se a farre of, with the eyes of fayth. ] was glad to see my day: and he saw it, and reioyced.

57 Then sayde the Iewes vnto hym: Thou art not yet fiftie yeres olde, & hast thou seene Abraham.

58 Iesus sayde vnto them: Ueryly, veryly I saye vnto you, before Abraham was, [Note: Exod.iii.d. Iohn.x.f. ] I am.

59 Then toke they vp stones to caste at hym: but Iesus hyd hym selfe, [Note: Luk.iiii.e. ] and went out of the temple. >

## ¶ The .ix. Chapter.

1 Christe restored sight vpon the Sabboth day, to him that was borne blynde. 13 The pharisees reason with him that was blynde. 27 The pharisees excommunicate those that beleue in Christe, 34 they excommunicate hym that was borne blynde, 35 Christe teacheth hym, and he beleueth. 39 To what blynde men Christe restored syght.

A

1 < **And** as Iesus passed by, he saw a man whiche was blynde fro his birth:

2 And his disciples asked hym, saying: Maister, who did sinne, this man, or his father and mother, that he was borne blynde?

3 Iesus aunswered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor yet his father & mother: but that the workes of God shoulde be shewed in hym.

4 I must worke the workes of him that sent me, whyle it is [Note: [a] whyle oportunitie serueth. ] daye. The nyght commeth when no man can worke.

5 As long as I am in the world, [Note: Iohn.i.a. viii.b. xii.g. ] I am the lyght of the worlde.

B

6 Assoone as he had thus spoke, he spat on the grounde, and made claye of the spittle, and he annoynted with the claye the eyes of the blynde,

7 And sayde vnto hym: Go, washe thee in the poole of [Note: Esai.viii.b. ] Siloe, whiche by interpretation, is [as much to say, as] sent. He went his way therefore, & washed, and came agayne, seying.

8 So, the neyghbours, and they that hadde seene hym before when he was blynde, sayde: Is not this he that sate and begged?

C

9 Some sayde, this is he: Other sayde, he is lyke hym. He hym selfe sayde, I am [euen] he.

10 Therefore sayde they vnto him: Howe are thyne eyes opened?

11 He aunswered and sayde: The man that is called Iesus made claye, and annoynted myne eyes, and sayde vnto me, go to the poole Siloe and washe: And when I went and washed, I receaued [my] syght.

12 Then sayde they vnto hym, where is he? He sayde, I can not tell.

13 They brought to the pharisees, hym that a litle before was blynde.

14 And it was the [Note: Math.xii.a. Mark.ii.d. Luk.vi.a Ioh.v.b.vii c ] Sabbath day when Iesus made ye claye, & opened his eyes.

15 Then againe the pharisees also asked hym, howe he had receaued his syght. He sayde vnto them: He put claye vpon myne eyes, and I washed, and do see.

D

16 Therefore sayde some of the pharisees, this man is not of God, because he kepeth not the Sabbath day. Other said: [Note: Io.vii.g.x.d ] How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles? And there was a stryfe among them.

17 They spake vnto the blynde man againe: What sayest thou of him, because he hath opened thyne eyes? He sayde, [Note: Iohn.vii.f. ] he is a prophete.

18 But the Iewes dyd not beleue the man, howe that he had ben blynde, and receaued his syght, vntyll they called the father and mother of hym that had receaued his syght:

19 And they asked them, saying: Is this your sonne, whom ye saye was borne blynde? Howe doeth he nowe see then?

20 His father & mother aunswered them, and sayde: We knowe that this is our [Page] sonne, and that he was borne blynde:

21 But by what meanes he now seeth, we can not tell: Or who hath opened his eyes, can not we tell. He is olde inough, aske him, let him aunswere for himselfe.

22 Such wordes spake his father & mother, because they feared the Iewes: For the Iewes had decreed alreedy, that yf any man dyd confesse that he was Christe, [Note: Iohn.xii.f. ] he shoulde be excommunicate out of the synagogue.

23 Therefore sayde his father & mother: he is olde inough, aske hym.

24 Then agayne called they the man that was blynde, and sayde vnto hym: Geue God the prayse, we knowe that this man is a sinner.

25 He aunswered, and sayde: Whether he be a sinner or no, I can not tell: One thyng I am sure of, that wheras I was blynde, nowe I see.

26 Then sayde they to hym agayne: What dyd he to thee? Howe opened he thyne eyes?

F

27 He aunswered them: I tolde you yer whyle, and ye dyd not heare. Wherefore woulde ye heare it agayne? Wyll ye also be his disciples?

28 Then rayted they hym, and sayde, Be thou his disciple: We are Moyses disciples.

29 We are sure, that God spake vnto Moyses: As for this felowe, we knowe not from whence he is.

30 The man answered, and sayde vnto them: this is a marueylous thyng, that ye wote not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened myne eyes.

31 For we be sure, that God heareth not sinners: But yf any man be a worshipper of God, and obedient vnto his wyll, hym heareth he.

32 Sence the worlde began, was it not hearde, that any man opened the eyes of one that was borne blynde.

33 If this man were not of God, he coulde haue done nothyng.

34 They answered, & sayde vnto hym: Thou art altogether borne in sinne, and doest thou teache vs? And they cast hym out.

G  
35 Iesus hearde that they had excommunicate hym, & when he had founde hym, he sayde vnto hym: Doest thou beleue on the sonne of God?

36 He answered and sayde: Who is he Lorde, that I myght beleue on hym?

37 And Iesus sayde vnto hym: Thou hast both seene hym, [Note: Iohn.iiii.c. ] and it is he that talketh with thee.

38 And he sayde, Lorde, I beleue: And [Note: [b] He declared his fayth, by his outwarde profession. ] he worshipped hym. >

39 And Iesus sayde vnto hym: I am come vnto iudgement into this worlde, that they which see not, myght see: and that they which see, myght be made blynde.

40 And some of the pharisees which were with hym, hearde these wordes, & sayde vnto hym: Are we blynde also?

41 Iesus sayde vnto them, [Note: Iohn.xv.d. ] Yf ye were blynde, ye shoulde haue no sinne: But nowe ye say, we see, therefore your sinne remayneth.

## The .x. Chapter.

1 Christe the true sheepearde & the doore, 4 Christes sheepe heare his voyce, and wyll not heare a straunger. 10 12 False sheepeardees are hyrelinges and thieues. 15 Christe wyllingly geueth his life for his sheepe. 16 The calling of the Gentiles. 19 Discention among the Iewes about his wordes, 24 they aske yf he be Christe. 26 Wherefore the Iewes beleue not. 31 The Iewes woulde haue stoned hym, and called his preachyng blasphemie. 34 Princes, called Gods. 37 Christes workes declared hym to be God.

A

1 **Veryly**, veryly, I say vnto you: He that entreth not in by ye doore into the sheepfolde, but clymeth vp some other way, the same is a thiefe, and a robber.

2 But he that entreth in by the doore, is the sheepearde of the sheepe.

3 To hym the porter openeth, and the sheepe heare his voyce, and [Note: Prou.x.d. ] he calleth his owne sheepe by name, and leadeth them out.

4 And when he hath sent foorth his owne sheepe, he goeth before them, and the sheepe folowe hym: for they knowe his voyce.

5 A straunger wyll they not folowe, but wyll flee from hym: for they knowe not the voyce of straungers.

6 This prouerbe spake Iesus vnto them: But they vnderstoode not what [Page] thynges they were, which he spake vnto them.

B

7 Then sayde Iesus vnto them againe. Ueryly, veryly, I say vnto you: [Note: Iohn.xiiii.a. ] I am the doore of the sheepe.

8 All, [Note: [a] He meaneth, all false prophets, who led not men to Christe, but from hym to others, or els, preached them selues. ] euen as many as came before me, are thieues and robbers: but the sheepe dyd not heare them.

9 I am the doore: by me yf any man enter in, he shalbe safe, and shall go in and out, and fynde pasture.

10 A thiefe commeth not, but for to steale, kyll, & to destroy: I am come, that they myght haue lyfe, and that they myght haue it more aboundantly. >

C

11 < I am [Note: Ezech.24.f. Miche.v.a. ] the good sheepearde. A good sheepearde, geueth his lyfe for the sheepe.

12 An hyrelyng, and he which is not the sheepearde, neither the sheepe are his owne, seeth the wolfe commyng, and leaueth the sheepe, and fleeth, and the wolfe catcheth, & scattereth the sheepe.

13 The hyrelyng fleeth, because he is an hyrelyng, and careth not for the sheepe.

14 I am the good sheepearde, & [Note: i.Tim.ii.c. ] knowe my sheepe, and am knowen of myne.

15 [Note: Math.xi.d. Luk.x.d. ] As the father knoweth me, euen so, knowe I also the father: And [Note: Mark.x.f. ] I geue my lyfe for the sheepe.

16 And other [Note: [b] To wit, they among ye gentiles, whe they were straungers from Gods Church. ] sheepe I haue, which are not of this folde: them also must I bryng, & they shall heare my voyce, and there shalbe one folde, and one sheepearde. >

D

17 Therefore doth my father loue me, because I put my lyfe [from me,] that I myght take it agayne.



18 No man taketh it from me: but I put it away of my selfe. I haue power to put it from me, and I haue power to take it agayne. This commaundement haue I receaued of my father.

19 There was a discention therefore agayne among the Iewes, for these sayinges.

20 And many of them sayde: [Note: Math ix.d. and .xii.b. ] He hath the deuyll, & is mad, why heare ye him?

21 Other sayd: [Note: Mark.iii.b. Luk.xi.b. Iohn.viii.f. ] These are not ye wordes of hym that hath the deuyll. Can the deuyll open the eyes of the blynde?

E

22 < And it was at Hierusalem, the feast of the dedication, and it was wynter.

23 And Iesus walked in the temple, euen in [Note: iii Reg. vi.a. Actes.iii.b. and v.c. ] Solomons porche.

24 Then came the Iewes rounde about hym, and sayde vnto hym: Howe long doest thou make vs doubt? Yf thou be Christe, tell vs playnely.

25 Iesus aunswered them: I tolde you, and ye beleue not. The workes that I do in my fathers name, they beare witnesse of me.

26 But ye beleue not, because ye are not of my sheepe, as I sayde vnto you.

27 [Note: Iohn.viii.f. ] My sheepe heare my voyce, and I knowe them, and they folowe me:

F

28 And I geue vnto them eternall lyfe, and they shal neuer perishe, neither shal any man plucke them out of my hande.

29 My father which gaue them me, is greater then all: and no man is able to take them out of my fathers hande.

30 [Note: Iohn.xiii.a. and .xvii.c. ] I and my father are one.

31 [Note: Iohn.viii.g. ] Then the Iewes agayne toke vp stones, to stone hym [withall.]

32 Iesus aunswered them, Many good workes haue I shewed you from my father: for which of the do ye stone me?

33 The Iewes aunswered hym, saying: For thy good workes [sake] we stone thee not, [Note: Iohn.v.d. ] but for thy blasphemie, and because that thou beyng a man, makest thy selfe God.

34 Iesus aunswered them: Is it not written in your lawe, [Note: Psal.82.a. Exo.xxii.b. ] I sayde, ye are Gods?

G

35 If he called them Gods, vnto whom the worde of God was spoken, and the scripture can not be broken:

36 Say ye of hym whom the father hath sanctified and sent into the worlde, thou blasphemest, [Note: Mat.xxvi.f Mar.xiiii.g. Luk.xxii.g ] because I saide I am the sonne of God?

37 [Note: Iohn.ix.a. and .xv.d. ] Yf I do not the workes of my father, beleue me not:

38 But yf I do, and yf ye beleue not me, beleue the workes: that ye may knowe and beleue, that the father is in me, and I in hym. >

39 [Note: Math.xxi.b Iohn.vii.g. ] Agayne they went about to take hym: and he escaped out of their hande,

40 And went away againe beyonde Iordane, into the place [Note: Iohn.i.d. ] where Iohn before had baptized, and there he abode.

41 And many resorted vnto hym, and sayde: Iohn dyd no miracle, but [Note: Iohn.iii.d. ] all thynges that Iohn spake of this man were true.

42 And many beleued on hym there.

[Page]

## The .xj. Chapter.

43 Christe raysed Lazarus from death. 45 Certayne Iewes beleue in Christe. 47 The pharisees take councell agaynst hym. 50 Caiphaz prophecieth that one must dye for the people. 54 Christe fleeth the pharisees. 57 The hie priestes and the pharisees, commaunded Christe to be taken.

<sup>A</sup>

1 < **A certayne** man was sicke, named Lazarus of Bethanie, the towne of Marie and her sister Martha.

2 (It was that Marie [Note: Luk.vii.f. ] which anoynted ye Lorde with oyntment, and wyped his feete with her heere, whose brother Lazarus was sicke.)

3 Therefore, his sisters sent vnto hym, saying: Lorde, beholde, he whom thou louest is sicke.

4 When Iesus hearde that, he sayde, this infirmitie is not vnto death: but for the glory of God, that the sonne of God, [Note: Iohn.ix.a. ] myght be glorified therby.

5 Iesus loued Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.

6 When he had hearde therefore that he was sicke, he abode two dayes styll in the same place where he was.

<sup>B</sup>

7 Then after that, sayde he to his disciples: Let vs go into Iurie agayne.

8 His disciples sayde vnto hym: Maister, the Iewes lately [Note: Iohn.vii.d. ] sought to stone thee, and wylt thou go thither agayne?

9 Iesus answered: Are there not twelue houres of the day? If any man walke in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the lyght of this worlde.

10 But yf a man walke in the nyght, he stumbleth, because there is no lyght in hym.

11 These thynges sayde he, and after that, he sayde vnto them: Our friende Lazarus [Note: Math.ix.c. Luk.viii.g. Mark.v.d. ] slepeth, but I go to wake hym out of slepe.

12 Then sayde his disciples: Lorde, yf he slepe, he shall do well inough.

13 Howbeit, Iesus spake of his death, but they thought that he had spoken of the naturall slepe.

14 Then sayde Iesus vnto the playnely, Lazarus is dead:

15 And I am glad for your sakes, that I was not there, because ye may beleue. Neuerthelesse, let vs go vnto hym.

C  
16 Then sayde [Note: Iohn.xx.f. ] Thomas, which is called Didimus, vnto his felowe disciples: let vs also go, that we may dye with hym.

17 Then went Iesus, and founde that he had lyen in his graue, foure dayes alreedy.

18 (Bethanie was nye vnto Hierusalem, about [Note: which is, about two myles. ] fifteene furlonges of.)

19 And many of the Iewes came to Martha and Marie to comfort them ouer their brother.

20 Martha assoone as she hearde that Iesus was commyng, went and met hym: but Marie sate styll in the house.

21 < Then sayde Martha vnto Iesus: Lorde, [Note: Iohn.xi.d. ] yf thou haddest ben here, my brother had not dyed:

22 Neuerthelesse, nowe I knowe that whatsoever thou askest of God, God wyll geue it thee.

23 Iesus sayth vnto her: Thy brother shall ryse agayne.

24 Martha sayth vnto hym: I knowe that he shall ryse agayne in the resurrection at the last day.

25 Iesus sayth vnto her, I am the resurrection, and the lyfe: [Note: Iohn.ia. and .xiii.a. Iohn.iii.b. Rom.i.b. Abac.ii.a. Heb.x.g. ] He that beleueth on me, yea, though he were dead, yet shall he lyue.

26 And whosoever lyueth, and beleueth on me, shall neuer dye. Beleuest thou this?

27 She sayde vnto hym: Yea Lorde, I beleue that thou art Christe the sonne of God, which shoulde come into the worlde. >

D

28 And assoone as she had so sayde, she went her way, and called Marie her sister secretly, saying: The Maister is come, and calleth for thee.

29 Assoone as she hearde that, she arose quickly, and came vnto hym.

30 Iesus was not yet come into the towne: but was in that place where Martha met hym.

31 The Iewes then which were with her in the house & comforted her, when they sawe Marie that she rose vp hastelye, and went out, folowed her, saying: She goeth vnto the graue, to weepe there.

32 Then when Marie was come where [Page] Iesus was, and sawe hym, she fell downe at his feete, and sayth vnto him: Lorde, [Note: Iohn.xi.c. ] yf thou haddest ben here, my brother had not ben dead.

33 Whe Iesus therefore sawe her weepe, and the Iewes also weepyng which came with her, he groned [Note: [a] For compassion, feling in hym selfe our miseries. ] in the spirite, and was troubled in hym selfe.

34 And sayde: Where haue ye layde him? They sayde vnto hym: Lorde, come, and see.

35 And [Note: Luk.xix.f. ] Iesus wept.

36 Then sayde the Iewes: Beholde howe he loued hym.

E

37 And some of them sayde: Coulede not he which [Note: Iohn.ix.b. ] opened the eyes of the blinde, haue made also, that this man shoulde not haue dyed?

38 Iesus therefore agayne groned in him selfe, and came to the graue. It was a caue, and a stone layde on it.

39 Iesus sayde: Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of hym that was dead, sayde vnto hym, Lorde, by this tyme he stinketh: For he hath ben dead foure dayes.

40 Iesus sayde vnto her: Sayde I not vnto thee, that yf thou dyddest beleue, thou shouldest see the glory of God?

41 Then they toke away the stone from the place where the dead was layde. And Iesus lyft vp his eyes, and sayde: Father, I thanke thee that thou hast hearde me.

42 Howbeit, I knowe, that thou hearest me alwayes: but [Note: Iohn.xii.d. ] because of the people which stande by, I sayde it, that they maye beleue that thou hast sent me.

43 And when he thus had spoken, he cryed with a loude voyce: Lazarus, come foorth.

F

44 [Note: Iohn.v.c. ] And he that was dead, came foorth, bounde hande and foote, with graue clothes, and his face was bounde with a napkyn. Iesus sayde vnto them: loose hym, and let hym go.

45 Then many of the Iewes which came to Marie, and had seene ye thynges which Iesus dyd, [Note: Iohn.vii.c. ] beleued on hym. >

46 But some of them went their wayes to the pharisees, and tolde them what Iesus had done.

47 < [Note: Mat.xxvi.a Mar.xiiii.a. Luk.xxii.a. Actes.iiii. c. ] Then gathered the hie priestes and the pharisees a councell, and sayde: What do we? For this man doth many miracles.

48 If we let hym scape thus, all men wyll beleue on him, and the Romaynes [Note: [b] By the same way that they thought to escape daunger, they fell into it. ] shall come, and take away both our rowme and the people.

49 And one of them named Caiaphas, beyng the hie priest that same yere, sayde vnto them: Ye perceaue nothyng at all,

50 Nor consider, that [Note: Ioh.xviii.b. ] it is expedient for vs, that one man dye for the people, and not that all the people perishe.

51 This spake he, not of hym selfe, but beyng hie priest that same yere, he prophesied that Iesus shoulde dye for the people,

52 And not for the people only: but that he shoulde gather together in one, the chyldren of God, that were scattered abrode.

53 [Note: Mat.xxvi.a Mar.xiiii.a ] Then from that day foorth, they toke councell together, for to put hym to death.

G

54 Iesus therefore walked no more openlye among the Iewes: but went his way thence, vnto a countrey nye to a wilderness, into a citie which is called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

55 [Note: Mat.xxvi.a Mar.xiiii.a. Luk.xxii.a. ] And the Iewes Easter was nye at hande, and many went out of the countrey vp to Hierusale before the Easter, to purifie them selues.

56 Then sought they for Iesus, & spake among them selues, as they stode in the temple: [Note: Iohn.vii.b. ] What thynke ye, seeyng he commeth not to the feast day?

57 The hie priestes and pharisees [Note: Iohn.xi.e. ] had geuen a commaundement, that yf any man knewe where he were, he shoulde shewe it, that they myght take hym. >

[Page]

## The .xij. Chapter.

2 Christe suppeth with Martha & Lazarus. 3 Marie annoynteth Iesus feete. 5 Couetous Iudas murmureth. 7 Christe excuseth Maries fact. 10 The chiefe priestes take councell to kyl Lazarus. 14 Iesus sitting on an Asse, rideth into Hierusalem. 20 The Gretians desyre to see Christe. 25 The fruites of persecution. 27 The prayer of Christe. 28 A voyce from heauen. 36 Christe hydeth hym selfe from the Iewes. 37

Wherefore the Iewes beleue not. 42 Diuers rulers that beleued in him, feared to be excomunicated. 48  
Gods worde is iudge.

A

1 [Note: Math.xvi. a Mar.xiiii.a. Luk.xxii.a. ] < **Then** Iesus, sixe dayes before the Passouer, came to Bethanie, where Lazarus had ben dead, whom he raysed from death.

2 There they made hym a supper, and Martha serued: but Lazarus was one of them that sate at the table with hym.

3 [Note: Luk.vii.f. ] Then toke Marie a pounce of oyntment of Spike narde, very costly, and annoynted Iesus feete, and wyped his feete with her heere: and the house was fylled with the odoure of the oyntment.

4 [Note: Mat.xxvi.a Mar.xiiii.a. ] Then sayde one of his disciples, euen Iudas Iscariot Simons sonne, which shoulde betraye hym.

5 Why was not this oyntment solde for three hundred pence, and geuen to the poore?

6 This he sayde, not that he cared for the poore: but because he was a thiefe, and [Note: Iohn.xiii.d. ] had the [Note: [a] The wicked thinke all lost, that scapeth their handes. ] bagge, and bare that which was geuen.

7 Then sayde Iesus: Let her alone, agaynst the day of my burying hath she kept this.

8 For the poore alwayes shall ye haue with you: but me haue ye not alwayes.

9 Much people of the Iewes therfore had knowledge that he was there. And they came not for Iesus sake only: but that they might se Lazarus also, [Note: Iohn.xi.b. ] who he raysed from death.

B

10 But the hie priestes helde a councell, that they myght put Lazarus to death also,

11 Because that for his sake, many of the Iewes went away, and beleued on Iesus. >

12 [Note: Math.xxi.a Mark.xi.a. ] On the next day, much people that were come to ye feast, when they hearde that Iesus should come to Hierusalem,

13 Toke branches of paulme trees, and went foorth to meete hym, and cryed: [Note: [b] That is, saue I besече thee. ] Hosanna, blessed is he that in the name of the Lorde commeth, kyng of Israel.

14 And Iesus got a young Asse, and sate thereon, as it is written:

15 [Note: Esa.lxii.d. Zach.ix.b. Iohn.xii.c. ] Feare not daughter of Sion, beholde, thy kyng commeth, sitting on an Asses colte.

C

16 These thynges vnderstoode not his disciples at the first: but when Iesus was glorified, the remembred they that such thynges were written of him, & that such thynges they had done vnto hym.

17 The people that was with him, when he called Lazarus out of his graue, and raysed hym from death,

bare recorde.

18 Therefore met hym the people also, because they hearde that he had done such a miracle.

19 The pharisees therefore sayde among them selues: perceauē ye, howe ye preuayle nothyng? Beholde, [all the whole] worlde goeth after hym.

20 [Note: 3 Reg.8.c. Actes.viii.c. ii Par.vi.f. ] There were certaine Grekes among them, that came to worship at the feast:

21 The same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida, [a citie] of Galilee, and desired hym, saying: Syr, we woulde [fayne] see Iesus.

22 Philip came and tolde Andrewe: And agayne, Andrewe & Philip tolde Iesus.

23 And Iesus aunswered them, saying: [Note: Iohn.xiii.d. ] The houre is come, that the sonne of man must be glorified.

24 < Ueryly, veryly, I say vnto you, [Note: Esa.liii.d. i Cor.xv.c. ] except the wheate come fall into the grounde, and dye, it abideth alone: If it dye, it bryngeth fourth much fruite.

D

25 [Note: Math.x.d. and xvi.d. Mark.viii.d Luk.xii.b. ] He that loueth his lyfe, shall destroy it: and he that hateth his lyfe in this worlde, shall kepe it vnto lyfe eternall.

26 If any man minister vnto me, let hym folowe me: And [Note: Iohn. xiii.a. and xvii.d. ] where I am, there shall also my minister be. If any man minister vnto me, hym wyll my father honour. >

27 Nowe is my soule troubled, and what shall I say? Father, saue me from this houre: but therfore came I into this houre.

28 Father, glorifie thy name. Then came there a voyce from heauen [saying] I haue both glorified it, and wyll glorifie it agayne.

[Page]

29 The people therfore that stode by and hearde it, sayde that it thundred: Other sayde, an Angel spake to hym.

30 Iesus aunswered and sayde: This voyce came, not because of me, [Note: Iohn.xi.c. ] but for your sakes.

E

31 < Nowe is the iudgement of this worlde: [Note: Iohn.xv.d. and .xvi.b. ] Nowe shall the prince of this worlde be cast out.

32 And I, yf I were lyft vp from the earth, wyll drawe all men vnto me.

33 (This he sayde, signifyng what death he shoulde dye.)

34 The people aunswered him: We haue hearde out of the lawe, [Note: Psal.cx.a. Esai.ix.b. Dan.vii.d. Miche.v.a.

] that Christe bydeth euer: and howe sayest thou, the sonne of man must be lyft vp? Who is that sonne of man?

35 Then Iesus sayde vnto them: Yet a litle while is the light with you. [Note: Ephe.v.c. ] Walke while ye haue light, lest the darknesse come on you: For he that walketh in the darke, wotteth not whither he goeth.

36 Whye ye haue lyght, beleue on the lyght, that ye may be the chyldren of the lyght. > These thynges spake Iesus, and departed, & hyd hym selfe from the.

F

37 But though he had done so many miracles before them, yet beleued not they on hym,

38 That the saying of Esaias the prophete myght be fulfilled, which he spake: [Note: Esai.liiii.a. Rom.x.c. ] Lorde, who shall beleue our saying? And to whom is the arme of the Lorde declared?

39 Therefore coulde they not beleue, because that Esaias sayth agayne:

40 [Note: Esai.vi.c. Mat.xiii.b. Mark.iiii.b. Luk.viii.b. Act.xxviii.f ] He hath blynded their eyes, and hardened their heart, that they shoulde not see with their eyes, & lest they should vnderstande with their hearte, & should be conuerted, and I should heale them.

41 Such thynges sayde Esaias, when he sawe his glory, and spake of hym.

42 Neuertheless, among ye chiefe rulers also, many beleued on hym: But because of the pharisees, they dyd not confesse hym, [Note: Iohn.ix.c. ] lest they should be excommunicate.

43 [Note: Iohn.v.g. ] For they loued the prayse of men, more then the prayse of God.

G

44 Iesus cryed, and sayde: He that beleueth on me, beleueth not on me, but on hym that sent me.

45 And he that seeth me, seeth hym that sent me.

46 < I am come [Note: Iohn.i.a. iii c.viii.b. ] a lyght into ye worlde, that whosoouer beleueth on me, should not byde in darknesse.

47 And yf any man heare my wordes, and beleue not, I iudge hym not: For [Note: Iohn.iii.b. ] I came not to iudge the worlde, but to saue the worlde.

48 He that refuseth me, & receaueth not my wordes, hath one that iudgeth him: The worde that I haue spoken, the same shall iudge hym in the last day.

49 For I haue not spoken of my selfe: but the father which sent me, he gaue me a commaundement what I should say, and what I shoulde speake.

50 And I knowe that his commaundement is lyfe euerlastyng. Whatsoeuer I speake therefore, euen as the father bad me, so I speake. >



## The .xiiij. Chapter.

5 Christe wassheth the Apostles feete. 8 Peter refuseth to be washed, but afterwarde consenteth. 10 The Apostles are cleane. 13 Christe, Lorde, and Maister. 14 Exhortyng to humilitie and charitie. 26 Christe sheweth who shall betray hym. 27 Satan entreth into Iudas. 30 He goeth out to the pharisees. 34 Christe exhorteth ye disciples to loue. 35 Wherby Christes disciples are knowen. 38 He forewarneth Peters denyall.

A

1 < **Before** the feast of the Passouer, when Iesus knewe that his houre was come, yt he shoulde departe out of this world vnto the father: When he loued his which were in the world, vnto the ende he loued them.

2 And when supper was ended (after that the deuyll had [Note: Math.26 b. Mar.xiiii.b. ] put in the heart of Iudas Iscariot Simons sonne, to betray hym)

3 Iesus knowyng that [Note: Math.xi.d. and 28.d. Luk.x.d. Iohn.iii.d. ] the father had geuen all thynges into his handes, and that he was come from God, and went to God:

4 He rose from supper, and layde asyde his vpper garmentes: And when he had taken a towel, he gyrded hym selfe.

5 After that, he powred water into a bason, and began to washe the disciples feete, and to wype them with the towel wherwith he was gyrded.

[Page]

6 Then came he to Simon Peter. And Peter sayde vnto hym: Lorde, doest thou wasshe my feete?

7 Iesus aunswered, & sayde vnto hym: What I do, thou wotest not nowe, but thou shalt knowe hereafter.

8 Peter sayth vnto hym: Thou shalt neuer wasshe my feete. Iesus aunswered hym: If I wasshe thee not, thou hast no part with me.

9 Simon Peter sayth vnto him: Lorde, not my feete only, but also the handes, and the head.

B

10 Iesus sayth to hym: He that is washed, nedeth not saue to washe his feete, but is cleane euery whit. And ye are cleane, [Note: Iohn.vi.g. ] but not all.

11 For he knewe who it was that should betray hym. Therefore sayde he: ye are not all cleane.

12 So, after he had washed their feete, and receaued his clothes, and was set downe agayne, he sayde vnto them: Wote ye what I haue done to you?

13 Ye call me Maister, and Lorde, and ye say well, for so am I.

14 If I then your Lorde and Maister, haue wasshed your feete, ye also ought to wasshe one anothers feete.

15 For [Note: Ephe.v.a. i Peter.ii.d. ] I haue geuen you an ensample, that ye shoulde do as I haue done to you.  
>

16 Ueryly, veryly, I say vnto you: [Note: Math.x.c. Luk.vi.f. Iohn.xv.c. ] The seruaunt is not greater the his maister, neither the messenger greater then he that sent hym.

C

17 Yf ye knowe these thynges, [Note: Luk.xi.d. ] happy are ye, yf ye do them.

18 I speake not of you all. I knowe whom I haue chosen. But that the scripture may be fulfilled: [Note: Psal.xli.b. ] He that eateth bread with me, hath lyft vp [Note: [a] Under pretence of frendship, seeketh his destruction. ] his heele agaynst me.

19 Nowe [Note: Iohn.xiiii.d and .xvi.a. ] tell I you before it come: that when it is come to passe, ye myght beleue that I am he.

20 Ueryly, veryly, I say vnto you, [Note: Math.x.d. Luk.ix.c. Mark.ix.c. ] he that receaueth whomsoeuer I sende, receaueth me: And he that receaueth me, receaueth hym that sent me.

21 When Iesus had thus sayde, he was troubled in spirite, and testified, & saide: Ueryly, veryly, I say vnto you, that [Note: Math.29.b. Mar.xiiii.c. Luk.xxii.b. ] one of you shall betray me.

22 Then the disciples loked one on another, doubtyng of whom he spake.

23 There was one of Iesus disciples, leanyng on Iesus bosome, [Note: Iohn.xix.e. 20 a. & 21.f. ] [euen he] whom Iesus loued.

24 To hym beckened Simon Peter therefore, that he shoulde aske who it was of whom he spake.

25 He then, when he leaned on Iesus brest, sayde vnto hym: Lorde, who is it?

D

26 Iesus aunswered: He it is to whom I geue a sop when I haue dipped it. And he wet the sop, and gaue it to Iudas Iscariot, Simons sonne.

27 And after the sop, Satan entred into hym. Then sayde Iesus vnto hym: That thou doest, do quickly.

28 That wiste no man at the table, for what intent he spake vnto hym.

29 Some of the thought, because [Note: Iohn.xii.a. ] Iudas had the bagge, that Iesus had sayde vnto hym, bye those thynges that we haue neede of agaynst the feast: or, that he shoulde geue something to ye poore.

30 Assoone then, as he had receaued the sop, he went immediatly out: and it was nyght.

31 Therefore, when he was gone out, Iesus sayd, [Note: Iohn.xii.d. and xvii.a. ] Nowe is the sonne of man glorified: And God is glorified in hym.

32 Yf God be glorified in hym, God shall also glorifie hym in hym selfe, and shall strayghtway glorifie hym.

33 < Litle children, yet a litle whyle am I with you. [Note: Iohn.vii.c. ] Ye shall seeke me: and as I sayde vnto the Iewes, whither I go, thither can ye not come. Also to you say I nowe:

34 [Note: Iohn.xv.a. ] A newe commaundement geue I vnto you, that ye loue together, as I haue loued you, that euen so ye loue one another.

35 [Note: i Iohn.ii.a. ] By this shall all men knowe that ye are my disciples, yf ye haue loue one to another.

36 Simon Peter saide vnto him: Lorde, whither goest thou? Iesus aunswere hym: Whither I go, thou canst not folowe me nowe, but [Note: Iohn.xi.f. Actes.xii.a. ] thou shalt folowe me afterwarde. >

37 Peter sayde vnto hym: Lorde, why can not I folowe thee nowe? [Note: Math.26.c. Mar.xiiii.c. Luk.xxii.d ] I wyll ieoparde my lyfe for thy sake.

38 Iesus aunswere hym: Wylt thou ieoparde thy lyfe for my sake? Uerly, veryly, I saye vnto thee, [Note: Iohn.xviii.c ] the Cocke shall not crowe, tyll thou haue denyed me thryse.

[Page]

## ¶ The .xiiiij. Chapter.

1 He armeth his disciples with consolation agaynst trouble, Christes diuinitie. 6 Christe the way, the trueth, and the lyfe. 9 Christe and the father one. 13 To aske of God in the name of Christe. 26 He promiseth the spirite to comfort them, of loue, and keping Christes commaundement, the spirite is our teacher. 27 He promiseth his peace.

A

1 < **And** he sayde vnto his disciples,] Let not your hearte be troubled: Ye beleue in god, beleue also in me.

2 In my fathers house, are many dwellyng places: If it were not so, I woulde haue tolde you. I go to prepare a place for you.

3 And yf I go to prepare a place for you, I wyll come agayne, and receaue you, [euen] vnto my selfe: [Note: Iohn.xii.d. and .xvii.d. ] that where I am, there may ye be also.

4 And whither I go, ye knowe, and the way ye knowe.

5 Thomas sayth vnto hym: Lorde, we knowe not whither thou goest: And howe is it possible for vs to

knowe the waye?

6 Iesus sayth vnto hym: I am the way, and the trueth, and the [Note: Iohn.i.a. and xi.c. ] lyfe. [Note: Math.xi.d. Iohn.vi.c. ] No man cometh vnto the father, but by me.

7 If ye had knowen me, ye had knowen my father also. And nowe ye knowe hym, and haue seene hym.  
B

8 Philip sayth vnto hym: Lorde, shewe vs the father, and it suffiseth vs.

9 Iesus sayth vnto hym: Haue I ben so long tyme with you, & yet hast thou not knowen me? Philip, he that hath seene me, hath seene the father. And howe sayest thou then, shewe vs the father?

10 Beleuest thou not, that [Note: Iohn.x.f. ] I am in the father, & the father in me? The wordes that I speake vnto you, I speake not of my selfe: but the father that dwelleth in me, is he that doth the workes.

11 Beleue me, that I am in the father, [Note: Iohn.xvi.a. ] and the father in me: Or els beleue me for the workes sake.

12 Ueryly, veryly I say vnto you, he that beleueth on me, the workes that I do, the same shal he do also, and greater workes then these shall he do, because I go vnto the father.

13 [Note: Mat.xvii.a. and xxi.c. Mark.xi.d. Luk.xi.b. ] And whatsoever ye aske in my name, that wyll I do, that the father may be glorified in the sonne.

14 If ye shall aske any thing in my name, I wyll do it. >

15 < If ye loue me, kepe my commaundementes,

16 And I wyll pray the father, and he shall geue you another comforter, that he may byde with you for euer:

17 Euen the spirite of trueth, whom the worlde can not receaue, because the worlde seeth hym not, neither knoweth hym. But ye knowe hym: For he dwelleth with you, and shalbe in you.

18 [Note: Math.18.d. ] I wyll not leaue you comfortlesse, but wyll come to you.

19 Yet a litle whyle, and the worlde shall see me no more: but ye shall see me, because I lyue, and ye shall lyue [also.]

20 That day shall ye knowe, that I am in my father, and you in me, & I in you.

C

21 [Note: Iohn.xv.a. i Iohn.v.a. ii Iohn.i.a. ] He that hath my commaundementes, and kepeth them, the same is he that loueth me: And he that loueth me, shalbe loued of my father, and I wyll loue him, and wyll shew myne owne selfe to hym.

22 [Note: Actes.xv.d. ] Iudas sayth vnto hym, not [Iudas] Iscariot: Lorde, what is done, that thou wylt shewe

thy selfe vnto vs, and not vnto the worlde?

23 Iesus aunswered, & sayde vnto hym: If a man loue me, he wyll kepe my sayinges: and my father wyll loue hym, and we wyll come vnto hym, and dwell with hym.

24 He that loueth me not, kepeth not my sayinges: And the word which ye heare, is not myne, but the fathers which sent me.

25 These thynges haue I spoken vnto you, beyng yet present with you.

D

26 But the comforter, [which is] the holy ghost, [Note: Iohn.xx.d. and xvi.b. Actes.ii.a. ] whom the father wyll sende in my name, he shal teach you all thinges, & bryng all thynges to your remembraunce whatsoever I haue sayde vnto you.

27 Peace I leaue with you, my peace I geue vnto you: Not as the worlde geueth, geue I vnto you. Let not your heartes be greeued, neither feare.

28 Ye haue hearde howe I sayde vnto you, I go away, and come agayne vnto [Page] you. Yf ye loued me, ye woulde veryly reioyce, because I sayde, I go vnto the father: for the father is greater then I.

29 [Note: Iohn.xiii.c. and .xvi.a. ] And nowe haue I shewed you before it come, that when it is come to passe, ye myght beleue.

30 Hereafter wyll I not talke many wordes vnto you: For the [Note: [a] Satan is the prince of ye world, because he exerciseth tiranie in this worlde, and worldlynges are subiect vnto hym. ] prince of this worlde cometh, and hath nought in [Note: [b] Because Christe was without sinne. ] me.

31 But that the worlde may knowe that I loue the father: And as the father gaue me commaundement, euen so do I. > Ryse, let vs go hence.

## ¶ The .xv. Chapter.

5 The consolation betweene Christe and his members, vnder the parable of the vyne. 7 16 We must pray in the name of Christe. 9 Christes loue to warde vs. 12 He exhorteth to mutuall loue. 20 Of afflictions for Christes sake. 26 The office of the holy ghoste when he commeth.

A

1 < **I am** [Note: Eccle.24.c. ] the true vine, and my father is the husbandman.

2 Euery braunche that beareth not fruite in me, he will take away: And euery braunche that beareth fruite wyll he pource, that it may bryng foorth more fruite.

3 [Note: Iohn.xiii.b. Actes.xv.b. ] Nowe are ye cleane through the worde which I haue spoken vnto you.

4 Byde in me, and I in you. As the braunche can not beare fruite of it selfe, except it byde in the vine: no more can ye, except ye [Note: [a] Those bryng foorth no fruite, that are not graft to Christe. ] abyde in me.

5 I am the vine, ye are the braunches. He that abyde in me, and I in hym, the same bryngeth foorth much fruite: For without me can ye do nothyng.

6 Yf a man byde not in me, he is cast foorth as a braunch, and withereth, and men gather them, and cast them into the fyre, and they burne.

7 [Note: Math.xxi.c Iohn.iii.d. Mark.xi.d. Iohn.xvi.f. Iacob.i.a. ] Yf ye byde in me, and my wordes abyde in you, aske what ye wyll, and it shalbe done for you. >

8 Herein is my father glorified: that ye beare much fruite, and become my disciples.

B

9 As the father hath loued me, euen so haue I loued you: Continue ye in [Note: [b] That is the loue wherwith Christe loued vs. ] my loue.

10 Yf ye kepe my commaundementes, ye shall abyde in my loue, euen as I haue kept my fathers commaundementes, and abyde in his loue.

11 These thynges haue I spoken vnto you, that my ioy might remayne in you, and that your ioy myght be full.

12 < [Note: Iohn.xiii.d. i Iohn.iii.d. ] This is my commaundement, that ye loue together, as I haue loued you.

13 Greater loue hath no man, then this: yt a man bestowe his life for his frendes.

14 Ye are my frendes, yf ye do whatsoeuer I commaunde you.

15 Hencefoorth call I you not seruautes: for the seruaunt knoweth not what his Lorde doeth. But you haue I called frendes, for all [Note: [c] So that there is nothyng omitted, that is necessarie for our saluation. ] thynges that I haue hearde of my father, haue I made knowen to you.

C

16 Ye haue not chosen me, but I haue chosen you, and ordayned you, to go, and bryng foorth fruite, and that your fruite shoulde remayne, that whatsoeuer ye aske of the father in my name, he may geue it you.

>

17 < This commaunde I you, that ye loue together.

18 Yf the worlde hate you, ye knowe that it hated me before it hated you.

19 If ye were of the worlde, the worlde would loue his owne: Howbeit, because ye are not of the worlde, but I haue chosen you out of the worlde: therefore [Note: Iohn.xvii.e ] the worlde hateth you.

20 Remember the worde that I sayde vnto you: the seruaunt is not greater then the Lorde. [Note: Math.x.c.

Luk.xxi.c Mark.x.c. ] If they haue persecuted me, they wyll also persecute you. If they haue kept my saying, they wyll kepe [Note: [d] It is called their word not yt it doth disagree from Gods worde, but because they preache it. ii.Cor.iiii. ] yours also.

21 But all these thynges wyll they do vnto you for my names sake, because they haue not knowe hym that sent me.

D

22 Yf I had not come and spoken vnto them, they shoulde haue had no sinne: but nowe haue they nothyng to cloke their sinne withall.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my father also.

24 Yf I had not done among them, the workes which none other man dyd, they shoulde haue had no [Note: [e] They are without al excuse, that folowe not the word of God preached vnto them. ] sinne. But nowe haue they both seene, and hated not only me, but also my father,

25 But [this commeth to passe,] that the worde myght be fulfylled, that is written in their lawe: [Note: Psal.35.c. and lxix.a ] They hated me without a cause. >

[Page]

26 < But when the comforter is come, [Note: Ioh.xiiii d. and .xvi.b. Actes.ii.a. ] whom I wyl sende vnto you from the father, euen the spirite of trueth, which procedeth of the father, he shall testifie of me.

27 And ye shall beare witness also, because ye haue ben with me from the begynnyng.

## ¶ The .xvj. Chapter.

1 Christe comforteth the disciples, puttyng them in remembraunce of affliction and trouble. 7 Of the holy ghost, and his office. 17 Of Christes ascension. 23 To aske in the name of Christe. 33 Peace in Christe, afflictions in the worlde.

A

1 **These** thynges haue I sayde vnto you, because ye shoulde not be offended.

2 [Note: Math.x.b. Mat.xiiii.d. Luk.xxi.c. ] They shall excomunitate you: yea the time shall come, that who so euer kylleth you, wyll thinke that he doth God seruice.

3 [Note: Act.ix.a. Ioh.xv.d. ] And such thynges wyll they do vnto you, because they haue not knowen the father, neither yet me.

4 But these thynges haue I tolde you, that when the tyme is come, ye may remeber then that I tolde you. > These thynges sayde I not vnto you at the begynnyng, because I was present with you.

B

5 < But nowe I go my waye, to hym that sent me, & none of you asketh me, whyther goest thou.

6 But because I haue saide such thinges vnto you, your heartes are ful of sorow.

7 Neuerthelesse, I tell you the trueth, it is expedient for you that I go away. For yf I go not away, that comforter wyll not come vnto you: But yf I depart, [Note: Iohn.xiiii.d and .xv.d. Actes.ii.a. ] I wyll sende hym vnto you.

8 And whe he is come, he wyll [Note: Or. couince ] rebuke the world of sinne, and of righteousnes, and of iudgement.

9 Of sinne, because they beleue not on me.

10 Of righteousnes, because [Note: [a] That when the world shal se, after his ascension the power of his spirite, shewed vpon the apostles by hym, they shalbe copelled in conscience to confesse that he was iust, and that he was not condempned of god for a blasphemer, (as they had iudged) but approued and receaued. Act.ii.xxvii. ] I go to my father, and ye shall see me no more.

11 Of iudgement, because the prince of this worlde is iudged [alredy.]

12 I haue yet many thynges to say vnto you, but ye can not beare them away now.

13 Howebeit, when he is come, whiche is the spirite of trueth, he wyl leade you into all trueth. He shall not speake of himselfe: but whatsoever he shal heare, that shall he speake, and he wyll shewe you thynges to come.

C

14 He shall glorifie me: For he shall receaue of mine, and shal shewe vnto you.

15 [Note: Math.xi.d. &.xxviii.d. Luk.x.d. ] All thynges that the father hath, are mine: Therefore sayde I [vnto you] that he shall take of mine, & shew vnto you.

16 < [Note: Iohn.iii.d. Iohn.vii.d. ] After a whyle, and ye shall not see me, and agayne after a whyle ye shall see me: for I go to the father.

17 Then sayde some of his disciples betwene them selues: What is this that he saith vnto vs, after a whyle, & ye shal not see me, and againe, after a whyle ye shal see me: and, that I go to the father?

18 They sayde therefore: What is this that he saith, after a whyle? we can not tell what he saith.

D

19 Iesus perceaued that they would aske hym, and sayde vnto them: Do ye enquire among your selues of that I said after a whyle, and, ye shall not see me, & againe, after a while & ye shall see me?

20 Ueryly veryly I say vnto you, ye shall wepe and lament, the worlde shall reioyce: ye shall sorowe, but [Note: Iohn.xx.c. ] your sorowe shalbe turned to ioy.

E

21 A woman, when she trauallyeth, hath sorowe, because her houre is come: but assoone as she is deliuered of the childe, she remembreth no more the anguise, for ioy that a man is borne into ye world.



22 And ye nowe therefore haue sorowe: but I wyll see you [Note: [b] By the power of the holy spirite, which I wyl sende to you, wherby your heartes shalbe comforted. ] agayne, and your heartes shall reioyce, and your ioy shall no man take from you. >

23 And in that day shall ye aske me no question. < Ueryly veryly I say vnto you, whatsoeuer ye shal aske the father in my name, he wyll geue it you.

24 Hytherto haue ye asked [Note: [c] They were not yet induced to the certayne knowledge, that he was the only mediatour: & therefore that whiche they asked before, was nothing, in respecte of that whiche they shoulde aske & obtaine by fayth, whe their knowledge was grounded, & that he was ascended. ] nothyng in my name: Aske, & ye shall receaue, that your ioy may be full.

25 These thynges haue I spoken vnto you by prouerbes. The tyme wyl come, when I shall no more speake vnto you by prouerbes: but I shall shewe you playnely of my father.

[Page]

26 At that day shall ye aske in my name: And I say not vnto you, that I wyll pray vnto my father for you.

27 For the father hym selfe loueth you, because ye haue loued me, and haue beleued that I came out from God.

28 I went out from the father, and came into the worlde: Agayne, I leaue the worlde, and [Note: Iohn.xx.d. ] go to the father.

G

29 His disciples sayde vnto hym: Lo, nowe talkest thou plainely, and speakest no prouerbe.

30 Nowe are we sure [Note: Iohn.xxi.e. ] that thou knowest all thynges, & nedest not, that any man shoulde aske thee [any question:] Therefore beleue we, that thou camest from God. >

31 Iesus aunswered them: Do ye nowe beleue?

32 [Note: Zach.xiii.c. Math.xvi.c Mar.xiiii.c. ] Beholde, the houre draweth nye, and is alreedy come, that ye shalbe scattered euery man to his owne, and shall leaue me alone. And yet am I not alone: For [Note: Iohn.xiiii.b ] the father is with me.

33 These wordes haue I spoken vnto you, that in me ye myght haue peace. For in the worlde shall ye haue tribulation: but be of good cheare, I haue ouercome the worlde.

## ¶ The .xvij. Chapter.

1 Christe prayeth to his father, that their glory myght be made manifest, 9 he prayeth for his Apostles. 12 Iudas lost. 14 The Apostles hated of the worlde. 20 Christ prayeth for all those that receaue the trueth.

A

1 < **These** wordes spake Iesus, and lift vp his eyes to heauen, and sayde: Father, [Note: Iohn.xiii.d. ] the houre is come, glorifie thy sonne that thy sonne also may glorifie thee:

2 As thou hast geuen hym power ouer all fleshe, that he shoulde geue eternall life, to as many as thou hast geuen him.

3 This is [Note: i Iohn.i.a. ] lyfe eternall, that they myght knowe thee, the only true God, & Iesus Christe whom thou hast sent.

4 I haue glorified thee on the earth: [Note: Iohn.xix.f. ] I haue finished ye worke, which thou gauest me to do.

5 And nowe glorifie thou me, O father, with thine owne selfe, with the glory which I had with thee yer the worlde was.

6 I haue declared thy name vnto ye men, [Note: That is, to the Apostles. ] which thou gauest me out of ye world. Thyne they were, and thou gauest the me, and they haue kepte thy worde.

7 Nowe they haue knowen yt al thinges whatsoeuer yu hast geuen me are of thee.

8 For I haue geuen vnto them ye wordes which thou gauest me, and they haue receaued them, and haue knowe surely that I came out from thee, & they haue beleued, that thou dyddest sende me.

B

9 I pray for them: I pray not for the [Note: [a] That is, the reprobate, that seke the worlde, and not Christe. ] worlde, but for them which thou hast geuen me, for they are thyne.

10 And all myne are thyne, and thyne are myne, and I am glorified in them.

11 And nowe am I not in the worlde, and they are in the worlde, and I come to thee. > < Holy father, kepe through thine owne name, the which thou hast geuen me, that they may also be [Note: [b] That they may be ioyned together in loue, & vnitie of loue, fayth, and spirite. ] one, as we are.

12 Whyle I was with them in ye worlde, I kept them in thy name. [Note: Ioh.xviii.b. ] Those that thou gauest me, haue I kept, and none of them is lost, but that [Note: [c] That is, Iudas Iscariot. ] lost chylde, [Note: Psal.cix.a. ] that the scripture myght be fulfilled.

13 Nowe come I to thee, and these wordes speake I in the worlde, that they myght haue my ioy fulfilled in them seues.

14 I haue geuen them thy worde, and [Note: Iohn.xv.c. Sapien.ii.d. ] the worlde hath hated them, because they are not of the worlde, euen as I also am not of the worlde.

15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the worlde: but [Note: Math.vi.b. Luk.xi.a. ] that thou kepe them from euyll.

16 They are not of the worlde, as I also am not of the worlde.

17 Sanctifie them through thy trueth. Thy worde is the trueth.

18 As thou diddest sende me into ye world, eue so haue I also sent the into ye world.

19 And for their sakes sanctifie I my selfe, that they also myght be sanctified through the trueth.

20 [Neuertheless,] I pray not for them alone: but for the also, which shall beleue on me through their preachyng:

21 That they all may be [Note: Galath.iii.d ] one, as thou father art in me, and I in thee, and that they also may be one in vs: that ye world may beleue, that thou hast sent me.

[Page]

22 And the glorie which thou gauest me, I haue geuen them, that they may be one, as we also are one.

23 I in them, and thou in me: that they may be made perfecte in one, and that the worlde may knowe that thou hast sent me, and hast loued them, as thou hast loued me.

D

24 Father, I wyll that they which thou hast geuen me, [Note: Iohn.xii.d. ] be [Note: [d] That is, after they haue fulfilled their course in this lyfe, they may enioy eternall lyfe. ] with me where I am, that they may see my glorie which thou hast geuen me. For thou louedst me, before the foundation of the world.

25 [Note: Math.xi.d. Luke.x.d. ] O ryghteous father, the worlde [also] hath not knowen thee: But I haue knowen thee, and these haue knowen that thou hast sent me.

26 And I haue declared vnto them thy name, and wyll declare it, that the loue wherewith thou hast loued me, may be in them, and I in them. >

## ¶ The .xviii. Chapter.

3 Christe is betrayed by Iudas. 6 The souldiers fall backwarde. 10 Peter smyteth of Malchus eare. 13 Christe brought before Annas and Caiaphas. 15 Peter and Iohn folowed Iesus to Caiaphas house. 22 Christe stricken by a seruaunt, 23 what he aunswered. 25 Peter denied hym. 28 He is ledde before Pilate, 35 and telleth hym what his kyngdome is. 40 The Iewes aske Barabbas to be let loose.

A

1 **When** Iesus had spoken these wordes, [Note: Math.26.d. Mar.xiii.d. Luk.xxii.d. ] he went forth with his disciples ouer the brooke Cedron, where was a garden, into the whiche he entred, & his disciples.

2 Iudas also whiche betrayed hym, knewe the place? For Iesus oft tymes resorted thyther, with his disciples.

3 Iudas then, after he had receaved a bande of men, and officers of the hye priestes & pharisees, came thyther with lanternes, and torches, and weapons.

4 And Iesus, knowing all thinges that shoulde come on hym, went foorth, and sayde vnto them, whom seke ye?

5 They aunswered him: Iesus of Nazareth. Iesus sayth vnto them, I am he. Iudas also whiche betrayed hym, stode with them.

B  
6 Assoone then as he sayde vnto them I am he, they went backwarde, & fell to the grounde.

7 Then asked he them agayne, whom seke ye? They said: Iesus of Nazareth.

8 Iesus aunswered, I haue tolde you that I am he: Yf ye seke me therefore, let [Note: [a] The apostles and disciples that are with me. ] these go their way.

9 That the saying myght be fulfilled which he spake: [Note: Ioh.xvii.b. ] Of them which thou gauest me, haue I not lost one.

10 Then Simon Peter, hauing a sword, drewe it, and smote the hye priestes seruaunt, and cut of his ryght eare. The seruauntes name was Malchus.

11 Therefore sayth Iesus vnto Peter, [Note: Mat.xxvi.c Gene.ix.a. ] Put vp thy sworde into the sheathe: shall I not drynke of the cuppe whiche my father hath geuen me?

12 Then the companie, and the capitaine, and officers of the Iewes, toke Iesus, and bounde hym,

13 And led hym away to Annas first, (for he was father in lawe vnto Caiaphas,) which was ye hye priest that same yere: [And Annas sent Christe bounde vnto Caiaphas the hye priest.]

14 [Note: Iohn.xi.f. ] Caiaphas was he which gaue counsell to the Iewes, that it was expediet that one man should dye for the people.

C  
15 [Note: Mat.xxvi.f ] And Simon Peter folowed Iesus, and so did another [Note: [b] Thhat is, Iohn. ] disciple. That disciple was knowen vnto the hye priest, & went in with Iesus into the palace of the hye priest.

16 But Peter stode at the doore without. Then went out that other disciple which was knowen vnto the hye priest, and spake vnto the damosell that kept the doore, and brought in Peter.

17 Then saide the damosell, that kept the doore, vnto Peter: Art not thou also one of this mans disciples? He sayde, I am not.

18 The seruauntes and officers stode there, which had made a fire of coales, (for it was colde) and they warmed the selues. Peter also stode among them, and warmed hym.

D  
19 [Note: Mar.xiiii.f. Luk.xxii.g. ] The hye priest then asked Iesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.

20 Iesus answered him: I spake openly to the worlde, I euer taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whyther all the Iewes resort, & in secrete haue I [Page] sayde nothyng.

21 Why askest thou me? Aske the which hearde me, what I haue sayd vnto the: Beholde, they can tell what I sayde.

22 When he had thus spoken, one of the officers whiche stode by, smote Iesus [with a rod] saying: [Note: Act.xxiii.d ] Aunswerest thou the hye priest so?

E

23 Iesus answered hym, Yf I haue euyl spoken, beare wnesse of the euyl: But yf I haue well spoken, why smyttest thou me?

24 Nowe Annas had sent hym bounde vnto Caiaphas the hye priest.

25 Simon Peter stode & warmed hym selfe. Then sayde they vnto hym: Art not thou also one of his disciples? He denyed it, and sayde, I am not.

26 One of the seruantes of ye hye priestes, (his cosin whose eare Peter smote of) sayde vnto hym: Dyd not I see thee in the garden with hym?

27 [Note: Iohn.xii..d. Math. 27.a. ] Peter therefore denyed againe: And immediatly the Cocke crewe.

28 [Note: Mark.xv.a. Luk.xxiii.a ] Then led they Iesus fro Caiaphas into the hall of iudgement. It was in the mornyng: And they them selues went not into the iudgement hall, leste they shoulde be defyled: but that they myght eate the Passouer.

29 Pilate then went out vnto them, and said: What accusatio bryng you against this man?

30 They aunswered, and said vnto him: Yf he were not an euyll doer, we would not haue deliuered hym vnto thee.

F

31 Then sayde Pilate vnto them: Take ye him, and iudge him after your owne lawe. The Iewes therefore sayde vnto hym: It is not lawfull [Note: [c] Because the Romanes had take that auctoritie fro them. ] for vs to put any man to death.

32 That the wordes of Iesus myght be fulfilled, [Note: Math.xx.a. ] whiche he spake, signifiyng what death he shoulde dye.

33 [Note: Math.27.b. Mark.xv.a. Luk.xxiii.b ] Then Pilate entred into the iudgement hall againe, and called Iesus, and sayde vnto hym: Art thou the kyng of the Iewes?

34 Iesus aunswered: Sayest thou that of thy selfe, or did other tell it thee of me?

35 Pilate aunswered: am I a Iewe? Thyne owne nation & hye priestes haue deliuered thee vnto me, what hast thou done?

36 Iesus aunswered: My kyngdome is not of this worlde. Yf my kyngdome were of this worlde, then woulde my seruauntes surely fyght, that I shoulde not be deliuered to the Iewes: but now is [Note: Iohn.vi. b. ] my kyngdome not from hence.

G

37 Pilate therefore sayde vnto hym: Art thou a kyng then? Iesus aunswered: Thou sayest that I am a king. For this cause am I borne, & for this cause came I into the worlde, that I should beare witnessse vnto the trueth: And all that are of the trueth, heare my voyce.

38 Pilate sayde vnto him: What [thyng] is trueth? And when he had sayde this, he went out agayne vnto the Iewes, & sayth vnto them, [Note: Math.27.c. Mark.xv.a. Luk.xxiii.c ] I fynde in hym no cause at all.

39 Ye haue a custome, that I shoulde deliuer you one loose at ye Passouer: Wyll ye that I loose vnto you the kyng of the Iewes?

40 Then cryed they all agayne, saying: [Note: Actes.iii.c. ] Not hym, but Barabbas. This Barabbas was a robber.

## ¶ The .xix. Chapter.

1 Christe is whypped, beaten, and crowned. 4 Pilate woulde haue delyuered hym, 6 but the Iewes aske hym to be crucified. 11 All power of God. 16 Pilate delyuered Christe to be crucified. 19 The title set vpon the crosse. 23 Christes garmentes deuided. 27 He commendeth his mother to Iohn. 30 After Christe tasted the vineger, he dyeth. 32 The legges of the theeues broken. 34 Christes syde pearsed with a speare, 38 Ioseph of Aramathia beggeth his body, 40 and he and Nicodemus buried it.

A

1 **Then** Pilate toke Iesus therefore, and scourged hym.

2 [Note: Math.27.c. Mark.xv.b. ] And the souldiers wounde a crowne of thornes, and put it on his head: And they did on hym a purple garment,

3 And sayde, Hayle king of the Iewes: And they stroke hym with rodde.

4 Pilate went foorth agayne, and sayde vnto them: Beholde, I bryng hym foorth to you, that ye may knowe that I fynde no fault in hym.

[Page]

5 Then came Iesus foorth, wearyng a crowne of thorne, and a robe of purple: And he sayth vnto them, beholde the man.

6 [Note: Math.27.c. Mark.xv.a. Luk.xxiii.d ] When the hye priestes therefore and officers sawe hym, they cryed, saying: crucifie hym, crucifie hym. Pilate sayth vnto them, Take ye hym, and crucifie hym: for I fynde no cause in hym.

7 The Iewes aunswere hym: We haue a lawe, and by our lawe he ought to dye, because [Note: Leui.xxiii c Iohn.v. b. ] he made hym selfe the sonne of God.

B  
8 When Pilate hearde that saying, he was the more afrayde.

9 And went agayne into the iudgement hall, and sayth vnto Iesus, whence art thou? But Iesus gaue hym none aunswere.

10 Then sayde Pilate vnto hym: Speakest thou not vnto me? Knowest thou not that I haue power to crucifie thee, and haue power to loose thee?

11 Iesus aunswere: Thou couldest haue no power at all agaynst me, except [Note: Sapien.vi.a. Iohn.iii. d. Rom.xiii.a. ] it were geuen thee from aboue: Therefore he that deliuered me vnto thee, hath the more sinne.  
C

12 [Note: Math.27.d. Mark.xv.c. Luk.xxiii.e ] And from thencefoorth sought Pilate [meanes] to loose hym. But the Iewes cryed, saying: Yf thou let hym go, thou art not Caesers friend. For [Note: Act.xvii.b. ] whosoouer maketh hym selfe a kyng, speaketh agaynst Caesar.

13 When Pilate hearde that saying, he brought Iesus foorth, & he sate downe in the iudgement seate, in a place that is called the pauement, but in the Hebrue tounge, Gabbatha.

14 It was the preparyng of ye Passouer, and about the sixt houre: And he sayth vnto the Iewes, beholde your kyng.

15 They cryed, away with hym, away with hym, crucifie hym. Pilate sayth vnto them: Shall I crucifie your king? The hye priestes aunswere: We haue no king but Caesar.

16 [Note: Math. 27.d. Mark.xv.c. Luk.xxiii.e ] Then deliuered he hym vnto them, to be crucified. And they toke Iesus, & ledde hym away.

D  
17 And he bare his crosse, [Note: Hebr.xiii.c. ] & wet forth into a place, which is called ye place of dead mens skulles, but in Hebrue Golgotha:

18 Where they crucified hym, and two other with him, on eyther syde one, and Iesus in the myddes.

19 And [Note: Math.27.d. Mark.xv.c. Luk.xxiii.e ] Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the crosse. The wrytyng was: Iesus of Nazareth, kyng of the Iewes.

20 This title read many of the Iewes: For the place where Iesus was crucified, was nye to ye citie. And it was written in Hebrue, and Greke, and Latine.

21 Then sayde the hye priestes of the Iewes to Pilate, Write not kyng of the Iewes: but, that he sayde, I am kyng of the Iewes.

22 Pilate aunswere: What I haue written, that haue I written.

E

23 Then the souldiers, [Note: Math.27.d. Mark.xv.c. Luk.xxiii.c ] when they had crucified Iesus, toke his garmentes, (& made foure partes, to euery souldier a part) and also his coate. The coate was without seame, wouen from the toppe throughout.

24 They sayde therefore among them selues: Let vs not deuide it, but caste lottes for it, who shal haue it. That the scripture myght be fulfilled, saying: [Note: Psal.xxii.a. ] They parted my rayment among the, & for my coate dyd they cast lottes. And the souldiers dyd such thynges in deede.

25 There stode by the crosse of Iesus his mother, and his mothers sister, Marie the wyfe of Cleophas, and Marie Magdalene.

26 Whe Iesus therefore sawe his mother and the disciple standyng by, [Note: Iohn.xiii.a. ] whom [Note: [a] That is, Iohn. ] he loued, he saith vnto his mother: Woman, beholde thy sonne.

27 Then sayde he to the disciple, beholde thy mother. And from that houre, the disciple toke her vnto his owne.

F

28 After these thynges, Iesus knowyng that all thynges were nowe perfourmed, [Note: Psal.lxix.c. ] that the scripture might be fulfilled, he sayth, I thirste.

29 So there stode a vessell by, full of vineger: [Note: Math.27.f. Mark.xv.d. ] Therefore they fylled a sponge with vineger, and put it vpon Isope, & put it to his mouth.

30 Assoone as Iesus then receaued of the vineger, he saide, [Note: Iohn.xvii.a ] it is [Note: [b] The misterie of mans redemption & saluation, is perfected by the only sacrifice of Christ: the promise to the fathers fulfilled: the ceremonies of the law ended ] finished: and bowed his head, and gaue vp the ghost.

31 The Iewes therefore, because it was the preparyng [of the Sabboth] that the bodyes should not remaine vpo ye crosse on the Sabboth day (for that Sabboth day, was an hye day) besought Pilate that their legges myght be broken, and that they myght be taken downe.

32 Then came the souldiers, and [Note: [c] Because they were not yet dead: for that was their custome. ] brake the legges of the first, and of the other which was crucified with hym:

[Page]

33 But when they came to Iesus, & sawe that he was dead alrebye, they brake not his legges.

34 But one of the souldyers with a speare thruste hym into the syde, & foorthwith came there out blood and water.

G

35 And he that sawe it, bare recorde, and his recorde is true: & he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might beleue [also.]

36 For these thynges were done, that the scripture shoulde be fulfilled: [Note: Exod.xii.g. Num.ix.b. ] Ye shall not breake a bone of hym.



37 And agayne another scripture saith: [Note: Zach.xii.c. ] They shall loke on hym whom they pearsed.

38 [Note: Math.27.g. Mark xv.d. Luk.xxiii.g ] After this, Ioseph of Aramathia, (which was a disciple of Iesus, but secretely, for feare of ye Iewes) besought Pilate that he myght take downe the body of Iesus. And Pilate gaue hym licence. He came therefore, and toke the dye of Iesus.

39 And there came also Nicodemus (whiche at the begynnyng came to Iesus by nyght) and brought of mirre and aloes myngled together, about an hundred pounde [wayght.]

40 Then toke they the body of Iesus, & wounde it in linnen clothes, with the odours, as the maner of the Iewes is to burie.

41 And in the place where he was crucified there was a garden, and in the garden a newe sepulchre, wherein was neuer man yet layde.

42 There layde they Iesus therefore, because of the preparyng [of the Sabboth] of the Iewes: for the sepulchre was nie [at hande.] >

## ¶ The .xx. Chapter.

1 Marie commeth to the sepulchre, and after, tolde the disciples that he was taken away, 3 Peter and Iohn runne to see. 9 The apostles were ignoraunt of the resurrection. 12 Marie weepeth at the sepulchre, and sawe a vision of Angels. 14 Iesus spake to Marie, 18 she sheweth the disciples. 19 Iesus appeared to the Apostles, 23 he gaue them the holy ghost, and sent them to preache. 25 Thomas beleued not that Christe was rysen. 26 Christe appeared agayne, 28 Thomas who confessed Christe to be God. 31 The scriptures written, are sufficient to saluation.

A

1 **The** first day of ye [Note: That is, of the weeke. Math.27.a. Lu.xxiiii.a. Mark.xvi.a ] Sabbothes, came Marie Magdalene early, whe it was yet darke, vnto the sepulchre, and sawe the stone taken away from the graue.

2 Then she ranne, & came to Simo Peter, & to the other disciple [Note: Iohn. xiii.c. ] who Iesus loued, & saith vnto the: They haue take away the Lorde out of the graue, & we can not tell where they haue layde him.

3 Peter therefore went foorth, and that other disciple, & came to the sepulchre.

4 They ran both together, & the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the sepulchre:

5 And when he had stowped downe, he sawe the linnen clothes lying, yet went he not in.

B

6 [Note: Luke.24.a. ] Then came Simon Peter folowyng hym, and went into the sepulchre, and sawe the

lynnen clothes lye,

7 And the napkin yt was about his head not lying with the linnen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it selfe.

8 Then went in also that other disciple, whiche came first to the sepulchre, and he sawe, and beleued.

9 For as yet they knew not ye [Note: Psal.xvi.b. Actes.ii.b. ] scripture, that he should rise agayne from death.

10 Then the disciples wet away agayne vnto their owne house.

11 < [Note: Luke.24. ] Marie stode without at the sepulchre weeping: So, as she wepte, she bowed her selfe into the sepulchre,

C

12 And seeth two angels clothed in white, sitting, the one at the head, & the other at the feete, where the body of Iesus was layde.

13 They saye vnto her: Woman, why weepest thou? She saith vnto the: For they haue taken away my Lorde, & I wote not where they haue layde him.

14 When she had thus sayde, she turned her selfe backe, and sawe Iesus standyng, and knewe not that it was Iesus.

D

15 Iesus saith vnto her: Woman, why weepest thou? Whom sekest thou? She supposing that he had ben the gardener, saith vnto him: Sir, if thou haue borne him hence, tel me where thou hast layde hym, and I wyll fet hym.

16 Iesus sayth vnto her, Marie. She turned her selfe, and sayde vnto hym: Rabboni, which is to say, Maister.

[Page]

17 Iesus saith vnto her: Touche [Note: [a] Hereby Christe corrected her carnal affection, lokinge to much to his bodyly presence, & therefore he pulled her from outward and externe officers towarde his bodylye presence, & wylled her to be myndfull of his ascension. ] me not, for I am not yet ascended to my father: But go to my brethren, and saye vnto them, I ascende vnto my father and your father, and to my God & your God.

18 Marie Magdalene came and tolde the disciples that she had seene ye Lorde, and that he had spoken suche thynges vnto her. >

E

19 < [Note: Lu.xxiiii.d ] The same day at nyght, whiche was the first day of the [Note: Or, weeke ] Sabbathes, when the doores were shut, where the disciples were assembled together for feare of the Iewes, came Iesus and stode in [Note: [b] He came in miraculously, to geue the Apostles comfort, as also an outward teste and sure argumet of his diunitie, that by his notable miracle, he might cofirme the Apostles in the fayth of his resurrection. ] the myddes, and sayth vnto them, peace be vnto you.

20 And when he had so sayde, he shewed vnto them his handes & his syde. Then were the disciples glad, when they sawe the Lorde.

- 21 Then sayde Iesus to them agayne, peace be vnto you: As my father sent me, euen so sende I you also.  
F
- 22 And when he had saide those wordes, he breathed on them, & saith vnto them: Receaue ye the holy ghost.
- 23 Whosoeuers sinnes ye remit, they are remitted vnto them: And whosoeuers sinnes ye retayne, they are retayned. >
- 24 < But [Note: Iohn.xi.b. ] Thomas, one of the twelue, [which is] called Didymus, was not with them when Iesus came.
- 25 The other disciples therefore sayde vnto hym, we haue seene the Lorde. But he sayde vnto them: Except I see in his handes the print of the nayles, and put my fynger into the prynt of the nayles, and thruste my hande into his syde, I wyll not beleue.  
G
- 26 And after eyght dayes, againe his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: Then came Iesus, when the doores were shutte, and stode in the myddes, and sayde, peace be vnto you.
- 27 After that said he to Thomas: Bring thy fynger hyther, and see my handes, & reache hyther thy hande, and thrust it into my syde, and be not faythlesse, but beleuyng.
- 28 Thomas aunswered, and sayde vnto hym: My Lorde, and my God.
- 29 Iesus sayth vnto hym: Thomas, because thou hast seene me, thou hast beleued: Blessed are they that haue not seene, and yet haue beleued. >
- 30 [Note: Iohn.xxi.g. ] And many other signes truely dyd Iesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this booke.
- 31 These are written, that ye myght [Note: [c] The scripture written, is sufficient to confirme our faith vnto saluation by Christe. ] beleue that Iesus is Christe the sonne of God, and that in beleuyng, ye myght haue lyfe through his name.

## ¶ The .xxj. Chapter.

1 Christe appeared to his disciples when they were fisshyng, 6 they take a great multitude of fisshes, 7 Peter leapeth into the water. 15 Christe restoreth Peter to his office, and commaunded hym to feede his sheepe. 19 Christe forewarneth Peter of his death and persecution. 20 Peter stayed lokyng at Iohn. 25 Of Christes manyfolde miracles.

A  
1 < **Afterward** dyd Iesus shew him selfe againe to his disciples, at the sea of Tiberias. And on this wyse

shewed he hym selfe.

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas [which is] called Didymus, and [Note: Iohn.i.f. ] Nathanael, of Cana in Galilee, and the sonnes of Zebedee, & two other of his disciples.

B

3 Simon Peter saith vnto them, I [wyl] go a fisshyng. They say vnto hym: We also wyll go with thee. They wet their way, and entred into a shippe immediatly, & that nyght caught they nothyng.

4 But when the mornyng was nowe come, Iesus stode on the shore: Neuerthelesse, the disciples knewe not that it was Iesus.

5 Iesus sayth vnto them: [Note: Or, Sires ] Children, haue ye any meate? They aunswered hym, no.

6 And he saith vnto them: [Note: Luk.v.a. ] Cast out the net on the ryght syde of the shippe, and ye shall fynde. They cast out therefore, and anone they were not able to drawe it for the multitude of fisses.

C

7 Then sayde the disciple, [Note: Iohn.xiii.e. ] whom Iesus loued, vnto Peter: It is the Lord. Whe Simon Peter hearde that it was the Lorde, he gyrde his coate vnto him (for he was naked) and sprang into the sea.

8 The other disciples came by shippe, [Page] (for they were not farre from lande, but as it were two hundred cubites) And they drewe the net with fisses.

9 Assoone then as they were come to lande, they sawe whot coales, and fisse layde theron, and bread.

D

10 Iesus saith vnto them: [Note: Luk xxiiii.f ] Bryng of the fisse which ye haue nowe caught.

11 Simon Peter went vp, and drewe the net to the lande, full of great fisses, an hundred and fiftie and three: And for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Iesus sayth vnto them, come and dyne. And none of the disciples durst aske hym, who art thou? For they knewe that it was the Lorde.

13 Iesus then came, and toke bread, and gaue them, and fisse lykewyse.

14 This is nowe the thirde tyme that Iesus appeared to his disciples, after that he was risen agayne from death. >

E

15 So when they had dyned, Iesus saith to Simon Peter: Simon [Note: Or, sonne of Ioanna. ] Ioanna, louest thou me more then these? He sayd vnto hym: Yea Lorde, thou knowest that I loue thee. He sayth vnto hym: feede my lambes.

16 He sayth to hym agayne the seconde tyme: Simon Ioanna, louest thou me? He sayth vnto hym: Yea Lorde, thou knowest that I loue thee. He sayde vnto hym: feede my sheepe.

17 He sayde vnto hym the thirde tyme: Simon Ioanna, louest thou me? Peter was sory, because he sayde

vnto hym the thirde tyme, louest thou me: And he sayde vnto hym, Lorde thou [Note: Iohn.xvi.g. ] knowest all thynges, thou knowest that I loue thee. Iesus sayth vnto hym: feede my sheepe.

F

18 Ueryly veryly I say vnto thee, when thou wast young, thou gyrdest thy selfe, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be olde, [Note: Iohn.xiii.d. Actes.xii.a. ] thou shalt stretch forth thy handes, and another shall gyrd thee, and leade thee whither thou wouldest not.

19 That spake he, signifiyng by what death he should glorifie God. And whe he had spoken this, he sayth vnto hym, folowe me. <

G

20 Peter turned about, and sawe the disciple, [Note: Ioh.xiii.c. and .xix.c. ] whom Iesus loued, folowyng, which also leaned on his brest at supper, and sayde, Lorde which is he that betrayeth thee?

21 When Peter therefore sawe hym, he sayth to Iesus: Lorde, what shal he do?

22 Iesus sayth vnto hym: If I wyll haue hym to tary tyll I come, what is that to thee? folowe thou me.

23 Then went this saying abrode among the brethren, that that disciple shoulde not dye: Yet Iesus sayde not to hym, he shall not dye: but, yf I wyll that he tary tyll I come, what is that to thee?

24 The same disciple is he, which testifieth of these thynges, and wrote these thynges: And we knowe that his testimonie is true. >

25 [Note: Iohn.xx.g. ] There are also many other thynges, whiche Iesus dyd, the which, yf they shoulde be written euery one, I suppose the world could not conteine the bookes that shoulde be written.

¶ Here endeth the Gospell by Saint Iohn.

[Page]

## The Actes of the Apostles.

### The first Chapter.

¶ 7 The wordes of Christe and his Angels, to the Apostles. 9 His assention. 14 Wherin the Apostles are occupyed, tyll the holy ghost be sent. 26 And of the election of Matthias.

A

1 < **In** ye former treatise O Theophilus, we haue spoke of all that Iesus began to do and teache,

2 Untyll the day in which he was take vp, after that he through the holy ghost, had geuen commaundementes vnto the Apostles, whom he had chosen,

3 To whom also he [Note: Iohn.xx a. and xxi c. ] shewed hym selfe alyue after his passion, and that by manye tokens, appearyng vnto them fourtie dayes, and speaking of the kingdome of God,

4 And gatheryng them together, [Note: Lu.xxiiii.g ] commaunded them that they shoulde not depart from Hierusalem, but wayte for the promise of the father, [Note: Iohn.iiii.d. xv.d. xvi.b. ] wherof [saith he] ye haue hearde of me.

5 For [Note: Iohn.i.c. ] Iohn truely baptized with water, but ye shalbe baptized with the holy ghost, after these fewe dayes.

6 When they therfore were come together, they asked of hym, saying: Lorde, wylt thou at this tyme restore agayne the kyngdome to Israel?

7 And he sayde vnto them: [Note: Math.24.c. ] It is not for you to knowe the tymes, or the seasons, which the father hath put in his owne power.

8 But [Note: Lu.xxiiii.g. Actes.ii.a. ] ye shall receaue power, after that the holy ghost is come vpon you: And [Note: Actes.ii.a. Iohn.xv.d. ] ye shalbe witnesses vnto me, both in Hierusalem, and in al Iurie, & in Samarie, and euen vnto the worldes ende.

B

9 And when he had spoken these thynges, whyle they behelde, [Note: Mark.xvi.d Lu.xxiiii.g. ] he was taken vp an hye, and a cloude receaued hym vp out of their syght.

[Page]

10 And while they loked stedfastly vp towarde heaue, as he went, beholde, two men stode by them in whyte apparell,

11 Which also sayde: Ye men of Galilee, why stande ye gasyng vp into heauen? This same Iesus, which is taken vp from you into heauen, [Note: Dan.vii.d. Math.24.c. and .xxv.c. Mark.xiii.c Luk.xvii c. and .xxi.c. Apoc.i.b. ] shall so come, euen as ye haue seene hym go into heauen. >

12 Then returned they vnto Hierusalem, from the mount that is called Oliuete, which is from Hierusalem a Sabboth dayes iourney.

13 And when they were come in, they went vp into a parlour, where abode both [Note: Math.x.a. Mark.iii.c. Luk.vi.c. ] Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrewe, Philip and Thomas, Barthelmewe and Mathewe, Iames the sonne of Alpheus, & Simo Zelotes, and Iudas the brother of Iames.

14 These all continued with one accorde in prayer and supplication with the women, and Marie the mother of Iesus, and with his brethren.

C

15 < And in those dayes, Peter stode vp in the middes of the disciples, and said (The number of [Note: [a] That is, of men, for men are wont namely to be counted, when they are numbred. ] names together, were about an

hundred and twentie)

16 Ye men and brethren, this scripture must needes haue ben fulfilled, which the holy ghost by the mouth of Dauid spake before of Iudas, [Note: Math.26.b. Mar.xiiii.e. Luk.xxii.e. ] which was guide to them that toke Iesus:

17 [Note: Math.x.a. Mark.i.c. Luk.iii.c. ] For he was numbred with vs, & had obeyned felowship in this ministerie.

18 And the same hath nowe purchased a fielde, with the rewarde of [Note: [b] It is called ye rewarde of iniquite because the wicked Iewes gaue the rewarde, and the wicked Iudas receaued ye reward, to shedde the blood of christ that innocent lambe. ] iniquitie? And when he was hanged, he burst a sunder in the middes, & all his bowels gusshed out.

19 And it is knowen vnto all the dwellers at Hierusalem, in so much that the same fielde is called in their mother tongue, Aceldema, that is to saye, the blood fielde.

20 For it is written in ye booke of psalmes: [Note: Psal.lxix.f. ] Let his habitation be desert, and no man be dwellyng therein: [Note: Psal.cix.a. ] And his bishopricke let another take.

D

21 Wherefore, of these men which haue companied with vs, all the tyme that the Lorde Iesus went in and out [Note: [c] That is to say, after the language of the Hebrewes, he had his conuersation, and lyued with vs ] among vs,

22 Begynnyng from the baptisme of Iohn, vnto that same day that he was take vp from vs, must one be ordeyned, to be a wnesse with vs of his resurrection.

23 And they appoynted two, Ioseph which is called Barsabas, whose sirname was Iustus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, saying: Thou Lord which [Note: 1.Par.28.b. Psal.vii.c. ] knowest the heartes of all men, shewe whether of these two thou haste chosen,

25 That he may take the rowme of this ministerie and Apostleship, from which Iudas by transgression fell, that he myght go to his owne place.

26 And they gaue forth their [Note: [d] Lottes for chosing of officers, or deuidyng of inheritaunce, groundes, or goodes, are alowed of god, as appeareth in the holye scriptures: lottes stay strife sayth Solomo. But lottes of diuinatio to know superstitiously of thynges to come, are disalowed of god, and vtterly forbidden. ] lottes, & the lot fell vpon Matthias, and he was counted with the eleuen Apostles. >

## ¶ The .ij. Chapter.

3 The holy ghost came vpon the Apostles in visible signes. 6 The hearers were astonyed. 14 Peter

preacheth, & stoppeth their mouthes. 41 He baptizeth a great number. 42 The godlie exercise of the faythfull.

A

1 [Note: Deut.xvi.b. Leu.xxiii.c. ] < **And** when the day of Pentecost was, they were all with one accorde in one place:

2 And sodenly there came a sounde fro heauen, as it had ben the commyng of a mightie wynde, and it fylled all the house where they sate.

3 And there appeared vnto them clouen tongues, lyke as they had ben of fyre, and it sate vpon eche one of them.

4 [Note: Actes.iiii.f. and .xi.b. ] And they were all fylled with the holy ghost, and began to speake with other tongues, as the spirite gaue them vtterance.

5 There were dwellyng at Hierusalem, Iewes, deuout men, out of euery nation [of them] that are vnder heauen.

6 When this was noysed about, the multitude came together and were astonnyed, because that euery man hearde them speake with his owne language.

7 They wondred all, and marueyled, saying among themselues: Beholde, are not all these which speake, of Galilee?

B

8 And howe heare we euery man his [Page] owne [Note: [a] It is most lyke that the miracle was both in ye speakers and also in ye hearers. In the speakers, for that they, speaking the Hebrue tongue, dyd well perceauy yt straungers of diuers nations and languages dyd vnderstande them: And in the hearers, for that euery man hearde sensibly his owne countrey language out of the Apostles, speakyng in their mother toge. ] tongue, wherin we were borne?

9 Parthians, and Medes, & Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Iurie, and in Capadocia, in Pontus and Asia,

10 Phrygia, & Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parties of Lybia, which is besyde Cyrene, & straungers of Rome, Iewes and [Note: [b] That is, such as were conuerted to the Iewes religion, and whose auncetours were no Iewes. ] Proselytes.

11 Cretes and Arabians: we haue hearde them speake in our tongues, the wonderfull workes of God. >

12 They were all amased, and wondred, saying one to another: What meaneth this?

13 Other mocked, saying: These men are full of newe wyne.

C

14 But Peter standyng foorth with the eleuen, lyft vp his voyce, and sayde vnto them: Ye men of Iurie, and all ye that dwell at Hierusalem, be this knowen vnto you, and with your eares heare my wordes.

15 For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeyng it is but the [Note: [c] The Iewes count the houre of the day,



from sixe of the clocke, in ye mornyng, to six at night, Therefore, the thirde houre, after ye Iewes computation, is our nyne of the clocke. ] thirde houre of the day.

16 But this is that which was spoken by the prophete Ioel:

17 And it shalbe in the last dayes (sayth God) of my spirite I wyll powre out vpon all fleshe: [Note: Ioel.ii.g. ] And your sonnes and your daughters shall prophesie, and your young men shall see visions, and your olde men shall dreame dreames.

18 And on my seruauntes, and on my handemaydens, I wyll powre out of my spirite in those dayes, and they shall prophesie.

19 And [Note: Math.27.e. Luk.xxiii.f ] I wyll shewe wonders in heauen aboue, and tokens in the earth beneath, blood, and fyre, and the vapour of smoke.

20 The Sunne shalbe turned into darknesse, and the Moone into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lord come.

21 And it shall come to passe, that [Note: Rom.x.c. ] whosoever shall call on the name of the Lorde, shalbe saued. >

D

22 < Ye men of Israel, heare these wordes: Iesus of Nazareth, a man approued of God among you, with miracles, wonders, and signes, which God dyd by hym in the middes of you, as ye your selues also knowe.

23 Hym haue ye taken, by the handes of vnryghteous persons, after he was deliuered by the determinate councell and foreknowledge of God, and haue crucified and slayne hym.

24 Whom God hath raised vp, and loosed the sorowes of death, because it was vnpossible, that he shoulde be holden of it.

25 For Daudid speaketh of hym, [Note: Psal.xvi.f. ] I sawe the Lorde alwayes set foorth before my face: for he is on my ryght hande, that I shoulde not be moued.

26 Therefore dyd my heart reioyce, and my tongue was glad. Moreouer also my fleshe shall reste in hope,

27 Because thou wylt not leaue my soule in hell, neither wylt thou suffer thyne holy one to see corruption.

28 Thou hast shewed me the wayes of lyfe, thou shalt make me full of ioy with thy countenance. >

E

29 Ye men and brethren, let me freely speake vnto you of the patriarke Daudid: [Note: iii Reg.ii.b. ] For he is both dead and buryed, and his sepulchre remayneth with vs vnto this day.

30 Therefore, seeyng he was a prophete, and knewe that God had sworne with an oth to hym, that Christe, as concernyng the fleshe, should come of the fruite of his loynes, & should syt on his seate:

31 He knowyng this before, spake of the resurrection of Christe, that his soule shoulde not be left in hell, neither his fleshe shoulde see corruption.

32 This Iesus hath God rayseed vp, [Note: Actes.i.a. ] wherof we all are witnesses.

F

33 Then sence that he by the ryght hande of God was exalted, and hath receaued of the father the promise of the holy ghost, he hath shed fourth this, which ye nowe see, and heare.

34 For Dauid is not ascended into heaue, but he sayeth: [Note: Psal.cx.a. Mat.xxii.d ] The Lorde sayde to my Lorde, syt thou on my ryght,

35 Untill I make thy foes thy footstoole.

36 Therefore, let all the house of Israel know for a suretie, that God hath made that same Iesus, whom ye haue crucified, Lorde and Christe.

37 Nowe when they hearde this, they were pricked in their heartes, and sayde vnto Peter, & vnto the other Apostles: Ye men & brethren, [Note: Luk.iii.b. ] what shall we do?

38 Then Peter sayde vnto them: Repent, and be baptized euery one of you in the name of Iesus Christe, for the remission of sinnes, and ye shall receaue the gyft of the holy ghost.

[Page]

39 For the promise was made vnto you, and to your chylde, and to all that are a farre of, euen as many as the Lorde our God shall call.

40 And with many other wordes bare he witnesse, and exhorted them, saying: Saue your selues from this vntowarde generation.

41 Then they that gladly receaued his worde, were baptized: And the same day there were added [vnto them,] about three thousande soules.

G

42 And they continued stedfastly in the Apostles doctrine and [Note: [d] By felowship, is meant a godly companying together, in practising ye workes of charitie, in tendering & helping one an other, in desposyng by almes, their goodes to their nedy neyghbour. By breakyng of bread, is me ye misterie wherein our sauour Christ hath communicate and distribute vnto vs his body & blood, by his blessed Sacrament of bread and wyne, where is represented to ye eyes of our fayth, the breakyng of Christes body, and the shedyng of his blood. ] felowship, and in breakyng of bread, and in prayers.

43 And feare came vpon euery soule. And many wonders and signes were done by the Apostles.

44 And all that beleued, kept them selues together, and had all thynges common,

45 And solde their possessions & goodes, and parted them to all men, as euery man had neede.

46 And they continued dayly with one accorde in the temple, and brake bread from house to house, and dyd eate their meate together, with gladnesse and singlenesse of heart,

47 Praysyng God, & had fauour with all the people. And the Lorde added to the Churche dayly, such as should be sauēd.

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

¶ 7 The halt is restored to his feete. 12 Peter preacheth Christe vnto the people.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **N**owe Peter and Iohn went vp together into the temple at the nynth houre of prayer.

2 And a certayne man, that was lame from his mothers wombe, was brought, whom they layde dayly at the gate of the temple which is called beawtifull, to aske almes of them that entred into the temple.

3 When he sawe Peter and Iohn that they woulde go into the temple, he desired to receaue an almes.

4 And Peter fastenyng his eyes vpon hym with Iohn, sayde: Loke on vs.

5 And he gaue heede vnto the, trustyng to receaue somethyng of them.

<sup>B</sup>  
6 Then sayde Peter: Syluer and golde haue I none, but such as I haue, geue I thee: In the name of Iesus Christe of Nazareth, [Note: Math.ix.a. ] ryse vp, and walke.

7 And he toke hym by the ryght hande, and lyft hym vp. And immediatly his feete and ancle bones receaued strength.

8 And he sprang, stode, and walked, and entred with them into the temple, walkyng, and leaping, & praysyng God.

9 And all the people sawe hym walke, and prayse God.

10 And they knewe hym, that it was he, which sate and begged at the beawtifull gate of the temple. And they wondred, and were sore astonyed at that which had happened vnto hym.

11 And as the lame which was healed, helde Peter and Iohn, all the people ran amased vnto them, in the [Note: iii.Reg.vi.a. Iohn.ii.c. Actes.v.c. ] porche that is called Solomons.

<sup>C</sup>  
12 And when Peter sawe that, he aunswered vnto the people: < Ye men of Israel, why maruayle ye at this, or why loke ye so on vs, as though by our owne power or [Note: [a] He correcteth the abuse of man, which attribute to mans holynesse, which only appertayneth to God. ] godlynesse, we had made this man to go?

13 The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Iacob, the God of our fathers hath glorified his sonne Iesus, whom ye betrayed [Note: Math.27.a. Mark.xv.a. Luk.xxiii.a ] and denyed in the presence of Pilate, when he

had iudged hym to be loosed.

14 But ye denyed the holy and iust, [Note: Math.27.e. ] and desired a murtherer to be geuen you,

15 And kylled [Note: Ioh.xviii.g. ] the Lorde of lyfe, whom God hath rayseed from the dead: of the which we are witnesses.

16 And his name, through the fayth in his name, hath made this man sounde, whom ye see and knowe: And the fayth which is by hym, hath geuen to this man health, in the presence of you all.

17 And nowe brethren, I wote that through ignoraunce ye dyd it, as dyd also your rulers.

18 But those thynges which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his prophetes, that Christe shoulde suffer, he hath so fulfilled.

D

19 [Note: Math.iii.c. ] Repent ye therefore and conuert, that your sinnes may be done away, when [Page] the tyme of [Note: [b] By the tyme of refreshyng, he meaneth the latter daye, when ye godly which in this worlde are turmoyled and troubled, shoulde fynde rest and quietnesse. ] refreshyng shall come, in the presence of the Lorde.

20 And he shall sende Iesus Christ, which before was preached vnto you.

21 Whom the heauen must receaue, vntill the tyme that all thynges be restored, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophetes since the world began.

22 Moyses truly sayde vnto the fathers: [Note: Deu.xviii.c Actes.vii.c. ] A prophete shall the Lorde your God rayse vp vnto you, of your brethren, lyke vnto me: hym shall ye heare in all thynges, whatsoever he shall say vnto you.

23 For the tyme wyll come, that euery soule which wyll not heare that same prophete, shalbe destroyed from among the people.

24 All the prophetes also fro Samuel & thencefoorth, as many as haue spoken, haue lykewise tolde you of these dayes.

25 Ye are the chyldren of the [Note: [c] So they are called, because they came of the same flocke, and therefore were heyres of the same promise which appertayneth to the whole body of the people. ] prophetes, and of the couenaunt which God made vnto our fathers, saying to Abraham: [Note: Gen.xii.a. ] Euen in thy seede shall all the kinredes of the earth be blessed.

26 Unto you first, God hath rayseed vp his sonne Iesus, and hath sent hym to blesse you, in turnyng euery one of you from his iniquities. >

## The .iiij. Chapter.

7 The Apostles are brought before the counsell. 18 beyng forbydden to preache, obey God rather then man. 24 They pray for good successe. 32 The Churche increaseth in doctrine and exercises of all godlynesse.

A

1 **And** as they spake vnto ye people, the priestes & the ruler of the temple, and the saducees, came vpon them,

2 Takyng it greuously that they taught the people, and preached in Iesus the resurrection from the dead.

3 And they layde handes on them, and put them in holde, vntyll the next day: for it was nowe euentyde.

4 Howbeit, many of them which hearde the worde, beleued: and the number of the men was about fyue thousande.

5 And it came to passe on the morowe, that their rulers, and elders, & scribes,

6 And Annas the chiefe priest, and Caiaphas, and Iohn, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kynrede of the hye priestes, were gathered together at Hierusalem.

7 And when they had set them before them, they asked: [Note: Exod.ii.c. Mat.xxi.c Actes.vii.d. ] by what power, or in what name haue ye done this?

B

8 < Then Peter, full of the holy ghost, sayde vnto them: Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel,

9 If we this day be examined of the good deede done to the sicke man, by what meanes he is made whole:

10 Be it knowen vnto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of [Note: Math.i.c. Philip.ii.b. ] Iesus Christe of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raysed agayne from the dead: euen by hym doth this man stande here before you whole.

11 This is the stone which was cast asyde of you buylders, which is the head of the [Note: [a] Christe is called ye chiefe corner or corner stone, because the Iewes and the Gentiles are ioyned together and builded vpon hym by fayth, and made one Churche. ] corner:

12 Neither is there [Note: [b] Neither Saint, nor Angel, nor workes, nor ought els can saue, but Christ alone. ] saluation in any other. For among men vnder heauen, there is geuen none other name, wherin we must be saued. >

13 Nowe when they sawe the boldnesse of Peter and Iohn, and vnderstoode that they were vnlearned and lay men, they marueyled, and they knewe them that they had ben with Iesu:

C

14 And beholdyng also the man which was healed, standyng with them, they coulde not say agaynst it,

15 But commaundyng them to go asyde out of the counsel, and counseled among them selues,

16 Saying: [Note: Iohn.xi.f. ] What shall we do to these men? For a manifest signe is done by them, and is openly knowen to all them that dwell in Hierusalem, and we can not denie it.

17 But that it be noysed no farther among the people, let vs threaten and charge them that they speake hencefoorth to no man in this name.

D

18 And they called them, [Note: Actes.v.g. ] and commaunded them, that in no wyse they shoulde speake, nor teache in the name of Iesu.

19 But Peter and Iohn aunswered, and sayde vnto them: Whether it be ryght in the syght of God, to hearken vnto you more then to God, iudge ye.

20 For we cannot but speake that, which we haue seene and hearde.

[Page]

21 So threatned they them, and let them go, and founde nothyng how to punishe them, because of the people: For all men praysed God, because of [Note: Actes.iii.b. ] that which was done.

22 For the man was about fourtie yere olde, on whom this miracle of healynge was shewed.

E

23 Then assoone as they were let go, they came to their felowes, and shewed all that the hie priestes and elders had sayde vnto them.

24 And when they hearde that, they lyft vp their voyces to God with one accorde, and sayde: Lorde, thou art God, which hast made heauen and earth, the sea, and all that in them is,

25 Which by the mouth of thy seruaunt Daud, hast sayde: [Note: Psal.ii.a. ] Why dyd the Heathen rage, & the people imagine vayne thynges?

26 The kynges of the earth stode vp, and the rulers came together, agaynst the Lorde, and agaynst his Christe.

27 And of a trueth, agaynst thy holye chylde Iesus, who thou hast anoynted, both Herode and also Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, gathered them selues together,

F

28 For to do whatsoever thy hande & thy counsel determined before to be done.

29 And nowe Lorde, beholde their threatnynges, & graunt vnto thy seruauntes, that with all boldensse they may speake thy worde.

30 So that thou stretch forth thyne hande, that healynge, and signes, and wonders, be done by the name of thy holy chylde Iesus.

31 And assoone as they had prayed, [Note: Actes.xvi.f. ] the place moued where they were assembled together, [Note: Actes.ii.a. and .xix.b. ] and they were all fylled with the holy ghost, and they spake the worde of God boldely.

G

32 < And the multitude of them that beleued, [Note: Actes.ii.g. and .v.b. ] were of one heart, and of one soule: Neither sayde any of them, that ought of ye thynges which he possessed, was his owne: but they had all thinges common.

33 And with great power gaue the Apostles witness of the resurrection of the Lorde Iesu: And great grace was with them all.

34 Neither was there any among them, that lacked: For as many as were possessers of landes, or houses, solde them, & brought the price of the thynges that were solde,

35 And layed it downe at the Apostles feete: And distribution was made vnto euery man, accordyng as he had neede.

36 And [Note: Actes.i.d. ] Ioses, which was also called of the Apostles Barnabas (that is to say) the sonne of consolation, being a Leuite, and of the cuntry of Cypers,

37 When he had lande, solde it, and layde the money downe at the Apostles feete.

### The .v. Chapter.

12 Miracles are done by the Apostles. The Angell of God bryngeth them out of prison. 19 They are brought before the councell. 34 The sentence of Gamaliel. 40 The Apostles are beaten. They reioyce in trouble.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **But** a certayne man, named Ananias, with Saphyra his wyfe, solde a possession,

2 And kept away part of the price, his wyfe also beyng of counsell, and brought a certayne part, and layde it downe at the Apostles feete.

3 But Peter sayde: Ananias, howe is it, that Satan hath fylled thyne heart, that thou shouldest lye vnto the holy ghost, and kepe away part of the price of the lande?

4 Whyles it remayned, was it not thyne owne? And after it was solde, was it not in thyne owne power? Why haste thou conceaued this thyng in thyne heart? Thou hast not lyed vnto men, but vnto God.

5 When Ananias hearde these wordes, he fell downe, and gaue vp the ghost. And great feare came on all them that hearde these thynges.

6 And the young rose vp, and put hym a part, and caryed hym out, and buryed hym.

<sup>B</sup>  
7 And it came to passe, that as it were about the space of three houres after, his wyfe came in, ignoraunt of that which was done.

8 And Peter sayde vnto her: Tell me, Solde ye not the lande for so much? And she sayde: Yea, for so much.

[Page]

9 Then Peter sayde vnto her: Why haue ye agreed together, to tempt the spirite of the Lorde? Beholde, the feete of the which haue buried thy husbnde, are at the doore, and shall cary thee out.

10 Then fell she downe strayghtway at his feete, and yelded vp the ghost. And the young men came in, and founde her dead, and caryed her out, and buried her by her husbnde.

11 And great feare came vpon all the Church, and vpon as many as hearde these thynges.

C

12 And by the handes of the Apostles, [Note: Math.xvi.d ] were many signes & wonders shewed among the people. (And they were all together with one accord in [Note: iii Reg.vi.a. Iohn.x.c. Actes.iii.b. ] Solomons porche.

13 And of other durst no man ioyne hym selfe to them, neuerthelesse, the people magnified them.

14 The number of them that beleued in the Lorde, both of men and women, grewe more and more.)

15 In so much that they brought the sicke into the streates, & layde the on beddes and couches, that at the least way, the [Note: [a] God at the first, publishyng of his Gospell, wrought wonders by these thynges that seemed trifles to the worlde, which thynges as they were done for a time, so nowe the lyke must not be loked for. ] shadowe of Peter when he came by, myght shadowe some of them.

16 There came also a multitude of the cities rounde about, vnto Hierusalem, bryngyng sicke folkes, and them which were vexed with vnclene spirites: And they were healed euery one.

D

17 [Note: Actes.iiii.a. ] Then the chiefe priest rose vp, and all they that were with hym, which is the sect of the Saducees, and were full of indignation:

18 And layed handes on the Apostles, and put them in the common prison.

19 [Note: Actes.xii.a and .xvi.f. ] But the Angel of the Lorde by nyght opened the prison doores, and brought them fourth, and sayde:

20 Go, and stande & speake in the temple to the people, all the wordes of this lyfe.

21 And when they hearde that, they entred into the temple early in ye mornyng, and taught: But the chiefe priest came, and they that were with hym, & called a counsayle together, and all the elders of the children of Israel, and sent to the pryson to fet them.

22 But when the officers came, & founde them not in the pryson, they returned, and tolde,

23 Saying: The pryson truely founde we shut with all diligence, & the keepers standyng without, before the doores: But when we had opened, we founde no man within.



24 Then when the chiefe priest and the ruler of the temple, and the hie priestes hearde these thynges, they doubted of them, whervnto this woulde growe.

E

25 Then came one and shewed them, saying: Beholde, the men that ye put in pryson, stande in the temple, and teache the people.

26 Then went the ruler of the temple, with the officers, and brought them without violence: (For they feared the people, lest they should haue ben stoned)

27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the counsell. And the chiefe priest asked them,

28 Saying: [Note: Actes.iiii.d. ] dyd not we strayghtly commaunde you, that ye shoulde not teache in this name? And beholde, ye haue fylled Hierusalem with your doctrine, and intende to bryng [Note: [b] By this speache, they meane yt they would charge them as guilty of Christes blood that was shed. ] [Note: Math.27.c. ] this mans blood vpon vs.

F

29 Then Peter and the other Apostles aunswered, and sayde: [Note: Actes.iiii.d. ] We ought more to obey God then men.

30 The God of our fathers rayسد vp Iesus, whom ye slewe, & hanged on tree.

31 Hym hath God lyft vp with his ryght hande, to be a prince and a sauour, for to geue repentaunce to Israel, and forgeuenesse of sinnes.

32 And we are recordes of these thynges which we say, & so is also the holy ghost, whom God hath geuen to them that obey hym.

33 When they hearde that, they claue asunder, and sought meanes to slea the.

34 Then stode there vp one in the counsell, a pharisee, named [Note: Act.xxii.a. ] Gamaliel, a doctour of lawe, had in reputation among all the people, and commaunded the Apostles to go asyde a litle space,

35 And sayde vnto them: Ye men of Israel, take heede to your selues, what ye entende to do, as touchyng these men.

36 For before these dayes rose vp one Theudas, boastyng him selfe, to whom resorted a number of men, about a foure hundred, which was slayne: and they all which beleued hym, were scattered abrode, and brought to naught.

37 After this man, arose vp one Iudas of [Note: Luk.xiii.a. ] Galilee, in the dayes of tribute, and drewe away much people after hym: He also perished, and all, euen as many [Page] as hearkened to hym, were scattered abrode.

38 And nowe I saye vnto you, refrayne your selues fro these men, and let them alone: For yf this counsell or this worke be of men, it wyll come to naught.

39 But and yf it be of God, ye can not destroy it, lest haply ye be founde to stryue agaynst God.

40 And to hym agreed the other: And when they had called the Apostles, they beat them, [Note: Act.iiii.d. ] and commaunded that they shoulde not speake in the name of Iesu, and let them go.

41 And they departed from the counsell, [Note: Math.v.b. ] reioycing that they were counted worthy to suffer rebuke for his name.

42 And dayly in the temple, and in euery house, they ceased not to teach & preach Iesus Christe.

## ¶ The .vj. Chapter.

3 Seuen deacons are ordeyned in the Churche. 11 Steuen is accused.

A

1 **And** in those dayes, when the number of ye disciples grewe, there arose a grudge among the Grekes agaynst ye Hebrues, because their wydowes were despysed in the dayly ministerie.

2 Then the twelue called the multitude of the disciples together, and sayde: It is not good that we shoulde leaue the worde of God, and serue tables.

3 Wherefore brethren, loke ye out among you seuen men [Note: i.Tim.iii.c. ] of honest report, & full of the holy ghost, and wysedome, to who we may commit this busynesse.

B

4 But we wyll geue our selues continually to prayer, and to the ministerie of the worde.

5 And the saying pleased the whole multitude. And they chose Steuen, a man full of fayth, and of the holy ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, & Timon, and Permenas, and Nicolas a conuert of Antioche. [Note: Apoca.ii.b. ]

6 These they set before the apostles: and whe they had prayed, they [Note: Nu.xxvii.d i.Tim.iiii.d ii.Tim.i.b. ] layde their handes on them.

7 And the worde of God encreased, & the number of ye disciples multiplied in Hierusalem greatly, and a great companie of the priestes were obedient to ye fayth.

C

8 < And Steuen full of fayth & power, dyd great wonders & miracles among the people.

9 Then there arose certaine of the [Note: [a] Or Colledge. For in in ye citie Hierusalem there were erected many houses or scooles, wherein the youth of the Iewes and straungers were instructed: as nowe adayes are vsed in our vniuersities. ] synagogue, which is called [the synagogue] of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and of Alexandria, and of Cilicia, & of Asia, disputyng with Steuen.

10 And they coulde not resiste the wisdom and the spirite by the whiche he spake.

11 Then they priuilie prepared men, whiche sayde, [Note: [b] The wicked setteth fourth false witnesses, when they by reasonyng canot preuayle agaynst the trueth: And thus malice seketh false Christes, when the trueth fayleth her. ] we haue heard him speake blasphemous wordes agaynst Moyses, and agaynst God.

12 And they moued the people, and the elders, and the scribes, and came vppon hym, and caught him, and brought him to the counsell.

D

13 And brought fourth false witnesses, which sayde: This man ceaseth not to speake blasphemous wordes agaynste this holy place and the lawe.

14 For we hearde hym say, that this Iesus of Nazareth shal destroy this place, & shall chaunge the ordinaunces which Moyses gaue vs:

15 And all that sate in the counsell, loking stedfastly on him, saw his face as it had ben the face of an angell.

## ¶ The .vij. Chapter.

2 Steuen maketh aunswere to his accusation, 51 rebuketh the harde necked Iewes, 58 and is stoned to death.

A

1 **Then** said ye chiefe priest: Are these thynges so?

2 And he said: Ye men, brethren, and fathers, hearken. The God of glorie appeared vnto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran,

3 And sayde vnto him: [Note: Gen.xii.d. ] Get thee out of thy countrey, & fro thy kinrede, & come into the lande which I shall shew thee.

4 Then came he out of the lande of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charran: and from thence, whe his father was dead, he brought hym into this lande wherin ye nowe dwell.

[Page]

5 And he gaue hym none inheritaunce in it, no not the breadth of a foote: [Note: Gene.xii.b. ] and promised that he woulde geue it to hym to possesse, and to his seede after hym, when as yet he had no chylde.

6 God veryly spake on this wyse, [Note: Gene.xv.c. ] that his seede shoulde soiourne in a straunge lande, and that they shoulde kepe it in bondage, and [Note: Exod.xii.f. ] entreate them euyl foure hundreth [Note: [a] This is not to be vnderstand, that they should be euyl intreated ye whole foure hundred yere: but by excesse of speach, called hyperbole, is signified yt they should be euyl intreated within ye space of foure hundred yeres. ] yeres.

7 And the nation to whom they shalbe in bondage, wyll I iudge, sayde God: And after that, shall they come foorth, & serue me in this place.

8 And he gaue hym the couenaunt of circumcision: And he begate Isaac, and circumcised hym the eyght day, and Isaac [begate] Iacob, and Iacob [begate] the twelue patriarkes.

B

9 [Note: Ge.xxxvii f Sapi.x. c. ] And the patriarkes moued with enuie, solde Ioseph into Egypt: and God was with hym,

10 And deliuered hym out of all his aduersities, and gaue hym fauour & wisdom in the syght of Pharao kyng of Egypt: and he [Note: Gen.xi.c. ] made hym gouernour ouer Egypt, & ouer all his housholde.

11 [Note: Gen.xl.g. ] But there came a dearth ouer all the land of Egypt and Chanaan: and great affliction, that our fathers founde no sustenance.

12 But when Iacob hearde that there was corne in Egypt, he sent our fathers first.

13 [Note: Gene.xlv.a. ] And at the second time, Ioseph was knowen of his brethren, and Iosephes kinrede was made knowen vnto Pharao.

14 Then sent Ioseph, and caused his father to be brought, and all his kynne, three score and fyfteene soules.

15 [Note: Gene.xlvi.a ] And Iacob descended into Egypt, and [Note: Gen.xlix.d ] dyed, both he and our fathers,

16 And were caryed ouer into Sichem, and layde in the sepulchre, [Note: Gen.xxiii.d ] that Abraha bought [Note: [b] Here appeareth an error. For Abraha seemeth to be put in ye text in ye stede of Iacob. For Iacob bought the sepulchre of Emor, and not Abraham, who boughte before a field of Ephron. ] for money of the sonnes of Emor, the sonne of Sichem.

17 But when the tyme of the promyse drewe nye, whiche God had sworne to Abraham, the people grewe and multiplied in Egypt:

18 Tyll another king arose, which knew not of Ioseph.

C

19 The same dealt subtilly with our kinrede, and euyll intreated our fathers, & made them caste out their young chyldren, that they shoulde not remayne alyue.

20 [Note: Exod.ii.a. Hebr.xi.e. ] The same tyme was Moyses borne, and was acceptable vnto God, and norished vp in his fathers house three monethes.

21 And when he was cast out, Pharaos daughter toke hym vp, & norished hym for her owne sonne.

22 And Moyses was learned in all maner of wisdom of the Egyptians, and was myghtie in deedes and in wordes.

23 And when he was full fourtie yeres olde, it came into his heart to visite his brethren the chyldren of Israel.

24 And when he sawe one of them suffer wrong, he defended hym, and auenged his quarrell that had the harme done to hym, and smote the Egyptian.

25 For he supposed his brethren woulde haue vnderstande, howe that God by his hande shoulde delyuer them: But they vnderstoode not.

D

26 And the next day he shewed hym selfe vnto them as they stroue, and woulde haue set them at one agayne, saying: Sirs, ye are brethren, why do ye wrong one to another?

27 But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust hym awaye, saying: [Note: Gene.xix.b Exod.ii.c. Math.xxi.c Actes.iii.b. ] Who made thee a ruler and a iudge ouer vs?

28 Wylt thou kyll me, as thou diddest the Egyptian yesterday?

29 [Note: Exod.ii.c. ] Then fledde Moyses at that saying, and was a straunger in the lande of Madian, where he begate two sonnes.

30 [Note: Exod.iii.a. ] And whe fourtie yeres were expired, there appeared to [Note: Moyses. ] hym in the wyldernesse of mount Sina, an Angel of the Lorde in a flambe of fire in a busshe.

31 When Moyses sawe it, he wondred at ye sight: And as he drue neare to behold, the voyce of the Lord came vnto hym.

32 [Note: Exod.iii.d. Mat.xxii.c Mark.xii c. Luke.xx.c. ] I am the God of thy fathers, ye God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and ye God of Iacob. Then Moyses trembled, & durst not beholde.

33 Then sayde the Lorde to hym: [Note: Iosue.v.d. ] Put of thy shoes from thy feete, for the place where thou standest, is holy grounde.

34 I haue seene, I haue seene the afflictio of my people which is in Egypt, and I haue hearde their gronyng, and am come downe to deliuer them: And now come, & I wyll sende thee into Egypt.

E

35 [Note: Exod.ii.c. ] This Moyses, whom they forsoke saying, who made thee a ruler and a iudge? the same dyd God sende, to be a [Page] ruler, and a deliuerer, by the handes of the angell, whiche appeared to hym in the busshe.

36 He brought them out, shewyng wonders and signes in Egypt, & in the read sea, & in the wyldernesse fourtie yeres.

37 This is that Moyses which saide vnto the chyldren of Israel: [Note: Deu.xviii.c Actes.iii.d. ] A prophete shall the Lorde your God raise vp vnto you of your brethren, lyke vnto me, him shall ye heare.

38 This is he [Note: Exod.xix. Galat.iii.c. ] that was in the Church in ye wyldernesse with the angel, which spake to hym in the mount Sinai, and with our fathers: This man receaved the worde of lyfe to geue vnto vs.

39 To whom our fathers woulde not obey, but thrust it from them, and in their hearts turned backe againe into Egypt,

40 Saying vnto Aaron, [Note: Exod.32 a. ] Make vs gods to go before vs. For as for this Moyses that brought vs out of the lande of Egypt, we wote not what is become of hym.

41 And they made a Calfe in those dayes, and offred sacrifice vnto the idoll, and reioyced ouer the workes of their owne handes.

F

42 Then God turned hym selfe away, & gaue [Note: Rom.i.c. ] them vp to worship the hoast of heauen, as it is written in ye booke of the prophetes: [Note: Amos.v.d. Iere.vii.c. ] O ye house of Israel, haue ye offered to me slayne [Note: [c] God toke their offerynges to be abhominable, & vtterly none at all: partlye in that they offred with a dissemblynge heart and a wicked lyfe, and partlye because they mingled together the seruice deuysed by man, with ye true seruice of God. ] beastes, and sacrifices, by the space of fourtie yeres in the wyldernesse?

43 And ye toke vnto you the tabernacle of Moloch, and the starre of your god Remphan, figures whiche ye made to worship them: And I wyll carry you away beyonde Babylon.

44 Our fathers had ye tabernacle of witness in the wyldernesse, as he had appoynted, speakyng vnto Moyses, [Note: Exo.xxv.d Actes.viii. ] that he shoulde make it accordyng to the fasshion that he had seene.

45 Whiche also our fathers that came after, [Note: Iosue.iii.a. ] brought in with Iesus into the possession of the gentiles, who God draue out before the face of our fathers, vnto the dayes of Dauid.

46 [Note: Psalm.89.c. ] Which founde fauour before God, and woulde fayne haue founde a tabernacle for the God of Iacob.

47 [Note: 3.Reg.vi.a. ] But Solomon buylt hym an house.

48 [Note: Act.xvii f. ] Howebeit, he that is hiest of al, dwelleth not in teples made with [Note: [d] Here is reproved the grosse dulnes of the people, who vaynely fantasied that Gods power was conteyned within the temple. Which is the place of my rest? not the house built with mennes handes: but an humble & a quiet spirite, whiche trembleth at my holye worde. ] handes, as sayth the prophete:

49 Heauen is my seate, and earth is my footstool. What house wyll ye buylde for me, saith the Lord? Or which is the place of my rest?

50 Hath not my hande made all these thynges?

51 Ye styfnecked and of vncircumcised heartes and eares, ye haue alwayes resisted the holy ghost: [Note: Deut.ix.d. ] as your fathers dyd, so do ye.

G

52 Which of the prophetes haue not your fathers persecuted? And they haue slayne them which shewed before of the commyng of that iuste, of whom ye are nowe the betrayers and murtherers:

53 Whiche also haue receaued the lawe, by [Note: Iohn.vii.b. ] the disposition of angels, and [Note: Actes.xv.b. ] haue not kept it.

54 < When they hearde these thynges, their heartes claue a sunder, and they gnashed on hym with their teeth.

55 But he being full of the holy ghost, loked vp stedfastly into heauen, and sawe the glory of God, and Iesus standyng on the ryght hande of God,

56 And sayde: Beholde, I see the heauens open, & the sonne of man standyng on the ryght hande of God.

57 Then they gaue a shoute with a loude voyce, and [Note: Psal.lviii.a. ] stopped their eares, and ran vpon hym all at once,

58 And cast hym out of the citie, and [Note: 3.Reg.xxi d ] stoned him. And ye witnesses layde downe their clothes at a young mans feete, whose name was Saul.

59 And they stoned Steuen, callyng on, and saying: Lorde Iesu [Note: Psalm.31.a. ] receaue my spirite.

60 And he kneeled downe, [Note: [e] He prayed for himselfe standyng: but prayinge for his enemies he kneeled downe, meanyng therby, first that their great iniquitie required a greater & a more feruent prayer: secondly, he declareth his myghtie charitie, praying so earnestly for his enemies. ] and cryed with a loude voyce: Lorde lay not this sinne to their charge. And when he had thus spoken, he fell a sleepe. >

[Page]

## ¶ The .viiij. Chapter.

3 Saule persecuteth the Christians. 4 The Apostles are scattered abrode. 5 Philip commeth into Samaria. 13 Simon Magus is baptized, and he dissembleth. 18 Philip baptizeth the Eunuch.

A

1 **And** Saul [Note: Act.xxii.d. ] consented vnto his death. And at that time there was a great persecution against ye Church which was at Hierusalem, and they were all [Note: Math.x.c. Actes.xi.g. ] scattered abrode thorowout the regions of Iurie, and Samaria, except the apostles.

2 And deuout men were carefull together touchyng Steuen, and made great lamentation ouer hym.

3 As for Saul, he [Note: Actes.ix.a. 1.Cor.xv.b. Galath.i.c. ] made hauocke of the Church, and entred into euery house, & drewe out both men and women, and put them into pryson.

4 Therefore, they that were scattered abrode, went euery where preachyng the worde of God.

5 < Then came Philip into the cite of Samaria, & preached Christe vnto the.

B

6 And the people gaue heede vnto those thynges whiche Philip spake with one accorde, hearyng and seing the miracles which he dyd.

7 For [Note: Math.xvi.d ] vncleane spirites, crying with loude voyce, came out of manye that were possessed with them. And many taken with paulsies, & many that halted, were healed.

8 And there was great ioy in that cite.

9 But there was a certayne man called Simon, which beforetyme in the same cite vsed witchcraft, and bewitched the people of Samaria, saying that he was a man that coulde do great thynges:

10 Whom they regarded from the least to the greatest, saying: This man is the great power of God.

11 And hym they sette much by, because that of long tyme he had bewitched the with sorseries.

C

12 But assoone as they gaue credence to Philips preachyng of the kyngdome of God, and of the name of Iesus Christe, they were baptized, both men & wome.

13 Then Simon him selfe beleued also: And whe he was baptized, he continued with Philip, & wondred, beholding the miracles & signes which were shewed.

14 < When the apostles whiche were at Hierusalem, hearde say that Samaria hadde receaued the worde of God, they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn.

15 Which when they were come downe, prayed for the that they myght receaue the holy ghost.

16 (For as yet he was come downe vpon none of them, but they were baptized [Note: [a] They yt were baptized only in ye name of Christe, no doubt had receaued the holy ghost sufficientlye touchyng theyr saluation: but for further cofirmation of Christes religion, nowe newly sette foorth, the manifest and vnwont gyftes of the holye ghost appeared among the Christians by laying on of ye handes of the apostles. ] only in the name of Christ Iesu.)

17 Then layde they their handes on the, and they receaued the holy ghost. >

18 And when Simon sawe, that thorow laying on of the apostles handes, ye holy ghost was geuen, he offred the money,

19 Saying: Geue me also this power, that on whomsoeuer I put the hands, he may receaue the holy ghost.

>

20 But Peter sayde vnto him: Thy money perishe with thee, because thou hast thought [Note: Math.x.b. ] that the gyfte of God may be obteyned with money.

D

21 Thou hast neither part nor felowship in this busynesse: For thy hearte is not ryght in the syght of God.



22 Repent therefore of this thy wickednesse, & praye God, if perhaps ye thought of thyne heart may be forgeuen thee.

23 For I perceauē yt thou art [Note: [b] Thou art fulfilled with melancoly and enuie. Thou woldest haue doynge with the hyghest, otherwise thou canst not be quiet. ] in the gall of bitternesse, & wrapped in [Note: [c] Through the desire of money and colourable couetousnes. Take heede ye symoniaks that onlye for lyuyng enter into the ministerie. ] iniquitie.

24 The aunswered Simon & said: Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these thinges which ye haue spoke fall on me.

25 And they, when they had testified and preached the worde of the Lorde, returned towarde Hierusalem, and preached the Gospell in many townes of the Samaritanes.

E

26 < And the Angell of the Lorde spake vnto Philip, saying: Aryse, and go towarde the South, vnto the waye that goeth downe from Hierusalem vnto Gaza, which is desert.

27 And he arose, & went on: and behold a man of Ethiopia, an Eunuch, & of great auctoritie with Candace, Queene of the Ethiopias, & had the rule of all her treasure, [Note: 3.Reg.viii.c Iohn.xii.c. ] came to Hierusale for to worship.

28 And as he returned home agayne, sittynge in his charet, he read Esaias the prophete.

29 Then the spirite said vnto Philip: Go neare, & ioyne thy selfe to yonder charet.

30 And Philip ran thither to him, & heard hym reade the prophete Esaias, & saide: vnderstandest thou what thou readest?

31 And he said: how can I, except I had [Page] a guyde? And he desired Philip that he woulde come vp, and sit with hym.

F

32 The tenour of the scripture which he read, was this: [Note: Esaias.liii.c. ] He was ledde as a sheepe to the slaughter, & lyke a lambe dumbe before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth.

33 In his humilitie, his iudgement is exalted: But who shall declare his generation? For his lyfe is taken from the earth.

34 And the Eunuche aunswered Philip, and sayde: I pray thee of whom speaketh the prophete this? Of hym selfe, or of some other man?

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same scripture, and preached vnto hym Iesus.

36 And as they went on their way, they came vnto a certayne water, and the Eunuche sayde: See, here is water, [Note: Actes.x.g. ] what doth let me to be baptized?

G

37 Philip sayde [vnto hym] If thou beleuest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he aunswered, and saide: I beleue that Iesus Christe is the sonne of God.

38 And he commaunded the charet to stande styll: and they went downe both into the water, both Philip and also the Eunuche: and he baptized hym.

39 And assoone as they were come out of the water, the spirite of ye Lorde caught away Philip, that the Eunuche sawe hym no more. And he went on his way reioycyng.

40 But Philip was founde at Azotus. And he walked throughout the countrey, preachyng in all the cities, tyll he came to Cesarea. >

### The .ix. Chapter.

3 The conuertion of Saule. 25 Paule escapeth the Iewes conspiracies, 26 he goeth vp to the Apostles. 34 Peter healeth Eneas, 40 and rayseth vp Tabitha.

A

1 **And** Saul yet [Note: [a] Saul breathed and blustred with rage and crueltie agaynst Christes Church, whiche declareth wherevnto man is led by his rash zeele, before he hath the true knowledge of God. ] breathyng out threatnings and slaughter agaynst the disciples of ye Lord, went vnto ye hie priest,

2 And desired of him letters to carrye to Damascus, to the synagogues: that yf he founde any of this waye, whether they were men or women, he myght bryng them bounde vnto Hierusalem.

3 And when he iourneyed, it came to passe, that as he was come nye to Damascus, sodenly there shyned rounde about hym a lyght from heauen:

4 And he fell to the earth, and hearde a voyce saying to him: [Note: Act.xxii.b. ] Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

5 And he sayde: Who art thou Lorde? And the Lorde said: I am Iesus who thou persecutest, It is harde for thee to kicke agaynst the prickes.

B

6 And he both tremblyng and astonyed, sayde: Lord, [Note: Luk.iii.b. Actes.ii.f. ] what wylt thou haue me to do? And the Lorde sayde vnto hym: Aryse, and go into the citie, and it shalbe tolde thee what thou must do.

7 The men also which iourneyed with him, stode amased, [Note: [b] No maruell though weake & corruptible fleshe was amased at heauenlye thynges, and at the talke of God, wherby it cam to passe ye they heard a voyce, as here is written, & heard no voyce as is written in the .xxij. Chapter: For they hearde a voyce, and vnderstode it not. ] hearing a voyce, but seyng no man.

8 And Saul arose from the earth, and when he opened his eyes, he sawe no man: But they ledde him by the hande, and brought hym into Damascus.

9 And he was three dayes without syght, and neither dyd eate nor drynke.

10 And there was a certayne disciple at Damascus, named Ananias: & to him sayde the Lorde in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold [I am here] Lorde.

11 And the Lorde sayde vnto hym: aryse, and go into the streete, whiche is called strayght, and seeke in the house of Iudas, after one called Saul, [Note: Act.xxi.g. ] of Tarsus: for beholde he prayeth,

12 And hath seene in a vision a man named Ananias commyng in to hym, and puttyng his handes on hym, that he myght receaue his syght.

C

13 Then Ananias aunswered: Lorde, I haue heard by many, of this man, [Note: Act.viii.a. i.Cor.vv.b. Galath.i.c. ] how much euyl he hath done to thy saintes, at Hierusalem.

14 And here he hath auctoritie of ye hye priestes, to bynde all yt call on thy name.

15 The Lord sayde vnto hym: Go thy way, for he is a chosen vessell vnto me, to beare my name before the gentiles, & kynges, and the chyldren of Israel.

16 For I wyl shew hym how great thinges [Note: Act.xxi.c. i.Cor.xi.e f ] he must suffer for my names sake.

17 [Note: Act.xxii c. ] And Ananias went his way, and entred into the house, and put his handes on hym, and sayde: Brother Saul, the [Page] Lorde (euen Iesus that appeared vnto thee in the waye as thou camest) hath sent me, that thou myghtest receaue thy syght, & be fylled with the holy ghost.

18 And immediatly there fell from his eyes as it had ben scales, & he receaued syght foorthwith, and arose, and was baptized,

D

19 And receaued meate, and was comforted. Then was Saul certayne dayes with the disciples whiche were at Damasco.

20 And strayghtway he preached Christe in the synagogues, that he was ye sonne of God.

21 But all that hearde hym, were amased, and sayde: Is not this he that destroyed them which called on this name in Hierusalem, and came hyther for that intent, that he myght bryng the bounde vnto the hye priestes?

22 But Saule increased the more in strength, and confounded the Iewes whiche dwelt at Damasco, affirmyng that this was very Christe. >

23 And after that many dayes were fulfilled, the Iewes toke counsell together to kyll hym.

24 But their laying awayte was knowen of Saule. And they watched ye gates day and nyght to kyll hym.

25 [Note: i.Cor.xii.a. i.Reg.xix.f. ] Then the disciples toke him by night, and put hym through the wall, and let hym downe in a basket.

E

26 And when Saule was come to Hierusalem, he assayde to couple hym selfe to the disciples: but they were all afrayde of hym, & beleued not that he was a disciple.

27 But Barnabas toke hym, & brought hym to the Apostles, and declared to them howe he had seene the Lorde in the way, & that he had spoken to hym, and howe he had done boldely at Damasco in the name of Iesu.

28 And he had his conuersation with the at Hierusalem,

29 Speakyng boldly in the name of the Lorde Iesu. And he spake and disputed agaynst the Grekes: but they went about to slea hym.

30 Which whe the brethren knewe, [Note: Actes.xxi.c ] they brought hym to Cesarea, and sent hym foorth to Tarsus.

31 Then had the Churches rest throughout all Iurie, and Galilee, and Samaria, and were edified, and walked in the feare of the Lorde, & multiplied by the comfort of the holy ghost.

F

32 And it came to passe, as Peter walked throughout all quarters, he came also to the Saintes which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And there he founde a certayne man, named Eneas, which had kept his bed eyght yeres, & was sicke of the paulsie.

34 And Peter sayde vnto hym, Eneas, Iesus Christe make thee whole: aryse, and make thy bedde. [Note: Math.ix.b. Mark.ii.b. Luk.v.c. Iohn.v.b. Actes.iii.b. ] And he arose immediatly.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda, and Saron sawe hym, and turned to the Lorde.

36 There was also at Ioppa a certayne woman, a disciple, named Tabitha, which by interpretatio is called [Note: [c] Tabitha is called Dorcas. Dorcas signifieth a roe Buck, a beast of sharp syght Such an one was Tabitha to this effect, that she being on earth farre from heauen, dyd beholde heauenly thinges, & drewe neare vnto heauen with godly workes ] Dorcas: the same was full of good workes and almes deedes, which she dyd.

37 And it came to passe in those dayes that she was sicke, and dyed: Whom when they had wasshed, they layde her in an vpper chamber:

38 And forasmuch as Lydda was nye to Ioppa, and the disciples hadde hearde that Peter was there, they sent vnto hym two men, desyryng hym that he woulde not be greeued to come vnto them.

G

39 Then Peter arose, & came with them, and when he was come, they brought hym into the vpper chamber: And all the wydowes stode rounde about him weepyng, and shewyng the coates and

garmentes which Dorcas made whyle she was with them.

40 And Peter put them all foorth, and kneled downe, and prayed, and turned hym to the body, and sayde: Tabitha [Note: 3.Reg.xvi.d 4.Reg.iiii.f Luk.vii.c. ] aryse. And she opened her eyes, and when she sawe Peter, she sate vp.

41 And he gaue her the hande, and lyfte her vp: and when he hadde called the saintes and wydowes, he deliuered her alyue.

42 And it was knowen throughout all Ioppa, & many beleued in the Lorde.

43 And it came to passe, that he taryed many dayes in Ioppa, with one Simo a tanner.  
[Page]

## ¶ The .x. Chapter.

3 The vision that Peter sawe, 17 He was sent to Cornelius. 19 The heathen receaue the spirite, and are baptized.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **There** was a certayne man in Cesarea, called Cornelius, a captayne of the bande called the Italian bande,

2 A deuoute man, & one yt feared God, with all his housholde, which gaue much almes to the people, and prayed God alway.

3 The same sawe by a vision euidently, about the ninth houre of the daye, an Angel of God commyng in to hym, and saying vnto hym, Cornelius.

4 And when he loked on hym, he was afrayde, and sayde: What is it Lorde? And he sayde vnto hym: Thy [Note: [a] The prayers and almes of Cornelius pleased God, before he was baptized: but without fayth God can not be pleased. Cornelius ther fore (as Bede truly noteth) hadde fayth, whereby his prayers and almes pleased GOD. For (saith he) he came not to fayth through workes, but to workes thorough fayth. ] prayers and thyne almes, are come vp into remembraunce before God.

5 And nowe sende men to Ioppa, & call for one Simo, whose sirname is Peter.

6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea syde: He shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do.

7 And when the Angell whiche spake vnto Cornelius was departed, he called two of his household seruauntes, and a deuout souldier of them that wayted on hym,

8 And tolde them all the matter, & sent them to Ioppa.

B

9 On the morowe as they went on their iourney, and drewe nye vnto the citie, Peter went vp [Note: Math.vi.a. 4.Reg.iiii.f ] vnto the highest part of the house to pray, about the sixth houre.

10 And whe he waxed hungry, he would haue eaten: But whyle they made redie, he fell into a trance.

11 And saw [Note: [b] This visio doth teach manyfold misteries. First, yt the restraint of meates made vnto the Iewes, is taken awaye, & byndeth not ye Christians. For nowe, to the cleane, all meates are cleane. Secondly, the graces and gyftes of God are cummen also to ye Heathen, who before this tyme wer excluded: whiche thyng is signified by the foure cornerd sheete, which signifieth the foure coastes of the world. Now, heauen is open to all that is inclosed in the sheete, which is the holy congregation of God. ] heauen opened, and a certaine vessell come downe vnto him, as it had ben a great sheete, knyt at the foure corners, & was let downe to the earth.

12 Wherin were all maner of fourefooted bestes of the earth, & wilde bestes, and wormes, and foules of the ayre.

13 And there came a voyce to hym: ryse Peter, kyll and eate.

14 But Peter sayde, Not so Lorde: For I haue neuer eaten any thyng that is common or vncleane.

15 And the voyce spake vnto hym againe the seconde tyme: What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

16 This was done thryse, and the vessell was receaued vp agayne into heauen.

C

17 Nowe whyle Peter doubted in hym selfe, what this vision whiche he hadde seene meant: beholde, the men whiche were sent from Cornelius, had made inquirance for Simons house, & stode before the doore,

18 And called, and asked whether Simo which was sirnamed Peter, were lodged there.

19 Whyle Peter thought on the vision, the spirite said vnto hym: beholde, three men seke thee.

20 Arise therefore, and get the downe, and go with them, & doubt not, for I haue sent them.

21 Then Peter went downe to the men which were set vnto him fro Cornelius, & said: Behold, I am he who ye seeke, what is the cause wherfore ye are come?

22 And they sayde: Cornelius the capitayne, a iust man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the people of the Iewes, was warned by an holy Angel to sende for thee into his house, and to heare wordes of thee.

D

23 Then called he them in, [Note: Gen.xix.a. ] and lodged them. And on the morowe, Peter went away with them, and [Note: Actes.xi.b. ] certaine brethren from Ioppa accompanied hym.

24 And the thirde day after, entred they into Cesarea: And Cornelius wayted for them, and hadde called together his kinsemen and speciall friendes.

25 And it came to passe, as Peter came in, Cornelius met hym, & fell downe [Note: [c] Cornelius dyd reuerence Peter more then he ought to haue done, supposyng him eyther to be a God, eyther to be endued with such power & vertue, for the which he shoulde be honoured as God. ] at his feete, and worshipped [hym.]

26 But Peter toke him vp, saying: stande vp, I my selfe also am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, he came in, & found many that were come together.

28 And he said vnto the: Ye knowe how that [Note: Deut.viii.a. ] it is an vnlawful thyng for a man that is a Iew, to companie or come vnto one of another natio: But God hath shewed me, that I shoulde not call any man common or vncleane.

29 Therefore came I vnto you without delay, assoone as I was sent for: I aske therefore, for what intent ye haue sent for me?

E

30 And Cornelius sayde: This day nowe foure dayes, about this houre, I sate [Page] fasting, and at the ninth houre, I prayed in my house: And beholde, a man stode before me in bryght clothyng,

31 And sayde: Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thyne almes deedes are had in remembraunce in the syght of God.

32 Sende therefore to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose sirname is Peter: He is lodged in the house of one Simo, a tanner, by the sea syde, who when he commeth, shall speake vnto thee.

33 Then sent I for thee immediatly, and thou hast well done that thou art come. Nowe therefore are we all here present before God, to heare all thynges that are commaunded vnto thee of God.

34 [Note: ii.Par.xix.c Rom.ii.b. Ephe.vi.b. ] Then Peter opened his mouth, and said: Of a trueth I perceauē that God hath no regarde of persons:

35 But in euery nation, he that feareth hym, and worketh ryghteousnes, is accepted with hym.

F

36 Touchyng the worde which God set vnto the chyldren of Israel, preachyng peace by Iesus Christe (he is Lord ouer all.)

37 Ye knowe howe the worde was published through all Iurie, [Note: Math.iiii.b. ] begynnyng in Galilee, after the baptisme whiche Iohn preached:

38 Howe [Note: Esai.lxi.a. Luk.iiii.c. ] God annoynted Iesus of Nazareth, with the holy ghoste, and with power: Who went about doying good, and healyng all that were oppressed of the deuyll, for God was with hym.

39 And we are witnesses of all thynges which he dyd in the land of the Iewes, and at Hierusalem, whom they slewe, and hanged on tree.

40 Hym God rased vp the thirde daye, and shewed hym openly,

41 Not to al the people, but vnto vs witnesses, chosen before of God, euen to vs whiche dyd eate and drynke with hym after he arose [Note: Luk.xxiii d ] from the dead.

42 And [Note: Iohu.xxii.b Math.28.d. ] he commaunded vs to preache vnto the people, and to testifie that it is he whiche was ordeyned of God to be the iudge of quicke and dead.

43 To hym geue [Note: Esaias.liiii.d. ] all the prophetes wnesse, that through his name whosoeuer beleueth in hym, shall receaue remission of sinnes. >

G

44 Whyle Peter yet spake these wordes, [Note: Actes.ii.a. ] the holy ghost fell on all them whiche hearde the worde.

45 And they of the circumcision which beleued, were astonied, as many as came with Peter, because that on the gentiles also was shedde out the gyft of the holy ghost.

46 For they hearde them speake with tounge, & magnifie God. Then aunswered Peter:

47 [Note: Actes.viii.f. ] Can any man forbid water, that these shoulde not be baptized, which haue receaued the holy ghost aswell as we?

48 And he commaunded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. > Then prayed they him to tary certaine dayes.

## ¶ The .xj. Chapter.

4 Peter sheweth the cause why he went to the Gentiles. 18 The Churche approueth it. 22 Barnabas & Paul preache at Antiochia. 28 Agabus prophesieth dearth to come.

A

1 **And** the apostles & brethre that were in Iurie, hearde that ye heathe had also receaued the worde of God.

2 And when Peter was come vp to Hierusalem, they that were of the circumcision contended agaynst hym,

3 Saying: [Note: Deut.vii.a. ] Thou wentest in to men vncircucised, & diddest eate with them.

4 But Peter rehearsed the matter from the begynnyng, and expounded it by order vnto them, saying:

5 [Note: Actes.x.b. ] I was in the citie of Ioppa praying, and in a traunce I sawe a vision, a certayne vessell descende, as it had ben a great sheete, let downe from heauen by the foure corners, and it came to me.



6 Upon the which whe I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, & sawe [Note: Leuit.xi.a. Deut.xiiii.a ] fourefooted beastes of the earth, and wylde beastes, and wormes, and foules of the ayre.

B

7 And I hearde a voyce, saying vnto me: aryse Peter, slay, and eate.

8 But I sayde, Not so Lorde: For nothyng common or vncleane hath at any tyme entred into my mouth.

9 But the voyce aunswered me agayne from heaue: Make them not [Note: [a] What meates soeuer ye Iews vsed contrary to ye lawe of Gods lawe, they called it common or vncleane. ] comon which God hath cleansed.

10 And this was done three tymes: And all were taken vp agayne into heauen.

[Page]

11 And beholde, immediatly there were three men, alre dy come vnto the house where I was, sent from Cesarea vnto me.

12 And the spirite sayde vnto me, that I shoulde go with the, without doubting. Moreouer, [Note: Actes.x.d. ] these sixe brethren accompanied me, & we entred into the mans house:

13 And he shewed vs, howe he had seene an Angel in his house, which stode and sayde vnto hym: Sende men to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose sirname is Peter:

14 He shal tell thee wordes, wherby both thou and all thyne house shalbe saued.

15 And as I began to speake, the holy ghost fell on them, [Note: Actes.ii.a. ] as he dyd on vs at the begynnyng.

C

16 Then came it to my remembraunce, howe that the Lorde sayde: [Note: Iohn.i.d. Actes.i.a. ] Iohn baptized with water, but ye shalbe baptized with the [Note: [b] To be baptized with ye holy ghost, is to receaue the visible graces and giftes of the holy ghost. ] holy ghost.

17 For as much then, as God gaue them the lyke gyft as he dyd vnto vs, when we beleued on the Lorde Iesus Christ: what was I, that I shoulde haue withstande God?

18 When they hearde these thynges, they helde their peace, and glorified God, saying: Then hath God also to ye Gentiles, graunted repentaunce vnto lyfe.

19 [Note: Actes.viii.a. ] They also which were scattered abrode through the affliction that arose about Steuen, walked throughout vnto Phenices, and Cypers, and Antioche, preachyng the worde to no man, but vnto the Iewes only.

20 And some of the were men of Cypers, and Cyrenes, which when they were come to Antioche, spake vnto ye Grekes, and preached the Lorde Iesus.

21 And the hande of the Lorde was with them, and a great number beleued and turned vnto the Lorde.

D

22 Then tydynges of these thinges came vnto the cares of the Church, which was in Hierusale: And they sent fourth Barnabas, that he shoulde go vnto Antioche.

23 Which when he came, and had seene the grace of God, was glad, and [Note: Actes.xiii.c ] exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they woulde cleaue vnto the Lorde.

24 For he was a good man, and full of the holy ghost, and of fayth: And much people was added vnto the Lorde.

25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seeke Saul.

26 And when he had founde hym, he brought hym vnto Antioche. And it came to passe, that a whole yere they had their couersation with the Church there, & taught much people: in so much, that the disciples of Antioche, were the [Note: [c] Not for that they were the first Christians, but for that ye people both of the Iewes and Gentiles grewe into one body, and were more bolde freely to confesse the fayth of Christe. ] first that were called Christians.

27 And in those dayes, came prophetes from Hierusalem vnto Antioche.

28 And there stode vp one of them named Agabus, and signified [Note: [d] By these wordes saint Luke doth signifie that the spirite of God was the aucthour of this prophesie, that therby we myght vnderstande ye knowledge not to be gathered either of the course of the starres or any other natural causes ] by the spirite, that there shoulde be great dearth throughout all the worlde: which came to passe in the dayes of Claudius Cesar.

29 Then the disciples, euery man accordyng to his abilitie, purposed to sende succour vnto the brethren which dwelt in Iurie.

30 Which thyng they also dyd, and sent it to the elders by the handes of Barnabas and Saul.

## ¶ The .xij. Chapter.

1 Herode persecuteth the Christians, 2 kylleth Iames, and putteth Peter in prison, 7 whom the Lorde delyuereth by an Angel. 21 The horrible death of Herode. 24 The Gospel florissbeth. 25 Barnabas and Saul turnyng to Antiochia, take Iohn Marke with them.

A  
1 < At the same tyme Herode the king stretched fourth his handes to vexe certayne of the Church.

2 And he killed [Note: Math.iiii.c. ] Iames the brother of Iohn with the sworde.

3 And because he sawe it pleased the Iewes, he proceded further, and toke Peter also. (Then were the dayes of sweete bread.)

4 And when he had caught hym, he put hym in pryson also, and delyuered hym to foure quaternions of souldiers to be kept, intendencyng after Easter to bryng hym foorth to the people.

5 And Peter was kept in pryson: But prayer was made without ceassyng of the Churche, vnto God for hym.

6 And when Herode woulde haue brought hym foorth vnto the people, the [Page] same nyght slept Peter betweene two souldiers, bounde with two chaynes, and the keepers before the doore kept the pryson.

7 And beholde, [Note: Actes.v.d. ] the Angel of ye Lorde was there present, and a lyght shyned in the habitation: And he smote Peter on the syde, and stirred hym vp, saying: Aryse vp quickly. And his chaynes fell of from his handes.

B

8 And the Angel sayde vnto hym: gyrde thy selfe, & bynde on thy sandales. And so he dyd. And he sayeth vnto hym: cast thy garment about thee, and folow me.

9 And he came out and folowed hym, and wyse not that it was trueth which was done by the Angel, but thought he had seene a vision.

10 When they were past the first and the seconde watch, they came vnto the yron gate, that leadeth vnto the citie, [Note: Actes.v.d. ] which opened to them by the owne accorde: And they went out, and passed through one streate, and fourthwith the Angel departed from hym.

11 And when Peter was come to hym selfe, he sayde: Nowe I knowe of a suertie, that the Lorde hath sent his Angel, and hath deliuered me out of the hande of Herode, and from all the waytyng for, of the people of the Iewes. >

12 < And as he considered the thyng, he came to the house of Marie the mother of Iohn, whose sirname was Marke, where many were gathered together [Note: Actes.i.b. ] in prayer.

13 As Peter knocked at the entrie doore, a damsell came foorth to hearken, named Rhoda.

14 And when she knewe Peters voyce, she opened not the doore for gladnesse, but ran in, and tolde howe Peter stode before the doore.

15 And they sayde vnto her: thou art mad. But she affirmed that it was euen so. Then sayde they: it is [Note: [a] For they did knowe by Gods worde, that Angels were appoynted to defende the faythfull, & also in those dayes, they were accustomed to see such syghtes. ] his Angel.

16 But Peter continued knockyng: And when they had opened the doore, and sawe hym, they were astonyed.

17 And when he had beckened vnto the with the hande, that they myght holde their peace, he tolde them by what meanes the Lorde had brought hym out of the pryson. > And he sayde: Go shewe these thynges vnto Iames and to the brethren. And he departed, and went into another place.

18 Nowe assoone as it was day, there was no litle adoe among the souldiers, what was become of Peter.

19 And when Herode had sought for hym, and founde hym not, he examined the kepers, and commaunded them to be caryed away. And he descended from Iurie to Cesarea, and there abode.

20 And Herode was displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: But they came all with one accorde to hym, and made intercession vnto Blastus the kynges chaumberlayne, and desired peace, because their countrey was norisshed by the kyng.

21 And vpon a day appoynted, Herode arayed hym in royall apparell, and set hym in his seate, and made an oration vnto them.

22 And the people gaue a shout [saying] It is the voyce of God, & not of a man.

23 And immediatly the Angel of ye Lorde smote hym, because he gaue not God ye honour, & he was eaten of [Note: [b] The vilenesse of the punyshment declareth here that God detesteth pride and tyranny. His gaundfather also was eaten of lice. ] wormes, and gaue vp the ghost.

24 And the worde of God grewe and [Note: [c] The more that tyrantes go about to suppress gods worde, the more doth it increase and multiplie. ] multiplied.

25 And Barnabas and Saul returned to Hierusalem, when they had fulfilled their office, and toke with them Iohn, whose sirname was Marke.

## ¶ The .xiiij. Chapter.

2 Paul and Barnabas are called to preache among the gentiles. 7 Of Sergius Paulus, and Elymas the sorcerer. 13 The departure of Marke. 14 Paul preacheth at Antiochia. 26 The Iewes are reiected. 28 They that are ordayned to lyfe, beleue.

A

1 **There** was also in the Churche that was at Antioche, certayne prophetes, and teachers: as Barnabas and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manahen, which had ben norisshed vp with Herode the tetrarch, and Saul.

2 As they ministred to the [Note: [a] The word signifieth, to execute a publike office, as the Apostles was, so that here is shewed, that they preached and prophesied, & dyd not offer a sacrifice, or say masse at Antioche, as some vntruely gather. ] Lorde and fasted, the holy ghost sayde: Separate me Barnabas and Saul, for the worke wherunto I haue called them.

3 And when they had fasted & prayed, & layde their hades on the, they let the go.

[Page]

4 And they, after they were sent forth of the holy ghost, departed vnto Seleucia, & from thence they

sealed to Cyprus.

5 And when they were at Salamine, they preached the worde of God in the synagogues of the Iewes: And they had also [Note: Actes.xii.d. ] Iohn to their minister.

B

6 And when they had gone through the Ile vnto Paphos, they founde a certayne sorcerer, a false prophete, a Iewe, whose name was Bariesu:

7 Which was with the deputie of the countrey, one Sergius Paulus, a prudent man: The same called vnto hym Barnabas and Saul, and desired to heare the worde of God.

8 But Elymas [Note: Exod.vii.a. and .viii.b. Actes.viii.b ] the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstoode them, and sought to turne the deputie away from the fayth.

9 Then Saul (which also is called Paul) beyng full of the holy ghost, set his eyes on hym,

10 And sayde: O full of all subiltie and all mischief, thou chylde of the deuyll, thou enemie of all righteousnesse, wylt thou not cease to peruert the wayes of the Lorde?

11 And nowe beholde, the hande of the Lorde is vpon thee, and thou shalt be blynde, and not see the sunne for a season. And immediatly, there fell on hym a myste, and a darcknesse, and he went about, seekyng [them] that shoulde leade hym by the hande.

12 Then the deputie, when he sawe what was done, [Note: Iohn.vi.d. ] beleued, and wondred at the doctrine of the Lorde.

C

13 Nowe when they that were with Paul, were departed fro Paphos, they came to Perga in Pamphylia: And [Note: Actes.xv.g. ] Iohn departed from them, and returned to Hierusalem.

14 But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioche in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue on ye Sabboth day, and sate downe.

15 And after the lecture of the lawe and the prophetes, the rulers of the synagogue sent vnto them, saying: Ye men and brethren, yf ye haue any worde to exhort the people, say on.

16 Then Paul stoode vp, and [Note: Actes.xii.c. ] beckened with the hande, and sayde: Men of Israel, & ye that feare God, geue audience.

17 The God of this people of Israel, chose our fathers, & exalted the people, when they dwelt as straungers in the lande of Egypt, and [Note: Exo.xiiii.a. ] with an hye arme brought he them out of it.

18 And about the tyme of fourtie yeres, suffred he their maners in the wyldernesse.

19 And he destroyed seuen nations in the lande of Chanaan, [Note: Iosue.xlii.d Iudi.i.a. ] and deuyded their lande to them by lot.

20 And afterwarde, he gaue vnto them iudges, about the space of foure hundred and fyftie yeres, vnto the tyme of Samuel the prophete.

D

21 And afterwarde, they [Note: i Reg.viii.a. ] desired a kyng, and God gaue vnto them [Note: i Reg.x.a. ] Saul, the sonne of Cis, a man of the tribe of Beniamin, by the space of fourtie yeres.

22 And when he was put downe, he set vp Dauid to be their kyng, of whom he reported, saying: [Note: i Reg.xvi.a. Psal.89.c. ] I haue founde Dauid the sonne of Iesse, a man after mine owne heart, which shall fulfyll all my wyll.

23 [Note: Psal.132.c. i Reg.vii.b. ] Of this mans seede, hath God accordyng to his promise brought foorth to Israel, the sauour Iesus.

24 When Iohn had first preached before his commyng, the [Note: Mark.i.a. Luk.iii.c. Iohn.i.d. ] baptisme of repentaunce to all the people of Israel.

25 And when Iohn had fulfilled his course, he sayde: [Note: Math.iii.b. ] Whom ye thynke that I am, the same am I not. But behold, there commeth one after me, whose shoes of his feete I am not worthy to loose.

26 < Ye men and brethren, chyl dren of the generation of Abraham, and whosoeuer among you feareth God, [Note: Math.x.a. ] to you is the worde of this saluation sent.

27 For they that dwell at Hierusalem, and their rulers, because [Note: i.Cor.ii.b. ] they knewe hym not, nor yet the voyces of the prophetes which are read euery Sabboth day, they haue fulfilled them in condempnyng hym:

E

28 [Note: Math.27.c. Luk.xxiii.d. ] And though they founde no cause of death in hym, yet desired they Pilate to kyll hym.

29 And when they had fulfilled all that were written of hym, they toke hym downe from the tree, and put hym in a sepulchre.

30 But God ray sed hym agayne from the dead:

31 And he was seene many dayes of them which came vp with hym from Galilee to Hierusalem, which [Note: Actes.i.a. ] are his [Page] witnesses vnto the people.

32 And we declare vnto you, howe that the promise which was made vnto the fathers,

33 God hath fulfilled the same vnto vs their chyl dren, in that he ray sed vp Iesus agayne. > As it is written in the seconde psalme: [Note: Psal.ii.a. Hebr.i.b. ] Thou art my sonne, this day haue I begotten thee.

34 And as concernyng that he ray sed him vp from the dead, nowe no more to returne to corruption, he sayde on this wyse: [Note: Esai.lv.b. ] I wyll geue you ye holy thynges of Dauid, which are [Note: [b] Meaning that he would faythfully accom plishe the promises, which he made of his tree mercie with the forefathers, that

Christ should be borne of the stocke of Daud. ] faythfull.

25 Wherefore, he sayeth also in another place. Thou shalt not suffer thyne holy one to see corruption.

26 For Daud, after he had serued his tyme, by the wyll of God [Note: iii Reg.ii.b. ] fell on slepe, and was layde vnto his fathers, and sawe corruption:

37 But he whom God raysed agayne, sawe no corruption.

F

38 Be it knowen vnto you therfore, ye men & brethren, that [Note: Luk.24.g. ] through this man is preached vnto you the forgeuenesse of sinnes,

39 And that by hym, all that beleue, are iustified from all thynges, from which ye coulde not be iustified by the lawe of Moyses.

40 Beware therfore, lest that fall on you, which is spoken of in the prophetes:

41 [Note: Abacuc.i.a. ] Beholde ye despisers, and wonder, and perishe ye: for I do a worke in your dayes, a worke which ye shal not beleue though a man declare it you.

42 And when they were gone out of the synagogue of the Iewes, the Gentiles besought that they woulde preache these wordes to them ye next Sabboth.

43 Nowe when the congregation was broken vp, many of the Iewes and vertuous proselytes folowed Paul & Barnabas, which spake to them, [Note: Actes.xi.d. ] and exhorted them to continue in the grace of God. >

44 And the next Sabboth day came almost the whole citie together, to heare the worde of God.

45 But when the Iewes sawe the people, they were full of indignation, and spake agaynst those thynges which were spoken of Paul, speakyng against, and raylyng.

46 Then Paul and Barnabas wared bolde, and sayde: It was meete [Note: Math.x b. ] that the worde of God shoulde first haue ben spoken to you: but seeyng ye put it from you, and thynke your selues vnworthy of euerlastyng lyfe, loe, we turne to the Gentiles,

G

47 For so hath the Lorde commaunded vs. [Note: Esai.xlix.b. Luk.i.e. ] I haue made thee a lyght of the Gentiles, that thou be the saluation vnto the ende of the worlde.

48 And when the Gentiles hearde this, they were glad, and glorified the worde of the Lorde, and as many as were ordayned to eternall lyfe, beleued.

49 And the worde of the Lorde was publisshed throughout all the region.

50 But the Iewes moued the deuout and [Note: [c] These were welthie and substancial women, and yet superstitious, beyng led with a blynde zeale, whom ye common people esteemed very Godly, and therefore Luke speketh here of these women, as ye worlde esteemed of them. ] honest women, and the chiefe men of the citie, and raysed

persecution agaynst Paule and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coastes:

51 **But they shoke of the dust of** [Note: [d] This they dyd according to the commaundement of the Gospel, for a wisse of their trauayle, that they came into their citie and offered to them the doctrine of the Gospel, which they contemned, and therby signified also that they so detested their companie, for this their contempt, that they woulde not haue the dust of their citie hange vpon their shoes. ] **their feete against them, and came vnto Iconium.**

52 **And the disciples were fylled with ioy, and with the holy ghost. >**

## ¶ The .xiiij. Chapter.

1 **God geueth successe to his worde. 6 Paul and Barnabas preache at Iconium, and are persecuted. 13 At Lystra they woulde do sacrifice to Barnabas and Paul. 19 Paul is stoned. 22 They confirme the disciples in fayth & patience. 23 They appoynt ministers.**

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **And** it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the synagogue of the Iewes, & so spake, that a great multitude both of the Iewes, & also of the Grekes beleued.

2 **But the vnbeleuyng Iewes, stirred vp, and corrupted the myndes of the Gentiles agaynst the brethren.**

3 **Long tyme therfore abode they there, and quyt them selues boldely, with the helpe of the Lorde, which gaue testimonie vnto the worde of his grace, and graunted signes & wonders to be done by their handes.**

4 **But the multitude of the citie was** [Page] [Note: [a] As it is acursed vntie the which do seperate vs from God, so it is better an hundreth tymes, that a fewe depart from all the worlde, and to be at vntie with God, then being at uariaunce with hym, to be in peace with the worlde. ] **deuided: and part helde with the Iewes, and part with the Apostles.**

5 **And when there was an assault made both of the gentiles, and also of the Iewes, with their rulers, to do them violence, and to stone them,**

6 **They were ware of it, and fled vnto Lystra & Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and vnto the regio that lieth rounde about:**

7 **And there preached the** [Note: [b] The persecution of the Gospel, is an occasion oft tymes, of further aduancement of the Gospel. ] **Gospell.**

<sup>B</sup>  
8 **And there sate a certayne man at Lystra, weake in his feete, beyng a creple from his mothers wombe, and neuer had walked.**

9 **The same hearde Paul speake: which beholdyng hym, and perceauyng that he had sayth to be whole,**

10 **Sayde with a loude voyce: stande vpryght on thy feete. And he** [Note: Esa.xxxv b Math.xv.d. Luk.vii.d. ]



start vp, and walked.

11 And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lyft vp their voyces, saying in the speache of Lycaonia: [Note: Actes.28.b. ] Gods are come downe to vs in the lykenesse of men.

12 And they called Barnabas Iupiter, and Paul Mercurius, because he was the chiefe speaker.

13 Then Iupiters priest, which was before their citie, brought oxen and garlandes vnto the doore, and woulde haue done sacrifice with the people.

C

14 Which when the Apostles, Barnabas & Paul heard of, they rent their clothes, and ran in among the people, crying,

15 And saying: Sirs, why do ye these thynges? [Note: Actes.x.d. Apo.xix.b. and .xxii.c. ] We are mortall men lyke vnto you, and preach vnto you, that ye shoulde turne from these vanities, vnto the Iuyng God, [Note: Gen.i.a. Psal.cxlvi.a Apo.xiiii.b ] which made heauen and earth, and the sea, and all thynges that are therin.

16 The which in tymes past suffred all nations to walke in their owne wayes.

17 [Note: Actes.xvii f Rom.i.b. ] Neuerthelesse, he left not hym selfe without witnesse, in that he shewed his benefites from heauen, in geuyng vs rayne and fruitfull seasons, fillyng our heartes with foode and gladnesse.

18 And with these sayinges, scarce refrayned they the people, that they had not done sacrifice vnto them.

D

19 Then thither came certayne Iewes from Antioche and Iconium: which, whe they had perswaded the [Note: [c] They that a litle before, woulde haue worshipped Paul as God, nowe they are content that he shoulde be stoned as a wicked man, such inconstancie is in the ignoraunt multitude. ] people, and had stoned Paule, drewe hym out of the citie, supposyng he had ben dead.

20 Howbeit, as the disciples stode round about hym, he arose vp, and came into the citie: And the next day, he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And when they had preached to that citie, and had taught many, they returned agayne to Lystra, and to Iconium, and Antioche,

22 And strengthened the disciples soules agayne, and [Note: Actes.xiii.e ] exhorted them to continue in the fayth, and that we must [Note: ii Tim.iii.c. ] through much tribulation enter into the kyngdome of God.

23 And when they had ordeyned them elders by election in euery Church, and had prayed, with [Note: [d] Here we learne, that when soeuer we go about any wayghtie matter, we ought with abstinence prepare our myndes vnto prayer, that it may be the more earnest. ] fastyng, they commended them to the Lorde, on whom they beleued.

24 And when they had gone throughout Pisidia, they came to Pamphylia,

25 And when they had spoken the worde in Perga, they descended into Attalia,

26 And thence departed by shippe to Antioche, from whence they were committed vnto the grace of God, to the worke which they fulfilled.

27 And when they were come, and had gathered the Church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, & howe he had opened the doore of fayth vnto the gentiles.

28 And there they abode long tyme with the disciples.

## ¶ The .xv. Chapter.

1 The decree of the Apostles concernyng circumcision, and other ceremonies of the Iewes. 35 Paul and Barnabas preache in Antioche. 39 Paul & Barnabas fallyng at stryfe, brake companie.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **And** certayne men whiche came downe fro Iurie, taught the brethren, [Note: Galath.v.a. ] except ye be circumcised after the maner of Moyses, ye can not be saued.

2 So, when there was rysen discention and disputyng, not a litle vnto Paul and Barnabas, agaynst them: they determyned that Paul and [Note: Galath.ii.a. ] Barnabas, and certayne other of them, shoulde go vp to Hierusalem, vnto the Apostles and elders, about this question.

[Page]

3 And after they were brought on their way by ye Church, they passed through Phenices and Samaria, declaryng the conuersation of the gentiles, and they brought great ioy vnto all the brethen.

4 And when they were come to Hierusalem, they were receaued of ye Church, and of the Apostles and elders: And they declared all thynges that God had done with them.

5 Then rose vp certayne of the sect of the pharisees, which dyd beleue, saying that it was needefull to circumcise the, and to commaunde to kepe the lawe of Moyses.

6 And the Apostles and elders came together, for to consider of this matter.

7 And when there had ben much disputyng, Peter rose vp, and sayde vnto the: Ye men & brethren, ye knowe how that a good while ago, God did chose among vs, that the gentiles by my mouth, shoulde heare the worde of the Gospel, and beleue.

8 And God whiche [Note: Actes.i.b. Psal.vii.c. i para.28.b. ] knoweth the heartes, bare them witnesse, and gaue vnto them the holy ghost, euen as he dyd vnto vs:

9 And put no difference betwene vs and them, purifyng their [Note: Iohn.xiii.b. ] heartes by fayth.

10 Nowe therefore, why tempt ye God, to put on the disciples neckes, the [Note: [a] He meaneth the holy lawe, and not ye ceremonies only, & calleth to a yoke not able to be borne, because no man, not ye most holiest and perfect that euer was (Christe only excepted) was able to perfourme the same in all poyntes, both outwardly accordyng to the letter, and inwardly accordyng to the spirite. ] yoke which neither our fathers nor we were able to beare?

11 But we beleue, that through the grace of the Lorde Iesu Christe, we shalbe saued, euen as they.

12 Then all the multitude was scilent, and gaue audience to Barnabas and Paul, which tolde what signes and wonders, God had shewed among the gentiles by them.

13 And when they helde their peace, Iames aunswered, saying: Men and brethren, hearken vnto me.

14 Simeon tolde, howe God at the begynnyng dyd visite, to receaue of the gentiles, a people in his name.

15 And to this agree the wordes of the prophetes, as it is written:

16 After this I wyll returne, and wyll buylde agayne the [Note: [b] The prophete in this place, prophecied of Christes comyng in the fleshe, which shoulde buyld agayne ye tabernacle of Daud, which figured Gods Church, but then vtterly defaced and brought to ruine, by the pharisaicall and Iewyshe superstitions. ] tabernacle of Daud, which is fallen downe: and that which is fallen in decay of it, wyll I buylde agayne, and I wyll set it vp:

17 That the residue of men myght seke after the Lorde, and all the gentiles vpon whom my name is called, sayth the Lorde, which doth all these thynges.

18 Knowen vnto God are all his workes from the begynnyng of the worlde.

19 Wherefore my sentence is, that we trouble not them, which from among the gentiles, are turned to God:

20 But that we write vnto them, that they absteyne themselues [Note: Exod.xx.a. ] from fylthynesse of idols, and fro fornication, and from strangled, and [Note: Gen.ix.a. Leuit.vii.c. ] from blood.

21 For Moyses of olde tyme, hath in euery citie, them that preache hym in the synagogues, when he is read euery Sabboth day.

D

22 Then pleased it the Apostles & elders, with the whole Church, to sende chosen me of their owne companie to Antioch, with Paul and Barnabas: [That is] [Note: Iohn.xiiii.a ] Iudas, whose sirname was Barsabas, and Silas, which were chiefe men among the brethren,

23 And wrote letters by them, after this maner.

E

24 The Apostles, and elders, & brethren, sende greetinges vnto ye brethren, which are of the gentiles in Antiochia, Syria, & Cilicia. Forasmuch as we haue heard, that certayne which departed from vs, haue troubled you with wordes, & cumbred your myndes, saying ye must be circumcised and kepe the lawe, to who we gaue no such commaudent:

25 It seemed therefore to vs a good thing, when we were come together with one accorde, to sende chosen

men vnto you, with our beloued Barnabas and Paul,

26 Men that haue ieoparded their lyues, for ye name of our Lorde Iesus Christe.

27 We haue sent therefore Iudas and Silas, which shall also tell you ye same thynges by mouth.

28 For it seemed good to the holy ghost, and to vs, to charge you with no more then these necessarie thynges [That is to say]

29 That ye abstayne from thynges offered to idols, and from blood, and from strangled, and from fornication: From which yf ye kepe your selues, ye shall do well. So fare ye well.

F

30 Nowe therefore, when they were departed, they came to Antioche, and gathered the multitude together, and delyuered the epistle.

31 Which when they had read, they reioyced of the consolation.

[Page]

32 And Iudas, and Silas, beyng prophetes, exhorted ye brethren with many wordes, and strengthened them.

33 And after they had taryed there a space, they were let go in peace of the brethren, vnto the Apostles.

34 Notwithstandyng, it pleased Silas to abyde there styll.

35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioche, teachyng and preachyng the worde of the Lorde, with other many.

36 But after a certayne space, Paul sayde vnto Barnabas: Let vs go agayne, and visite our brethren, in euery citie where we haue shewed ye worde of the Lorde, [and see] howe they do.

37 And Barnabas gaue counsell to take with them Iohn, whose sirname was Marke.

38 But Paul woulde not take hym vnto their companie, [Note: Actes.xii.e. ] which departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the worke.

39 And the [Note: [c] God suffereth ye most perfect to fall, and yet turne their infirmities to the setting foorth of his glory, as this breache of companie, caused the Gospel to be preached in mo places. ] contention was so sharpe betwene the, that they departed a sunder, one from the other, and so Barnabas toke Marke, & sayled vnto Cypers.

40 And Paul chose Silas, and departed, beyng committed of the brethren vnto the grace of God.

41 And he went through Cyria & Cilicia, stablisshyng the Churches.

## ¶ The .xvj. Chapter.

1 Paul circumciseth Timothie. 7 The spirite calleth them from one countrey to another. 24 Lydia is conuerted. 28 Paul and Silas imprisoned, conuert the iaylour, 37 and are delyuered because they be Romanes.

A

1 **Then** came he to Derbe and to Lystra: And beholde, a certayne disciple was there, named Timotheus, a womans sonne which was a Iewesse, and beleued: but his father was a Greke.

2 Of whom the brethren that were at Lystra and Iconium, reported well.

3 Paul woulde that he should go foorth with hym, and toke & circumcised hym, because of the Iewes, which were in those quarters: for they knewe all, that his father was a Greke.

4 And as they went through the cities, they delyuered them the decrees for to kepe, that were [Note: Actes.xv.c. ] ordayned of ye Apostles and elders, which were at Hierusalem.

5 And so were the Churches stablissed in the fayth, and encreased in number dayly.

B

6 Nowe when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, and [Note: Rom.i.c. ] were forbidden of the holy ghost to preache the worde in Asia,

7 They commyng to Mysia, sought to go into Bithynia: but the spirite suffred them not.

8 And they passyng through Mysia, came downe to [Note: Act.xviii c. ] Troada.

9 And a vision appeared to Paul in the nyght: There stode a man of Macedonia, and prayed hym, saying: Come into Macedonia, and helpe vs.

C

10 And after he had seene ye visio, immediatly we prepared to go into Macedonia, beyng certified that ye Lorde had called vs, for to preache the Gospel vnto them.

11 When we loosed foorth then from Troada, we came with a strayght course to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis:

12 And from thence, to Philippos, which is the chiefe citie in the partes of Macedonia, and a free citie: And we were in that citie abydyng certayne dayes.

13 And on the day of the Sabbothes, we went out of the citie, besydes a ryuer, where prayer was wont to be made: And we sate downe, and spake vnto the women which resorted thyther.

14 And a certayne woman, named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the citie of the Thyatirians, which worshipped God, gaue vs audience: Whose hearte the Lorde opened, that she attended vnto the thynges which Paul spake.

D

- 15 And when she was baptized, and her householde, she besought vs, saying: Yf ye haue iudged me to be faythfull to the Lorde, come into my house, and abyde there. And she constrayned vs.
- 16 And it came to passe, as we went to prayer, a certayne damsell, possessed with a spirite of [Note: [a] Whiche coulede tell of thynges past, and gesse of thynges to come, which knowledge in many thinges God permitteth to the deuyll, to this ende (as Busten noteth) that he myght ye more myghtelye deceaue those yt would beleue hym. ] southsaying met vs: which brought her maisters much vantage with southsaying.
- 17 The same folowed Paul and vs, and cryed, saying: These men are the seruauntes [Page] of the most hye God, which shewe vnto vs the way of saluation.
- 18 And this dyd she many dayes. But Paul not content, turned about, & sayde to the spirite, I commaunde thee [Note: Mat.xvi.d. ] in the name of Iesu Christe, that thou come out of her. And he came out the same houre.
- 19 And when her maisters sawe that the [Note: Actes.xix.c ] hope of their gaynes was gone, they caught Paul & Silas, and drewe them into the market place, vnto the rulers,
- 20 And brought them to the officers, saying: These men trouble our citie, being Iewes:
- 21 And preache ordinaunces, which are not lawfull for vs to receaue, neither to obserue, seeyng we are Romanes.
- 22 And the people ran agaynst them, and the officers rent their clothes, and commaunded them [Note: ii Cor.xi.f. ] to be beaten with roddes.
- 23 And when they had beaten them sore, they cast them into pryson, commaundyng the iayler of the pryson to kepe them diligently.
- 24 Which when he had receaued such commaundement, thrust them into the inner pryson, and made their feete fast in the stockes.
- 25 And at mydnyght Paul and Silas prayed, and lauded God. And the prysoners hearde them.
- 26 And sodenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundation of the pryson was shaken, and [Note: Actes.v.d. and .xii.b. ] immediatly all the doores opened, and euery mans bandes were loosed.
- 27 When the keper of the pryson waked out of his sleepe, and sawe the pryson doores open, he drewe out his sworde and woulde haue kylled hym selfe, supposyng that the prysoners had ben fled.
- 28 But Paul cryed with a loude voyce, saying: Do thy selfe no harme, for we are all here.
- 29 Then he called for a lyght, and sprang in, and came tremblyng, and fell downe before Paul and Silas,
- 30 And brought them out, & sayde: Syrs, [Note: Luk.iii.a. ] what must I do to be saued?

31 And they sayde: [Note: Actes.ii.f. Iohn.vi.b. ] beleue on the Lorde Iesus Christe, and thou shalt be saued, and thy householde.

32 And they spake vnto hym the worde of the Lorde, and to all that were in his house.

33 And he toke them the same houre of the nyght, and wasshed their woundes, and was baptized hym selfe, & all they of his householde strayghtway.

34 And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and [Note: Luk.xix.g. ] ioyed that he with all his householde beleued on God.

35 And when it was day, the officers sent the sergeauntes, saying: Let those men go.

36 And the keper of the pryson tolde this saying to Paul, the officers haue sent worde to loose you. Nowe therfore, get you hence, and go in peace.

37 Then sayde Paul vnto them: They haue beaten vs openly vncondempned, beyng Romanes, and haue cast vs into pryson: and nowe woulde they thrust vs out priuily? Nay veryly, but let them come them selues, and fet vs out.

38 And the sergeauntes tolde these wordes vnto the officers, and they feared when they hearde that they were Romanes.

39 [Note: Math.viii.d ] And they came and besought them, and brought them out, and desired the to depart out of the citie.

40 And they went out of the pryson, and entred into the [house] of Lydia, & when they had seene the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

## The .xvij. Chapter.

1 Paul commeth to Thessalonica, where the Iewes set the citie in an vprore. 15 Paul escapeth to Athens, where he preacheth the vnknowen God.

A

1 **As** they made their iourney thorowe Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Iewes.

2 And Paul, as his maner was, went in vnto them, and three Sabboth dayes disputed with the out of the scriptures,

3 Openyng and alleagyng, that [Note: Luk.24.g. ] Christ must needes haue suffred, and rysen agayne from

the dead, and that this is Christe Iesus, which I preache to you.

4 And [Note: Actes.28.f. ] some of them beleued, and ioyned with Paul and Silas, and of the deuout [Page] Grekes a great multitude, and of the chiefe women not a fewe.

B

5 But the Iewes whiche beleued not, moued with enuie, toke vnto them certaine vagaboundes and euyll men, and gathered a companie, and set all the citie on a rore, and made assault vnto the house of Iason, & sought to bryng them out to the people.

6 And when they founde them not, they drewe Iason and certaine brethren vnto the heades of the citie, crying: these that trouble the world, are come hyther also,

7 Whom Iason hath receaued [priuily.] [Note: Iohn.xix.c. ] And these al do contrary to the decrees of Caesar, [Note: [a] Like quarell pykyng, they vsed against Christ. And these be the weapons whereby the world continually fyghteth agaynst the members of Christe, treason and sedition. ] saying that there is another kyng [one] Iesus.

8 And they troubled the people, and the officers of the citie, when they hearde these thynges.

9 And when they were sufficiently aunswered of Iason, and of the other, they let them go.

10 And the brethren immediatlye sent away Paul & Silas by nyght, vnto Berea: Which when they were come thyther, they entred into the synagogue of the Iewes.

C

11 These were the noblest of birth among them of Thessalonica, which receaued the worde with all redynesse of mynde, and searched [Note: Iohn.v.g. ] the scriptures dayly, whether those thynges were so.

12 Therefore many of them beleued. Also of honest women which were Grekes, and of men not a fewe.

13 But when the Iewes of Thessalonica had knowledge that ye worde of God was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thyther and moued the people.

14 And then immediatly the brethren sent away Paul, to go as it were to the sea: but [Note: Act.xviii.b. ] Silas & Timotheus abode there styll.

D

15 And they that guyded Paul, brought hym vnto Athens, and receaued a commaundement vnto Silas & Timotheus for to come to hym with speede, & went their way.

16 Whyle Paul wayted for them at Athens, his spirite was moued in hym, when he sawe the citie geue to worshipping of idoles.

17 Therefore disputed he in the synagogue with the Iewes, and with the deuout persons, and in the market dayly with them that came vnto hym by chauce.

18 Then certaine philosophers of the [Note: [b] The Epicures were a sect of learned men, whiche (beyng without the knowledge of God) helde opinion, that ther was no lyfe or ioye after this life, but that all mans felicitie dyd consist in ye pleasures of this worlde. The Stoikes were an other kynde of learned men, whiche lykewyse wantynge the knowledge of God affirmed yt mans whole felicitie & happinesse did cosist in the qualities and vertues of the mynde. ] Epicures, and



of the Stoickes disputed with hym. And some saide: What wyll this babler say? Other some, he seemeth to be a setter fourth of newe gods: because he preached vnto them Iesus, and the resurrection.

E

19 And they toke hym, and brought him into Marce streate, saying: Maye we not knowe what this newe doctrine wherof thou speakest is?

20 For thou bryngest certaine straunge thinges to our eares: We would knowe therefore what these thynges meane.

21 For all the Athenians and straungers which were there, gaue them selues to nothing els, but either to tell or to heare some newe thyng.

22 Then Paul stode in the myddes of Marce streate, and sayde: ye men of Athens, I perceauē that in all thynges ye are to superstitious.

F

23 For as I passed by, and behelde the maner howe ye worship your gods, I founde an aulter, wherin was written, vnto the vnknowe god. Whom ye then ignorauntly worship, him shewe I vnto you.

24 [Note: Gene.i a. Act.xiiii.c. Psal.xlvi.a. ] God that made the worlde, & all that are in it, seing that he is Lorde of heaue and earth, [Note: Apo.xiiii.b Act.vii.f. Esai.lxvi.a. 4.Re.viii.c. ] dwelleth not in temples made with handes:

25 Neither is worshipped with mens handes, as though he needed of any thing, seing he him selfe [Note: i.Paral.v.c. Genes.i.b. ] geueth life and breath to all, euery where.

26 And hath made of one blood all nations of men, for to dwell on all ye face of the earth, & hath determined the tymes before appoynted, and also the boundes of their habitation:

27 That they shoulde seke the Lorde, yf perhappes they myght haue felt and founde hym, though he be not farre fro euery one of vs.

28 For in hym we liue, and moue, & haue our beyng, as certaine of your owne poetes sayde: for we are also his offpryng.

29 Forasmuch then as we are the [Note: [c] The Apostle tearmeth vs the generation of God, not that we be of ye substance and nature of God, but because God hath created vs, and by his sonne Iesus Christe hath redeemed vs, and made vs his chyldren by adoption. ] offspring of God, we ought not to thynke that the Godhead is lyke vnto golde, siluer, or stone, grauen by art, and mans deuice.

30 And the tyme of this ignoraunce God wyncked at: but nowe byddeth all men euery where to repent:  
[Page] G

31 Because he hath appoynted a day in the which he wyll iudge the worlde in ryghteousnesse, by that man by whom he hath appoynted, and hath offered fayth to all men, in that he hath rayseed hym from the dead.

32 And when they hearde of the resurrection from the dead, some mocked, and other sayde, we wyll heare thee agayne of this matter.

33 So Paul departed from among them.

34 Howe be it, certaine men claue vnto hym, and beleued: among the whiche was Denys Areopagita, and a woman named Damaris, & other with them.

## ¶ The .xviij. Chapter.

3 Paul preacheth at Corinth. 19 Paul goeth agayne into Syria, and commeth to Ephesus and Antioche. 24 Of Apollos. 26 Aquila and Priscilla.

A

1 **After** these thynges, Paul departed fro Athens, & came to Corinth,

2 [Note: Rom.xvi.a. ii.Tim.iiii.d ] And found a certaine Iewe, named Aquila, borne in Ponthus, lately come fro Italie with his wyfe Priscilla (because that Claudius had commaunded all Iewes to depart from Rome) and he came vnto them.

3 And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought (for their craft was to make tentes)

4 And he disputed in the synagogue euery Sabboth, and exhorted the Iewes and the Grekes.

5 And when [Note: Act.xvii.d. ] Silas and Timotheus were come fro Macedonia, Paul was constrayned by the spirite to testifie to the Iewes that Iesus was Christe.

6 And when they sayde contrary, and blasphemed, [Note: Math.x.b. Mark.vi.b. Act.xiii.g. ] he shoke his rayment, & said vnto them: Your blood be [Note: [a] By this hebrue speach he signifieth, that he that dyeth and perysheth. shall peryshe thorow his owne fault. ] vpon your owne heades. From hencefoorth wyll I go blamelesse vnto the gentiles.

7 And he departed thence, and entred into a certaine mans house, named Iustus, a worshipper of God, whose house ioyned harde to the synagogue.

8 And one Crispus the chiefe ruler of the synagogue [Note: Iohn.iii.g. ] beleued on the Lorde, with all his housholde: and many of the Corinthians hearyng, beleued, and were baptized.

B

9 Then spake the Lorde to Paul in the nyght [Note: Act.xvii.b. ] by a vision: Be not afrayde, but speake, and holde not thy peace:

10 For I am with thee, and no man shal inuade thee to hurt thee. For I haue much people in this citie.

11 And he continued there a yere and sixe monethes, and taught the word of God among them.

12 And when Gallio was the deputie of Achaia, the Iewes made insurrection with one accord against Paul, & brought hym to the iudgement seate,

13 Saying: This felow counselleth men to worship God contrary to the lawe.

14 And when Paul nowe was about to open his mouth, Gallio sayde vnto the Iewes: Yf it were a matter of wrong, or an euyll deede, O ye Iewes, reason woulde that I shoulde beare with you:

15 But yf it be a question of wordes and names, or of your lawe, loke ye to it your selues: for I wyll be no iudge of such matters.

16 And he draue them fro the iudgement seate.

17 Then all the Grekes toke Softenes the chiefe ruler of ye synagogue, & smote hym before the iudgement seate: And Gallio cared for none of those thinges.

C

18 And Paul after this, taried there yet a good whyle, and then toke his leaue of the brethren, & sayled thence into Syria, (Aquila & Priscilla accompanying him) And he shore his head in [Note: [b] Cenchrea is a hauen at Corinth, where Paul takyng shippe dyd sheare his head, accordyng to his vowe. For accordyng to the lawe of Moyses, they that vowed them selues to God were comaunded to suffer their heere to grow, as long as they would continue Nazarites, and afterward to sheare it, and to burne it. This dyd Paul, not forgettyng what he had before decreed with the Apostles. touchyng the abolisshyng of the lawe: but leste ye Iewes which beleued should be offeded, he fayned hym selfe a Iewe to wyn the Iewes. ] Cenchrea, for he had a vowe.

19 And he came to Ephesus, and left the there, but he hym selfe entred into the synagogue, & reasoned with ye Iewes.

20 When they desired him to tary longer tyme with them, he consented not:

21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must needes at this feast that commeth be in Hierusalem: but I wyll returne agayne vnto you yf God wyll. And he sayled from Ephesus.

22 And whe he was come vnto Cesarea, and ascended vp & saluted the Church, he went to Antioche.

23 And whe he had taried there a while, he departed, and went ouer al the countrey of Galatia and Phrygia by order, strengthyng all the disciples.

[Page] D

24 And a certaine Iewe, named [Note: i.Cor.i.b. ] Apollos, borne at Alexandria, came to Ephesus, an eloquent man, and myghtie in the scriptures.

25 The same was infourmed in the way of the Lorde, and spake feruently in the spirite, & taught diligently the thynges of the Lorde, and knewe but the baptisme of Iohn only.

26 And the same began to speake boldly in the synagogue. Whom when Aquila and Priscilla had hearde, they toke him vnto them, and [Note: [c] Apollo beyng a wittie & a learned ma, was not ashamed to be taught &

instructed in the doctrine of christ, of a poore craftes man and his wyfe. ] expounded vnto him the way of God more perfectly.

27 And when he was disposed to go into Achaia, the brethre wrote, exhorting the disciples to receaue hym: Which when he was come, helped them much which had beleued through grace.

28 For he ouercame the Iewes myghtilye, and that openly, shewyng by the scriptures, that Iesus was Christe.

## ¶ The .xix. Chapter.

3 Of baptisme. 6 Of the holy ghost geuen by Paules handes. 9 The Iewes blaspheme the doctrine of Paul. 13 The punyshment of the coniurers. 24 Demetrius rayseth sedition. 41 God delyuereth his, and appeaseth the sedition.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **And** it came to passe, yt whyle Apollo was at Corinth, Paul passed through the vpper coastes, and came to Ephesus, and founde certaine disciples,

2 And sayde vnto them: Haue ye receaued the [Note: [a] By the holye ghoste here he meaneth the visible graces of the holy spirite. ] holy ghost sence ye beleued? And they saide vnto hym: We haue not hearde whether there be any holy ghost or no.

3 And he sayde vnto them: Unto what then were ye baptized? And they sayde: vnto [Note: [b] By this place, Iohns baptisme signifieth Iohns doctrine, whiche therfore is so called, for that he sealed his doctrine with the seale at baptisme in them that beleued. ] Iohns baptisme.

4 Then sayde Paul: Iohn veryly baptized with the baptisme of repentaunce, saying vnto the people, that they should beleue on hym which shoulde come after hym, that is, on Christe Iesus.

5 When they heard this, they were baptized [Note: [c] They that were baptized were not baptized with water, beyng before baptized of Iohn with water: but they were baptized with visible gyftes of the holyghost, which Saint Luke declaryng howe it was, writeth that it was by the laying on of S. Paules handes. ] in the name of the Lorde Iesu.

6 And whe Paul had layde his handes vpon them, the holy ghost came on the, and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

7 And all the men were about twelue.

8 And he went into the synagogue, and spake boldlye for the space of three monethes, disputyng & perswadyng those thynges that appertayne to the kyngdome of God. >

<sup>B</sup>  
9 But when diuers waxed harde hearted, and beleued not, but spake euyll of the way [of the Lorde) and

that before the multitude, he departed from them, & seperated ye disciples. And he disputed dayly in the scoole of one called Tyrannus.

10 And this continued by the space of two yeres, so that all they whiche dwelt in Asia, hearde the worde of the Lord Iesu, both Iewes and Grekes.

11 And God [Note: Mark.xvi.d Actes.v.c. ] wrought speciall miracles by the handes of Paul.

C

12 So that from his body, were brought vnto the sicke, napkins, and partlettes, and the diseases departed from them, & the [Note: Math.xvi.d. ] euyll spirites went out of them.

13 Then certaine of the vagabounde Iewes, exorcistes, toke vpon them to call ouer them which had euyll spirites, the name of the Lorde Iesus, saying: We adiure you by [Note: Math.vii.e. ] Iesus, whom Paul preacheth.

14 And there were seuen sonnes of one Sceua a Iewe, and chiefe of ye priestes, which dyd so.

15 And the euyll spirite aunswered, and sayde, Iesus I knowe, and Paul I knowe: but who are ye?

D

16 And the man in whom the euyll spirite was, ran on them, & ouercame the, & preuayled agaynst them, so that they fled out of that house naked & wounded.

17 And this was knowen to all ye Iewes & Grekes also which dwelt at Ephesus, and feare came on them all, & the name of the Lorde Iesus was magnified.

18 And many that beleued, came & [Note: Mark.i.a. ] confessed, and shewed their workes.

19 Many also of the whiche vsed curious craftes, brought their bookes, & burned them before all men, and they counted the price of them, & founde it fiftie thousande peeces of syluer.

20 So myghtyly grew the word of God, and preuayled.

21 After these thinges were ended, Paul purposed in the spirite, when he had passed ouer Macedonia and Achaia, to [Page] go to Hierusalem, saying: After I haue ben there, I must also see Rome.

22 So sent he into Macedonia two of them that ministred vnto hym, Timotheus and Erastus, but he hym selfe remayned in Asia for a season.

E

23 And the same time there arose no litle a do about that way.

24 For a certaine man, named Demetrius, a syluer smyth, which made shrines for Diana, was not a litle beneficiall vnto the craftes men.

25 Whom he called together, with the workemen of like occupation, and sayde: Sirs, ye knowe that by this craft [Note: Act.xvi.d. ] we haue aduauntage.

26 Moreouer, ye see and heare, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath perswaded and turned away much people, saying that [Note: Psal.cxv.a. ] they be not gods which are made with handes.

27 So that not only this our craft commeth into peryll to be set at naught, but also that the temple of ye great goddesse Diana should be despised, and her magnificence should be destroyed, whom all Asia and the worlde worshippingeth.

28 And when they hearde these sayinges, they were full of wrath, and cryed out, saying: great is Diana of ye Ephesians.

29 And all the citie was on a rore, & they russhed into the common hall with one assent, and caught Gaius & Aristarcus, men of Macedonia, Paules companions.

F  
30 When Paule woulde haue entred in vnto ye people, the disciples suffred hym not.

31 But certaine of ye chiefe of Asia, which were his friendes, sent vnto hym, desiryng hym that he would not preasse into the common hall.

32 Some therfore cryed one thyng, and some another, and the assemblie was all out of quiet, and the more part knew not wherfore they were come together.

33 And they drewe Alexander out of the multitude, the Iewes thrustyng hym forwardes. And Alexander [Note: Act.xxi.g. ] beckened with the hande, and would haue geuen the people an aunswere.

34 But when they knewe that he was a Iewe, there arose a shoute almost for the space of two houres, of all men, crying: great is Diana of the Ephesians.

35 And when the towne clarke had pacified the people, he sayde: Ye men of Ephesus, what man is it that knoweth not how that the citie of the Ephesians is a worshipper of the great goddesse Diana, and of the [image] whiche came downe from Iupiter?

G  
36 Seing then that these thinges can not be spoken against, ye ought to be contet, and to do nothyng rasshely.

37 For ye haue brought hyther these men, which are neither robbers of Churches nor yet despisers of your goddesse.

38 Wherfore, yf Demetrius & the craftes men which are with hym, haue a matter agaynst any man, the lawe is open, and there are deputies, let them accuse one another.

39 But yf ye inquire any thyng concernyng other matters, it shalbe determined in a lawfull assemblie.

40 For we are in ieopardie to be accused of this dayes vprore, forasmuch as there is no cause, wherby we may geue a rekenyng of this concourse of people.

41 And when he had thus spoken, he let the assemblie depart.

## ¶ The .xx. Chapter.

1 Paul goeth into Macedonia and Grecia, 7 he celebrateth the Lordes supper, and preacheth. 9 At Troas he rayseth vp Eutichus from the dead. 17 At Ephesus he calleth the elders of the Church together, and committeth the keping of Gods flocke to them, 29 warneth them of false teachers, 36 maketh his prayer with them, 38 and departeth by shippe towards Hierusalem.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **And** after the vprore was ceassed, Paul called the disciples, & toke his leaue of them, and departed, for to go into Macedonia.

2 And whe he had gone ouer those parties, and had geuen them a long exhortation, he came into Grece.

3 And [there] abode three monethes. And when the Iewes layde wayte for hym as he was about to sayle into Syria, he purposed to returne through Macedonia.

[Page] <sup>B</sup>  
4 And there accompanied him into Asia Sopater of Berrea, and of the Thessalonians Aristarcus and Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe and Timotheus, and out of Asia Tychicus and [Note: Act.xxi.f. ii Tim.iiii.d ] Trophimus.

5 These going before, taried vs at Troas.

6 And we sayled away fro Philippos, after the dayes of sweete bread, & came vnto the to Troas in fiue dayes, where we abode seuen dayes.

7 And vpon one of the Sabboth dayes, when the disciples came together for to breake bread, Paul reasoned with the, redy to depart on the morowe, and continued the worde vnto mydnyght.

8 And there were many lyghtes in an vpper chamber, where they were gathered together.

9 And there sate in a window a certaine young man, named Eutychus, being fallen into a deepe sleepe: And as Paul was long reasonyng, he was the more ouercome with sleepe, and fell downe from the thirde loft, and was taken vp dead.

<sup>C</sup>  
10 But whe Paul went downe, he fell on hym, and [Note: 3 Re.xvii.d. 4.Re.iiii.f. Luk.vii.c. Actes.ix.g. ] imbraced hym, & saide: make nothyng a do, for his lyfe is in hym.

11 And so when he was come vp againe, and had broken bread and eaten, & talked a long while, euen tyll the morning, and so he departed.

12 And they brought the young man alyue, and were not a litle comforted.

13 And we went afore to shippe, & loosed vnto Asson, there to receaue Paul: For so had he appoynted, and woulde hym selfe go a foote.

14 And when he was come to vs to Asso, we toke hym in, and came to Mytilene.

15 And we sayled thence, and came the next day ouer agaynst Chios: and the next daye we arryued at Samos, and taryed at Trogylliu. The next day we came to Miletum:

D

16 For Paul had determined to sayle ouer by Ephesus, because he would not spend the tyme in Asia. For he hasted, yf it were possible for hym, to kepe at Hierusalem the day of Pentecost.

17 And from Miletum, he sent to Ephesus, and called the elders of the Church.

18 Which when they were come to hym, he saide vnto them: Ye knowe from the first daye that I came into Asia, after what maner I haue ben with you at all seasons.

19 Seruyng the Lorde with all humblenesse of mynde, and with many teares, and temptations whiche came vnto me by the layinges awayte of the Iewes:

20 And howe I kept backe nothing that was profitable vnto you, but haue shewed you, and haue taught you openly, and throughout euery house.

E

21 Witnessyng both to the Iewes & also to the Grekes, the [Note: Lu.xxiii.e. ] repentaunce that is towarde God, and the fayth whiche is towarde our Lorde Iesus.

22 And nowe beholde I go bounde [Note: [a] That is to saye. I go by the impulsion and commaundement of ye holy ghost who draweth me as with a bonde. ] in the spirite vnto Hierusale, not knowyng the thynges that shall come vnto me:

23 But that the holy ghost witnesseth in euery citie, saying that bondes & trouble abyde me.

24 But none of these thynges moue me, [Note: ii.Tim.ii.b. ] neither is my lyfe deare vnto my selfe, so that I myght fulfyll my course with ioy, and the ministerie whiche I haue receaued of the Lorde Iesu, to testifie the Gospell of the grace of God.

F

25 And nowe beholde, I am sure that hencefoorth ye al, through who I haue gone preachyng the kyngdome of God, shall see my face no more.

26 Wherefore, I take you to recorde this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men.

27 For I haue kept nothyng backe, but haue shewed you all ye counsell of God.

28 Take heede therefore vnto your selues, and to all the flocke, ouer the which the holy ghost hath made you ouerseers, to rule the Church of God, which he hath purchased [Note: [b] That whiche apperteyneth to Christes manhod (which is sheddyng of blood) is here spoken of his Godhead because of the commaundment of the



properties and vnion of two natures in one person. ] with his owne blood.

29 For I knowe this, that after my departyng, shall greeuous wolfes enter in among you, not sparyng the flocke.

30 Also of your owne selues shall men aryse, speakyng peruerse thynges, to [Note: [c] Through their ambitio, which is mother of all sectes & herasies. ] drawe disciples after them.

31 Therefore watch, and remember that by the space of three yeres I ceassed not to warne euery one night and day with teares.

G

32 And nowe brethren I commende you to God, and to the worde of his grace, which is able to buylde further, and to geue you an inheritaunce among all the which are sanctified.

33 I haue desired no mans syluer, golde, or vesture.

34 Yea, ye your selues knowe, that [Page] [Note: i.Cor.xi.c. Gene.iii.c. i.Cor.ix.b. ii.Thes.iii.b ] these handes haue ministred vnto my necessities, and to them that were with me.

35 I haue shewed you all thinges, howe that so labouryng ye ought to receaue the weake, and to remember ye wordes of the Lorde Iesu, howe that he said, it is more blessed to geue, then to receaue.

36 And when he hadde thus spoken, he kneled [Note: Act.xxi.b. ] downe, & prayed with them all.

37 And they all wepte sore, and fell on Paules necke, and kyssed hym,

38 Sorowyng most of all for the wordes whiche he spake, that they shoulde see his face no more. And they accompanied hym vnto the shippe.

## ¶ The .xxj. Chapter.

1 Paules iourney by shippe. 8 Of Philip the Euangelist, 10 and Agabus the prophete, which warneth Paule not to go to Hierusalem. 13 He remayned stedfast in his purpose, and is taken.

A

1 < **And** when it came to passe that we had lauched forth, and were departed from them, we came with a straight course vnto Choos, and the day folowyng vnto the Rhodes, and from thence vnto Patara.

2 And when we had gotten a shippe that woulde sayle vnto Phenice, we went aboorde, and set foorth.

3 Nowe when Cyprus began to appeare vnto vs, we left it on the left hande, and sayled into Syria, and came vnto Tyre: For there the shippe vnloaded the burthen.

4 And when we had founde disciples, we taryed there seuen dayes: who said to Paule through the spirite, [Note: Actes.xx.c. ] that he shoulde not go vp to Hierusalem.

5 And when the dayes were ended, we departed, and went our way, and they all brought vs on our way, with wyues and chylde, tyll we were come out of the cite. And we kneeled downe in the shore, [Note: Actes.xx.g ] and prayed.

B

6 And whe we had taken our leaue one of another, we toke shippe, and they returned home agayne.

7 When we had full ended the course from Tyre, we went downe to Ptolomaida, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

8 And the next daye, they that were of Paules companie departed, and came vnto Cesarea: And we entred into the house of Philip the [Note: Actes.vi.d. and .viii.a. ] Euangelist (which was one of the seuen) and abode with hym.

C

9 And the same man had foure daughters, virgins, which dyd [Note: Ioel.ii.g. ] prophesie.

10 And as we taryed there a good many of dayes, there came a certaine prophete from Iurie, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come vnto vs, he toke Paules girdle, & bounde his owne handes and feete, & sayde: Thus sayth the holy ghost, [Note: Actes.ix.c. ii.Cor.xi.c. ] so shall the Iewes at Hierusalem bynde the man that oweth this girdle, and shall delyuer hym into the handes of the gentiles.

12 And when we hearde these thynges, both we and other whiche were of the same place, besought him that he would not go vp to Hierusalem.

13 Then Paule aunswered: What do ye weepyng and vexyng myne heart? For I am redy, not to be bounde only, but also to dye at Hierusalem for the name of the Lorde Iesu.

14 And when we coulde not turne his mynde, we ceased, saying: [Note: Math.vi.b. ] the wyll of the Lorde be fulfilled.

D

15 And after those dayes, we toke vp our burthens, and went vp to Hierusalem.

16 [Note: Actes.ix.c. ] There went with vs also [certayne] of the disciples of Cesarea, & brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an olde disciple, with whom we shoulde lodge.

17 And when we were come to Hierusalem, the brethren receaued vs gladly.

18 And on the morowe, Paule went in with vs vnto [Note: [a] This Iames was the Lordes brother, ye sonne of Marie, which was the sister of the blessed virgin: which Iames afterward was bishop of Hierusalem. ] Iames, and all the elders came together.

19 And when he had saluted them, he tolde by order all thinges that God had wrought among the gentiles

by his ministerie.

20 And when they hearde it, they glorified the Lorde, & sayde vnto hym: Thou seest brother, howe many thousande [Page] Iewes there are which beleue, & they are all earnest folowers of the lawe.

21 And they are infourmed of thee, that thou teachest all the Iewes whiche are among the Gentiles to forsake Moyses, and sayest that they ought not to circucise their chyldren, neither to walke after the customes.

22 What is it therefore? The multitude must needes come together: For they shall heare that thou art come.

23 [Note: Num.vi.a. ] Do therfore this that we saye to thee. We haue foure men, which haue a vow on them:  
E

24 Them take, & [Note: [b] Paul yeldynge to this ceremonie, offended as sore as Peter did, when he was reprovod of Paul for abstayning from meates in presence of the Gentiles: not withstandyng through the ferruencie of his zeale, he dyd ieoparde much to wyn thousandes of the Iewes, for the saluation of whom, he wysshed hym selfe to be separated fro Christe. ] purifie thy selfe with them, and do coste on them, that they may shaue their heades: And all shall knowe, that those thynges whiche they haue hearde concernyng thee, are nothyng, but that thou thy selfe also walkest and kepest the lawe.

25 As touchyng the Gentiles which beleue, [Note: Act.xiiii.d. ] we haue written and concluded, that they obserue no suche thyng, saue only that they kepe them selues from thynges offered to idoles, & from blood, and from strangled, & from fornication.

26 Then Paul toke the men, and the next day purifyng hym selfe with them, entred into the temple, declaryng the accomplishment of the dayes of the purification, vntyll that an offeryng should be offered for euery one of them.

27 And when the seuen dayes were almost ended, the Iewes which were of Asia, when they sawe hym in the temple, moued al the people, & layde handes on hym,

F  
28 Crying: Men of Israel helpe. This is the man that teacheth all men euery where against the people, and the lawe, and this place: He hath also brought Grekes into the temple, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 For they had seene before with hym in the citie [Note: Actes.xx.b ii.Tim.iii.d ] Trophimus an Ephesian, whom they supposed that Paul had brought into the temple.

30 And all the citie was moued, and the people swarmed together: And they toke Paul & drewe hym out of the temple, & foorthwith the doores were shut.

31 And as they went about to kylle hym, tydynges came vnto the hie captaine of the souldiers, that all Hierusalem was in an vprore.

32 Which immediatly toke [Note: [c] God often times appoynteth his magistrates to deliuer his faith full ministers from al daungers of their enemies. ] souldiers, and vnder captaines, and ran downe vnto them: And when they sawe the vpper captaine and the souldiers, they left smytyng of Paul.

G

33 Then the chiefe captaine came neare, & toke hym, and comaunded hym to be bounde with two chaynes, & demaunded who he was, & what he had done.

34 And some cryed one thyng, some another, among the people. And when he coulde not knowe the certaintie for the rage, he commaunded him to be caryed into the castle.

35 And when he came vpon the stayres, it was so that he was borne of the souldyers for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people folowed after, crying, away with hym.

37 And when Paul began to be caryed into the castle, he saide vnto the hie captaine: May I speake vnto thee? Who sayde: Canst thou speake Greke?

38 Art not thou that Egyptian which before these dayes madest an vprore, and leddest out into the wyldernesse foure thousande men that were murtherers?

39 [Note: Actes.ix.b. and .xxii.a. ] But Paul saide: I am a man which am a Iewe, of Tarsus, a citie in Cilicia, a citezin of no vyle citie, and I beseche the suffer me to speake vnto the people.

40 And when he had geuen hym licence, Paul stode on the stayres, & [Note: Actes.xi.f. ] beckened with ye hande vnto the people: And whe there was made a great scilece, he spake vnto them in the Hebrue tongue, saying:

## ¶ The .xxij. Chapter.

3 Paul rendereth an accompt of his lyfe and doctrine, 25 he escapeth the whyppe by reason he was a citezin of Rome.

A

1 **Men**, brethren, & fathers, heare ye mine aunswer whiche I make vnto you.

2 (And when they heard that he spake in the Hebrue tongue to the, they kept ye more scilence. And he saith:)

3 I am verily a man which am a Iewe, borne in [Note: Actes.ix.b. and .xxi.g. ] Tarsus in Cilicia, and yet brought vp in this citie at ye feete of [Note: Actes.v.f. ] Gamaliel, and infourmed accordyng to the perfect maner of the lawe of ye fathers, and was zelous towarde God, as ye [Page] all are this same day.

4 And [Note: Act.viii.a. ix.a.xxvi.a i.Cor.xv.b. Galath.ii.b. ] I persecuted this way vnto the death, byndyng & delyueryng into prison both men and women,

5 As also the chiefe priest doth beare me witnesse, and all the estate of the elders: of whom also I receaued letters vnto the brethren, and went to Damascus, to bryng them whiche were there, bounde vnto Hierusalem for to be punisshed.

B

6 And it came to passe, that as I made my iourney, & was come nye vnto Damascus, about noone, sodeinly there shone from heauen a great light rounde about me.

7 And I fell vnto the earth, and hearde a voyce saying vnto me: [Note: Actes.ix.a. ] Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me:

8 And I aunswered: Who art thou Lorde? And he sayde vnto me: I am Iesus of Nazareth [Note: [a] Iesus was nowe in heauen, and coulede not be persecuted of Paul: But ye persecution whiche Paul exercised agaynst the faythfull being his members, Christe counted it as done to hym selfe. ] whom thou persecutest.

9 And they that were with me, sawe veryly a lyght, and were afrayde: but they hearde not the voyce of hym that spake with me.

10 And I saide: What shall I do Lord? And the Lorde sayde vnto me: Aryse, and go into Damascus, & there it shalbe tolde thee of all thynges whiche are appoynted for thee to do.

11 And when I sawe nothyng for the bryghtnesse of the lyght, I was ledde by the hande of the that were with me, and came into Damascus.

C

12 [Note: Actes.ix.c. ] And one Ananias, a deuout man as perteynyng to the lawe, hauyng a good report of all the Iewes whiche there dwelt,

13 Came vnto me, and stode, and sayde vnto me: Brother Saul, receaue thy syght. And the same houre I [receaued my syght, and] sawe hym.

14 And he said: The God of our fathers hath ordeyned thee before, that thou shouldest knowe his wyll, and see that iuste one, and shouldest heare the voyce of his mouth.

15 For thou shalt be his witnesse vnto all men, of those thynges which thou hast seene and hearde:

16 And nowe why taryest thou? aryse, & be baptized, & wasshe away thy sinnes, [Note: Rom.x.c. ] in callyng on the name of the Lorde.

17 And it came to passe, that whe I was come agayne to Hierusalem, and prayed in the temple, I was in a traunce,

18 And sawe him, saying vnto me: Make haste and get thee quickly out of Hierusalem: for they wyl not receaue thy witnesse concernyng me.

D

19 And I sayde: Lord, they knowe that I prisoned and beat in euery synagogue them that beleued on thee.

20 [Note: Actes.iii.a. ] And when the blood of thy wytnesse Steuen was shedde, I also stode by, and

consented vnto his death, and kept the rayment of them that slue hym.

21 And he sayde vnto me: depart, for [Note: Act. xiii.d. Galath.i.d. ] I wyll sende thee farre hence vnto the gentiles.

22 And they gaue him audience vnto this worde, and then lift vp their voyces and sayde: away with suche a felowe from the earth, for it is no reason yt he shoulde lyue.

23 And as they cryed, and caste of their clothes, and threwe dust into the ayre,

24 The chiefe captaine comaunded hym to be brought into the castle, & bade that he shoulde be scourged, and examined, that he myght knowe wherefore they cryed so on hym.

25 And as they boude him with thonges, Paul saide vnto ye Centurion that stode by: Is it lawfull for you to scourge a man that is a [Note: [b] He was not borne at Rome, but at Tarsus: the citezins wherof, enioye the priuilege of ye citie of Rome, & were, counted as Romanes. ] Romane, and vncondempned?

26 When the Centurion hearde that, he went and tolde the vpper captaine, saying: Take heede what thou doest, for this man is a Romane.

27 Then the vpper captaine came, & saide vnto him: Tel me, art thou a Romane? He sayde, yea.

28 And the chiefe captaine aunswered: With a great summe obteyned I this freedome. And Paul saide: I was free borne.

29 Then strayghtway departed fro him they which should haue examined him. And the hie captaine also was afrayde, after he knew that he was a Romane, and because he had bounde hym.

30 On the morowe, because he woulde haue knowen the certaintie wherefore he was accused of the Iewes, he loosed hym from his bandes, and commaunded the hie priestes & all the counsell to come together, & [Note: Act.xxiii.b ] brought Paul foorth, and set hym before them.

[Page]

## ¶ The .xxiiij. Chapter.

1 Paul commeth before the counsell. 2 Ananias causeth hym to be striken, 12 the captayne deliuereth hym, 11 God comforteth hym, 23 he is sent to Cesarea.

A

1 **And** Paul earnestlie beholdyng the counsell, saide: Men & brethren, [Note: Actes.34.d. ] I haue lyued in al good conscience before God vntyll this day.

2 And ye hie priest Ananias, commaunded the that stode by, to smyte hym on the mouth.

3 Then sayde Paul vnto him: God shall smite thee thou [Note: [a] Paul doth not curse the hye priest, but denounce sharplie the punishment of God, which shoulde lyght vpon hym in the way of prophesieng. ] paynted wall: For, [Note: Deu.xvii.d ] sittest thou & iudgest me after the lawe, & comaundest me to be smitten contrary to the lawe?

4 And they that stode by, sayde: [Note: Ioh.xviii.d. ] Reuilest thou Gods hye priest?

5 Then sayde Paul: I wyst not brethren, [Note: [b] It is thought that Paul in mockerie thus excused him self, as though thus he should say, I see nothyng in this man worthie the office of ye hygh priest. ] that he was the hye priest. For it is written: Thou shalt not curse the ruler of thy people.

6 But when Paul perceaued that the one part were saducees, and the other pharisees, he cryed out in the counsell: Men and brethren, [Note: Philip.iii.a ] I am a pharisee, the sonne of a pharisee: [Note: Act.xxiii.e. ] Of the hope & resurrection of the dead, I am iudged.

7 And when he had so sayde, there arose a debate betwene the pharisees and the saducees, & the multitude was deuided.

8 [Note: Mat.xxii.c. Mark.xii.b. Luk.xx.c. ] For the saducees say, that there is no resurrection, neither Angel, nor spirite: But the pharisees confesse both.

9 And there arose a great crye: and whe the scribes which were of the pharisees part arose, they stroue, saying, We fynde none euyll in this man: But yf a spirite or an Angel hath spoken to hym, let vs not striue agaynst God.

C

10 And when there arose a great debate, the chiefe captayne, fearyng lest Paul shoulde haue ben pluckt asunder of the, comaunded the souldiers to go downe, and to take him from among them, and to bryng hym into the castle.

11 [Note: Act.xvi.b. ] And the nyght folowyng, the Lorde stode by hym, and sayde: Be of good cheare Paul, for as thou hast testified of me in Hierusalem, [Note: Actes.27.b. ] so must thou beare witness also at Rome.

D

12 And when it was day, certayne of the Iewes gathered them selues together, and made a [Note: [c] The word properly signifieth cursing, as when a man either sweareth, voweth, or wisheth hym selfe to dye, or to be geuen to the deuyll, except he bryng his purpose to passe. ] vowe, saying that they woulde neither eate nor drynke, tyl they had kylled Paul.

13 And they were mo then fourtie men, which had made this conspiracie.

14 And they came to the chiefe priestes and elders, and sayde: We haue bounde our selues with a vowe, that we wyll eate nothyng vntyll we haue slayne Paul.

15 Nowe therefore geue ye knowledge to the vpper captayne, and to the counsell, that he bryng hym forth vnto you to morrowe, as though ye woulde knowe somethyng more perfectly of hym: And we, or euer he come neare, are redy to kyll hym.

16 And when Pauls sisters sonne heard of their laying awaite, he went & entred into the castle, and tolde Paul.

17 And Paul called one of the vnder captaynes vnto hym, and sayde: Bryng this young man vnto the hie captayne, for he hath a certayne thyng to shewe hym.

18 And he toke hym, and brought hym to the hie captayne, and sayde: Paul the prisoner called me vnto him, and prayed me to bryng this young man vnto thee, which hath a certayne matter to shewe thee.

E  
19 Then the hie captayne toke hym by the hande, and went with hym out of the way, and asked hym: What is it that thou hast to tell me?

20 And he sayde: The Iewes are determined to desire thee, that thou wouldest bryng foorth Paul to morowe into the counsell, as though they would enquire somewhat of hym more perfectly.

21 But folowe not thou their myndes: For there lye in wayte for him, of them, mo the fourtie men, which haue bounde themselues with a vowe, that they will neither eate nor drynke, tyll they haue kylled hym. And nowe are they redy, and loke that thou shouldest promise.

F  
22 The vpper captayne then let ye young man depart, and charged hym, see thou tell it out to no man, that thou hast shewed these thynges to me.

[Page]  
23 And he called vnto hym two vnder captaynes, saying: Make redy two hundred souldyers, to go to Cesarea, and horsmen threescore and ten, and sparemen two hundred, at the thirde houre of the nyght:

24 And delyuer them beastes, that they may set Paul on, and bryng hym safe vnto Felix the hie deputie.

25 And he wrote a letter, after this maner.

26 Claudius Lysias, vnto the most mightie ruler Felix, sendeth greetinges.

27 [Note: Actes.xx.f. ] This man was taken of the Iewes, and shoulde haue ben kylled of them: Then came I with souldiers, & rescued hym, and perceaued that he was a Romane.

28 And whe I would haue knowen the cause, wherfore they accused hym, [Note: Act.xxii.g ] I brought hym foorth into their counsell.

G  
29 Whom I perceaued to be accused of questions of their lawe, [Note: Act.xxv.c. ] but was not gyltie of any thyng worthy of death, or of bondes.

30 And when it was shewed me howe that the Iewes layde wayte for the man, I sent [hym] strayghtway to thee, and gaue commaundement to his accusers, that the thynges which they haue agaynst hym, they shoulde tell before thee. Fare well.

31 Then the souldyers, as it was commaunded them, toke Paul, and brought hym by nyght to Antipatris.



32 On the morowe, they left the horsmen to go with hym, and returned vnto the castle.

33 Which when they came to Cesarea, and delyuered the epistle to the deputie, presented Paul also before hym.

34 And when the deputie had read [the letter] he asked of what coutrey he was. And when he vnderstoode that he was of Celicia,

35 [Note: Deut.xvii.a ] I wyll heare thee, sayde he, when thyne accusars are come also. And he comaunded hym to be kept in Herodes iudgement hall.

### The .xxiiij. Chapter.

10 Paul beyng accused, aunswereth for his lyfe and doctrine. 25 Felix gropeth hym, thinkyng to haue a bribe, 28 and after leaueth hym in pryson.

A

1 **And** after fyue dayes, Ananias [Note: Act.xxv.d. ] the hie priest descended, with the elders, and with a certayne oratour, named Tartullus, which appeared before the deputie agaynst Paul.

2 And when Paul was called foorth, Tartullus began to accuse hym, saying: Seyng that we [Note: [a] Felix by his diligence had taken Eleazarus ye captayne of ye murderers, and put the Egyptians to flyght, which rayseed vp tumultes in Iurie. For these the oratour prayseed hym otherwayes he was both cruell and couetous. ] obtayned great quietnesse by the meanes of thee, and that many good thynges are done vnto this nation through thy prouidence,

3 That alowe we euer, & in all places, most noble Felix, with all thankes.

4 Notwithstandyng, that I be not tedious vnto thee, I pray thee, that thou wouldest heare vs of thy curtesie a fewe wordes.

B

5 For we haue founde this man a pestilent felowe, and a mouer of debate vnto all the Iewes in the whole worlde, and a maynteyner of the sect of the Nazarites.

6 And hath gone about to pollute the temple: [Note: Actes.xxi.c ] Whom we toke, and woulde haue iudged accordyng to our lawe.

7 But the hie captayne Lysias, came vpon vs, and with great violence toke hym away out of our handes,

8 Commaundyng his accusers to come vnto thee: Of whom thou mayest, yf thou wilt enquire, knowe the certayntie of all these thynges, wherof we accuse hym.

9 And the Iewes lykewyse affirmed, saying that these thynges were so.

C

10 The Paul, after that the deputie hym selfe had beckened vnto hym that he shoulde speake, aunswered: With a more quiet mynde do I aunswere for my selfe, forasmuch as I vnderstande, that thou haste ben of many yeres a iudge vnto this nation:

11 Because that thou mayest knowe, that there are yet but twelue dayes, sence I went vp to Hierusalem for to worshyp.

12 And [Note: Act.xxv.b. ] they neither founde me in the temple disputyng with any man, either raysyng vp the people, neither in the synagogues, nor in the citie.

[Page]

13 Neither can they proue the thynges wherof they accuse me.

D

14 But this I confesse vnto thee, that after the way which they call [Note: [b] No maruayle though in our tyme Gods true religion be called heresie. For so it was counted of the wicked, euen at the begynning of Christes kingdome. ] heresie, so worship I the God of my fathers, beleuyng all thynges which are written in the lawe and the prophetes,

15 And haue hope towardes God, that the resurrection of the dead which they them selues loke for also, shalbe both of the iust and vniust.

16 And herein [Note: Act.xxiii.a. ] studie I, to haue alway a cleare conscience toward God, and toward men.

17 Nowe after many yeres, I came [Note: Rom.xv.f. Act.xi.d. ] and brought almes to my nation, and offerynges:

18 In the which they founde me purified in the temple, neither with multitude, nor yet with vnquietnesse:

19 Howbeit, there were certayne Iewes out of Asia,

20 Which ought to be here [Note: [c] These accusers spake but vpon false reportes, which the belowes of Satan had blowe abrode, and durst not for shame appere them selues. ] present before thee, & accuse me, yf they had ought agaynst me:

21 Or els let these same here say, yf they haue founde any euyll doying in me, whyle I stande here in the counsell:

22 Except it be for this one voyce, that I cryed standyng among them, [Note: Act.xxiii.a. ] of the resurrection from the dead, am I iudged of you this day.

E

23 And whe Felix hearde these thynges, he deferred them, for he knewe very well of that way, and sayde: When Lysias the captayne is come downe, I will knowe the utmost of your matter.

24 And [Note: Iere.39.c. Act.xxvii.a ] he commaunded an vnder captayne to kepe Paul, and to let hym haue rest, and that he shoulde forbyd none of his acquayntaunce to minister vnto hym, or to come vnto hym.

25 And after certayne dayes, when Felix came, with his wyfe Drusilla, which was a Iewesse, he called fourth Paul, and hearde hym of the fayth which is towarde Christe.

F

26 And as he reasoned of ryghteousnesse, temperaunce, and iudgement to come, Felix [Note: [d] Such is the might and force of Gods heauenlye worde, that it causeth the very wicked to tremble and quake. ] trembled, and answered: Go thy way for this tyme, when I haue a conuenient season, I will sende for thee.

27 He hoped also, that money shoulde haue ben geuen hym of Paul, that he myght loose hym: wherfore, he sent for hym the oftener, and communed with hym.

28 But after two yere, Porcius Festus came into Felix rowme: And Felix [Note: Act.xxv.d. ] wylllyng to shewe the Iewes a pleasure, left Paul bounde.

## ¶ The .xxv. Chapter.

2 The Iewes accuse Paul before Festus, 8 he aunswereth for hym selfe, 11 and appealeth vnto the Emperour, 14 his matter is brought before Agrippa, 23 and he is brought fourth.

A

1 **Then** when Festus was come into the prouince, after three dayes, he ascended from Cesarea vnto Hierusalem.

2 Then enfourmed him the hie priest, and the chiefe of the Iewes, of Paul: And they besought hym,

3 And desired fauour agaynst hym, that he woulde sende for hym to Hierusalem: & they layde awayte in the way, to kyll hym.

4 But Festus aunswered, that Paul shoulde be kept at Cesarea, and that he himselfe woulde shortly depart thither.

5 Let them therefore, sayde he, which among you are able, come downe with vs, and accuse hym, yf there be any fault in this man.

B

6 And when he had taryed among them more then ten dayes, he went downe vnto Cesarea, & the next day sate downe in the iudgement seate, and commaunded Paul to be brought.

7 Who beyng come, the Iewes which were come from Hierusalem, stode about [hym] and layde many & greuous complayntes agaynst Paul, which they coulde not [Note: [a] whyles Paul lyued vnder ye laws lyke other Iewes, his conuersation was perfect and notable, and after his conuersion vnto Christe, he became a more notable example of innocencie, but it is a comon case, that the seruauntes of God are euyll spoken of for their well doying. ] proue,

8 Whyles he aunswered [for hym selfe] that he had agaynst the lawe of the Iewes, neither agaynst the temple, nor yet agaynst Caesar offended any thyng at all.

9 But Festus wylling to do ye Iewes a pleasure; answered Paul, and sayde: Wylt thou go vp to Hierusalem, & there be iudged of these thynges before me?

10 Then said Paul: I stande at Caesars [Page] iudgement seate, where I ought to be iudged: To the Iewes haue I no harme done, as thou very wel knowest.

11 For yf I had done any hurt, or committed any thyng worthy of death, I refuse not to dye: But yf there be none of these thinges, wherof they accuse me, no man may delyuer me to them. I appeale vnto [Note: [b] The iniquitie of the iudge, who contrarye to equitie, wylling to pleasure the Iewes, deuised howe to betray Paul, draue Paul to appeale, which is the vttermost remedie for such as by wrong iudgement are oppressed, and this appellation by Gods prouidence was a meane that Paul shoulde testifie of Christe at Rome also. ] Caesar.

12 Then spake Festus, with the counsell, and answered: Hast thou appealed vnto Caesar? vnto Caesar shalt thou go.

13 And after certayne dayes, King Agrippa and Bernice came vnto Cesarea, to salute Festus.

14 And when they had ben there a good season, Festus rehearsed Paules cause vnto the kyng, saying: There is a certayne man left in bondes of Felix,

15 About whom, when I came to Hierusalem, the hie priestes and elders of the Iewes enfourmed me, and desired to haue iudgement agaynst hym.

D

16 To whom I answered: It is not the maner of the Romanes, for fauour to delyuer any man that he shoulde perishe, before that he which is accused, haue the accusers before hym, and haue licence to answer for hymselfe, concernyng the cryme layde agaynst hym.

17 Therefore, when they were come hyther, without any delay, on the morowe I sate to geue iudgement, and commaunded the man to be brought foorth.

E

18 Agaynst whom, when the accusers stode vp, [Note: Act.xxiii.f ] they brought none accusation of such thynges as I supposed:

19 But had certayne questions agaynst hym of their owne superstition, and of one Iesus which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alyue.

F

20 And because I doubted of such maner of questions, I asked hym whether he woulde go to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these matters.

21 But when Paul had appealed to be kept vnto the knowledge of Augustus, I commaunded hym to be kept, tyll I myght sende hym to Caesar.

22 Then Agrippa sayde vnto Festus: I woulde also heare the man my selfe. To morowe sayd he, thou shalt heare hym.

G

23 And on the morowe, when Agrippa was come, and Bernice, with great pompe, and were entred into the

counsell house, with the chiefe captaynes, and chiefe men of the citie, at Festus commaundement was Paul brought foorth.

24 And Festus sayde: Kyng Agrippa, and al men which are here present with vs, ye see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Iewes haue intreated me, both at Hierusalem, and also here, crying, that he ought not to lyue any longer.

25 Yet founde I nothyng worthy of death, that he had committed: Neuerthelesse, seeyng that he hath appealed to Augustus, I haue determined to sende hym:

26 Of whom I haue no certayne thyng to write vnto my Lorde. Wherefore, I haue brought hym foorth vnto you, and specially vnto thee, O kyng Agrippa, that after examination had, I myght haue somewhat to write.

27 For me thynketh it vnreasonable, for to sende a prysoner, and not to shewe the causes which are laide agaynst him.

## The .xxvj. Chapter.

1 Kyng Agrippa heareth Paul. 25 Paules modest aunswere agaynst the iniurie of Festus.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **Then** Agrippa sayde vnto Paul, thou art permitted to speake for thy selfe. Then Paul stretched foorth the hande, and aunswered [for hym selfe]

2 I thynke my selfe happy, king Agrippa, because I shall aunswere this day before thee, of all the thynges whereof I am accused of the Iewes:

<sup>B</sup>  
3 Namely, because thou art expert in all customes and questions, whiche are among [Note: [a] He knew much, but he fayled in the ryght applying of his knowledge, as they do which be wise in their owne conceiptes onely, and haue the zeale of God, but not accordyng to knowledge. ] the Iewes: Wherefore I beseche thee to heare me patiently.

4 My lyfe, that I haue led of a chylde, which was at the first among myne owne nation at Hierusalem, knowe all the Iewes,

5 Which knewe me from the beginning, (yf they woulde testifie) that after the most strayttest sect of our [Note: [b] He taketh the sect of the pharisees to be perfectest, because their doctrine was better the the other sectes. The Saducees denyed ye resurrection of the dead. The Esseis glorying in strayghtnesse of life, litle regarded true doctrine. ] religion, I lyued a pharisee.

6 And nowe I stande and am iudged, for the hope of the promise made of God vnto our fathers:  
[Page]

7 Unto which promise, our twelue tribes instantly seruyng God day & nyght, hope to come. For which hopes sake, kyng Agrippa, I am accused of the Iewes.

C

8 Why shoulde it be thought a thyng incredible vnto you, that God shoulde rayse agayne the dead?

9 I also veryly thought in my selfe that I ought to do many contrary thynges, cleane agaynst the name of Iesus of Nazareth:

10 [Note: Actes.viii.a. i Cor.xv.b. Galath.ii.c. ] Which thyng I also dyd in Hierusalem. And many of the Saintes dyd I shut vp in pryson, hauyng receaued auctoritie of the hye priestes: And when they were put to death, I gaue the sentence.

11 And I punished them oft in euery synagogue, and compelled them to blaspheme: and was yet more mad vpon them, and persecuted them, euen vnto straunge cities.

12 About which thynges, as I went to Damascus, with auctoritie and commission of the hye priestes:

13 Euen at mydday, O kyng, I sawe in the way, a lyght from heauen, aboue the bryghtnesse of the Sunne, shyne rounde about me and them which iourneyed with me.

D

14 And when we were all fallen to the earth, I hearde a voyce speakyng vnto me, and saying in the Hebrewe tongue: [Note: Actes.ix a. and .xxii.c. ] Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? It is harde for thee to kicke agaynste the prickes.

15 And I sayde: Who art thou Lorde? And he sayde: I am Iesus whom thou persecutest.

16 But ryse and stande vpon thy feete. For I haue appeared vnto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witnesse, both of those thynges which thou hast seene, and of those thynges in the which I wyll appeare vnto thee,

17 Delyueryng thee from the people, and from the gentiles, vnto whom nowe I sende thee,

18 To open their eyes, that they may be turned from darknesse to lyght, & from the power of Satan vnto God, that they may receaue forgeuenes of sinnes, & inheritaunce among them which are sanctified by fayth that is towarde me.

E

19 Wherefore, O kyng Agrippa, I was not disobedient vnto the heauenly visio:

20 But shewed first vnto them of Damascus, & at Hierusalem, and throughout all the coastes of Iurie, and then to the gentiles, that they shoulde repent, and turne to God, and do such workes as become them that repent.

21 For this cause the Iewes caught me in the temple, & went about to kyll me.

22 Seyng therefore, that I haue obtayned helpe of God, I continue vnto this day, witnessyng both to small and to great, saying none other thynges, then those which the prophetes and Moyses dyd say shoulde

come:

23 That Christe shoulde suffer, and that he shoulde be the first that shoulde ryse from the dead, and shoulde shewe lyght vnto the people, and to the gentiles.

F

24 And as he thus spake for hym selfe, Festus sayde with a loude voyce: Paul, thou art besyde thy [Note: [c] Festus beyng much troubled with Paules declaration, and hauyng nothyng to say agaynst it, yet woulde not yelde vnto it, but clamoruslye condempned it as wicked & superstitious, for worldlynges are loth to be cumbred with Godly matters, & count all such foolish that trouble them selues therwith. ] selfe, much learnyng doth make thee mad.

25 But he sayde: I am not mad, most noble Festus, but speake foorth the wordes of trueth and sobernesse.

26 For the kyng knoweth of these thynges, before whom also I speake freely, neither thynke I, that any of these thynges are hydden from him: For this thyng was not done in a corner.

27 Kyng Agrippa, beleuest thou the prophetes? I wote wel that thou beleuest.

28 Then Agrippa sayde vnto Paul: Somewhat thou perswadest [Note: [d] He sawe a litle lyght, but it was soone out, like vnto those, that hearyng a Sermon are for the tyme well mynded. but after returne to their olde trade. ] me to be a christian.

29 And Paul sayde: I woulde to God, that not only thou, but also all that heare me to day, were both somewhat, and also in a great deale, such as I am, except these bondes.

30 And when he had thus spoken, the king rose vp, and the deputie, & Bernice, and they that sate with them.

31 And when they were gone apart, they talked betwene the selues, saying: This man doth nothyng worthy of death, or of bondes.

32 Then sayde Agrippa vnto Festus: This man myght haue ben let loose, yf he had not appealed vnto Caesar.

[Page]

## ¶ The .xxvij. Chapter.

1 Paul shippeth towarde Rome. 3 Iulius the captayne entreateth hym curteously. 41 And at the last they suffer shipwracke.

A

1 **And** when it was cocluded, that we shoulde sayle into Italie, they delyuered both Paul, & certayne other prysoners, vnto one named Iulius, an vnder captayne of Augustus bande.

2 And we entred into a shippe of Adramyttium, & loosed from lande, appoynted to sayle by the coastes of

Asia, one [Note: Col iii.a. ] Aristarchus out of Macedonia, of the countrey of Thessalonia, taryng styll with vs.

3 And the next day we came to Sidon: And Iulius [Note: Iere.39.c. Act.xxiiii.c ] curteouslye entreated Paul, and gaue hym libertie to go vnto his friendes, and to refreshe hym selfe.

4 And when we had launched from thence, we sayled harde by Cypers, because the wyndes were contrarye.

5 And when we had sayled ouer the sea of Cilicia, and Pamphylia, we came to Myra, which is in Lycia.

B

6 And there the vnder captayne founde a shippe of Alexandria redy, that sayled into Italie, and he put vs therin.

7 And whe we had sayled slowly many dayes, & scarce were come ouer agaynst Guydum, because ye wynde withstoode vs, we sayled harde by [Note: Or, Creta, which was an hygh hyll of Candie. ] Candie, ouer agaynst Salmo,

8 And with much worke sayled beyonde it, and came vnto a place wich is called the Fayre hauens, nye whervnto was the citie of Lasea.

9 When much tyme was spent, & when saylyng was nowe ieopardus, because also that they had ouerlong fasted, Paul put them in remembraunce,

10 And sayde vnto them: Syrs, I perceaue that this vyage will be with hurt and much damage, not of the ladyng and shippe only, but also of our lyues.

C

11 Neuerthelesse, the vnder captayne beleued the gouernour and the maister of the shippe, more then those thynges which were spoken of Paul.

12 And because the hauen was not commodious to wynter in, many toke counsell to depart thence, yf by any meanes they myght attayne to Phenice, & there to winter, which is an hauen of Candie, and lyeth towarde the southwest and northwest wynde.

13 And when the south wynde blewe softly, they supposyng to obtayne their purpose, loosed vnto Asson, and sayled past Candie.

D

14 But not long after, there arose against their purpose, a flawe of wynde out of the northeast.

15 And when the shippe was caught, and coulde not resist the wynde, we let her go, and were dryuen with the weather.

16 But we were caryed into an Ile which is named Clauda, and had much worke to come by a boate,

17 Which they toke vp, and vsed helpe, and made fast the shippe, fearyng least they shoulde fall into the Syrtes: And so they let downe a vessel, & were caried.



18 The next day, when we were tossed with an exceeding tempest, they lighted the shippe,

19 And the thirde day, we cast out with our owne handes, the tacklyng of the shippe.

20 And when neither ye sunne nor starres in many dayes appeared, and no small tempest lay vpon vs, all hope that we should be saued, was then taken away.

21 But after long abstinence, Paul stode foorth in the middes of them, and sayde: Syrs, ye shoulde haue harkened to me, & not to haue loosed fro Candie, neither to haue brought vnto vs this harme and losse.

22 And nowe I exhort you to be of good chere: For there shalbe no losse of any mans lyfe among you, but of the shippe.

23 For there stode by me this nyght, the Angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serue,

24 Saying: Feare not Paul, [Note: Act.xxv.c. ] thou must be brought before Caesar. And lo, God hath geuen thee all them that [Note: [a] The graces and blessinges which God geueth to his chyltren, profite many tymes the enemyes, which are vnworthie to receaue ye fruite thereof. ] sayle with thee.

25 Wherefore syrs be of good cheare: for I beleue God, that it shalbe euen as it was tolde me.

26 Howbeit, we must be cast into a certayne Ilande.

E

27 But when the fourteenth nyght was [Page] come, as we were saylyng in Adria, about mydnyght the shypmen deemed that there appeared some countrey vnto them:

28 And sounded, and founde it twentie faddomes. And when they had gone a litle further, they sounded agayne, and founde it fyfteene faddomes.

29 Then fearyng lest they shoulde haue fallen on some rocke, they caste foure anckers out of the sterne, and wisshed for the day.

30 And as the shypmen were about to flee out of the shippe, when they had let downe the boate into the sea, vnder a colour, as though they woulde haue cast anckers out of the foeshippe,

31 Paul sayde vnto the vnder captayne, and to the souldiers: Except these abide in the [Note: [b] Paul woulde vse soch meanes as God had ordeyned, lest he shoulde seeme to haue tempted hym. ] shippe, ye can not be safe.

32 Then the souldyers cut of the rope of the boate, and let it fall away.

F

33 And when the day began to appeare, Paul besought them all to take meate, saying: This is the foureteenth day, that ye haue taryed & continued fasting, receauyng nothyng at all.

34 Wherefore, I pray you to take meate, for this no doubt is for your health: for there shall not an [Note: [c] By this hebrue speach is meant that they shoulde be in all pointes safe and sounde. ] heere fall from the head of any

of you.

35 And when he had thus spoken, he toke bread, and [Note: i Tim.iiii.a. ] gaue thankes to God in presence of them all: And when he had broken it, he began to eate.

36 Then were they all of good cheare, and they also toke meate.

37 And we were altogether in the shippe, two hudred threescore & sixteene soules.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lyghted the shippe, and cast out the wheate into the sea.

G

39 And when it was day, they knewe not the lande: but they spyed a certayne hauen with a banke, into the which they were mynded, yf it were possible, to thrust in the shippe.

40 And when they had taken vp the anckers, they committed [themselues] vnto the sea, and loosed the rudder bondes, and hoysed vp the mayne sayle to the wynde, and drewe to lande.

41 And when they fell into a place which had the sea on both sydes, they thrust in the shippe: And the forepart stucke fast & moued not, but the hynder part brake with the violence of the waues.

42 And the souldiers counsel was to kyll the prysoners, lest any of them, when he had swomme out, should runne away.

43 But the vnder captayne wylling to saue Paul, kept the from their purpose, & commaunded that they which coulede swymme, shoulde cast them selues first into the sea, and scape to lande:

44 And the other, some on boordes, and some on broke peeces of the shippe. And so it came to passe, that they escaped all safe to lande.

## ¶ The .xxviiij. Chapter.

5 The Uiper hurteth not Paules hande, 8 he healeth Publius father, 23 and preacheth Christe at Rome.

A

1 **And** when they were scaped, then they knewe that [Note: Act.xxvii c ] the Ile was called Melite.

2 And ye straungers shewed vs no litle kyndnesse: for they kyndled a fyre, and receaued vs euery one, because of the present rayne, and because of the colde.

3 And when Paul had gathered a bondell of stickes, and layde them on the fyre, there came a Uiper out of the heat, and caught hym by the hande.

B

4 And when the straungers sawe the beast hang on his hande, they sayde among them selues, No doubt

this man is a [Note: [a] Such is the peruerse iudgement of men, that they condempne them, whom they see in any affliction. ] murtherer: Whom though he haue escaped the sea, yet vengeance suffreth not to lyue.

5 And he shoke of the Uiper into the fyre, and felt no [Note: [b] By this miracle God perfourmed his promise made to his disciples. that neither Serpentes nor poyson, shulde hurt them, and also by the same, was confirmed the Gospel of his sonne Iesus Christ, which Paul preached vnto the world. ] harme.

6 Howbeit, they wayted whe he shoulde haue swolne, or fallen downe dead sodenlie: But after they had loked a great while, and sawe no harme come to him, they chaunged their myndes, and sayde that he was a [Note: [c] Beholde the extremitie of infidels, for after any rage and errour, they fal forthwith into the contrarie. ] God.

7 In the same quarters were possessios of ye chiefe man of the Ile, whose name was Publius, which receaued vs, and [Page] lodged vs three dayes curteouslye.

C  
8 And it came to passe, that the father of Publius lay sicke of a feuer, and of a bloody flixie: to whom Paul entred in, & prayed, and layde his handes on hym, and healed hym.

9 So when this was done, other also which had diseases in the Ile, came and were healed:

10 Which also dyd vs great honour, and when we departed, they laded vs with such thynges as were necessary.

11 And after three monethes we departed in a shippe of Alexandria, which had wyntred in the Ile, whose badge was [Note: [c] These the Panims fayned to be Iupiters chyl dren. Gods of the sea. ] Castor and Pollux.

12 And when we came to Syracusa, we taryed there three dayes.

13 And from thence we fet a compasse, and came to Rhegium, & after one day the south wynde blewe, and we came the next day to Puteolus:

14 Where we founde brethren, and were desired to tary with them seuen dayes, and so we came towarde Rome.

15 And from thence, when the brethren hearde of vs, they came to meete vs at Appii forum, and at the three tauernes. When Paul sawe the, he thanked God, and waxed bolde.

16 And when we came to Rome, ye vnder captayne delyuered the prysoners to the chiefe captayne of the hoast: But Paul was suffred to dwell by him selfe, with a souldyer that kept hym.

D  
17 And it came to passe, that after three dayes Paul called ye chiefe of the Iewes together. And whe they were come, he sayde vnto them: Men and brethren, though [Note: Act.xxiii. c ] I haue committed nothyng agaynst the people, or lawes of the fathers, [Note: Act.xxiii.c. ] yet was I delyuered prysoner from Hierusalem, into the handes of the Romanes.

18 Which when they had examined me, woulde haue let me go, because there was no cause of death in me.

- 19 But when the Iewes spake contrary, I was constrayned to appeale vnto Caesar: not that I had ought to accuse my people of.
- 20 For this cause then haue I called for you, euen to see [you] and to speake with you: [Note: Act.xxiii.b ] because that for the [Note: [d] That is, for Iesus Christes sake whom they had long looked for, to be the redemer of the worlde. ] hope of Israel, I am bounde with this chayne.
- 21 And they said vnto him: We neither receaued letters out of Iurie concernyng thee, neither any of the brethren that came, shewed or spake any harme of thee.
- 22 But we wyll heare of thee, what thou thynkest: For as concernyng this sect, we knowe that [Note: Luk.ii.c. ] euery where it is spoke agaynst.
- 23 And when they had appoynted hym a day, there came many to hym into his lodgyng, to whom he expounded and testified the kyngdome of God, perswadyng them concernyng Iesus, both out of the lawe of Moyses, and out of the prophetes, euen from morning to night.
- 24 And [Note: Act.xvii.a. ] some were perswaded in the thynges which were spoken, and some beleued not.  
E
- 25 And when they agreed not among them selues, they departed after that Paul had spoken one worde, [that is to say] well spake the holy ghost by Esaias the prophete, vnto our fathers,
- 26 Saying: [Note: Esaias.vi.e. Math.xiii.b Mark.iiii.b. Luk.viii.b. Iohn.xii.f. ] Go vnto this people, and say, with your eares shall ye heare, and shall not vnderstande: and with your eyes shall ye see, and not perceau.  
F
- 27 For the heart of this people is waxed grosse, & their eares are dull of hearing, and their eyes haue they closed: lest they shoulde see with their eyes, and heare with their eares, and vnderstande with their heartes, and shoulde be conuerted, and I shoulde heale them.
- 28 Be it knowen therefore vnto you, that this saluation of God is sent to the gentiles, and they shall heare it.
- 29 And when he had sayde these wordes, the Iewes departed, and had great reasonyng among them selues.
- 30 And Paul dwelt two yeres full in his owne hired house, and receaued all that came in vnto hym,
- 31 Preachyng the kyngdome of God, and teachyng those thynges which concerne the Lorde Iesus Christe, with all confidence, no man forbyddyng hym. >

## Back matter

Here endeth the Actes of the Apostles. [Page]

### [Table]

Here hast thou (gentle reader, for thy better instruction) the description of the iourney and peregrination of Saint Paul, which is in this second booke of Saint Luke called the Actes of the Apostles, most intreated of. And forbecause thou readest oftentimes of Emperours, Kynges, and Deputies, thou hast set forth to thee, the names, the yeres, and howe longe euery Emperour or Kyng raigned, or Deputie gouerned, and vnder whom any of these actes were done, euen vntyll the death of Saint Paul.

[Table]

[Page]

## ¶ The Epistle of the Apostle Saint Paul, to the Romanes.

### ¶ The first Chapter.

1 Paul sheweth by whom and to what purpose he is called. 16 What the Gospell is. 18 The vengeance of God vpon the wicked. 20 The vse of the creatures. 24 The ingratitude and punishment of the wicked.

A

1 **Paul** the seruaunt of Iesus Christe, [Note: [a] By this he declareth, that he came not into the office of the apostleship by his owne arogancie, but by the calling of God, wherby he differeth from the false Apostles. ] called [to be] an Apostle, seuered into the Gospel of God.

2 Which he had promised afore by his prophetes in ye holy scriptures

3 Of his sonne, which was made of the [Note: Math.i.a. ] seede of Daud after the fleshe:

4 And hath ben declared to be the sonne of [Note: [b] Thre maner of wayes Paul sheweth here christ to be declared the sonne of God. First, by power or workynge of miracles. Secondly, by the holy ghost appearyng in visible signes. Thirdly, by his resurrection from the dead. ] God, with power after the spirite that sanctifieth, by the resurrection from the dead, of Iesus Christe our Lorde.

5 By whom we haue receaued grace and apostleship, that obedience myght be geuen vnto the fayth in his name, among all heathen.

6 Among whom, ye are also the called of Iesus Christe: >

7 To all that be in Rome, beloued of God, saintes by callyng, [Note: i.Cor.i. a. Galath.i.a. ] grace to you, and peace, from God our father, and the Lorde Iesus Christe.

8 First verily I thanke my God through Iesus Christe for you all, that your fayth is publisshed throughout all the worlde.

9 For God is my witnesse, whom I serue [Note: Iohn.iiii.c. i.Cor.iii.c. ] with my spirite in the Gospell of his sonne, that without ceassyng I make mention of you,

B

10 Praying alwayes [Note: Phil.i.a. Coloss.i.a. ] in my prayers, that by some meane at the last, one tyme or other, I myght take a prosperous iourney by the wyll of God, to come vnto you.

11 For I long to see you, that I myght bestowe among you some spirituall gift, that ye myght be stablISHED.

12 That is, that I might haue consolacion together with you, eche with others fayth, yours and mine.

13 I woulde that ye should knowe brethren, howe that I haue oftentimes purposed to come vnto you ( [Note: Act.xxvi.b ] and haue ben let hytherto,) that I myght haue some fruite also among you, as among other of the gentiles.

[Page]

14 I am debter both to the grekes, and to the [Note: [c] All those that were not Iewes, by a comon worde were called heathen. And here they are deuided into Grekes & barbarous. By Grekes, he vnderstadeth those that wer learned, cruel, and of good bryngyng vp. By barbarous, he meaneth rude and sauage people, with who no man coulde well haue to do. ] barbarous, both to the wyse, and to the vnwise.

15 So that as much as in me is, I am redy to preache the Gospell to you that are at Rome also.

16 For I am not ashamed of the Gospell of Christ, because it is the power of God vnto saluation to all that beleue, to the Iewe first, and also to the Greke.

17 For by it is the ryghteousnes of God opened fro fayth to fayth. As it is written: the iuste shall lyue by fayth.

C

18 For the wrath of God [Note: [d] Which apperaunce the worlde knoweth nothyng of. For in the syght of God all men are godlesse, synners, and the chyldeen of wrath: & whe they knowe any thyng of God, yet they be naught, because they neyther thanke him, nor serue hym, and ther fore plagues are powred vppon them from heauen. ] appeareth from heauen, against all vngodlynesse & vnrighteousnes of men, which [Note: [e] They hold the trueth in vnryghteousnes, yt whiche vnderstande the trueth, & do not expresse the same in their deedes and lyfe. ] withholde the trueth in vnrighteousnes.

19 For that that may be knowen of God, is manifest among them, because God hath shewed it vnto them.

20 For his inuisible thinges, being vnderstanded by his workes, through the creation of the worlde, are seene, that is, both his eternall power and godhead: So that they are without excuse.

21 Because that when they knewe God, they glorified hym not as God, neither were thankfull, but waxed full of vanities in their imaginations, [Note: Psal.cvi.c. ] and their foolishe heart was blynded.

22 When they counted them selues wyse, they became fooles:

23 [Note: Ierem.ii.c. ] And turned the glorie of the immortall God, vnto an image, made not only after the similitude of a mortal man, but also of birdes, and foure footed [Note: Eze.xiiii.b. ] beastes, and of crepyng beastes.

D  
24 Wherefore God gaue them vp to vnclennesse, through the lustes of their owne heartes, to defyle their owne bodies among them selues.

25 Whiche chaunged his [Note: [f] By his trueth, here he vnderstandeth the glorie of God, and his true religion: and a lie he calleth idoles, because the idolaters went about to take away fro wood & stone that whiche they were, thynkyng the to be neither wood nor stone, but attributed to the that that they were not, that is, diuine power & nature. ] trueth for a lye, and worshipped and serued the creature, more then the creator, which is to be prayesed for euer. Amen.

26 Wherefore God gaue them vp vnto shamefull lustes: For euen their women dyd chaunge the naturall vse, into that which is agaynst nature.

27 And likewise also, the men left the naturall vse of the woman, and brent in their lustes one with another, and men with men wrought fylthynesse, and receaued to them selues the rewarde of their errour (as it was accordyng)

28 And as they regarded not to knowe God: [Note: Actes.vii.f. ] euen so God deliuered them vp vnto a leude mynde, that they should do those thinges which were not comely:

29 Beyng full of all vnrighteousnes, fornication, craftynesse, couetousnes, maliciousnes, full of enuie, murther, debate, deceite, euyll conditioned, whysperers,

30 Backbyters, haters of God, dispiteful, proude, boasters, bryngers vp of euyll thinges, disobedient to father & mother:

31 Without vnderstandyng, couenaunt breakers, without naturall affection, truce breakers, vnmercyfull.

32 The whiche knowyng the righteousnes of God, howe that they which commit such thynges are worthy of death, not only do the same, [Note: Ozee.vii.a. ] but also haue pleasure in them that do them.

## ¶ The .ij. Chapter.

1 Gods iudgement vpon the hypocrites. 12 Ignoraunce excuseth not. 13 All men are sinners. 15 The Gentiles by their conscience, 17 the Iewes by their lawe.

A

1 **Therefore** art thou inexcusable, O man, whosoever [Note: Math.vii.a. ] thou be that [Note: [a] Saint Paul speketh here agaynst those men only, who being them selues fylled with all wickednesse, and impietie, yet be of al other most busy and curyous in notyng and reprehending other mennes faultes: not of any godlye zeale, but to iustifie them selues, and to bryng other men into hatred & contempt. ] iudget. For in that same wherin thou iudget another, thou condemnest thy self. For thou that iudget, doest euen ye selfe same thynges.

2 But we are sure that the iudgement of god is according to the trueth, against them which commit such thynges.

3 Thinkest thou this, O thou man that iudget them whiche do such thynges, and doest the same [thy selfe] that thou shalt escape the iudgement of God?

4 Eyther despisest thou the rychesse of his goodnes, & pacience, and long sufferance, not knowing [Note: Esai.xxx.d. Act.xvii.g. ] that the kyndnesse of god leadeth thee to repentaunce?

B

5 But thou after thy stubbornnesse and heart that can not repent, heapest vnto thy selfe wrath, agaynst the daye of [Page] wrath and declaration of the righteous iudgement of God:

6 [Note: Math.xvi.d. ] Which wyl rewarde euery man accordyng to his [Note: [b] Not that our works be of such merite that they deserue reward: but the scripture vse this kynde of speakyng, that therby it may prouoke and stirre vp men vnto good lyuyng, wherby our fayth may the more appeare. Which good workes God of his free grace doth reward. ] deedes:

7 To them, whiche by continuyng in well doyng seke for glorie, and honour, and immortalitie, eternall lyfe.

8 But vnto them that are contentious, & that do not obey the trueth, but obey vnrighteousnes [shall come] indignation, and wrath.

9 Tribulation, and anguishe, vpon euery soule of man that doeth euyll, of the Iewe first, and also of the Greke:

10 But glorie, and honour, and peace to euery man that doeth good, to ye Iewe first, and also to the Greke.

11 For [Note: ii.Par.xix.c Act.x.c. Ephe.vi.b. Coloss.iii b. ] there is no respect of persos with God.

12 For whosoever hath sinned without lawe, shall also perishe without lawe: And as many as haue sinned in ye lawe, shalbe iudged by the lawe.

13 (For in the sight of God, they are [Note: Iames.i.b. ] not righteous whiche heare the lawe: but the doers of the lawe shalbe iustified.

C



14 For when the Gentiles, which haue not the lawe, do of nature the thynges conteyned in the lawe: they hauing not the lawe, are a lawe vnto them selues.

15 Which shewe the workes of the lawe written in their heartes, their conscience bearing them witnesse, & their thoughtes, accusyng one another, or excusyng,)

16 At the day [Note: Iohn.viii.c. ] when God shall iudge the secretes of men by Iesus Christe, accordyng to [Note: [c] It is his Gospell, both for the seruet loue. and zeale that he beareth to it, and also for the great paynes that he hath taken in setting forth the same. ] my Gospell.

17 Behold, thou art called a Iewe, and [Note: [d] He awaketh ye Iews which were aslepe through a certain securitie and confidence in the lawe. ] retest in the lawe, and makest thy boast of God,

18 And knowest his wyll, and allowest the thynges that be excellent, infourmed by the lawe:

19 And beleuest that thou thy selfe art a guyde of the blynde, a lyght of them which are in darknesse,

20 An infourmer of them whiche lacke discretion, a teacher of the vnlearned: which hast the fourme of knowledge, & of the trueth in the lawe.

D

21 Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest not thy selfe? [Note: Math.vii.a. ] Thou preachest a man shoulde not steale, yet thou stealest.

22 Thou that sayest a man shoulde not commit adulterie, breakest wedlocke. Thou abhorrest idoles, and yet robbest God of his honour.

23 Thou that makest thy boast of ye lawe, through breakyng the lawe dishonorest God.

24 For the name of God is euyll spoken of among the Gentiles, through you: [Note: Esaias.lii.a. Ezech.36.g. ] As it is written.

25 For circumcision verily auayleth, yf thou kepe the lawe: But yf thou be a breaker of the lawe, thy circumcision is made vncircumcision.

26 Therefore if the [Note: [e] By this word he meaneth al ye people, of what countrey or nation soeuer they be, which haue not receaued the signe of circumcision, accordyng to the lawe of Moyses. ] vncircumcisio kepe the ordinaunces of the law, shall not his vncircumcisio be counted for circumcisio?

27 And shall not vncircumcision which is by nature, if it kepe the law, iudge thee, which beyng vnder the letter & circumcision, doest transgresse the lawe?

28 For he is not a Iewe, whiche is a Iewe outwarde. Neither is that circucision which is outwarde in the fleshe:

29 But [Note: Iohn.viii.c. ] he is a Iewe whiche is one inwardly, and [Note: Rom.ix.b. Coloss.ii.b. ] the circumcisio of ye heart, which consisteth in the spirite, and not in the letter [is circumcision] whose

praise is not of men, but of God.

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

1 The Iewes haue a prerogatiue. 10 The Iewes and Gentiles be both sinners. 21 All are iustified by grace through fayth, and not through workes.

A

1 **What** preferment then hath ye Iew? or what auauntageth circumcision?

2 Much euery way. First, for [Note: Rom.ix.a. ] because yt vnto them were committed ye wordes of God.

3 What then though some of them dyd not beleue? Shal their vnbeliefe make the [Note: [a] Which is the performance of gods promise. For fayth is taken after two sortes, both for our beliefe, when we assure our selues that God wyl performe his promyse, and also for ye stedfastnes of Gods promise to his people. For although some of the Iewes dyd not beleue, yet Gods trueth neuer fayled. ] fayth of God without effect?

4 God forbyd. Yea let God be true, and euery man a lyer, as it is writte: That thou myghtest be iustified in thy sayinges, and ouercome when thou art iudged.

5 But yf our vnrighteousnes setteth foorth the righteousness of God, what shall we saye? Is God vnryghteous [Page] which taketh vengeance? I speake after the maner of men,

B

6 God forbyd. For howe then shall God iudge the worlde?

7 For yf the trueth of God hath more abounded through my lye, vnto his glory, why am I as yet iudged as a sinner?

8 And not rather (as men speake euyll of vs, and as some affirme that we say) let vs do euyll, that good may come therof? Whose dampnation is iuste.

9 What then? Are we better [then they?] No, in no wise. For we haue alredy proued, howe that both Iewes and Gentiles are all vnder sinne.

10 As it is written: [Note: Psal.xiiii.a. and .lii.a. ] There is none righteous, no not one.

11 There is none that vnderstandeth, there is none that seketh after God.

C

12 They are all gone out of the waye, they are all vnprofitable, there is none that doth good, no not one.

13 [Note: Psal.v.b. ] Their throte is an open sepulchre, with their tongues they haue deceaued, the poyso of aspes is vnder their lippes.

14 [Note: Psal.v.b. ] Whose mouth is full of cursyng and bytternesse.

15 [Note: Prou.i.b. ] Their feete are swyft to shed blood.

16 [Note: Esaias.lix.b ] Heartes grieffe & miserie are in their wayes.

17 And they way of peace haue they not knowen.

18 [Note: Psa.xxxvi a. ] There is no feare of God before their eyes.

19 < Nowe we knowe that what thynges so euer the lawe saith, it saith it to them which are vnder the lawe: That all mouthes maye be stopped, and that al ye world may be indaungered to God.

20 Because that [Note: Galeth.ii.c. ] by the deedes of the [Note: [b] He includeth here the whole lawe, both the ceremoniall and morall, whose workes can not iustifie, because they be imperfecte in all men. ] lawe, there shall no flesshe be iustified in his syght. For by the lawe, commeth the knowledge of sinne.

21 But nowe is the righteousnes of God declared without the lawe, beyng witnessed by the testimonie of the lawe and of the prophetes.

22 The ryghteousnes of God [commeth] by the fayth of Iesus Christe, vnto all and vpon all them that beleue. There is no difference:

D

23 For all haue synned, and are destitute of the glorie of God,

24 [Note: Esaias.liii.d. ] Iustified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Christe Iesu:

25 Whom God hath set fourth [Note: Iohn.ii.a. ] to be a [Note: [c] which is a pacifyng of Gods displeasure. That whereas we were sometime bondslaues to synne. God made his only sonne Christe Iesus a sacrifice for our sinnes, to reconcile vs agayne by fayth into gods fauour. ] propitiatio, through fayth in his blood, to declare his ryghteousnes, in that he forgeueth the sinnes that are past,

26 Which God dyd suffer, to shew at this tyme his righteousnes, that he might be iuste, & the iustifier of hym which beleueth on Iesus. >

27 Where is then thy boastynge? It is excluded. By what lawe? Of workes? Nay, but by the lawe of fayth.

28 Therefore, we holde that [Note: Galat.ii.c. ] a man is iustified by fayth, without the deedes of the lawe.

29 Is he the God of the Iewes only? Is he not also of the Gentiles? Yes, euen of the Gentiles also.

30 For it is one God whiche shall iustifie the circumcision by [Note: [d] Meaning that ye Iewe and the Gentile are both iustified by one meanes, which is by fayth. ] fayth, and vncircumcision through fayth.

31 Do we then destroy the lawe through fayth? God forbyd: But we rather mayntayne the lawe.

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

7 Iustification is the free gyft of God, as it appeareth by Dauid and Abraham, 13 and also by the office of lawe and fayth.

A

1 **What** shall we saye then that [Note: Esaias.li.a. ] Abraham our father, as parteynyng to the flesshe, dyd fynde?

2 For if Abraham were iustified by workes, the hath he wherein to boaste, but not before God.

3 For what sayth the scripture? [Note: Gene.xv.b. Galath.iii.a. Iames.ii.d. ] Abraham beleued God, and it was counted vnto hym for rygtheousnes.

4 To hym that worketh, is the reward not reckened of grace, but of duetie.

5 To hym that worketh [Note: [a] That is, whiche meaneth not to obteyne saluatio through worthinesse of his workes. ] not, but beleueth on hym that iustifieth the [Note: [b] God is sayde to iustifie the vngodly, because he pardoneth his synnes, & of a wicked man, maketh hym good. ] vngodly, his fayth is counted for rygtheousnes.

6 Euen as Dauid describeth the blessednesse of the man vnto whom God imputeth righteousnesse without workes:

7 [Note: Psa.xxxii.a. ] Blessed are they whose vnrighteousnesse are forgeuen, & whose sinnes are [Page] couered.

8 Blessed is that man to who the Lorde wyll not impute sinne.

B

9 Came [this] blessednes then vpon the circumcision, or vpon the vncircumcision also? For we say, that fayth was reckened to Abraham for rygtheousnes.

10 Howe was it then reckened? When he was in the circumcision? or whe he was in the vncircumcision? [Note: Gen.xv.b. ] Not in the circumcision: but in vncircumcision.

11 And he receaued the [Note: Gen.xvii.b. ] signe of circumcision, as the [Note: [c] So was Abrahams circumcision called, because thereby was sealed ye rygtheousnes that through fayth was imputed to hym before his circumcision, ] seale of the rygtheousnesse of fayth, whiche he had yet beyng vncircumcised, that he shoulde be the father of al them that beleue, though they be not circumcised, that rygtheousnes myght be imputed vnto them also.

12 And that he myght be father of circumcision, not vnto them only whiche came of the circumcised: but vnto them also that walke in the steppes of the fayth that was in our father Abraham, before the time of circumcision.

C

13 For the promise that he shoulde be the heyre of the worlde, [was] not to Abraham or to his seede through the lawe, but through the ryghteousnes of fayth.

14 [Note: Galath.iii.c ] For yf they which are of the lawe be heyres, then is fayth but vayne, and the promise of none effect:

15 Because the lawe causeth wrath. For where no lawe is, there is no transgression.

16 Therefore by fayth [is the inheritaunce geuen] that it might [come] by grace, that the promise myght be sure to all ye seede, not to that only which is of the lawe, but to that also which is of the fayth of Abraham, [Note: Esaias.li.a. ] which is the father of vs al.

D

17 (As it is written, [Note: Gen.xvii.a. ] that I haue made thee a father of many nations) before God, whom he beleued, which restoreth the dead vnto life, and calleth those thynges whiche be not, [Note: [d] In the creation of the world this appeared. For when he commaunded any thyng to be, foorthwith it was. ] as though they were.

18 Who contrary to hope, [Note: [e] That is, which beleued and hoped for those thynges whiche God dyd promyse, when as to mans reason they wer with out hope. ] beleued in hope, that he shoulde be the father of many nations, accordyng to that which was spoken: so shall thy seede be.

19 And he faynted not in the fayth, nor considered his owne body nowe dead, when he was almost an hundred yeres old, neither yet the [Note: [f] For that she was past childe bearing ] deadnesse o Saraes wombe.

20 He stackered not at the promise of God through vnbeliefe: but was strong in fayth, geuyng glorie to God:

21 And beyng full certified, that what he had promised, he was able also to perfourme.

22 And therefore was it reckened to hym for righteousnes.

23 [Note: Rom.xv.a. ] Neuerthelesse, it is not written for hym only, that it was reckened to him:

24 But also for vs, to whom it shalbe reckened, so that we beleue on hym that raysted vp Iesus our Lorde from the dead.

25 Which was deliuered for our sinnes, and was raysted agayne for our iustification.

## ¶ The .v. Chapter.

1 The fruite of fayth. 7 The loue of God, and obedience of Christe. 12 From whence commeth death, and from whence lyfe.

A

1 **Therefore** being iustified by fayth, we are [Note: Iohn.xvi.a. ] at [Note: [a] By peace which is the fruite of faith, is meant the incredible and most constant ioy of mynde, our conscience beyng quyet, and established in Gods grace. ] peace with god, thorowe our Lorde Iesus Christe:

2 By whom also we haue had an entrauce by fayth, vnto this grace wherin we stande, and reioyce in hope of the glorie of God. [Note: Hebr.iii.a. ]

3 Not that only: but also we reioyce in tribulations, knowyng that tribulation worketh pacience:

4 Pacience profe, profe hope:

5 And hope maketh not [Note: [b] Both for that the hope of the godly is not disapoynted of yt which they hope for, and also for that they are not ashamed of any afflictio in this world, as the worldly mynded be: but constantly abide without shame, whatsoeuer trouble god doth send to them. ] ashamed, because the loue of God is shedde abrode in our heartes by the holy ghost, which is geuen vnto vs.

6 For when we were yet weake, accordyng to the tyme, Christe dyed for the vngodly.

7 Nowe scace wyll any man dye for the righteous: Yet peradventure for the good some men durst dye. [Page]

8 < But [Note: Iohn.iii.c. i.Iohn.iiii.b ] God setteth out his loue towarde vs, seyng that whyle we were yet sinners, Christe dyed for vs.

9 Muche more then nowe, we that are iustified by his blood, shalbe saued from wrath through hym.

B

10 For, yf when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his sonne: much more, seyng we are reconciled, we shalbe saued by his lyfe.

11 Not only so, but we also ioye in God, through our Lorde Iesus Christe, by who we haue nowe receaued the atonement.

12 Wherefore, as by one man sinne entred into the worlde, & [Note: Gen.ii.c. Rom.vi.d. ] death by sinne: euen so, death entred into all men, insomuch as all haue sinned.

13 For vnto the lawe, was sinne in the worlde: but sinne is not imputed when there is no lawe.

C

14 Neuerthelesse, death raigned from Adam to Moyses, ouer them also that had not sinned with lyke transgression as dyd Adam, whiche is the figure of hym that was to come.

15 But not as the sinne, so is the gyft. For yf through the sinne of one many be dead: much more the grace of God, and the gyft by grace, [Note: Iohn.i.b. ] which is by one man Iesus Christe, hath abounded vnto many.

D

16 And not as by one that sinned [euen so] the gyft. For the iudgement was of one into condemnation: but the gyfte, [Note: [d] For by Christe we are not onlye delyuered fro the synnes of Adam, but also fro all suche synnes as we haue added thervnto. ] of many synnes into iustification.

17 For yf by the sinne of one, death raigned by the meanes of one: much more they, whiche receaue aboundaunce of grace, and of the gyfte of ryghteousnes, shall raigne in life by the meanes of one, Iesus Christe.

18 Lykewyse then, as by the sinne of one [sinne came] on all men to condempnation: euen so, by the ryghteousnes of one [good came] vpon all men to the ryghteousnes of lyfe.

19 For as by one mans disobedience many became sinners: so by the obedience of one, shall many be made ryghteous.

20 But [Note: Gala.iii.c. ] the lawe in the meane tyme entred in, that sinne shoulde encrease. But where sinne was plenteous, grace was more plenteous.

21 That as sinne hath raigned vnto death: euen so myght grace raigne thorowe ryghteousnes vnto eternall lyfe, by Iesus Christe our Lorde.

## ¶ The .vj. Chapter.

5 Newnesse of lyfe foloweth iustification, to the which he exhorteth.

<sup>A</sup>

1 **What** shall we saye then? Shall we continue in sinne, that grace maye abound? God forbyd.

2 Howe shall we that are dead [Note: [a] He dyeth to synne, in whom ye strength of sinne is broken, by the power of Christe. ] to sinne, lyue any longer therin?

3 < Knowe ye not, that all we whiche haue ben baptized into Iesus Christe, haue ben baptized [Note: [b] That is, that sinne thorow Christes death, may be abolisshed and dye in vs: and that as we are made cleane outwardlye with water in our baptisme, so inwardlye our synnes may be washed away, and censed by the blood of christ ] into his death?

4 We are buryed then with him by baptisme into his death, that lykewyse as Christe was raysted vp from the dead by the glorie of the father: euen so, we also shoulde walke in newnesse of lyfe.

5 For if we be graft together by the likenesse of his death: euen so shall we be [partakers] of the resurrection:

6 Knowyng this, that our olde man is crucified with hym also, that the body of sinne might vtterly be destroyed, that hencefoorth we shoulde not serue sinne.

7 For he that is dead, is iustified from sinne.

<sup>B</sup>

8 **And** [Note: ii.Tim.ii.b. ] yf we be dead with Christe, we beleue that we shall also lyue with him:

9 Knowyng that Christe beyng raysted from the dead, [Note: Apoc.i.b. ] dyeth no more, death hath no more power ouer hym.

10 For as touchyng that he dyed, he dyed concerning sinne once: And as touching that he lyueth, he lyueth vnto God.

11 Lykewyse, reckon your selues to be dead to sinne, but alyue vnto God, thorowe Iesus Christe our Lorde. >

12 Let not sinne raigne therefore in your mortall bodie, that ye shoulde thervnto obey by the lustes of it. [Page] c

13 Neither geue ye your members as instrumentes of vnryghteousnesse vnto sinne: but geue your selues vnto God, as they that are alyue from the dead, and your members as instrumentes of ryghteousnesse vnto God.

14 For sinne shall not haue power ouer you, because ye are not vnder ye [Note: [c] That is, under ye curse of the lawe, whose office is to accuse & condempne: but vnder grace, wherby we haue forgeuenes of our sinnes, & are sanctified by the holye ghost into the newnesse of lyfe. ] lawe, but vnder grace.

15 What then? Shall we sinne, because we are not vnder the lawe, but vnder grace? God forbyd.

16 < Knowe ye not, how that to whom soeuer ye commit your selues as seruautes to obey, his seruautes ye are to whom ye obey: whether it be of sinne vnto death, or of obedience vnto ryghteousnesse?

D  
17 But God be thanked, that ye were the seruautes of sinne: but ye haue obeyed with heart the fourme of doctrine, into the which ye were brought vnto.

18 [Note: Iohn.vii.d. Rom.viii.a. ] Being then made free fro sinne, ye are become ye seruautes of ryghteousnesse.

19 < I speake after the maner of [Note: [d] Men vse to speake gentyllly to their friendes, and not to exact so much as they myght, but so farre forth as reason requireth. ] men, because of the infirmitie of your fleshe. As ye haue geuen your members seruautes to vncleannesse and iniquitie, vnto iniquitie: euen so nowe geue your members seruautes to ryghteousnesse, vnto holynesse.

20 For when ye were the seruautes of sinne, ye were free from ryghteousnesse.

21 What fruite had ye then in those thynges, wherof ye are nowe ashamed? For the ende of those thynges, is death.

22 But nowe ye beyng made free from sinne, and made the seruautes of God, haue your fruite vnto holynesse, and the ende euerlastyng lyfe.

23 For [Note: Gene.ii.c. Rom.v.c. ] the rewarde of sinne is death: but the gyft of God is eternall lyfe, thorowe Iesus Christe our Lorde. >



## ¶ The .vij. Chapter.

1. 7. 12. The vse of the lawe, 24 from the which Christe hath delyuered vs. 23 The fyght betwene the lawe of the fleshe, and the lawe of the spirite.

A

1 **Knowe**, ye not brethre (for I speake to the that knowe the [Note: [a] Before the comyng of Christe al me were maryed and bounde to the lawe, whiche dyd them none other seruice but disclosed their sinne and wickednesse, forcyng them to seke helpe for their sin elsewhere. Nowe then, the law being abolisshed for her imperfection, and they cleansed thorowe Gods grace, are spoused vnto Christe their new husband, hym to serue in newnesse of lyfe. ] lawe) how that the law hath power ouer a ma, as long as he lyueth?

2 For the woman which is in subiectio to a man, is bounde by the lawe to the man, as long as he lyueth: But yf the man be dead, she is loosed from the lawe of the man.

3 So then yf whyle the man lyueth, she couple her selfe with another man, she shalbe counted a wedlocke breaker: But yf the man be dead, she is free from the law, so that she is no wedlocke breaker, though she couple her selfe with another man.

B

4 Euen so, ye also my brethren, are dead concernyng the lawe by the [Note: [b] Because the bodye of Christe is made an offeryng and a sacrifice for our sinnes, wherby god is pleased, and his wrath appealed: and for Christes sake the holy ghost is geuen to all beleuers, wherby the power of sinne is in vs dayly weakened: we are counted dead to the lawe, for that ye law hath no dominion ouer vs. ] body of Christe, that ye shoulde be coupled to another, who is rayed from the dead, that we shoulde bryng fourth fruite vnto God.

5 For when we were in the fleshe, the lustes of sinne whiche were by the lawe wrought in our members, to bring forth fruite vnto death.

6 But nowe are we delyuered from the lawe, and dead vnto it whervnto we were in bondage, that we shoulde serue in newnesse of spirite, and not in the oldnesse of the letter.

7 What shall we say then? Is the lawe sinne? God forbyd. Neuerthelesse, [Note: Rom.v.c. Galath.iii.b ] I knewe not sinne, but by the lawe: For I had not knowen lust, except the lawe had sayde, [Note: Exod.xx.c. Deut.v.b. ] thou shalt not lust.

8 But sinne, takyng occasion by the commaundement, wrought in me all maner of concupiscence. For without the lawe, sinne [was] dead.

9 I once lyued without lawe: But when the commaundement came, sinne reuyued,

C

10 And I was dead. And the very same commaundemet, which was ordeyned vnto lyfe, was founde to be vnto me an occasion of death.

11 For sinne, takyng occasion by the commaundement, hath deceaued me, and by the same slewe [me.]

12 Wherefore the lawe is holy, and the commaundement holy, & iust and good.

13 Was that then which was good, made death vnto me? God forbyd. But sinne, that sinne myght appeare, by that which was good to worke death in me: [Page] that sinne by ye commaundement, myght be out of measure sinfull.

14 For we knowe, that the lawe is spirituall: but I am carnall, [Note: Esaias.lii.a. ] solde vnder [Note: [c] Lyke as bondmen are violetly thrust hurled, & tormoyled, as it pleaseth their cruel maister: So are we through heapes of synnes drawn to many euil doings which we do neither lyke nor alowe. ] sinne.

15 For that which I do, I alowe not. For what I woulde, that do I not: but what I hate, that do I.

16 If I do nowe that which I woulde not, I consent vnto the lawe, that it is good.

17 Nowe then, it is not I that do it: but sinne that dwelleth in me.

D

18 For I knowe, that in me, that is to say in my [Note: Gene.vi.a. ] fleshe, dwelleth no good thyng. For to wyll, is present with me: but I fynde no meanes to perfourme that which is good.

19 For the good that I woulde, do I not: But the euyll which I woulde not, that do I.

20 And yf I do that I woulde not, then is it not I that doth it, but sinne that dwelleth in me.

21 I fynde then by the lawe, that when I woulde do good, euyll is present with me.

22 For I delite in the lawe of God, after the inwarde man:

23 But I see another lawe in my members, rebellyng agaynst the lawe of my mynde, and subduyng me vnto the lawe of sinne, which is in my members.

24 O wretched man that I am: Who shall deliuer me from the [Note: [d] It is called the bodye of sinne, for that it is an whole lump of sinne, tossyng and tormentyng the whole man, & pluckyng him fro god, when by plagues & miseries are heaped on, & man liueth as he swere in the myddest of death. ] body of this death?

25 I thanke God through Iesus Christe our Lorde. So then, with the mynde I my selfe serue the lawe of God: but with the fleshe, the lawe of sinne.

## The .viiij. Chapter.

1 The assuraunce of the faythfull. 6 The fruites of the holy ghost. 3 The weakenesse of the lawe. 17 Of

hope. 18 Of patience vnder the crosse. 29 Of the foreknowledge of God.

A

1 **There** is then no dampnation to them which are in Christe Iesu, which walke not after the fleshe, but after the spirite.

2 For the lawe of the [Note: [a] The law of the spirite, and the law of sinne, is here taken improperly for the power & strength of ye lawe and sinne: and it is called the spirite of lyfe, because it quickeneth and geueth lyfe. ] spirite of lyfe, through Iesus Christe, hath made me free from the lawe of sinne and death.

3 For what the lawe coulde not do, in as much as it was weake through the fleshe, God sendyng his owne sonne, in the similitude of sinfull fleshe, euen by sinne, [Note: [b] God, thorow the sacrifice of synne, which Christ his only sonne offered vpon ye crosse in his flesh, hath codempned and abolished sin, which raigned in our mortall fleshe. ] condempned sinne in the fleshe:

4 That the ryghteousnesse of the lawe, myght be fulfilled in vs, which walke not after the fleshe, but after the spirite.

5 For they that are carnall, are [Note: [c] **phronousi** and **phronema** greke words, do not so much signifie wysedome and prudence, as affection, carefulnesse, & myndynge of any thyng. ] carnally mynded: But they that are spirituall, are spiritually mynded.

6 To be carnally mynded, is death: But to be spiritually mynded, is lyfe & peace:

7 Because that the fleshly mynde is enmitie agaynst God: For it is not obedient to the lawe of God, neither can be.

8 So then, they that are in the fleshe, can not please God.

B

9 But ye are not in the fleshe, but in the spirite, yf so be that the spirite of God dwell in you. If any man haue not the spirite of Christe, the same is none of his.

10 And yf Christe be in you, the body is dead because of [Note: [d] Albeit we haue a bodye which is dead to al goodnes, by reason of sinne, which so strongly rayneth in it, yet when we are grafted in Christe, his spirite of lyfe geueth vs lyfe, and iustifieth vs. ] sinne: but the spirite is lyfe for ryghteousnesse sake.

11 But, yf ye spirite of hym that raysed vp Iesus from the dead, dwell in you: euen he that raised vp Christe from the dead, shall also quicken your mortall bodyes, because that his spirite dwelleth in you.

12 < Therefore brethren, we are detters, not to the fleshe, to lyue after the fleshe.

13 For if ye liue after ye fleshe, ye shall dye: But if ye through the spirite, do mortifie the deedes of the body, ye shall lyue.

14 For as many as are led by the spirite of God, they are the sonnes of God.

15 For ye haue not receaued the spirite of bondage agayne to feare: but [Note: Galat.iiii.a. i.Tim.i.b. ] ye haue

received the spirite of adoption, wherby we cry, Abba, father.

16 [Note: ii.Cor.i.d. Ephe.i.a. ] The same spirite, beareth witnesse to our spirite, that we are ye sonnes of God.

17 If we be sonnes, then are we also heyres, the heyres of God, and ioyntheyres with Christe: So that we suffer together, that we may be also glorified together.

18 < For I am certaynely [Note: [e] **logizomai**: signifieth to sway or to consider. But because the matter was certaine, and S. Paul nothing doubted therof, it is thus made: I am perswaded. ] perswaded that the afflictions of this tyme, are not worthy of the glory which shalbe shewed vpon vs.

[Page]

19 For the feruent desire of the creature, abydeyth loking whe the sonnes of God shall appeare:

20 Because the [Note: [f] The creatures shal not be restored before Gods chyl dren be brought to their perfection. In the meane season, they desire, grone, and wayte. ] creature is subiect to vanitie, not wylling, but for hym which hath subdued the same in hope.

21 For the same creature shalbe made free from the bondage of corruptio, into the glorious libertie of ye sonnes of God.

22 For we knowe, that euery creature groneth with vs also, and trauayleth in payne, euen vnto this tyme.

23 Not only [they], but we also which haue the first fruites of the spirite, and we our selues mourne in our selues, and wayte for the adoption, euen the deliuerance of our body. >

24 For we are saued by hope: But hope that is seene, is no hope. For howe can a man hope for that which he seeth?

25 But and yf we hope for that we see not, the do we with pacience abide for it.

E

26 Lykewyse, the spirite also helpeth our infirmities. For we knowe not what to desire as we ought: but ye spirite maketh great [Note: [g] The right fourme and affection of prayer, commeth by the holy ghoste, who maketh intercession for vs, not yt he prayeth & mourneth: but that he so stirreth our heartes, that we lyft them vp to heauen earnestly and feruentlye, which is the true prayer. ] intercession for vs, with gronynges, which can not be expressed.

27 And he that searcheth the heartes, knoweth what is the meanyng of the spirite: for he maketh intercession for the saintes accordyng to the pleasure of God. >

28 < For we knowe yt all thinges worke for the best, vnto them that loue God, to them which also are called of purpose.

29 For those which he knewe before, he also dyd predestinate, that they shoulde be lyke fashioned vnto the shape of his sonne, that he myght be ye first begotten among many brethren.

30 Moreouer, whom he dyd predestinate, the also he called. And whom he called, them also he iustified:

And whom he iustified, them he also glorified.

31 What shall we then say to these thynges? [Note: Nu.xiiii.b. Luk.xx.b. Iohn.iii.b. ] If God be on our syde, who can be agaynst vs?

32 Which spared not his owne sonne, [Note: Esaias.liiii.d. ] but gaue hym for vs all: Howe shall he not with hym also geue vs all thynges?

33 Who shall lay any thyng to the charge of Gods chosen? It is God that iustifieth:

34 Who is he that can condempne? It is Christe which dyed, yea rather which is rayned agayne, which is also on the ryght hande of God, and maketh intercession for vs.

35 Who shall separte vs from the loue of God? Shall tribulation or anguyshe, or persecution, either hunger, either nakednesse, either peryll, either sworde?

36 As it is written: [Note: Psal.44.d. ] For thy sake are we kylled all daye long, and are counted as sheepe for the slaughter.

37 Neuertheless, in all these thinges we ouercome, through hym that loued vs.

38 For I am sure, that neither death, neither lyfe, neither angels, nor rule, neither power, neither thynges present, neither thynges to come,

39 Neither heygth nor deapth, neither any other creature, shalbe able to separte vs from the loue of God, which is in Christe Iesu our Lorde. >

## ¶ The .ix. Chapter.

1 Paul declareth his feruent loue towards his nation, 11 he treateth of election, and reprobation. 24 Also of the callyng of the gentiles, 30 and of the castyng of, of the Iewes.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **I say** ye trueth in Christ, I lye not, my conscience also bearyng me witness by the holy ghost,

2 That I haue great heauinesse, & continuall sorowe in my heart.

3 For I haue wisshed my selfe to be cursed from [Note: [a] He sawe the losse and destruction of his whole nation, fallyng so farre from Gods true religion, he considered howe sore God shoulde be dishonoured, whe his wonderfull benefites and blessinges bestowed vpon his people, shoulde take none effect, but vtterly be defaced, which so myghtilie moued hym, that he wished rather to be cut of from Christe, then those thynges should come to passe. ] Christe, for my brethren, my kynsmen as pertaynyng to ye fleshe,

4 Which are the Israelites: To whom pertayneth the adoption, and the glory, & the couenauntes, and the lawe that was geuen, and the seruice of God, and the promises.

5 Of whom are the fathers, of whom as concernyng the fleshe, Christe [came,] which is God, in all thynges to be prayed for euer. Amen.

B

6 And it can not be, that the worde of God shoulde take none effect. [Note: Rom.ii.d. ] For they are not all Israelites, which are of Israel:

7 Neither are they all chyldren that are the seede of Abraham: But [Note: Gen.xxi.b. ] in Isaac shall thy seede be called.

[Page]

8 That is to say: [Note: Iohn.viii.e. Rom.ii.d. ] They which are the chyldren of the fleshe, are not the chyldren of God: But they which be the childre of promise, are counted the seede.

9 For this is a worde of promise: [Note: Gen.xviii.b ] About this tyme wyll I come, and Sara shall haue a sonne.

10 Not only this, but also Rebecca was with chylde by one [euen] by our father Isaac.

C

11 For yer the [chyldren] were borne, when they had neither done good neither bad, (that the purpose of God by [Note: [b] The wyll and purpose of God, is the cause of the election and reprobation. For his mercie and callyng, through Christe, are the meanes of saluation: and the withdrawyng of his mercie. is the cause of damnation. ] election might stande: not by the reason of workes, but by the caller)

12 It was sayde vnto her: The elder shall serue the younger.

13 As it is written: Iacob haue I loued, but Esau haue I hated.

14 What shall we say then? Is there any vnrighteousnes with God? God forbid.

15 For he sayth to Moyses: [Note: Exod.33.d. ] I wyll shewe mercy to whom I shewe mercy: And wyll haue compassion, on whom I haue compassion.

16 So then it is not of the wyller, nor of the runner: but of the mercy of God.

17 For the scripture sayth vnto Pharao: [Note: Exod.ix.b. ] Euen for this same purpose haue I stirred thee vp, to shewe my power in thee, & that my name myght be declared throughout all the worlde.

18 So hath he mercy on whom he wyll, and whom he wyll, he hardeneth.

D

19 Thou wylt say then vnto me: Why then blameth he [vs] yet? For who hath ben able to resist his wyll?

20 [Note: Esai.xlv.b. Eccle.33.b. Iere.xviii.a. ] But O man, what art thou which disputest with God? Shall the worke say to the workeman, why hast thou made me on this fashion?

21 Hath not the potter power ouer the clay, euen of the same lump to make one vessel vnto honour, and another vnto dishonour?

22 If then, God wyllyng to shewe his wrath, and to make his power knowe, suffred with long patience, the vessels of wrath, ordayned to destruction,

23 To declare the riches of his glory, on the vessels of mercy, which he had prepared vnto glory:

24 Whom also he called, not of ye Iewes only, but also of the Gentiles.

E

25 As he sayth also in Osee: [Note: Oze.ii.d. i Peter.ii b. ] I wyll call them my people, which were not my people: and her beloued, which was not beloued.

26 And it shall come to passe, that in the place where it was sayde vnto them: Ye are not my people, there shall they be called ye chyldren of the lyuyng God.

27 And Esaias cryeth concerning Israel: [Note: Esai.x.c. ] Though the number of the children of Israel, be as the sande of the sea, yet [but] a remnaunt shalbe saued.

F

28 For he finisheth the [Note: [c] The word here, is taken for a thyng or matter. The Lord diminished his people by sundry plagues, persecutions, & vanishmentes, & brought them to a very fewe. Like wyse meaneth S. Paul, that a fewe of the shalbe saued, whiche fewe notwithstanding, shall abound in righteousnesse, to the glory of God. ] worde, and maketh it short in ryghteousnesse: For a short worde wyll the Lorde make on earth.

29 And as Esaias sayde before: Except the Lorde of Sabboth had left vs [Note: [d] The seede is Christe Iesus, sewen abrode by his Apostles and Disciples. ] seede, we had ben made as Sodoma, and had ben lykened to Gomorrha.

30 What shall we say then? that the gentiles which folowed not ryghteousnes, haue obtayned righteousnesse: euen the ryghteousnesse which cometh of fayth.

31 But Israel, which folowed the lawe of ryghteousnesse, hath not attayned to the lawe of ryghteousnesse.

32 Wherefore? Because [they sought it] not by fayth: but [as it were] by the workes of the lawe. For they haue stumbled at the stumblyng stone,

33 As it is written: [Note: Esa.xxviii.d ] Beholde, I put in [Note: [e] Christe doth iustifie vs by fayth without workes, whiche thing ye Iews and iustitaries can not beleue. Therefore they stumble at Christ, and are offended with him. ] Sion a stumblyng stone, and a rocke of offence: And whosoeuer beleueth on hym, shall not be confounded.

## ¶ The .x. Chapter.

3 Paul sheweth the cause of the fall of the Iewes, 5 The difference betwene the iustice of the lawe, and fayth. 16 The castyng of, of the Iewes, and calling of the Gentiles.

A

1 < **Brethren**, my heartes desire & prayer to God for Israel, is, that they myght be saued.

2 For I beare them recorde, that they haue a [Note: [a] That is, a certayne affection, but not after knowledge. For no zeale nor no good intent can be acceptable vnto God, but only that which is grounded vpon fayth, and the knowledge of God. ] zeale of God: but not accordyng to knowledge.

3 For they beyng ignoraunt of Gods ryghteousnesse, and goyng about to stablyshe their [Note: [b] It is called our owne righteousnes, when we refuse the ryghteousnesse which cometh by Christe, & imagine an other ryghteousnes, which commeth by our owne workes and deuises. ] owne righteousnesse, haue not ben obedient vnto the ryghteousness of God. >

4 For Christe is the ende of the lawe, [Page] [Note: [c] That is, Christe hath fulfilled the whole lawe, and therefore whosoeuer beleueth in him, is counted iust before God, as well as he had fulfilled the whole law hym selfe. ] for ryghteousnesse to all that beleue.

5 For Moyses writeth, of the ryghteousnesse which [is] of the lawe, howe that the man which doth those thinges, shall lyue by them.

B

6 But the ryghteousnesse which is of fayth, speaketh on this wise: Say not thou in thyne heart, who shall ascende into [Note: [d] For fayth teacheth vs, that Christe is ascended vp into heauen, to take vs with him, and hath descended into the depth of death to destroy death, and to delyuer vs. ] heauen? That is, to fetch Christe downe from aboue.

7 Either who shall descende into the deepe? That is, to fetch vp Christe agayne from the dead.

8 But what sayth he? [Note: Deu,xxx.c ] The worde is nye thee, euen in thy mouth, and in thy heart. This same is the worde of faith, which we preache

9 For if thou shalt knowledge with thy mouth, the Lorde Iesus, and shalt beleue in thyne heart that God raysed hym from the dead, thou shalt be saued.

10 < For with the heart man beleueth vnto ryghteousnesse, and with ye mouth man confesseth to saluation.

C

11 For the scripture sayth: [Note: Esais.28.d. ] Whosoeuer beleueth on him, shall not be cofounded.

12 There is no difference betwene the Iewe & the Greke: for the same Lorde ouer al, is riche vnto al yt call vpon him.

13 For [Note: Ioel.ii.g. Actes.ii.c. ] whosoeuer shall call on the name of the Lorde, shalbe saued.

14 Howe then shall they call on hym, on whom they haue not beleued? Howe shall they beleue on hym of whom they haue not hearde? Howe shal they heare, without a preacher?



15 And howe shall they preache, except they be sent? As it is written: Howe beautifull are the feete of them whiche bryng good tydynges of peace, & bryng good tydynges of good thynges.

D

16 But they haue not all obeyed ye Gospel. For Esaias sayth: [Note: Esai.liiii.a. Iohn.xii.a. ] Lorde, who hath beleued our sayinges?

17 So then fayth commeth by hearyng, and hearyng commeth by the worde of God.

18 But I aske: Haue they not hearde? No doubt, [Note: Psal.xix a. ] their sounde went out into all landes, and their wordes into the endes of the worlde. >

19 [Note: Deut.32.c. ] But I demaunde whether Israel did knowe or not? First Moyses sayth: I wyll prouoke you to enuie, by them that are no people: and by a foolyshe nation I wyll anger you.

20 And Esaias is bolde, and sayeth: [Note: Esai.lii.b. ] I am founde of them that sought me not: I am manifest vnto them that asked not after me.

21 But agaynst Israel he sayeth: [Note: Esai.lxv.a. ] All day long haue I stretched forth my handes vnto a people that beleueth not, but speaketh agaynst me.

## ¶ The .xj. Chapter.

1 God hath his Church though it appeare not alway to the worlde. 8 God hath forsaken the Iewes, and chosen the gentiles, 18 whom yet he warneth to humble them selues. 29 God repenteth hym not of his giftes. 33 The depth of Gods iudgementes.

A

1 **I say** then, hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite, of the seede of Abraham, of the tribe of Beniamin,

2 God hath not cast away his people which he knewe before. Wote ye not what the scripture sayth of Elias? howe he maketh intercession to God, agaynst Israel,

3 Saying: [Note: ii.Re.xix.b. ] Lord, they haue kylled thy prophetes, and dygged downe thyne [Note: [a] Those alters, he meaneth wherevpon Abraham, Isaac, and Iacob, dyd offer sacrifices in tyme past, vppon the which it was lawfull for ye Iewes to do sacrifice, vntil the buildyng of the temple. ] aulders: and I am left alone, and they seke my lyfe.

4 But what sayth the aunswere of God vnto hym? I haue reserued vnto my selfe seuen thousande men, which haue not bowed the knee to [ye image of] Baal.

5 Euen so at this tyme, there is a remnaunt, according to the election of grace.

6 If it be of grace, then is it not nowe of workes: For the grace is no more grace. But yf it be of workes, then is it nowe no grace: For then worke is no more worke.

B

7 What then? Israel hath not obtayned that which he sought: but the election hath obtayned it, the remnaunt hath ben blynded,

8 Accordyng as it is written: [Note: Esai.vi.c. Mat.xiii.b. ] God hath geuen them the spirite of [Note: [b] That is, pricking and vnquietnes of conscience. ] remorse, eyes that they shoulde not see, and eares that they shoulde not heare, euen vnto this day.

9 And Daudid sayth: Let their table be made a snare, and a trappe, and a stumbling stocke, and a recompence vnto the.

[Page]

10 Let their eyes be blinded yt they see not, & bowe thou downe their backe alway.

11 I say then, haue they therfore stumbled, that they shoulde fall? God forbyd: but through their fall, saluation [is come] vnto the [Note: [c] That is, for that the Iewes contemnyng the Gospel of Christe, fell away from God, the preachyng of the Gospel came vnto the gentiles, which is their saluatio. ] gentiles, for to prouoke them withall.

12 Nowe, yf the fall of them be ye ryches of the worlde, and the minishyng of the, the ryches of the gentiles: Howe much more their fulnesse?

13 For I speake to you gentiles, in as much as [Note: Rom.i.a. i Tim.ii.a. ii Tim.i.c. ] I am the Apostle of the gentiles, I magnifie myne office.

14 If by any meane I may prouoke the which are my fleshe, and myght saue some of them.

15 For yf the castyng away of them, be the reconcilyng of the worlde: what shall the receauyng [of them] be, but lyfe from the dead?

16 For yf the first fruites be holy, ye whole lumpe also [is holy.] And yf the roote be holy, the braunches also.

C

17 And yf some of the brauches be broken [Note: [d] These broken braunches, were the vnbeleuyng Iewes, whiche for their vnbeliefe, were cut of from the promise of God, in whose stede was the wilde Oliue, that is, the gentiles, grafted thorowe fayth. ] of, and thou beyng a wylde Oliue tree, wast graft in among them, & made partaker of the roote and fatnesse of the Oliue tree:

18 Boast not thy selfe agaynst the braunches. For yf thou boast thy selfe, thou bearest not the roote, but the roote thee.

19 Thou wylt say then, the braunches are broken of, that I might be graft in.

20 Well: because of vnbeliefe, they were broken of, and thou stodest stedfast in fayth. Be not hye mynded, but feare.

21 For seying that God spared not the naturall branches [take heede] lest it come to passe, that he spare not thee.

D

22 Beholde therefore, the kyndnesse and rigorousnesse of God: on them which fell, rigorousnesse: but towardes thee, kyndnesse, if thou continue in kindnesse, or els thou shalt be hewen of:

23 And they, [Note: ii Cer.iii.d. ] yf they byde not styll in vnbeliefe, shalbe graffed in: For God is of power to graffe them in agayne.

24 For yf thou were cut out of a naturall wyld Oliue tree, and were graffed contrary to nature, in a true Oliue tree: Howe much more shall the naturall branches, be graffed in their owne Oliue tree?

25 For I woulde not brethren, that ye shoulde be ignoraunt of this misterie, (lest ye shoulde be wyse in your owne conceiptes,) that partly blyndnesse is happened in Israel, vntyll the fulnesse of the gentiles be come in:

E

26 And so all Israel shalbe saued, as it is written: [Note: Esai.lix.d. Psal.xiii.c. ] There shall come out of Sion he that doth delyuer, and shall turne away vngodlynesse from Iacob.

27 And this is my couenaunt vnto them, when I shall take away their sinnes.

28 As concernyng the Gospel, they are enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, they are loued for the fathers [sakes].

29 For the gyftes and callyng of God, are without repentaunce.

30 For, as ye in tyme past haue not beleued God, yet haue nowe obtayned mercie, through their vnbeliefe:

31 Euen so nowe haue they not beleued the mercie [shewed] vnto you, that they also may obtayne mercie.

32 For God hath wrapped all [nations] in vnbeliefe, yt he myght haue mercie on al.

33 O the deepenesse of the ryches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God, howe vnsearcheable are his iudgementes, and his wayes past fyndyng out?

34 For [Note: Sapien.ix.b Esai.lx.c. i Cor.ii.d. ] who hath knowen the mynde of the Lorde? Or who hath ben his counsellour?

35 Either who hath geuen vnto hym first, [Note: [e] By this, the Apostle declareth that God by his free wyll and election, doth geue saluation vnto men, without any desertes of their owne. ] & he shalbe recompensed agayne.

36 For of hym, and through hym, and for hym, are all thynges: To whom be glory for euer. Amen.

## ¶ The .xij. Chapter.

1 Of what conuersation they which professe Christe shoulde be of. 6 Howe euery man shoulde walke in his seuerall calling. 19 No man to reuenge.

A

1 **I beseche** you therfore brethren, by the mercifulnesse of God, that ye geue vp your bodyes a quicke [Note: [a] The Iewes in Moyses law, were commaunded to offer vp the dead carkases of beastes: but Christians shoulde exhibite their owne liuely bodyes for a sacrifice to God, in mortifying their carnall lustes, and framyng themselues by faith, to Godlynesse and charitie. ] sacrifice, holy, acceptable vnto God, [whiche is] your reasonable seruice:

2 And fasshion not your selues lyke vnto this [Note: [b] The worlde hath diuers significations in the scriptures. but here is take specially for the nature and dispositio of men in the worlde, which liued after their lustes & pleasures, and serueth not god in holines of lyfe, and godly conuersation. ] worlde, but be ye chaunged in your shape, by ye reuening of your minde, that ye may proue what is the wyll of God, good, and acceptable, and perfect.

3 For I say, through the grace geuen [Page] vnto me, to euery man among you, that [Note: Eccle.iii.c. ] no man esteeme of hym selfe more then he ought to esteeme: but so esteeme [hym selfe] that he behaue hymselfe [Note: [c] Two thinges are required, yf we wyll esteeme or iudge soberly of Gods giftes in vs: The one, that we do not arrogate to our selues, that whiche we haue not. The next, that we boast not of the gentiles, but reuerently and soberly to vse them, to Gods honour and glory. ] discretelye, accordyng as God hath dealt to euerye man the measure of fayth.

4 For as we haue many members in one body, and all members haue not one office:

5 So, we beyng many, are one body in Christe, and euery one members one of another. >

6 < Seyng that we haue dyuers giftes, accordyng to the grace that is geuen vnto vs, yf any man haue the gyft, either [Note: i Cor.xii.a. ] prophesie after the measure of fayth,

7 [Note: i Pet.iii.c. ] Either office in administration, or he that teacheth in teachyng:

8 Or he that exhorteth, in exhortyng, he that geueth in singlenesse, he that ruleth in diligence, he that is mercifull in chearefulnesse.

9 Loue without dissimulation, hatyng euyll, cleauyng to good.

C

10 Affectioned one to another with brotherly loue, [Note: i Peter.ii.d. Eccle.31.c. ] in geuyng honour, go one before another.

11 Not lither in businesse, feruent in spirite, seruyng the Lorde,

12 Reioycyng in hope, pacient in trouble, instant in prayer,

13 Distributyng to ye necessitie of saintes, geuen to hospitalitie.

14 [Note: Heb.xiii.c. Math.v.g. ] Blesse them which persecute you, blesse, and curse not.

15 Reioyce with them that do reioyce, and wepe with them that wepe.

16 Beyng of lyke affection one towards another, beyng not hye mynded: but makyng your selues equall to them of the lower sort. > < Be not wise in your owne opinions,

D

17 Recompensyng to no man euyll for euyll. Prouydyng afore hande thynges honest, [not only before God, but also] in the syght of all men.

18 If it be possible, as much as lyeth in you, lyue peaceably with all men.

19 Dearely beloued, auenge not your selues, but rather geue place vnto wrath. For it is written: [Note: Deut.32.d. ] Uengeaunce is myne, I wyll repay sayth the Lorde.

20 Therefore, yf thyne enemye hunger, feede hym: yf he thyrst, geue him drinke. For in so doyng, thou shalt heape coales of [Note: [d] For, either thou shall wynne hym with thy benefite, or els his conscience shall beare hym witnesse, that Gods burnyng wrath hangeth ouer hym. ] fyre on his head.

21 Be not ouercome of euyll, but ouercome euyll with good. >

## ¶ The .xiiij. Chapter.

1 Of Obedience to the rulers, who beare not the sworde in vayne. 8 Charitie must measure all our doynge. 11 An exhortation to good lyfe.

A

1 **Let** euery soule be subiect vnto the hyer powers: For [Note: Sapi.vi a. Iohn.iii.d. ] there is no power but of god. The powers that be, are ordeyned of God.

2 Whosoeuer therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinaunce of God: And they that resist, shall receaue to the selues dampnation.

3 For rulers are not fearefull to good workes, but to the euyll. Wylt thou not feare the power? Do well, and thou shalt haue prayse of the same.

B

4 For he is the minister of God for thy wealth. But yf thou do euyll, feare: For he beareth not the sworde in vayne, for he is the minister of God, reuenger of wrath on hym that doth euyll.

5 Wherefore, ye must needes be subiect, not only for feare of punishment: but also because of [Note: [a] For we are bounde in conscience by the worde of God, to obey the hygher powers, and in disobeyng we shoulde hurt the consciences of others, thorowe our euils example. ] conscience.

6 And for this cause pay ye tribute. For they are Gods ministers, seruyng for the same purpose. >

7 Geue to euery man therfore his dutie, [Note: Mat.xvii.c. ] tribute to whom tribute, custome to whom custome, feare to whom feare, honour to whom honour [belongeth.] >

8 Owe nothyng to no man, but to loue one another: (For he that loueth another, hath fulfilled the lawe. [Page]

9 For this: [Note: Exod.xx.c. Deut.v.a. Mat.v.d. Luk.xviii.d ] Thou shalt not commit adultrie, thou shalt not kyll, thou shalt not steale, thou shalt not beare false witnesse, thou shalt not lust: and yf there be any other commaundement, it is comprehended in this saying: Namelye, [Note: Leuit.xix.d Mat.xxi.d. Mark.xii.c Galath.v.b. Iames.ii.b. ] Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

10 Charitie worketh no yll to his neyghbour, therefore the fulfylling of the lawe is charitie.) >

11 < And chiefly consideryng the season, howe that it is tyme that we shoulde nowe awake out of slepe: For nowe is our saluation [Note: [b] The further we go, the nearer are we to the end. Nowe therefore our perfect &full saluati o is never vnto vs, then when we began first to beleue. ] nearer, then when we beleued.

12 The nyght is passed, the day is come nye. Let vs therfore caste away the deedes of darknesse, & let vs put on the armour of lyght.

13 Let vs walke honestly as in the day, [Note: Luk.xxi.f. Eccle.31.c. and .38.d. ] not in riotyng & dronkenesse, neither in chaumberyng & wantonnesse, neither in strife and enuyng.

14 But put ye on ye Lorde Iesus Christe. And make not prouision for the fleshe, to the lustes [therof.]

## The .xiiij. Chapter.

1 The weake must be borne with. 10 No man ought to offende his neyghbours conscience. 15 One ought to beare with anothers conscience in charitie.

A  
1 **Hym** that is weake in the fayth, receaue: not to iudgementes of [Note: [a] That is, not to this ende, contentiously to dispute with him in matters of religion, wher vnto, through the weaknes of faith, he can not as yet attayne, lest he should depart with a greater scruple of conscience, or be offended with vncharitable reasonyng. ] disputyng.

2 One beleueth yt he may eate euery thyng: Another which is weake, eateth hearbes.

3 Let not hym that eateth, dispise hym that eateth not: And let not hym which eateth not, iudge hym that eateth. For God hath receaued hym.

4 [Note: Iacob.iiii.b. ] What art thou that iudgest another mans seruauant? To his owne maister he standeth or falleth: Yea, he shalbe holden vp. For god is able to make him stande.

B

5 This man putteth difference betwene day and day. Another man counteth all dayes alyke. Let euery man be fully perswaded in his owne [Note: [b] We must be assured in our conscience by Gods worde, in all thyng that we do, that yf we be strong, we maye knowe what is our libertie: & if we be weake, we may learne to profite dayly. ] mynde.

6 He that esteemeth the day, esteemeth it vnto ye Lorde: And he that esteemeth not the day to the Lorde, he doeth not esteeme it. He that eateth, eateth to the Lorde, for he geueth God thanks: And he that eateth not, eateth not to the Lorde, and geueth God thanks.

7 For none of vs lyueth to hym selfe, and no man dyeth to hym selfe.

8 For yf we lyue, we lyue vnto ye Lorde: And if we dye, we dye vnto the Lorde. Whether we lyue therefore, or dye, we are the Lordes.

9 For to this ende Christe both dyed and rose agayne and reuyued, that he myght be [Note: Actes.ii.f. Philip.ii.b. ] Lorde both of dead & quicke.

10 But why doest thou then iudge thy brother? Either, why doest thou despise thy brother? We shalbe all brought before the iudgement seate of Christe.

C

11 For it is written, I lyue, sayth the Lorde: [Note: Esai.lxv.e. Philip.ii.b. ] and all knees shall bowe to me, & all tongues shall geue prayse to God.

12 So shal euery one of vs geue accompt of hym selfe to God.

13 Let vs not therefore iudge one another any more: But iudge this rather, that no man put a stumblyng blocke, or an occasion to fall, in his brothers way.

14 < For I knowe, and am perswaded by the Lorde Iesus, that [Note: Math.xv.b. Actes.x.b. i Tim.iiii.a. Mark.vii.d. ] there is nothyng common of it selfe: but vnto hym that iudgeth it to be common, to hym is it common.

15 But yf thy brother be greued with thy meat, nowe walkest thou not charitably. Destroy not hym with thy meat, for whom Christe dyed.

D

16 Let not your good be euyll spoken of.

17 For the kyngdome of God, is not meat and drinke: but righteousnesse, & peace, and ioy in the holy ghost.

18 For he that in these thynges serueth Christe, pleaseth God, and is comended of men.

19 Let vs therefore folowe those thynges which make for peace, & thynges wherwith one may edifie another.

20 Destroy not the worke of God for meates sake. [Note: Titus.i.d. ] All thinges are pure: but it is euyll for

that man, which eateth with offence.

21 It is good neither to eate fleshe, neither [Page] to drinke wine, neither any thyng wherby thy brother stumbleth, either falleth, or is made weake.

22 Hast thou [Note: [c] Fayth, is here taken for a full perswasion of the christian libertie in thinges indifferent. ] fayth? Hauē it with thy selfe before God. Happy is he that condempneth not hym selfe in the thyng which he aloweth.

23 For he that maketh conscience, is damned yf he eate, because [he eateth] not of fayth: For whatsoever is not of fayth, is [Note: [d] This sentence, both Augustine and Origen do take to be generally meant of all mens workes whatsoever they be, whiche proceade not of a ryght conscience and an vndoubted fayth, grounded vpon the worde of God. ] sinne.

## The .xv. Chapter.

1 We must support one another after the example of Christe. 14 Paul sheweth his zeale towarde them, 30 and requireth the lyke of them.

A

1 **W**e whiche are stronge, [Note: Galath. vi.a ] ought to beare ye fraylnes of the weake, & not to stande in our owne conceiptes.

2 Let euery man please his neyghbour, in that that is good to [Note: [a] To edifie signifieth to do all maner of dueties to our neyghbour, eyther to bryng hym to christ, or yf he be wonne, that he may go forwarde in vertue. ] edifyng.

3 For Christe pleased not him selfe. But as it is written: The rebukes of them which rebuked thee, fell on me.

4 < For whatsoever thynges haue ben written afore time, were written for our learnyng, that we through pacience and comfort of ye scriptures might haue hope.

5 The God of pacience and consolation, graunt you to be lyke mynded one towardes another, after the ensample of Christe Iesu:

B

6 [Note: Leuit.xix.d ] That ye all agreeyng together, may with one mouth prayse God, and the father of our Lorde Iesus Christe.

7 Wherefore, receaue ye one another, as Christe receaued vs, to ye prayse of God.

8 And I say, that Iesus Christe was a minister of the circumcisio for the trueth of God, to confirme the promise [made] vnto the fathers:



9 [Note: Deut.xx.f. ] And that the gentiles myght prayse God for his mercie, as it is written: [Note: 2.Reg.22.d. Psal xviii.g ] For this cause I wyll praise thee among the gentiles, and syng vnto thy name.

10 And againe he saith: [Note: Deut.32.f. ] Reioyce ye gentiles with his people.

11 And againe: [Note: Psal.cxvii.a ] praise the Lord al ye gentiles, & laude him al ye people together.

C

12 And againe Esaias saith: There shalbe the [Note: Esaias. xi.a. ] roote of Iesse, and he that shall rise to raigne ouer the gentiles, in hym shall the gentiles trust.

13 The God of hope, fyll you with al ioy and peace in beleuyng, that ye may be riche in hope, through the power of the holy ghost. >

14 I my selfe am perswaded of you my brethre, that ye also are full of goodnes, and fyllled with all knowledge, able also to exhort one another.

15 Neuerthelesse brethren, I haue somewhat more boldly written vnto you, to put you in remembraunce, through the grace that is geuen me of God,

D

16 That I should be the minister of Iesus Christe, to the gentiles, and shoulde minister the Gospell of God, that the offeryng of the [Note: [b] He calleth here the offeryng of the gentiles, the people of the gentiles, who he won to god by the preachyng of ye Gospell. ] gentiles might be acceptable, and sanctified by the holy ghost.

17 I haue therefore whereof I may reioyce through Christ Iesus, in those thynges which parteyne to God.

18 For I dare not speake of any of those thinges which Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the gentiles obedient with worde and deede,

19 In myghtie signes and wonders, by the power of the spirite of God: so that from Hierusalem, & the coastes rounde about, vnto Illyricum, I haue fullye preached the Gospell of Christe.

E

20 So haue I enforced my selfe to preach the Gospell, not where Christe was named, lest I shoulde haue buylt vpon an other [Note: [c] In other mans foundation he calleth here the churches that were taught and instructed of other apostles. ] mans foundation.

21 But as it is written: To whom he was not spoken of, they shall see: and they that hearde not, shall vnderstande.

22 For this cause I haue ben oft let, that I coulde not come vnto you.

23 But nowe, seyng I haue no more to do in these countreys, and also haue ben desirous many yeres to come vnto you:

24 Whensoever I take my iourney into Spayne, I wyll come to you: For I trust to see you in my iourney, and to be brought on my waye thytherwarde by you, after that I be somewhat fyllled with you.

25 But nowe go I vnto Hierusalem, to minister [Note: Act.xi.d. ] vnto the [Note: [d] That is, to carry to the poore saintes that lyued at Hierusalem. the almes that he gathered for the among the gentiles where he preached. ] saintes.

26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia & Achaia to make a certaine comon gatheryng for the poore saintes whiche are at Hierusalem.

[Page]

27 It hath pleased them veryly, & their detters are they. For yf the gentiles be made partakers of their spirituall thynges, their duetie is to minister vnto the in carnall thynges.

28 When I haue perfourmed this, and haue [Note: [c] That is, when I shall faythfully delyuer it to the, as it were sealed most surely. By fruite, he meaneth almes, whiche is the fruite of the fayth of those that had receaued the Gospell. ] sealed to the this fruite, I wyll come by you into Spayne.

29 And I am sure, that when I come vnto you, I shall come with aboundaunce of the blessing of the Gospell of Christe.

30 < I beseeche you brethren for ye Lorde Iesus Christes sake, and for the loue of the spirite, that ye helpe me in my busynesse with your prayers to God for me:

31 That I may be delyuered from them which beleue not in Iurie, & that this my seruice which I haue at Hierusalem may be accepted of the saintes:

32 That I may come vnto you with ioy, by the wyll of God, and may with you be refreshed.

33 [Note: i.Cor.xiiii.f ] The God of peace be with you al. Ame.

## ¶ The .xvj. Chapter.

1 A number of salutations. 17 Paul wyllleth them to beware of false brethren. 20 He prayeth and geueth thanks for them.

A

1 **I commende** vnto you Phebe our sister, whiche is a minister of the [Note: [a] In ye primatiue church auncient widdowes, and other vertuous women were chosen & appoynted to minister vnto the nedy, and therefore called ministers: & not because they had any publique auctoritie to teach in the congregation. ] Church of Cenchrea,

2 That ye receaue her in the Lorde, as it becommeth saintes, and that ye assist her in whatsoever busynesse she hath nede of you: For she hath suckoured many, and my selfe also.

3 Greete Priscilla and Aquila my helpers in Christe Iesu:

4 (Which haue for my lyfe layde downe their owne neckes: Unto whom, not onlye I geue thanks, but also all the Churches of the gentiles)

5 Lykewyse [greete] the Churche that is in their house. Salute my welbeloued Epenetus, which is the first fruite of Achaia in Christe.

6 Greete Marie, which bestowed much labour on vs.

B

7 Salute Andronicus and Iunia my cosins, and prisoners with me also, which are wel taken among the Apostles, and were in Christe before me.

8 Greete Amplias my beloued in the Lorde.

9 Salute Urban our helper in Christe, and Stachys my beloued.

10 Salute Appelles approued in Christe, salute them whiche are of Aristobulus housholde.

11 Salute Herodion my kinsman, greete them that be of the housholde of Narcissus, which are in the Lorde.

12 Salute Tryphena, & Tryphosa, which labour in the Lorde. Salute the beloued Persis, which laboured much in the Lorde.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lorde, and his mother and myne.

14 Greete Asyncritus, Phlegon, Herman, Patrobas, Mercurius, and the brethren which are with them.

C

15 Salute Philologus and Iulia, Nereus and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saintes which are with them.

16 [Note: ii.Cor.xii..e. ] Salute one an other with an holy [Note: [b] This was a signe of amitie among the Iewes, whiche S. Paul wylleth to be holy, that is, that it come from a mynde full of godly charitie. ] kysse. The Churches of Christ salute you.

17 < Nowe I besече you brethren, [Note: [c] Ther are two markes to knowe the false apostles bye. The one is, when they leaue Christe & serue their belly. The other, when they regarde not the holye scripture, but preache lyes & their owne fantasies. ] marke them whiche cause deuisiō, & geue occasions of euyl, contrarie to the doctrine whiche ye haue learned, and auoyde them.

18 For they that are suche, serue not the Lorde Iesus Christe, but their owne belly, and with sweete and flatterynge wordes deceaue the heartes of the innocentes.

19 For your obedience is gone abrode vnto al men. I am glad therefore no doubt, of you: But yet I would haue you wise vnto that whiche is good, & simple concernynge euyl.

20 The God of peace shall treade Satan vnder your feete shortly. The grace of our Lorde Iesus Christe be with you.

21 Timotheus my workfelowe, and Lucius, and Iason, & Sosipater my kinsemen, salute you.

D

22 I Tertius, whiche wrote this epistle, salute you in the Lorde.

23 [Note: Act.xix.e. ] Gaius myne hoast, and of the whole Churche, saluteth you. Erastus the chamberlaine of the citie saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

[Page]

24 The grace of our Lorde Iesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

25 To hym that is of power to stablisse you, according to my Gospell, and preachyng of Iesus Christe, by reuealyng of the misterie whiche was kept secrete sence the worlde began,

26 But nowe is opened, and by the scriptures of the prophetes, at the comaundement of the euerlastyng God, to the obedience of fayth, among all nations publisshed:

27 To [the same] God, wyse only, be glorie, through Iesus Christe, for euer. Amen.

**¶ This epistle was written to the Romanes from Corinthus [and sent] by Phebe the minister vnto ye Churche at Cenchrea.**

**¶ *The first Epistle of Saint Paul the Apostle to the Corinthians.***

**¶ The first Chapter.**

1 He prayseth the great graces of God shewed to warde them, 10 exhortyng them to concorde and humilitie. 19 He beateth downe all pryde, and wisdomed which is not grounded vpon God: 26 Shewyng whom God hath chosen to confounde the wisdomed of the worlde.

A

1 **Paule** called [to be] an Apostle of Iesu Christ, through the wyll of God, and brother Sostenes:

2 Unto the Church of God whiche is at Corinthus: To the that are sanctified in Christe Iesus, [Note: [a] Made holy by thee free mercy and callyng of God. ] saintes by callyng, with all that call on the name of our Lorde Iesus Christe in euery place, both of theirs and ours:

3 [Note: Rom.i.a. Galath.i.a. ] Grace be vnto you, and peace from God our father, and from the Lorde Iesus Christe.

4 < I thanke my God alwayes on your behalfe, for the grace of God whiche is geuen you in Iesus Christe:

5 That in all thynges ye are made riche in hym, in all vtterance, & in all knowledge:

6 As the testimonie of Iesus Christ was confirmed in you.

B

7 So that ye are destitute of no gyft, wayting for the appearing of our Lord Iesus Christe,

8 Whiche shall also [Note: Or, confirme. ] strength you vnto the ende, that ye may be [Note: [b] For there is no condemnation to the that are grafted in Christ Iesus. ] blamelesse in the day of our Lord Iesus Christ. >

9 [Note: Nu.xxiii.e. i.Cor.x.c. ] God is faythfull, by whom ye are called vnto the felowship of his sonne Iesus Christe our Lorde.

10 Nowe I beseche you brethren by the name of our Lorde Iesus Christe, that ye all speake one thyng, and that there be no discentions among you, but be ye knit together, in one mynde, and in one meanyng.

11 For it is shewed vnto me my brethren, of you, by them whiche are of the house of Cloe, that there are contentions among you.

12 Nowe this I saye, that euery one of you saith, I am of Paul, and I am of [Note: Act.xviii.d i.Cor.iii.a. and .xvi.c. ] Apollo, and I am of Cephas, and I am of Christe.

13 Is Christe deuided? was Paul crucified for you? eyther were ye baptized in the name of Paul?

14 I thanke God that I baptized none of you but Crispus and Gaius:

15 Lest any shoulde say, that I had baptized in myne owne name.

16 I baptized also the housholde of Stephana: Furthermore knowe I not whether I baptized any other.

C

17 For Christe sent me not to baptize, but to preache the Gospell: not with wisdom of [Note: [c] When me shoulde attribute ther vnto eloquece, whiche onlye belongeth to the power of God ] wordes, lest ye crosse of Christ shoulde be made of none effect.

[Page]

18 For the preaching of the crosse, is to them that perishe foolishnesse: but vnto vs which are saued, it is the power of God.

19 For it is written, [Note: Rom.i.b. Esai.xxix d ] I wyll destroye the wisdom of the wyse, and wyll cast away the vnderstandyng of the prudent.

20 Where is the wise? [Note: Esaias 33.c. ] where is ye scribe? where is the disputer of this worlde? Hath not God made the wisdom of this worlde foolyshenesse?

D

21 For after that the world through wisdom knewe not God, in the wisdom of God: it pleased God through foolishnesse of preaching to saue them that beleue.

22 For [Note: Math.viii d Luke.xi.d. Iohn.vi.d. ] the Iewes require a signe, & the Grekes seke after wisdom:

23 But we preache Christe crucified, vnto the Iewes a stumbyng blocke, and vnto the Grekes foolysnesse:

24 But vnto them which are called both of the Iewes and Grekes [we preache] Christe the power of God, and the wisdom of God.

25 For the foolishnesse of God, is wiser then men, and the weakenesse of God, is stronger then men.

26 Brethren, ye see your calling, howe that not many wise men after the fleshe, not many myghtie, not many noble [are called.]

27 But God hath chosen the foolyshe thynges of the worlde, to confounde the wise: And God hath chosen the weake thynges of the worlde, to confounde thynges which are myghtie:

28 And vnnoble thynges of the worlde, & thynges which are despysed, hath God chosen, [yea] and thynges which are not, to bryng to naught thynges that are:

29 That no fleshe shoulde reioyce in his presence.

30 And of hym are ye in Christe Iesu, whiche of God is made vnto vs wisdom, and righteousnesse, and sanctification, and redemption:

31 That accordyng as it is written: he that reioyceth, let hym reioyce in the Lorde.

## The .ij. Chapter.

1 He putteth for example his maner of preaching, which was accordyng to the tenor of the Gospell: 8 Which Gospell was contemptible, and hyd to the carnall, 10 and agayne honorable and manifest to the spirituall.

A

1 **And** I brethren, when I came to you, came not in gloriousnesse of wordes, or of wisdom, shewing vnto you the [Note: [a] That is, the Gospell, wherby God doth manifest hym selfe to the worlde, or whereof God is the author and witnesse. ] testimonie of God.

2 For I esteemed not to knowe any thyng among you saue Iesus Christe, and hym crucified.

3 And I was among you in weaknesse, and in feare, and in much trembling.

4 And my wordes and my preachyng was not with entysing wordes of mans wisdom, but in shewyng of the spirite, and of power:

5 That your fayth should not stande in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.

B

6 And we speake wisdom among the that are perfite: not the wisdom of this world, neither of the princes of this world, which come to naught.

7 But we speake the wisdom of God in a misterie [euen] the hyd [wisdom] which God ordeyned before the worlde, vnto our glorie.

8 Which [Note: Actes.xiii.d ] none of ye princes of this world knewe: For had they knowen it, they woulde not haue crucified the Lorde of glorie.

9 But as it is written: [Note: Esai.lxiii.a ] The eye hath not seen, & the eare hath not heard, neither haue entred into the heart of man, the thynges which God hath prepared for them that loue hym.

C

10 But God hath reuealed the vnto vs by his spirite: For [Note: Rom.viii.a. ] the spirite searcheth all thinges, yea the deepe thinges of God.

11 For what man knoweth the thynges of a man, saue ye [Note: [b] Mannes mynde, which vnderstandeth, and iudgeth. ] spirite of man which is in hym? Euen so, the thinges of God, knoweth no man, but ye spirite of God.

12 And we haue receaued, not the spirite of the worlde, but the spirite which is of God, that we myght know the thinges that are geuen to vs of God.

D

13 Which thynges also we speake, not in the wordes which mans wisdom teacheth, but which ye holy ghost teacheth, comparyng spirituall thynges with spirituall thynges.

14 But the naturall man perceaueth not the thynges of ye spirite of God, for they are foolyshenesse vnto hym: Neither [Page] can he knowe [them] because they are spirituall discerned.

15 But he that is spirituall, discerneth all thynges, yet he hym selfe is iudged of no man.

16 [Note: Esaias.xl.c. Rom.xi.c. ] For who hath knowen the mynde of the Lorde, that he myght instruct hym? But we haue the [Note: [c] That is, Christes spirite. ] mynde of Christe.

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

3 Paul rebuketh the sectes and aucthours therof. 7 No man ought to attribute his saluation to the ministers, but to God. 10 That they beware erronious doctrines. 11 Christe is the foundation of his Church. 16 The dignitie and office both of the ministers, and also of all the faythfull.

A

1 **And** I coulde not speake vnto you brethren, as vnto spirituall, but as vnto carnall [eue] as vnto [Note: [a] Beyng ingrassed in Christe by fayth, we begyn to moue by his spirite and as we profite in fayth, we growe vp to a ripe age. And here let him take hede that teacheth, lest for mylke he geue poyso : For mylke & strong meate in effecte are one, but only differ in maner & fourme. ] babes in Christe.

2 I gaue you mylke to drynke, and not meate: For ye then were not stronge, neither are ye as yet.

3 For ye are carnal. Seing then, there is among you enuying, & stryfe, and sectes, are ye not carnall, and walke as men?

4 For whyle one sayth, I am of Paul, and another, I am of Apollo, are ye not carnall?

B

5 What is Paul? what is Apollo? Only ministers are they by whom ye beleued, euen as the Lorde gaue to euery man.

6 I haue planted, Apollo watered: but God gaue the encrease.

7 So then, neither is he that planteth any thyng, neither he that watreth: but God that geueth the encrease.

8 He that planteth, & he that watreth, are one, and euery man shal receaue his rewarde accordyng to his labour.

9 For we together are Gods labourers, ye are Gods husbandrie [ye are] [Note: Ephe.ii.d. ] Gods buyldyng.

C

10 Accordyng to the grace of God geuen vnto me, as a wise maister builder haue I layde the foundation, and another buyldeth theron. But let euery man [Note: [b] He reproceth the ministers of Corinth, as teachers of curious doctrines & questiones. ] take heede howe he buyldeth vpon.

11 For other foundation can no man lay, then that that is layde, [Note: Mat.xvi.c. ] which is Iesus Christe.

12 If any man buylde on this foundation, golde, syluer, precious stones, tymber, haye [or] stubble:

13 Euery mans worke shal appeare. The day shall declare it, because it shalbe reuealed by the fire: And the fire shall trie euery mans worke what it is.

14 If any mans worke that he hath built vpon abyde, he shall receaue a reward.

15 If any mans worke burne, he shall suffer losse, but he shalbe safe hym selfe: neuertheles, yet as it were through fire.

D

16 < [Note: i.Cor.vi.d. ] Knowe ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the spirite of God dwelleth in you?



17 If any man defyle the temple of God, hym shall God destroy. For the temple of God is holy, which [temple] ye are.

18 Let no man deceaue him selfe. Yf any man among you seeme to be wise in this worlde, let hym be a foole, that he may be wyse.

19 For the wisdom of this worlde, is foolishnesse with God. For it is writte: [Note: Iob.v.b. ] He compasseth the wise in [Note: [c] Whe they them selues are entangled in the same snares whiche they layde for others. ] their own craftynesse.

20 And agayne The Lorde knoweth the thoughtes of the wyse, that they be vayne.

21 Therefore, let no man reioyce in [Note: [d] But in God, who worketh, by his ministers to his owne glorie, and the comfort of his Church. ] men: For all thynges are yours:

22 Whether it be Paul, or Apollo, or Cephas, either the worlde, either lyfe, or death, whether they be present thynges, or thynges to come, all are yours:

23 And ye are Christes, and Christe (is) Gods.

### ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

1 After that he had described the office of a true apostle, 3 seyng they dyd not acknowledge hym such one, 4 he appealeth to gods iudgement, 7 beatyng downe their glorie, which hyndered them to prayse that which they disprayed in hym. 16 He sheweth what he requireth on their part, and what they ought to loke for of hym at his returne.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **Let** a man so esteeme of vs, as the ministers of Christe, and disposers of the [Note: Deu.xxix d ] secretes of God.

2 Furthermore, it is required of the disposers that a man be founde faythfull.

3 With me it is but a very small thyng that I shoulde be iudged of you, either of mans iudgement: No, I iudge not [Note: [a] Whether I haue great giftes or litle, fewe or many. ] mine owne selfe.

4 For I knowe nothing by my selfe, yet am I not thereby iustified: but he that [Page] iudgeth me is the Lorde.

5 Therefore iudge nothyng before the tyme, vntyll the Lorde come, who wyl lyghten thynges that are hyd in darkenesse, & open the counsels of the heartes, and then shall euery man haue prayse of God. >

<sup>B</sup>  
6 And these thynges brethren, I haue figuratiuely applied vnto my selfe, and to Apollos, for your sakes,

that ye might learne by vs, that no man conceaue in mynde aboute that whiche is written, that one swell not agaynst another for any mans cause.

7 For who [Note: [b] To wyt, fro other me, & preferreth thee. ] seperateth thee? And what hast thou, that thou hast not receaued? If thou haue receaued it, why reioycest thou, as though thou haddest not receaued it?

8 Nowe ye are full, nowe ye are made ryche, ye raigne as kynges without vs, and I woulde to God ye dyd raigne, that we also myght raigne with you.

9 For me thynketh, that God hath set fourth vs, whiche are the last apostles, as it were men appoynted to death. For we are made a gasyng stocke vnto the worlde, and to the angels, and to men. [Note: Psa.lxiii.d. Rom.viii.f. ]

C  
10 We [are] [Note: [c] By this bytter tauntyng, in abiectyng hym selfe, and exalting the Corinthians, he maketh them ashamed of their vayne glorie. ] fooles for Christes sake, but ye [are] wyse in Christe. We [are] weake, but ye [are] stronge. Ye [are] honorable, but we [are] despised.

11 Euen vnto this [Note: Or, houre. ] time we both hunger and thirste, and are naked, and are buffeted, and haue no certaine dwellyng place.

12 And labour, [Note: Actes.xx g i.Thes.ii.c. ii.Thes.iii.d ] working with our owne handes. We are reuyled, and we blesse. We are persecuted, and suffer it.

13 We are euyll spoken of, and we praye: we are made as the fylthynesse of the worlde, the ofscowryng of all thynges vnto this day.

D  
14 I write not these thynges to shame you, but as my beloued sonnes I warne you.

15 For though ye haue ten thousande instructours in Christ, yet [haue ye] not many fathers: For in Christe Iesu I haue begotten you through the Gospell.

16 Wherefore, I desire you, be ye folowers of me.

17 For this cause haue I sent vnto you Timotheus, whiche is my beloued sonne, & faythfull in the Lorde, which shall put you in remembraunce of my wayes which be in Christe, as I teache euery where in all Churches.

18 Some swel as though I would come no more at you:

19 But I wyll come to you shortly, [Note: Act.xviii.c. Heb.vi.a. ] if the Lorde wyll, & wyll knowe, not the wordes of the which swell, but the power.

20 For the kyngdome of God is not in worde, but in [Note: [d] Of the holy ghost. ] power.

21 What wyl ye? Shal I come vnto you with a rodde, or in loue and in the spirite of mekenesse?

## The. v. Chapter.

1 He reprobeth sharply their negligence in punishing him that had committed incest, 3 Wyllyng them to excommunicate hym, 7 to embrace puritie, 9 and flee wickednesse.

A

1 **There** goeth a common saying that there is fornication among you, & suche fornication as is not named among the [Note: [a] who would thynke that you wold suffer yt mischief vnpunished, which ye most barbarous nations abhorre to speake of. ] gentiles: that one shoulde haue his fathers wyfe.

2 And ye swell, and haue not rather sorowed, that he that hath so done this deede myght be put from among you.

3 For I veryly, as absent in body, but present in spirite, haue determined alredie, as though I were present, concernyng hym that hath done this deede.

4 In the name of our Lorde Iesus Christe, when ye are gathered together and my spirite, with the power of the Lorde Iesus Christe,

5 [Note: Math.18.d. ] To delyuer suche a one vnto Satan for the destruction of the flesshe, that the spirite may be saued in the daye of the Lorde Iesus.

6 Your reioycing is not [Note: [b] seyng you suffer such monstrous vices vnpunished. ] good. Knowe ye not, that a litle leauen leaueneth the whole lumpe ?

B

7 < Purge out therfore the olde leauen, that ye maye be newe dowe, as ye are vnleauened bread: For Christe our Pasouer is offred vp for vs.

8 Therefore let vs kepe holy day, not with old leauen, neither with the leauen of maliciousnes and wickednesse, but with the vnleauened bread of purenesse [Page] and trueth. >

9 I wrote vnto you in an epistle, that ye should not companie with fornicatours:

10 [And I meant] not at all with the fornicatours of this worlde, or with the couetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters: for then must ye needes haue gone out of the world.

11 But nowe I haue written vnto you, [Note: ii.Thes.iii.b ] that ye companie not together, if any that is called a brother be a fornicatour, or couetous, or a worshipper of idols, or a rayler, or a drunkarde, or an extortioner: with him that is such [see that ye] eate not.

12 For what haue I to do to iudge them that are without? Do ye not iudge them that are within? Them that are without God iudgeth. [Note: Deut.xiii.b ] Put away from among you that wicked person.

## ***The .vi. Chapter.***

1 He rebuketh them for goyng to lawe together before the heathen. 7 Christians ought rather to suffer. 12 He reprobeth the abusing of christian libertie, 15 and sheweth that we ought to serue God purely, both in body and in soule.

A

1 **Dare** any of you, hauing businesse [Note: Or, against ] with another, be iudged vnder the [Note: [a] He calleth them vniust, whosoeuer are not sanctified in Christ. ] vniust, and not rather vnder ye saintes?

2 [Note: Mat.vii.d. ] Do ye not knowe that the saintes shall iudge the worlde? If the worlde shalbe iudged by you, are ye vnworthy to iudge the smallest matters?

3 Know ye not howe that we shal iudge the angels? Howe much more thinges that parteyne to this lyfe?

4 If then ye haue iudgement of thinges parteynyng to this lyfe, set vp them to iudge whiche are least esteemed in the Church.

5 I speake it to your shame: Is it so that there is not a wyse man among you? no not one that can iudge betwene brother and brother?

6 But one brother goeth to law with another, and that vnder the vnbeleuers?

B

7 Nowe therefore there is vtterly a fault among you, because ye go to lawe one with another: Why rather suffer ye not wrong? why rather suffer ye not harme?

8 Nay, ye your selues do wrong, and do harme, and that to your brethren.

9 Knowe ye not that the vnrighteous shall not inherite the kingdome of God? Be not deceaued: [Note: Gal.v d. Eph.v a. ] neither fornicatours, nor idolatours, nor adulterers, nor weaklinges, nor abusers of them selues with mankinde,

10 Nor theeues, nor couetous, nor drunckardes, nor cursed speakers, nor [Note: Or, extortioners. ] pyllers, shall inherite the kingdome of God.

11 And such were some of you: but ye are wasshed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are iustified in the name of the Lord Iesus, and by the spirite of our God.

12 All thinges are lawfull vnto me, but [Note: Eccle.37.d. i.Cor.x.c. ] al thinges are not profitable: Al thinges are lawfull vnto me, but I will not be brought vnder the [Note: [b] For we are subiect to those thinges which we can not want. ] power of any.

13 Meates [are ordeyned] for the belly, and the belly for meates: but God shall destroy both it, and them.

Nowe the body [is] not for [Note: [c] They abused meates, both in yt they offended other therby, & also prouoked their owne lustes to vncleanesse. ] fornication: but for the Lorde, and the Lorde for the body.

14 And God both hath rayseed vp the Lorde, and also shall rayse vs vp by his power.

C

15 < [Note: i.Cor.iii.c. ] Knowe ye not that your bodies are the members of Christe? Shall I then take the members of Christe, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbyd.

16 Know ye not, that he whiche coupleth him selfe with an harlot, is one body? [Note: Gene.ii d. Matth xix. Mark.x.a. Eph.v.g. ] For two (sayth he) shalbe one fleshe.

17 But he that is ioyned vnto the Lord is one spirite.

18 Flee fornication. Euery synne that a man doeth, is without the body: but he that committeth fornication, sinneth against his owne body.

19 Knowe ye not that your body is the temple of the holy ghost [whiche is] in you, whom ye haue of God, and ye are not your owne?

20 For ye are dearely bought: therefore glorifie God in your body and in your spirite, which are Gods.  
[Page]

### ***The .vii. Chapter.***

1 The apostle aunswereth to certayne questions which the Corinthians desired to know, 2 as of single lyfe, 3 of the duetie of mariage. 11 of discordes and discention in mariage 13 of mariage betweene the faythfull and vnfaythfull, 18 of vncircumcising the circumcised, 21 of seruitude. 25 of virginitie, 39 and seconde mariage.

A

1 **Nowe** as concernyng the thinges wherof ye wrote vnto me, < it is [Note: [a] Or, expedient, because mariage, thorow mans corruptio, and not by gods institution, bringeth cares and troubles. ] good for a man not to touche a woman.

2 Neuerthelesse, to auoyde fornication, let euery man haue his owne wyfe, and let euery woman haue her owne husband.

3 Let the husbände geue vnto the wyfe due beneuolence: Lykewyse also the wyfe vnto the husbände.

4 The wyfe hath not the power of her owne body, but the husbände: And likewyse also the husbände hath not the power of his owne body, but the wife.

5 [Note: Tob.vi.d. Ioel.ii.d. ] Defraude you not the one the other, except [it be] with both your consentes for a time, that ye may geue your selues to fasting and prayer: and afterward come together againe, that Satan

tempt you not for your incontinencie.

6 This I say of fauour, & [Note: [b] He sheweth that he comaundeth not precisely all me to marrie, but that God hath graunted this remedie vnto them which can not liue chast. ] not of commaundement.

7 For I woulde that all men were as I my selfe [am:] but euery man hath his proper gift of God, one after this maner, another after that.

8 I say therefore vnto them that be vnmaryed and wyddowes, it is good for them if they abyde euen as I.

9 But [Note: i.Tim.v.c. ] if they can not abstayne, let them marrie: For it is better to marrie then to burne.

10 Unto the maryed commaunde, not I, but the Lord, [Note: Mat.v.c. and xix.a. ] Let not the wyfe depart from the husbände:

11 But and if she depart, let her remayne vnmarried, or be reconciled vnto her husbände [again:] And let not the husbände put away his wyfe.

12 But to the renmaunt speake I, not the Lorde: If any brother haue a wife that beleueth not, if she be content to dwell with him, let him not put her away.

13 And the woman which hath to her husbände an infidell, and he consent to dwel with her, let her not put him away.

C

14 For the vnbeleuing husbände is sanctified by the wyfe, and the vnbeleuyng wyfe is sanctified by the husbände: els were your children vncleane, but nowe are they [Note: [c] They that are borne of either of the paretes faithfull, are also counted members of Christes church, because of the promise. ] holy.

15 But if the vnbeleuing depart, let hym depart: A brother or a sister is not in subiection in such thinges: But God hath called vs in peace.

16 For howe knowest thou O woman, whether thou shalt saue thy husbände? or how knowest thou O man, whether thou shalt saue thy wyfe?

17 But as God hath distributed to euery man, [Note: Eph.iiii.a. ] as the Lorde hath called euery one, so let hym walke, and so ordeyne I in all Churches.

18 Is any man called beyng circumcised? let him not adde vncircumcision: Is any called vncircumcised? let him not be circumcised.

19 Circumcision is nothing, and vncircumcision is nothing, but the keping of the commaundementes of God.

20 < Let euery man abyde in the same calling, wherein he was called.

21 [Note: i.Tim.vi.a. ] Art thou called a seruaunt? care not for it: Neuerthelesse, if thou mayest be free, vse it rather.

D

22 For he that is called in the Lord [being] a seruaunt, is the Lordes free man: Lykewyse also he that is called [beyng] free, is Christes seruaunt.

23 Ye are dearely bought, be not ye the seruauntes of men.

24 Brethren, let euery man wherin he is called, therin abyde with [Note: [d] Or, sincerely, as in the presence of God. ] God. >

25 Nowe concerning virgins I haue no commaundement of the Lord: yet geue I counsell, as one that hath obtayned mercy in the Lorde to be faythfull.

26 I suppose therefore that it is good for the present necessitie: for [I say] it is good for a man so to be.

27 Art thou bounde vnto a wife? seke not to be loosed: Art thou loosed from a wyfe? seke not a wyfe.

28 But and if thou marrie a wyfe, thou sinnest not, and if a virgin marrie, she hath not sinned: Neuerthelesse, such shall haue trouble in their fleshe, but I beare with you.

[Page]

29 But this say I brethren, [Note: Psal.xc.a. ii.Pet.iii.b. ] the tyme is short: It remayneth, that they which haue wyues, be as though they had none:

30 And they that wepe, as though they wept not: & they that reioyce, as though they reioyced not: and they that bye, as though they possessed not:

31 And they that vse this worlde, as though they vsed it not: For [Note: Esai.lx b. ] the fashion of this worlde goeth away.

32 [Note: i.Iohn.ii.c. Mat.vi.d. Luk.vi.c. ] I woulde haue you without care: He that is vnmaryed, careth for the thinges that belong to the Lorde, how he may please the Lorde:

33 But he that hath maryed awyfe, careth for the thinges that are of the worlde, how he may please his wyfe.

34 There is difference betweene a virgin and a wyfe: The vnmaryed woman careth for the thinges that are of the Lorde, that she may be holy both in body and in spirite: [Agaïne] she that is maryed careth for the thinges that pertayne to the world, how she may please her husbände.

35 < This speake I for your profite, not to tangle you in a snare: but that [ye may folowe] that which is honest and comely, and that ye may cleaue fast vnto the Lorde without separation.

G

36 But if any man thinke that it is vncomely for his virgin if she passe the time of mariage, [Note: [e] That is, that she should mary to auoyde fornication. ] and neede so require, let him do what he wyll, he sinneth not: let them be maryed.

37 Neuerthelesse, he that purposeth surely in his heart hauing no neede, but hath power ouer his owne wyll, and hath so decreed in his heart that he wyl kepe his virgin, doth well.

38 So then he that ioyneth his virgin in maryage, doth well: but he that ioyneth not [his virgin] in mariage, doth better.

39 [Note: Rom.vii.a. ] The wyfe is bounde to the [Note: Or, by the lawe of maryage. ] lawe as long as her husbände lyueth: but if her husband be dead, she is at libertie to marry with whom she wil, onely in the Lorde.

40 But she is happier if she so abide, after my iudgement: And I thinke veryly that I haue the spirite of God.

### ¶ *The .viij. Chapter.*

1 He rebuketh them that vse their libertie to the sclaunder of other, in going to the idolatrous sacrifices. 9  
And sheweth how men ought to behaue them toward such as be weake.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **A**s touching thinges [Note: Actes.v.c. ] offred vnto idols, we are sure yt we all haue knowledge. Knowledge maketh a man swell: but loue edifieth.

2 If any man thynke that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man loue God, the same is [Note: Or taught. ] knowen of him.

4 As concerning the eating of those thinges that are offered vnto idols, we are sure that [Note: i.Cor.x c. ] an idoll is nothing in the worlde, and that there is none other God but one.

5 And though there be that are called gods, whether in heauen or in earth, (as there be gods many, and [Note: [a] which being idols, yet are esteemed of men, as Lordes and Seigneours. ] lordes many:)

6 Yet vnto vs is there but one God, [which is] the father, of whom are all thinges, and we in him, and one Lorde Iesus Christe, by whom are al thinges, and we by him.

7 But euery man hath not knowledge: [Note: i.Cor.viii.g. ] For some hauing conscience of the idol vntill this houre, eate as a thing offred vnto idols, and so their conscience being weake, is defiled.

<sup>B</sup>  
8 But meate maketh vs not acceptable to God: For neither if we eate, haue we the more, neither if we eate not, haue we the lesse.

9 But take heede lest by any meanes this libertie of yours be an occasion of falling, to them that are



weake.

10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge, sit at meate in the idols temple: shal not the conscience of him which is weake, be [Note: [b] By thyne example, with out any groud of doctrine. ] boldened to eate those thinges which are offred to idols,

11 And through thy knowledge shal the [Note: [c] which eateth against his consciee. ] weake brother perishe, for whom Christe dyed?

12 When ye sinne so against the brethren, and wounde their weake conscience, ye sinne against Christe.

13 Wherefore, [Note: Rom.14 d. ] if meate offend my brother, I wyll eate no fleshe whyle the worlde standeth, lest I shoulde offende my brother.

[Page]

### ***The .ix. Chapter.***

1 He exhorteth them by his example to vse their libertie to the edification of other. 24 to run on fourth in the course that they haue begun.

A

1 **Am** I not an Apostle? am I not free? [Note: Act.xi.a. ] haue I not seene Iesus Christe our Lord: Are ye not my worke in the Lorde?

2 If I be not an Apostle vnto other, yet doubtlesse am I vnto you: For the [Note: [a] I neede no further declaration, but the workes that I haue wrought among you. ] seale of myne Apostleship are ye in the Lorde.

3 Myne aunswere to them that aske me, is this,

4 Haue we not power to eate and to drinke?

5 Haue we not power to leade about a [Note: [b] Or a sister & wife. Sainte Paule vseth none other worde to expresse a wyfe then **gune** valla, what needeth it to adde a woman where was promised a sister: wherfore I thinke (sayth he) it ought to be translated a wyfe, specially because it is expressed in the singuler number **gunaika**. The olde translation printed, transposeth the wordes, saying: Mulierem sororem. where the most old written copies constantly haue Sororem mulierem. as all the Greke copies **adelphēn gunaika**. ] sister a woman as well as other Apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?

6 Either only I and Barnabas haue not power this to do?

7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his owne cost? Who planteth a vineyarde, and eateth not of the fruite therof? Or who feedeth a flocke, and eateth not of the milke of the flocke?

8 Say I these thinges after the maner of men? or saith not the law the same also?

9 For it is written in the law of Moyses: Thou shalt not moosell the mouth of the Oxe that treadeth out the corne. Doth God take care for Oxen?

10 Either sayth he it not altogether for our sakes? For our sakes no doubt this is written, that he which eareth, should eare in hope: & that he which tresssheth in hope, should be partaker of his hope.

11 [Note: Deu.xxv.b i.Timo.v.c. Roma xv.f. Gal.vi.b. ] If we haue sowen vnto you spirituall thinges, is it a great thing if we reape your carnall thinges?

12 If others be partakers of [this] power [wherfore are] not we rather? Neuerthelesse, [Note: Act.xx.g. ] we haue not vsed this power: but suffer all thinges, lest we shoulde hinder the Gospell of Christ.

13 Do ye not knowe that they which minister about holy thynges, eate of the thinges of the temple? And they whiche wayte at the aulter, are partakers with the aulter?

14 Euen so hath the Lord ordayned, [Note: Mat.x.b. ] that they which preache the Gospell, shoulde lyue of the Gospell.

15 [Note: Actes.xx.g ] But I haue vsed none of these thinges. Neuerthelesse, I wrote not these thinges, that it shoulde be so done vnto me: For it were better for me to die, then that any man should make my reioycing vayne.

C

16 For if I preache the Gospell, I haue nothyng to reioyce of: for necessitie is layde vpon me. But wo is vnto me if I preache not the Gospell.

17 For if I do it with a good wil, I haue a reward: but if [I do it] against my wil, the [Note: [c] The Greke worde **oikonomia** signifieth a guidaunce, bestowing, or distribution of thinges, as it were to the profite of an housholde. ] dispensatio is committed vnto me.

18 What is my reward then? Uerily that when I preache the Gospell, I make the Gospell of Christ free, that I misuse not myne authoritie in the Gospell.

19 For though I be free from all men, yet haue I made my selfe seruaunt vnto all men, that I might win the mo.

20 [Note: Act.xvi a Gal.ii.a. ] Unto the Iewes, I become as a Iewe, that I might win the Iewes: To them that are vnder the lawe, [I become] as [though I were] vnder the lawe, that I might win them that are vnder the lawe:

21 To them that are without lawe, [become I] as [though I were] without lawe, (when I was not without law as partyning to the lawe of God, but in the lawe of Christe) to winne them that are without lawe.

22 To the weake became I as weake, that I might winne the weake. I am made [Note: i.Cor.x.g. ] all thinges to all men, that I might at the least way saue some.

23 And this I do for the Gospels sake, that I might haue my part therof.

24 < Perceauē ye not [howe] that they which run in a race, run all, but one receaueth the rewarde? So run that ye may obtayne.

25 Euery man that proueth maisteries, abstayneth from all thynges, and they [do it] to obtayne a crowne that shall perishe: but we to obtayne an [Note: 2.Tim.4.b i.Pet.v.b. ] euerlasting crowne.

26 I therefore so run, not as at an vncertayne thing: So fight I, not as one that beateth the ayre.

27 But I tame my [Note: [d] Lest he shoulde be reproued of men when they should see him do contrarie, or contempne that thing which he taught others to do. ] body, and bryng it into subiection, lest by any meanes, that when I haue preached to other, I my selfe shoulde be a castaway. >

[Page]

## ¶ The .x. Chapter.

1 He feareth them with the examples of the Iewes, that they put not their trust carnally in the graces of God: 14 Exhortyng them to flee all idolatrie, 23 and offence of their neighbour.

A

1 **Brethre**, I woulde not that ye shoulde be ignoraunt, howe that all our fathers were vnder the cloude, and all passed through the sea,

2 And were all baptized [Note: That is, into Moyses lawe, as some reade. Or, as S. Augustine readeth. by Moyses. ] vnto Moyses in the cloude, & in the sea:

3 And dyd all eate of one [Note: [a] That is, Manna, whiche was the outwarde signe or Sacrament of the spiritual grace ] spirituall meate.

4 And dyd all drynke [Note: Or, the same. ] of one maner of spirituall drynke. (And they dranke of that spirituall rocke that folowed them, [Note: Mat.xvi.c. ] which rocke was [Note: [b] That is, signified Christe, as all Sacramentes do. ] Christe.) >

5 But in many of them had God no delite: For they were ouerthrowen in the wilderness.

B

6 These verily are ensamples to vs, to thintent that we shoulde not lust after euyll thynges, as they also lusted.

7 Neither be ye idolatours, as [were] some of them, as it is written: [Note: Exod.32.b. ] The people sate downe to eate and drynke, and rose vp to play.

8 Neither let vs commit fornication, as some of them committed [Note: Or, dyd commit fornication. ] fornication, and fell in one daye [Note: Nu.xiiii.c. Num.xxi.b. ] three and thirtie thousande.

- 9 Neither let vs tempt Christe, as some of them tempted, and were destroyed of serpentes.
- 10 Neither murmure ye, as some of the also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer.
- 11 All these thinges happened vnto them for ensamples: but they are written to put [Note: [c] Howe God wyll plague vs, yf we be subiect to the lyke vices. ] vs in remembrance, whom the endes of the worlde are come vpon.
- 12 Wherefore, let hym that thynketh he standeth, take heede lest he fall.
- 13 There hath no temptation taken you, but such as foloweth the nature of man: But [Note: Num.xiiii.c iCor.i.b. ] God is faythfull, [Note: i Thess.v.d. ii.Pet.ii.d. ] which shall not suffer you to be tempted aboue your strength: but shall with the temptation make away that ye maye be able to beare it. >
- 14 Wherefore my deare beloued, flee from idolatrie.
- 15 I speake as vnto them which haue discretion, iudge ye what I say.  
D
- 16 < The cuppe of blessing which we blesse, is it not ye partakyng of the blood of Christe? The bread which we breake, is it not the partakyng of the body of Christe?
- 17 For we that are many, are one bread and one body, in as much as we all are partakers of one bread.
- 18 Beholde Israel after the fleshe. Are not they which eate of the sacrifices, partakers of the aulter?  
E
- 19 What say I then? [Note: i Cor.viii.a. ] that the idol is any thyng? Or that it which is offered to idols is any thyng?
- 20 [Nay] but [this I saye] that the thinges which the gentiles offer, they offer to deuyls, & not to God. < And I woulde not that ye shoulde haue [Note: [d] Which is, to assemble in that companie where idols are called vpon. ] felowshippe with the deuils.
- 21 Ye can not drynke ye cup of the Lorde, and the cup of deuils. Ye can not be partakers of the Lordes table, and of the table of deuyls.
- 22 Either do we prouoke the Lorde to anger? Are we stronger then he?  
F
- 23 All thynges are lawfull for me, [Note: Eccle.37.d. ] but all thynges are not expedient: All thynges are lawfull for me, but all thynges edifie not.
- 24 [Note: i Cor.xiii.b. ] Let no man seeke his owne: but euery man anothers wealth.
- 25 Whatsoeuer is solde in the [Note: Or, in the market of victuals. ] market, that eate, and aske no question for conscience sake.

26 For [Note: Psal.24.a. ] the earth is the Lordes, and all that therein is.

27 If any of them which beleue not, byd you [to a feast] and ye be disposed to go, whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake.

G

28 [Note: i Cor.viii.b. ] But yf any man say vnto you, this is offred vnto idols, eate not [of it] for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake. The earth is the Lordes and all that therein is.

29 Conscience I say, not thyne, but of the other. For why is my [Note: [e] we must take heede yt through our abuse, our libertie be not condempned. ] libertie, iudged of another mans conscience?

30 For, [Note: i Tim.iiii.a. ] if I take my part with thankes, why am I euyll spoken of, for that wherfore I geue thankes?

31 [Note: Coloss.iii.c. ] Whether therefore ye eate or drynke, [Page] or whatsoever ye do, do all to the prayse of God. >

32 See that ye geue none offence, neither to the Iewes, nor yet to the Grecians, neither to the Church of God.

33 Euen as [Note: i Cor.ix.d. ] I please all men in all thynges, not seking myne owne profite, but [the profite] of many, that they might be sauued.

## The .xj. Chapter.

1 He rebuketh the abuses which were crept into their Church. 4 As touchyng prayer, prophesying. 18 and ministring the Lordes supper. 23 bringyng them agayne to the first institution therof.

A

1 **Be** ye the folowers of me, euen as I am of Christe.

2 I commende you brethren, that ye remember me in all thinges, and kepe the ordinaunces, as I deliuered them to you.

3 But I wyl that ye knowe, that Christ is the head of euery man. And the man is the [Note: Gen.ii.d. Ephe.v.c. ] womans head: And God is Christes head.

4 Euery man praying or prophesying, hauyng any thing on his head, shameth his head.

5 But euery woman that prayeth or prophesieth bare headed, dishonesteth her head: For that is euen all one as yf she were shauen.

6 Yf the woman be not couered, let her also be shorne. [Note: Deu.xxii.a. ] Yf it be a shame for a woman to

be shorne or shauen, let her couer her head.

B

7 A man ought not to couer his head, forasmuch as he is the image and glorie of God: But the woman is the glorie of the man:

8 For [Note: Gen.i.d. ] the man is not of the woman: but the woman of the man:

9 Neither was the man created for the womans sake: but the woman for the mans sake.

10 < For this cause ought the woman to haue [Note: [a] Something to couer her head in signe of subiection. ] power on her head, for the Angels sakes.

11 Neuerthelesse, neither is the man without the woman, neither ye woman without the man, in the Lorde.

12 For as the woman is of the man, euen so is the man by the woman, but all of God.

C

13 Iudge in your selues, whether it be comely that a woman pray vnto God bare headed?

14 Doth not nature it selfe teache you, that it is a shame for a man, yf he haue long heere?

15 But yf a woman haue long heere, it is a prayse for her: For her heere is geuen her to couer her withall.

16 If any man lust to striue, we haue no such custome, neither the Churches of God.

17 This I warne you of, and commende not, that ye come together, not after a better maner, but after a worse.

D

18 For first of all, when ye come together in the Churche, I heare that there is dissention among you, and I partly beleue it.

19 For [Note: Mat.xviii.a ] there must be sectes among you, that they which are approued [Note: Or, tryed. ] among you, myght be knowen. >

20 When ye come together therfore into one place, you can not eate the Lordes supper:

21 For euery one preuenteth other, in eatyng his owne supper. And one is hungry, and another is drunken.

22 Haue ye not houses to eate & to drynke in? Despise ye the Churche of God, and shame them that haue not? What shall I say vnto you, shall I prayse you in this, I prayse you not. >

E

23 < That which I deliuered vnto you, I receaued of the Lorde. For the Lord Iesus, the same nyght in the which he was betrayed, toke bread:

24 And when he had geuen thankes, he brake it, and sayde: [Note: Math.26.c. Mar.xiii.b Luk.xxii.b. ] Take ye [and] eate, this is my body which is broke for you: This do ye in the remembraunce of me.

25 After the same maner also [he toke] the cup, when he had supped, saying: This cup is the newe testament in my blood: This do as oft as ye drynke it, in remembraunce of me.

F

26 For as often as ye shal eate this bread, and drynke this cup, [Note: i Peter.ii.b. ] ye shall shewe the Lordes death [Note: Actes.i.b. ] tyll he come.

27 Wherfore, whosoeuer shall eate this bread, and drynke this cup of the Lorde [Page] [Note: [b] By peruerting the true and pure vse of ye same. ] vnworthyly, shalbe gyltie of the body and blood of the Lorde.

28 [Note: ii Cor.xii.b. Eccle.28.c. ] But let a man examine hym selfe, and so let hym eate of this bread, and drinke of this cuppe:

G

29 For he that eateth and drynketh vnworthyly, eateth and drynketh [Note: [c] But as though these holy misteries of the Lordes body & blood, were common meates, so without reuerence he commeth vnto them. ] his owne dampnation, [because] he maketh no difference of the Lordes body.

30 For this cause many are weake and sicke among you, and many slepe.

31 For yf we woulde iudge our selues, we shoulde not be iudged.

32 But when we are iudged, we are chastened of the Lorde, that we shoulde not be dampned with the [Note: i Iohn.ii.c. ] worlde.

33 Wherfore my brethren, when ye come together to eate, tary one for another.

34 If any man hunger, let hym eate at home, that ye come not together vnto condemnation. > Other thynges wyll I set in order when I come.

## ¶ The .xij. Chapter.

1 The diuersitie of the giftes of the holy ghost, ought to be vsed to the edifyng of Christes Church, 12 as the members of mans body serue to the vse one of another.

A

1 **Concernyng** spirituall gyftes, brethren, I woulde not haue you ignoraunt. >

2 Ye knowe yt ye were gentiles, and caryed away vnto dumbe idols, as ye were [Note: [a] By Satans suggestio ] led.

3 Wherfore I declare vnto you, that [Note: Mark.ix.f. ] no man speakyng by the spirite of God, defieth Iesus. Also no man can say that Iesus is ye Lord, but by the holy ghost.

4 [Note: Rom.xii.a. ] There are diuersities of gyftes, but the spirite [is] one.

5 And there are differences of administrations, but the Lorde [is] one.

6 And there are diuers maners of operations, but God is one, which worketh all in all.

7 [Note: Ephe.iiii.b. ] The manifestation of the spirite, is geuen to euery man, to profite withall.

8 For to one is geuen by the spirite, the worde of wisdom, to another the word of knowledge, by the same spirite:

B

9 To another [is geuen] fayth, by the same spirite: to another the giftes of healyng by the same spirite:

10 To another, power to do miracles, to another, [Note: [b] Meaning the declaration of Gods misteries. ] prophesie, to another [Note: i Iohn.iiii.b. ] [iudgement] to discern spirites, to another, diuers kyndes of tongues, to another, the interpretation of tongues.

11 But these all worketh euen one and the selfe same spirite, deuidyng to euery man a seuerall gyft, as he wyll. >

12 [Note: Rom.xii.a. Ephe.iiii.b. ] For as the body is one, & hath many members, and all the members of one body, though they be many, [yet] are [but] one body: euen so is Christe.

13 For by one spirite, are we all baptized into one body, whether [we be] Iewes or gentiles, whether [we be] bonde or free: and haue [Note: Esai.lv.a. ] all drunke of one spirite.

14 For the body is not one member, but many.

15 If the foote woulde say, because I am not the hande, I am not of the body: is it therefore not of the body?

C

16 And yf the eare woulde say, because I am not the eye, I am not of the body: is it therefore not of the body?

17 If all the body [were] an eye, where were then the hearyng? If all [were] hearyng, where were the smellyng?

18 But nowe hath God set ye members, euery one seuerally in the body, as it hath pleased hym.

19 For yf they were all one member, where were the body?

20 Nowe are there many members, yet but one body.

21 And the eye can not say vnto ye hande, I haue no neede of thee: Nor, the head agayne to the feete, I haue no neede of you.

22 Yea, rather a great deale, those members of the body which seeme to be more [Note: [c] Whose vse



seemeth to be more vile. ] feeble, are necessary:

23 And vpon those members of the body which we thynke least honest, put we more [Note: [d] We are more carefull to couer them ] honestie on. And our vncomely partes, haue more comelynesse on.

24 For our comely members neede it not: But God hath tempered the body together, and hath geuen the more honour to that [part] which lacked:

D

25 Lest there shoulde be any stryfe in the body: but that the members shoulde haue the same care one for another.

26 And yf one member suffer, all suffer [Page] with it. If one member be had in honour, all the members reioyce with it.

27 Ye are the body of Christe, and members one of another.

28 And God hath ordayned some in the Churche, first [Note: Math.x.a. Luk xi.a. Ephe.iiii.c. ] Apostles, secondarely, prophetes, thirdely teachers, then them that do miracles: after that, the giftes of healyng, helpers, gouernours, diuersitie of tongues.

29 Are all, Apostles? are all, prophetes? are all, teachers?

30 Are all, doers of miracles? Haue all the giftes of healyng? Do all speake with tongues? Do all interprete?

31 Couet after the best giftes: And yet shew I vnto you a more excellent way.

## The .xiiij. Chapter.

1 Because loue is the fountayne and rule of edifying the Churche, he setteth foorth the nature, office, and prayse therof.

A

1 < **Though** I speake with the tongues of men and of [Note: [a] If the Angels had tongues, and I had the vse therof, and did not bestowe the to profite my neyghbour, it were nothyng but vaine bubblyng. ] Angels, and haue not loue, I am [as] soundyng brasse, or [as] a tincklyng Cimball:

2 And though I coulde prophesie, and vnderstoode all secretes, and all knowledge: Yea, < if I had all fayth, [Note: Luk.xvii.a ] so that I coulde moue mountaynes out of their places, and haue not loue, I were nothyng.

3 And though I bestowe all my goodes to feede the poore, and though I geue my body that I burned, and haue not loue, it profiteth me nothyng.

B

4 Loue suffreth long, and is curteous: Loue enuieth not, loue doth not frowardely, swelleth not,

5 Dealeth not dishonestlie, [Note: i Cor.x e. Philip.ii.a. ] seeketh not her owne, is not prouoked to anger, thynketh none euyl,

6 Reioyceth not in iniquitie: bur reioyceth in the trueth:

7 Suffreth all thynges, beleueth all thynges, hopeth all thynges, endureth all thynges.

8 Though ye prophesynges fayle, other tongues cease, or knowledge vanishe away, [yet] loue falleth neuer away.

C

9 < For our knowledge is vnperfect, and our prophesyng is vnperfect:

10 But when that which is perfect, is come, then that which is vnperfect shalbe done away.

11 When I was a chylde, I spake as a childe, I vnderstode as a childe, I imagined as a chylde: But assoone as I was a man, I put away chyldishnesse.

12 Nowe we see in a [Note: [b] The misteries of God. ] glasse, euen in a darke speakyng: but then [shall we see] face to face. Nowe I knowe vnperfectly: but then shall I knowe euen as I am knowen.

13 Nowe abydeth fayth, hope, and loue, these three, but the chiefe of these is loue.

## ¶ The .xiiiij. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth to loue, commendeth the gift of tongues, and other spirituall giftes, 5 But chiefly prophesyng. 34 He commaundeth women to kepe scilence in the Church. 40 And sheweth what good order ought to be obserued in the Church.

A

1 **Folowe** after loue, and couet spirituall [giftes] but most chiefelie that ye may prophesie.

2 For he that speaketh with the tongue, speaketh not vnto men, but vnto God: For no man [Note: [a] Understandeth hym. ] heareth [hym]. Howbeit, in the spirite he speaketh misteries.

3 But he that prophesieth, speaketh vnto men to their edifyng, to their exhortation, and to their comfort.

4 He that speaketh with the tongue, edifieth hym selfe: [Note: Rom.xii.b. Num.xi.g. ] he that prophesieth, edifieth the Church.

5 I woulde yt ye al spake with [Note: Tongue, in this place and such lyke, signifieth not ye instrument yt we speake

with: but proprietie of some language that the hearer vnderstandeth not, without an interpreter ] tongues, but rather that ye prophesied: For greater is he that prophesieth, then he that speaketh with tongues, except he expounde it, that the Churche may haue edifiyng.

6 Nowe brethren, yf I come vnto you speakyng with tongues, what shall I profite you, except I speake to you eyther by reuelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesiyng, or by doctrine?

B

7 Moreouer, thynges without lyfe geuyng [Page] sound, whether [it be] a pipe or an harpe, except they make a distinction in the soundes, howe shall it be knowen what is piped or harped?

8 And also yf the trumpe geue an vncertayne sounde, who shall prepare him selfe to the warre?

9 Euen so lykewyse, when ye speake with tongues, except ye speake wordes that haue signification, howe shall it be vnderstande what is spoken? For ye shall speake into the [Note: [b] Your wordes shalbe lost: for ye shal neither glorifie God therby, nor profite man. ] ayer.

10 There are so many kyndes of voyces, [as it commeth to passe] in the worlde, and none of them are without signification.

C

11 If I knowe not what the voyce meaneth, I shalbe lyke vnto hym that speaketh, an aliaunt: and he that speaketh, shalbe an aliaunt vnto me.

12 Euen so, forasmuch as ye couet spirituall [giftes] seke that ye may excell, vnto the edifiyng of the Churche.

13 Wherefore, let him that speaketh with tongue, pray that he may interprete.

14 For yf I pray with tongue, my spirite prayeth, but my vnderstanding is without fruite.

15 What is it then? I wyll pray with the spirite, and wyll pray with the vnderstandyng also. I wyll [Note: [c] Or, geue thankes by singyng. ] syng with the spirite, and wyll syng with the vnderstandyng also.

16 Els, when thou blessest with the spirite, howe shall he that occupieth the rowme of the vnlearned, say Amen at thy geuyng of thankes, seyng he vnderstandeth not what thou sayest?

17 Thou veryly geuest thankes well: but the other is not edified.

18 I thanke my God, I speake with tongues more the ye all.

19 Yet had I rather, in the Churche to speake fiue wordes with my vnderstandyng, to the information of other, then ten thousande wordes with the tongue.

D

20 Brethren, be not chyldren in wytte: Howbeit, as concerning maliciousnesse, be chyldren: but in wytte, be perfect.

21 In the lawe it is written: [Note: Esai.28.c. ] With sundry tongues, and with sundry lypes, wyll I speake

vnto this people, and yet for all that will they not heare me, sayth the Lorde.

22 Wherefore, tongues are for a signe, not to them that beleue, but to them that beleue not: But prophesying [serueth] not for them that beleue not, but for them which beleue.

23 If therefore, when all the Church is come together in one, & all speake with tongues, there come in they that are vnlearned, or they which beleue not: wyll they not say yt ye are out of your wittes?

E

24 But yf all prophesie, and there come in one ye beleueth not, or one vnlearned: he is rebuked of all men, and is iudged of euery man:

25 And so are the secretes of his heart made manifest, and so falleth he downe on his face, and worshippeth God, and sayth that God is in you of a trueth.

26 Howe is it then brethren? When ye come together, euery one of you hath a psalme, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a reuelation, hath interpretation. Let all thynges be done vnto edifyng.

27 Yf any man speake with tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course, and let one interprete.

28 But yf there be no interpreter, let him kepe scilence in the Church, and let him speake to hym selfe, and to God.

F

29 Let the prophetes speake two or three, and [Note: i.Iohn.iiii.a. ] let the other iudge.

30 If any reuelation be made to another that sitteth by, let ye first holde his peace.

31 For ye may all prophesie one by one, that all may learne, and all may haue comfort.

32 And the [Note: That is, the doctrine yt they do bring, as beyng put in mynde by the spirite of God. ] spirites of the prophetes, are subiect to the prophetes.

33 For God is not [the aucthour] of confusion, [Note: Rom.xv.g. ] but of peace, as in all Churches of the saintes.

34 [Note: i Tim.ii.b. Gen iii.c. i Cor.xi.a. ] Let your women kepe scilence in the Churches: For it is not permitted vnto them to speake, but to be vnder obedience, as sayth the lawe.

G

35 If they wyll learne any thyng, let the aske their husbandes at home: For it is a shame for women to speake in the Church.

36 Sprong the worde of God from you? Either came it vnto you only?

37 If any man thynke hym selfe to be a prophete, either spiritual, let him knowe that the thinges that I write vnto you, are ye commaundementes of the Lorde.

38 But yf any man be ignoraunt, let hym be ignoraunt.

39 Wherefore brethren, couet to prophesie, and forbyd not to speake with tongues.

40 Let all thynges be done honestlie and in order.

[Page]

## ¶ The .xv. Chapter.

1 He proueth the resurrection of the dead. 3 and first that Christe is risen, 22 then, that we shall ryse, 52 and the maner howe.

A

1 **Moreouer** brethren I declare vnto you, the Gospell which I preached vnto you, which also ye haue receaued, and wherein ye cotinue,

2 By the which also ye are saued, yf ye kepe in memorie after what maner I preached vnto you, except ye haue beleued in vayne.

3 For first of all I deliuered vnto you, that which [Note: [a] He sheweth that nothyng ought to be taught, whiche we haue not learned by Gods worde. ] I receaued: howe that [Note: Mat.28 b. Iohn.xx a. ] Christe dyed for our sinnes, agreeyng to the scriptures:

4 And that he was buryed, and that he arose agayne the thirde day, accordyng to the scriptures:

5 And that he was seene of [Note: Luk.24.b. ] Cephas, then of the twelue:

6 After that, he was seene of mo then fiue hundred brethren at once: of which, many remayne vnto this day, & some are fallen a slepe.

7 After that, he was seene of Iames, then of all the Apostles.

B

8 And last of all he was seene of me, as of one borne out of due tyme.

9 For I am the least of the Apostles, which am not worthy to be called an Apostle, because [Note: Actes.iii.a. Gala.ii.c. ] I persecuted the Churche of God.

10 But by the grace of God, I am that I am: And his grace which is in me, was not in vayne: But I laboured more aboundantly then they all, yet not I, but the grace of God which is with me.

11 Therefore, whether it were I or they, so we preache, and so haue ye beleued.

12 < If Christe be preached howe that he rose from the dead: howe say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 If there be no rysyng agayne of the dead, then is Christe not rysen agayne.

C

14 If Christe be not rysen agayne, then is our preaching vayne, and your fayth is also [Note: [b] For yf Christe be swallowed vp of death, there remaineth no hope of lyfe any more. ] vayne.

15 Yea, and we are founde false witnesses of God: For we haue testified of God, howe that he raysted vp Christe, whom he raysted not vp, yf it be so that the dead ryse not agayne.

16 For yf the dead ryse not agayne, then is not Christe rysen agayne.

17 If it be so, that Christ rose not againe, then is your fayth vayne, and ye are yet in your sinnes.

18 Therefore, they which are fallen in a slepe in Christe, are perished.

19 If in this lyfe only we haue hope on Christe, then are we of all men moste miserable.

20 But nowe is Christe rysen from the dead, [Note: Colos.i.c. ] the first [Note: [c] As by the offering of the first fruite, the whole fruite is sanctified: so by Christe which is the first that is raysted, all haue assuraunce of the resurrection. ] fruites of them that slept.

21 For since by man [came] death, euen so by man [came] the resurrection of ye dead.

22 For, as by Adam all dye: euen so by Christe shall all [Note: [d] To wyt, the faythfull. ] be made alyue,

23 But euery man in his owne order. > The first fruites [is] Christe, afterward, they that are Christes at his commyng.

D

24 Then [commeth] the ende, when he hath deliuered vp the kingdome to God the father, when he hath put downe all rule, and all auctoritie, and power.

25 For he must raigne [Note: Psal.cx.a. Math.22.d. Habre.i.c. ] tyll he haue put all his enemies vnder his feete.

26 The lastemie that shalbe destroyed, [is] death.

27 [Note: Psal.viii.b. Hebre.ii.d. ] For he hath put downe all thynges vnder his feete: But when he saith, all thynges are vnder hym, it is manifest that he is excepted which dyd put all thynges vnder hym.

28 When all thynges are subdued vnto hym, then shall the sonne also hym selfe be subiect vnto him that put all thynges vnder hym, that God may be all in all.

29 Els what shall they do, which are baptized for the dead, yf the dead ryse not at all?

30 Why are they then baptized for them? And why stande we in ieopardie euery houre?

31 By our reioycyng which I haue in Christe Iesu our Lorde, I dye dayly.

E

32 If I haue fought with beastes at Ephesus after the [Note: [e] That is, hauyng regarde to this present lyfe, and not to Gods glorie, and to lyfe euerlastyng. ] maner of men, what auauntageth it me, yf the dead ryse not agayne? Let vs eate & drynke, for to morowe we shall dye.

33 Be not deceaued. Euyll wordes, corrupt good maners.

[Page]

34 Awake truely out of slepe, and sinne not: For some haue not the knowledge of God. I speake this to your shame.

35 But some man wyll say, howe are the dead rayсед vp? With what bodie shall they come?

36 Thou foole, [Note: Iohn.xii.d. ] that which thou sowest, is not quickened except it dye.

37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shalbe, but bare corne, as of wheate, or of some other:

38 But God geueth it a body at his pleasure, to euery seede his owne body.

39 < All flesshe, is not [Note: Or, one maner of flesshe. ] the same flesshe: But there is one [maner of] flesshe of me, another flesshe of beastes, another of fisshes, and another of byrdes.

F

40 There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: But the glorie of the celestial is one, and [the glorie] of the terrestrial another.

41 There is another glorie of the [Note: [f] Euen as the sunne and the moone, beyng of one substaunce, differ in dignitie: so in the resurrection, our bodies shal haue more excellent qualities then thei haue now ] sunne, and another glorie of the moone, and another glorie of the starres: For [one] starre differeth from [another] starre in glorie.

42 So is the resurrection of the dead. It is sowen in corruption, it ryseth in incorruption.

43 It is sowen in [Note: For what is more vyle to loke vnto, then the dead carkasse. ] dishonour, it riseth in honour. It is sowen in weakenesse, it ryseth in power.

44 It is sowen a naturall bodie, it ryseth a spirituall bodie. There is a naturall bodie, and there is a spirituall bodie.

45 As it is also written: The first man [Note: Gene.ii.b. ] Adam was made a lyuyng soule, and the last Adam was made a quickenyng spirite.

46 Howebeit, that is not first whiche is spirituall, but that [whiche is] naturall, and then that [whiche is] spirituall. >

47 The first man [is] of the earth, earthy: the seconde man [is] the Lorde from heauen.

48 As is the earthy, suche [are] they that are earthy: And as is the heauenly, such [are] they also that are heauenly.

G

49 And as we haue borne the image of the earthy, so shall we beare the image of the heauenly.

50 This saye I brethren, that fleshe and blood can not inherite the kyngdome of God: Neither doth corruption, inherite incorruption.

51 Beholde, I shewe you a misterie. [Note: i.Thes.iii.d Phil.iii.d. ] We shall not all slepe: but we shall all be chaunged.

52 In a moment, in the twynklyng of an eye, at the last trumpe. For the trumpe shall blowe, and the dead shall ryse incorruptible, and we shalbe chaunged.

53 For this corruptible, must put on incorruption, and this mortall [must] put on immortalitie.

54 When this corruptible, hath put on incorruption, and this mortal, hath put on immortalitie, then shalbe brought to passe the saying that is written, [Note: Esai.xxv.c. ] Death is swallowed vp into victorie.

55 [Note: Osee.xiii.c. ] O death where is thy styng? O hell where is thy victorie?

56 The styng of death [is] sinne, and the [Note: [g] Sinne firste brought in death, and geueth it power ouer vs, & the strength of sinne is ye law, because it doth reueale ye iudgment of God agaynst vs: or els the chiefe cause of our destruction is in our selues. ] strength of sinne [is] the lawe.

57 [Note: i.Ioh. v.a. ] But thankes be vnto God, whiche hath geue vs victorie through our Lord Iesus Christe.

58 Therefore my beloued brethren, be ye stedfast, vnmouable, alwayes riche in the worke of the Lorde, forasmuch as ye knowe that your labour is not in [Note: [h] The hope of resurrectio, causeth the faithful to surmount all difficulties. ] vayne in the Lorde.

## ¶ The .xvj. Chapter.

1 He putteth them in remembraunce of the gatheryng for the poore brethren at Hierusalem. 13 We must perseuer in fayth, in the loue of Christe, and of our neyghbour. 15 After his commendations, he wyssheth to them all prosperitie.

A

1 **Concerning** the [Note: Actes.xi.d. Rom.xv.f. ii.Cor.viii.a ] gatheryng for the saintes, as I haue ordeined in the Churches of Galacia, euen so do ye.

2 Upon some Sabboth daye, let euery one of you put asyde by hym selfe, and laye vp as God hath prospered hym, that then there be no gatherynges when I come.



3 When I am come, whomsoever ye shall allowe by [your] letters, them wyll I sende, to bryng your liberalitie vnto Hierusalem.

4 And yf it be meete that I go also, they shall go with me.

5 I wyll come vnto you, after I haue gone ouer Macedonia (For I wyl passe through [Note: Actes.xi.d. ii.Cor.i.c. ] Macedonia)

[Page]

6 And it may be, that I wyll abyde, yea or wynter with you, that ye may bryng me on my way whyther soeuer I go.

B

7 For I wyll not see you nowe in my passage, but I trust to abyde a whyle with you, yf the Lorde shall suffer me.

8 I wyll tarie at Ephesus vntyll whytsontyde:

9 For a great doore and effectuall is opened vnto me, [Note: i.Cor.xv.c. ] and there are many aduersaries.

10 [Note: Act.xix.d. ] Yf Timotheus come, see that he be without feare with you: For he worketh the worke of the Lorde, as I do.

11 Let no man therefore despise hym, but conuay him foorth in peace, that he may come vnto me: for I loke for hym with the brethren.

C

12 As touchyng our brother [Note: Act.xviii.c. i.Cor.i.b. ] Apollo, I greatly desired hym to come vnto you with the brethren, but his mynde was not at all to come at this tyme: Howebeit, he wyll come when he shall haue conuenient tyme.

13 [Note: [a] Lest Satan steale vpo you at vnwares. ] Watche ye, stande fast in the fayth, quyte you lyke men, be strong.

14 Let al your thinges be done with loue.

15 [Note: i.Corint.i.c. ] I beseche you brethren (ye knowe the house of Stephanas, that it is ye [Note: [b] That is, ye first whiche imbraced the Gospell. ] first fruites of Achaia, and that they haue appoynted them selues to minister vnto the saintes)

16 That ye be obedient euen vnto suche, and to all that helpe with vs, & labour.

17 I am glad of the commyng of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, & Achaicus: for that whiche was lackyng [vnto me] on your part, they haue [Note: [c] The grief that I toke for your absence, was greatly aswaged by their presence. ] supplied.

18 For they haue comforted my spirite, and yours: Loke therefore that ye know them that are such.

D

19 The Churches of Asia salute you. Aquila and Priscilla salute you muche in the Lord, and so doth the Church that is in their house.

20 All the brethren greete you: [Note: Rom.xvi.c. ] Greete ye one another with an holy kysse.

21 The salutatio of [me] Paul, with mine owne hande.

22 Yf any man loue not the Lorde Iesus Christe, the same be Anathema [Note: A worde, wherwith the accursed or vile person in the extremest degree, is signified. ] maranatha.

23 The grace of our Lorde Iesus Christ be with you.

24 My loue be with you all in Christe Iesus. Amen.

**The first (epistle) to the Corinthians, was sent from Philippos by Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, and Timotheus.**

***The seconde Epistle of Saint Paul the Apostle to the Corinthians.***

**¶ The .j. Chapter.**

4 He declareth the great profite that commeth to the faythfull by their afflictions: 15. 17. And because they shoulde not impute to lyghtnesse that he deferred his commyng contrarie to his promise: he proueth his constancie, both by the sinceritie of his preachyng, and also by the immutable trueth of the Gospell, 21 which trueth is grounded on Christe, and sealed in our heartes by the holy ghost.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **Paul** an Apostle of Iesu Christe, by the wyll of God, & brother Timotheus. Unto ye Church of God which is at Corinthus, with all the saintes which are in all Achaia:

2 Grace [be] with you, and peace from God our father and from the Lorde Iesus Christe.

3 [Note: Roman.i.a. i.Corin.i.a. Galat.i.a. Ephesi.i.a. i.Peter.i.a. ] Blessed be God, the father of our Lorde Iesus Christe, whiche is the father of mercies, & the God of al comfort:

4 Which comforted vs in all our tribulation, insomuch that we are able to comfort them which are in any maner trouble, with the comfort wherwith we our selues are comforted of God.

5 For as the [Note: Coloss.i.e. ] [Note: [a] whiche I suffer for Christe, or which Christ suffreth in me ] afflictions of Christ are plenteous in vs: euen so is our consolation plenteous by Christe.

B

6 Whether we be troubled [it is] for your consolation and saluation, which saluation sheweth her power, in that ye suffer the same afflictions whiche we also suffer: or whether we be comforted [it is] for your consolation & saluation:

7 And our hope is stedfast, insomuch as we knowe howe that as ye are partakers [Page] of ye afflictions, so ye be partakers also of the consolation.

8 For we woulde not brethren haue you ignoraunt of our trouble, whiche came vnto vs in [Note: Act.xix.f. ] Asia: For we were greeued out of measure, passyng strength, so greatly, that we dispayred euen of lyfe.

9 Yea, we receaued the sentence of death in our selues, that we should not put our trust in our selues, [Note: i.Reg.ii.d. Deut.viii.d. ] but in God, whiche rayseth the dead:

10 Who delyuered vs from so great a death, and doth deliuer: On whom we trust that yet hereafter he wyll deliuer,

11 By the helpe of your prayer for vs, that by ye meanes of many persons, thanks may geuen of many [Note: ii.Cor.iii.c. ] on our behalfe, for the grace geuen vnto vs.

C

12 For our reioycyng is this, the testimonie of our conscience, that in simplicitie & godly purenesse, and not in fleshely wisdom, [Note: [b] Usyng that wisdom whiche God gaue me from heauen. ] but by the grace of God, we haue had our conuersatio in the worlde, and most of all to you wardes.

13 We write none other thinges vnto you then that ye read, or also yt ye acknowledge, and I trust ye shall acknowledge vs vnto the ende.

14 Euen as ye haue acknowledged vs partly: For we are your reioycing, euen [Note: i.Thess.ii.c. ] as ye are [Note: [c] Because we haue won you to Christ. ] ours in the [Note: [d] whiche shall abolyse all worldly glorie. ] daye of our Lorde Iesus.

15 [Note: i.Cor.xvi.a ] And in this confidence was I minded first to haue come vnto you, yt ye myght haue had one pleasure more:

16 And to passe by you into Macedonia, and to haue come agayne out of Macedonia vnto you, and to be led fourth of you to Iurie.

D

17 When I therefore was thus mynded, did I vse lightnesse? or mynde I [Note: [e] Nowe to affirme one thyng, & then to denie it, whiche is a signe of inconstancie. ] carnally those thynges whiche I mynde, that with me shoulde be yea yea, & nay nay?

18 [Note: [f] He taketh God to wytnesse, that he preacheth the trueth. ] God is faythfull: For our preaching to you, was not yea and nay.

19 For Gods sonne Iesus Christe which was preached among you by vs, euen by me, and Siluanus, and Timotheus, was not yea and nay, but in hym it was yea.

20 For all the promises of God in him are yea, and are in him Amen, vnto the glorie of God, through vs.

21 And God it is whiche stablysheth vs with you in Christe, and hath annoynted vs.

22 Which hath also sealed vs, and [Note: Rom.viii.a. Ephes.iiii.e. ] hath geuen the earnest of the spirite in our hartes.

23 < I call God for a recorde vnto my soule, that to spare you I came not as yet vnto Corinthus.

24 [Note: i.Pet.v.a. ] Not that we be Lordes ouer your fayth, but are helpers of your ioy. For by fayth ye stande.

## The .ij. Chapter.

He sheweth his loue towardes them, 7 requiryng lykewyse that they would be fauourable to the incestuous adulterer, seyng he dyd repent. 14 He also reioyceth in God for the efficacie of his doctrine, 17 confutyng therby such quarell pykers, as vnder pretence of speakyng agaynst his person, sought nothyng but the ouerthrowe of his doctrine.

A

1 **But** I determind this in my selfe, yt I would not come againe to you in heauynesse.

2 For if I make you sorie, who is he yt shoulde make me glad, but the same which is made [Note: [a] whiche was geuen to Satan, but nowe doeth repent. ] sorie by me?

3 And I wrote this same vnto you, lest when I came, I shoulde take heauynesse of them of whom I ought to reioyce. This confidence haue I toward you all, that my ioy is [the ioy] of you all.

4 For in great affliction and anguishe of heart, I wrote vnto you with many teares, not that ye shoulde be made sorie, but that ye myght perceaue the loue which I haue, most specially vnto you.

B

5 But yf any man hath caused sorowe, the same hath not made me sorie, but partly, lest I shoulde greeue you all.

6 [Note: i.Cor.v.b. ] It is sufficient vnto the same man that he was rebuked of many.

7 So that nowe contrarywise, ye ought rather to forgeue hym, and comforte hym, lest that same person

shoulde be swallowed vp with ouermuche heauynesse.

[Page]

8 Wherefore I pray you, that you would confirme your loue towards hym.

9 For this cause veryly did I write, that I myght knowe the profe of you, whether ye be obedient in all thynges.

10 To whom ye forgeue any thyng, I forgeue also. For if I forgauē any thing, to whom I forgauē it, for your sakes forgauē I it, in the [Note: [b] That is, truely & from myne hearte, euen as in the presence of Christe. ] sight of Christe.

11 Lest Satan shoulde circumuent vs: For his thoughtes are not vnknownen vnto vs. >

C

12 Furthermore, when I came to Troada, to [preache] Christes Gospell, and a doore was opened vnto me of the lorde,

13 I had no rest in my spirite, because I founde not Titus my brother, but toke my leaue of them, and went away into Macedonia.

D

14 Nowe thankes be vnto God, whiche alwayes geueth vs the [Note: [c] In working myghtyly by vs, he maketh vs partakers of his victorie & triumphe. ] victorie in Christe, and openeth the sauour of his knowledge by vs in euery place.

15 For we are vnto God the sweete sauour of Christe in them that are sauēd, and in them which perisse.

16 [Note: Luk.ii.e. ] To the one part [are we] the sauour of death, vnto death: and vnto the other part [are we] the sauour of lyfe vnto lyfe. And who is meete vnto these thynges?

17 For we are not as many are, whiche chop & chaunge with the word of God: but as of purenesse of God, in the syght of God, so speake we in Christe. >

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

1 He taketh for example the fayth of the Corinthians for a probation of the trueth which he preached, 6 and to exalt his apostleship agaynst the braggers of the false apostles, 7. 13. he maketh comparison betwixt the lawe and the Gospell.

A

1 **Do** we begyn to prayse our selues agayne? Or neede we [as some other] of epistles of recomēdation vnto you? or [letters] of recomēdation from you?

2 Ye are our epistle written in our heartes, whiche is vnderstande and read of all men:

3 Forasmuche as ye declare that ye are the epistle of Christ ministred by vs, and written, not with ynke, but with the spirite of the Iyuyng God, [Note: Exo.xxiiii d ] not in tables of stone, but in [Note: Deut.v.d. Ier.xxxi.a. ] fleshly tables of the heart.

B  
4 < Such trust haue we through Christe to Godwarde.

5 Not that we are sufficiet of our selues to thynke any thyng as of our selues: [Note: Philip.ii.b. ] but our ablenesse is of God,

6 Which hath made vs [Note: i.Cor.iiii.b. ] able ministers of the newe testament, not of the letter, but of the spirite: For the letter kylleth, but the [Note: [a] Meaning the spirituall doctrine whiche is in our heartes. ] spirite geueth lyfe.

7 Yf the ministration of death, through the letters figured in stones, was in glorie, so that the chyldren of Israel coude not beholde the face of Moyses, for the [Note: [b] After that God had spoken with him and geue hym the lawe. ] glorie of his countenance, whiche [glorie] is done away:

8 Howe shall not the ministration of the spirite be much more in glorie?

9 For yf the ministration of condempnation be glorie: much more doth the ministration of ryghteousnes exceede in glorie. >

C  
10 For euen that which was glorified, is not glorified in respect of this exceedyng glorie.

11 For yf that whiche is destroyed was glorious, much more that which remayneth is glorious.

12 Seyng then that we haue such truste, we vse great boldnesse:

13 And not as Moyses, which [Note: Exo.xxiiii d ] put [Note: [c] Moyses shewed ye law as it was, couered with shadowes, so that ye Iewes eyes were not lyghtened, but blynded, and so coude not come to christ who was the ende therof. Agayne, the Gospel setteth foorth the glorie of God clearly, not coueryng our eyes, but dryuyng ye darknes away fro them. ] a vayle ouer his face, that the chyldren of Israel shoulde not see for what purpose that serued which is put away.

14 But their myndes were blynded: For vntyll this day remayneth the same coueryng vntaken away in the reading of the olde testament, which [vayle] is put away in Christe.

15 But euen vnto this day when Moyses is read, the vayle is layde vppon their heart.

D  
16 Neuerthesse, when it shall turne to the Lorde, the vayle shalbe taken away.

17 [Note: Iohn.iiii.c. ] The Lorde is a spirite: And where the spirite of the Lorde [is] there [is] libertie.

18 But we all behold [as] in a [Note: [d] In christ, who is God manifest in ye fleshe, we see God ye father, as in a moste cleare glasse. ] mirrour, the glorie of the Lorde, with his face open, and are changed vnto the same similitude, from glorie to glorie, euen as of the spirite of the Lorde.

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

1 He declareth his diligence, and roundnesse in his office: 8 and that which his enemies toke for his disaduauntage, to wit, the crosse and affliction which he endured, he turned it to his great aduauntage, 11 17 shewyng what profite commeth therby.

A

1 **Therefore**, seyng that we haue such a ministerie, as we haue receaued mercie, we faynt not:

2 But haue cast from vs the clokes of vnhonestie, and walke not in craftynesse, neither handle we the word of God disceitefully, but in openyng of the trueth, and report our selues to euery mans conscience in the syght of God.

3 < Yf our Gospell be yet hyd, it is hyd in them that are lost:

4 In whom [Note: Iohn.xii.e. ] the [Note: [a] To wyt, Satan. ] god of this worlde [Note: Luk.viii.f. Iohn.xii.f. ] hath blinded the myndes of them whiche beleue not, lest the lyght of the Gospell of the glorie of Christe (which is the image of God) should shine vnto them.

B

5 < For we preache not our selues, but Christe Iesus the Lord, and our selues your seruauntes for Iesus sake.

6 For it is God that [Note: Gene.i.a. ] commaundeth the lyght to shine out of darknesse, whiche hath [Note: ii.Pet.i.d. ] shined in our heartes, for to geue the lyght of the knowledge of the glorie of God, in the face of Iesus Christe.

7 But we haue this treasure in [Note: ii.Cor.v.a. ] earthen vessels, that the excellencie of the power be Gods, and not ours.

8 We are troubled on euery syde, yet are we not without shyft. We are in pouertie, but not vtterly without somewhat.

C

9 We suffer persecution, but are not forsaken therin. We are cast downe, but we perisse not.

10 We alwayes [Note: Galath. vi.d. ] beare about in the body the dying of the Lorde Iesus, that the lyfe of Iesus myght also appeare in our bodie. >

11 [Note: Rom. viii.c. ] For we which lyue, are alwayes deliuered vnto death for Iesus sake, that the lyfe also of Iesu myght appeare in our mortall flesshe.

12 So then, death worketh in vs, but life in you. >

13 < Seing then that we haue the same spirite of fayth (accordyng as it is written, [Note: Psal.cxvi.b. ] I beleued, and therefore haue I spoken) We also beleue, and therefore speake.

D

14 For we knowe, that he which rayseed vp the Lorde Iesus, shall rayse vp vs also by the meanes of Iesus, and shall set vs with you.

15 For all thynges [do I] for your [sakes,] [Note: i.Cor.i.a. ] that the plenteous grace, by thankes geuyng of many, may redounde to the prayse of God.

16 Wherefore we are not weryed: But though our outwarde man perishe, yet the inwarde man is renewed day by day.

17 [Note: Psal.xxx.b Rom.viii.d. ] For our exceedyng tribulation which is momentanie & [Note: [b] which is so called in respect of the euerlastyng lyfe. ] lyght, prepareth an exceedyng and an eternall wayght of glorie vnto vs.

18 Whyle we loke not on the thynges whiche are seene, but on the thynges which are not seene. For the thynges which are seene, are temporall: but the things which are not seene, are eternal.

## ¶ The .v. Chapter.

1 Paul proceedeth to declare the vtilitie that commeth by the crosse, 4 howe we ought to prepare our selues vnto it, 5 by whom, 9 and for what ende. 14 19 He setteth fourth the grace of Christ, 20 and the office of ministers, & all the faithful.

A

1 **For** we knowe, that yf our earthly [Note: [a] after this body shalbe dissolved, it shalbe made incorruptible & immortall. ] house of [this] tabernacle were destroyed, we haue a building of God, an habitation not made with handes, but eternall in heauen.

2 For [Note: Rom. viii.d ] therefore sygh we, desiryng to be clothed with our house whiche is from heauen:

3 So yet, yf that we be founde clothed, and not naked.

4 For we that are in this [Note: i Pet.i.e. Apoc.iii.d. ] tabernacle sigh, & being burdened because we would not be vnclodhed, but would be clothed vpo, [Page] that mortalitie might be swallowed vp of lyfe.

5 He that hath ordeyned vs for this thyng [is] God, [Note: Rom.viii.c. ii.Cor.i.d. ] which hath also geuen vnto vs the earnest of the spirite.

6 Therefore we are alway of good cheare, and knowe, that as long as we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lorde.



7 (For we walke by fayth, not after outwarde appearaunce.)

B

8 Neuerthelesse, we are of good comfort, and had rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lorde.

9 Wherefore, whether we be at home, or from home, we endeouour our selues to be accepted vnto hym.

10 [Note: Mat.xxv.e. Rom.xiii.c ] For we must all appeare before the iudgement seate of Christe, that euery man may receaue the workes of his bodie according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

11 < Seing then that we knowe the feare of the Lorde, we fare fayre with men: For we are [Note: [b] By imbracyng the same fayth whiche we preache to others. ] knowen well enough vnto God. I trust also that we are knowen in your consciences.

12 For we prayse not our selues agayne vnto you, but geue you an occasion to reioyce of vs, that ye may haue somewhat agaynst them which reioyce in the face, and not in the heart.

C

13 For [Note: [c] the greke soudeth thus. whether we be out of wyt, to God we be out of wyt: whether we be wise, to you (we be wise.) ] yf we be to feruent, to God are we to feruent: Or yf we kepe measure, for your cause kepe we measure.

14 For the loue of Christe constrayneth vs, because we thus iudge, that yf one dyed for all, then were all dead.

D

15 And [Note: i.Thess.v.c. ] he dyed for all, that they which lyue, shoulde not hencefoorth lyue vnto them selues, but vnto hym which dyed for them, and rose agayne. >

16 Wherefore hencefoorth knowe we no man after the [Note: [d] according to the estimation of ye flesh, but as he is guyded by the spirite of god. ] flesshe: Insomuche, though we haue knowen Christe after the flesshe, nowe yet hencefoorth knowe we hym so no more.

17 Therefore yf any man be in Christe, he is a newe creature. Olde thynges are passed awaye, beholde all thynges are become [Note: Esai.xliii.c. ] newe.

18 And all thynges are of God, whiche hath [Note: Apoc.xxi.a Rom.iii.d. Coloss.i.c. ] reconciled vs vnto hym selfe by Iesus Christe, and hath geuen to vs the ministerie of reconciliation.

19 For [Note: Coloss.ii.c. ] God was in Christe, reconciling the worlde to hym selfe, not imputyng their sinnes vnto them, and hath committed to vs the preachyng of the atonement.

20 Nowe then are we messengers in the rowme of Christe, euen as though God dyd beseche you through vs. So praye we you in Christes steade, that ye be reconciled vnto God.

21 For [Note: Esaias.liii.6 Rom.viii.a. ] he hath made him to be sinne for vs, whiche knewe no sinne, that we shoulde be made the ryghteousnesse of God in hym.

## The .vj. Chapter.

1 An exhortation to christian lyfe, 11 and to beare him like affection, as he doeth them: Also to kepe them selues from pollution of idolatrie both in body and soule, and to haue none acquayntaunce with the heathen.

A

1 **We** also as helpers exhorte you, that ye receaue not the grace of God in vayne.

2 For he saith: [Note: Esai.xlix.c. ] I haue heard thee in a tyme accepted, and in the day of saluation haue I suckoured thee. Beholde, nowe is that [Note: [a] To wyte, gods free mercie, wherein he hath powred foorth his infinite loue. ] accepted tyme, beholde nowe is that day of saluation:

3 Let vs geue none occasion of euyll in any thyng, that the ministerie be not blamed:

4 But in all thynges let vs behaue our selues [Note: i.Cor.iiii.a. ] as ye ministers of God, in much pacience, in afflictions, in necessities, in anguisshes,

5 In stripes, in prisonmentes, in strifes, in labours,

B

6 In watchynges, in fastinges, in purenesse, in knowledge, in long suffryng, in kyndnesse, in the holy ghost, in loue vnfaigned:

7 In the worde of trueth, in the power of God, by the armour of righteousnes, of the ryght hande and on the lefte,

8 By honour and dishonour, by euyll report and good report, as deceauers and yet true,

9 As vnknowen, and yet knowen, as dying, and beholde we lyue, as chastened, and not kyllled, [Page]

10 As sorowyng, and yet alway merie: as poore, and yet make many riche: as hauyng nothyng, and yet possessyng all thynges. >

C

11 O ye Corinthians, our [Note: [b] signifying his most vehement affectio. ] mouth is open vnto you, our heart is made large:

12 Ye are in no strayte in vs, but are in a straitte in your owne bowels.

13 I promise you lyke rewarde as vnto children: Set your selues at [Note: [c] Shewe lyke affection towards me. ] large,

14 < And [Note: Deut.vii.a. ] beare not ye a straunge yoke with the vnbeleuers. For what felowship hath righteousnesse with vnrighteousnesse? Or what communion hath lyght with darkenesse?

15 [Note: Math.viii.d ] Or what concorde hath Christe with belyall? Eyther what part hath he that beleueth, with an infidell?

D

16 Or howe agreeth the temple of God with images? For [Note: i.Cor.iii.b. ] ye are the temple of the luying God, as saide God, [Note: Exod.xix.g Leut.xix.b. ] I wyll dwell in them, & walke in [them] & wyll be their God, & they shalbe my people.

17 Wherefore [Note: Esaias.lii.e. ] come out fro among them, and separate your selues from them (saith the Lorde) and touche none vnclene thyng, and I wyll receaue you,

18 And wyll be a father vnto you, and ye shalbe my sonnes and daughters, saith the Lorde almightie.

## The .vij. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth them by the promise of God to kepe them selues pure, 3. 7 Assuryng them of his loue, 8, 13 and doeth not excuse his seueritie towarde them, but reioyceth therof, consideryng what profite came therby. 10 Of two sortes of sorowe.

A

1 **Seyng** that we haue these promises (dearely beloued) let vs clense our selues from all fylthynesse of the flesshe & [Note: That is, of body & soule. ] spirite, and growe vp to full holynesse in the feare of God.

2 Understande vs, we haue wronged no man, we haue corrupt no man, we haue defrauded no man.

3 I speake not this to condempne you: for I haue shewed you before, that ye are in our heartes to dye and lyue with you.

4 I am very bolde ouer you, I reioyce greatly in you. I am fylled with comfort, and am exceedyng ioyous in all our tribulation.

5 For when we were come into Macedonia, [Note: Act.xvi.c. ] our flesshe had no rest, but we were troubled on euery syde: Outward was fyghtyng, inward was feare.

6 Neuertheless, [Note: ii.Cor..i.a ] God that comforteth the humble, comforted vs by the commyng of Titus.

B

7 And not by his comming only, but also by the consolatio whiche we receaued of you, when he tolde vs your desire, your wepyng, your feruent mynde towarde me, so that I reioyced the more.

8 For though I made you sorie with a letter, I repent not, though I dyd repent. For I perceaue, that the same epistle made you sorie, though it were but for a season.

C

9 I nowe reioyce, not that ye were sorie, but that ye so sorowed to repent: for ye sorowed godly, so that in nothyng ye were hurt by vs.

10 For godly sorowe, causeth repentaunce vnto saluatio, not to be repented of: but the sorowe of the [Note: Eccle.xxx c ] world causeth death.

11 For beholde this thing, what carefulnesse this godly sorow that ye toke, hath wrought in you: yea [what] [Note: In asking God forgeuenesse. ] clearing of your selues, yea [what] indignation, yea [what] feare, yea [what] vehemet desire, yea [what] zeale, yea [what] punishment. For in all thynges ye haue shewed your selues that ye were cleare in ye matter.

D  
12 Wherefore, though I wrote vnto you, I dyd it not for his cause that had done the hurt, neither for his cause that was hurt: [Note: But that our care towarde you in the syght of God, myght appeare vnto you. So hath co der Complutensis, Ambrosius, and Theophilactus, & so readeth the olde translation, & ye translatio of Stephanus. ] but that your good minde to vsuarde myght appeare among you in the syght of God.

13 Therefore we are comforted, because ye are comforted: yea and exceedyngly the more ioyed we, for the ioy that Titus had, because his spirite was refreshed by you all.

14 I am therefore not nowe ashamed, though I boasted my selfe to hym of [Page] you. For as all thinges which we spake vnto you are true: euen so our boastyng that I made vnto Titus is made true.

15 And his inwarde affection is more aboundaunt towarde you, when he remembered the obedience of you all, howe with feare and tremblyng ye receaued hym.

16 I reioyce that I may be bolde in you in all thynges.

## ¶ The .viiij. Chapter.

1 By the example of the Macedonians 9 and Christe, he exhorteth them to continue in relieuyng the poore saintes, commending their good beginning. 23 After he commendeth Titus and his felowes vnto them.

A  
1 **Moreouer**, we do you to wite brethren, of the grace of God, which was geuen in the Churches of Macedonia.

2 Howe that ye aboundance of their reioycing is, that they are tryed with muche tribulation. And though they were exceedyng poore, yet haue they geuen exceedyng rychlye, and that in singlenesse.

3 For to their powers (I beare them recorde) yea & beyonde their powers, they were wyllyng.

4 And prayed vs with great instaunce that we woulde receaue this [Note: [a] Grace here signifieth beneuolence or almes. ] grace and societie of the ministerie to ye saintes. [Note: Actes.xi.d. ]

5 [And this they dyd] not as we loked for: but gaue their owne selues first to the Lorde, and [after] vnto

vs by the wyll of God.

6 So that we coulde not but desire Titus to accomplyshe ye same grace among you also, euen as he had begun.

B

7 Nowe therefore as ye are riche in all thinges, in fayth, in worde, in knowledge, in all feruentnesse, and in loue, which ye haue to vs: euen so, see that ye be plenteous in this grace also.

8 This say I not by commaundement, but because of ye feruentnesse of [Note: Or reade, but through the feruentnesse of other, prouoking also the perfectnesse of your loue. ] other, & allowing the vnfaynednes of your loue.

9 For ye knowe the grace of our Lorde Iesus Christ, that though he was [Note: Rom.x.a. ] rich, yet for your sakes he became poore, that ye through his pouertie might be made rich.

10 And I geue counsell hereto: For this is expedient for you, which haue begun not to do only, but also to wil a yere ago.

11 Nowe therefore perfourme the thyng which ye began to do: that as ther was in you a redines to wyll, euen so ye may performe ye dede [Note: i.Pet.iiii.c. ] of that which ye haue.

12 For [Note: Prou.iii.b. Mark.xii.d. Luk.xxi.a. ] if there be first a wylling mynde, it is accepted accordyng to that a man hath, and not accordyng to that he hath not.

C

13 Truly, not that other be set at ease, & ye brought into combraunce:

14 But that there be equalnesse nowe at this tyme, and that your aboundaunce may succour their lacke, and that their aboundaunce maye supplie your lacke, that there may be equalitie.

15 As it written: [Note: Exod.xvi.d ] He that had much, had not the more aboundaunce, and he that had litle, had not the lesse.

16 Thankes be vnto God, which put the same good mynde for you in the heart of Titus,

17 Because he accepted the exhortation, yea rather he was so well wylling, that of his owne accorde he came vnto you.

D

18 We haue sent with hym that brother [Note: [b] In preaching the Gospell. Some vnderstande Luke. Other, Barnabas. ] whose praise is in the Gospell through out all the Churches.

19 (And not that only, but is also chosen of the Churches to be a felowe with vs in our iourney, concernyng this grace that is ministred by vs vnto the glorie of the same Lorde, and to stirre vp your redie mynde)

20 For this we eschewe, that any man shoulde rebuke vs in this plenteous distribution that is [Note: Rom.xii.c. ] ministred by vs:

21 And make prouisio for [Note: [c] His well doynge is approued before God & man. ] honest thinges, not only in the syght of the Lorde, but also in the syght of men.

22 We haue sent with them a brother of ours, whom we haue oftentimes proued diligent in many thinges, but nowe much more diligent, for the great confidence [whiche I haue] in you:

23 Partly for Titus sake, which is my felowe & helper concernyng you: partly because of other which are our brethren and the messengers of the Churches, [and] the glorie of Christe.

24 Wherefore shewe ye vnto them ye profe of your loue, & of our [Note: i.Thes.i.d. ] reioycyng of you in the syght of the Churches.

[Page]

## ¶ The .ix. Chapter.

3 The cause of Titus and his companions commyng to them. 6 He exhortheth to geue almes chearefully, 7 shewyng what fruites wyll come therof.

A

1 **Of** the [Note: Actes.xi.d. i Cor.xvi.a. ii Cor.viii.a. Rom.xv.f. ] ministryng to the saintes, it is but superfluous for me to write vnto you:

2 For I knowe the redinesse of your mynde, whereof I boast my selfe of you, vnto them of Macedonia, that Achaia was prepared a yere a go: and your zeale hath prouoked many.

3 Yet haue I sent the brethren, lest our boastyng which I make of you, should be in vayne in this behalfe, that ye (as I haue sayde) may prepare your selues.

4 Lest yf they of Macedonia come with me, and fynde you vnprepared, we (I wyll not say you) shoulde be ashamed in this matter of boastyng.

B

5 Therefore, I thought it necessarie to exhorth the brethren, to come beforehand vnto you, and to prepare your good blessing promised afore, that it myght be redy, so that it be as a blessing, and not a defraudyng.

6 < This yet [I say] he which soweth litle, shall reape litle: and [Note: Prou.xi.d. Galath. vi.b ] he that soweth in geuyng largely and freely, shall reape plenteouslie.

7 Let euery man do, accordyng as he hath purposed in his heart, not grudgyngly, or of necessitie: [Note: Exo.xxv.a. Eccle.35.a. ] For God loueth a chearefull geuer.

C

8 God is able to make you riche in all grace, that ye in all thynges hauyng sufficient vnto the vtmost, may be riche vnto all maner of good workes,

- 9 As it is written: [Note: Psal.cxii.b. ] He hath [Note: [a] Daudid speaketh of ye man which feareth God. and loueth his neyghbour. ] sparsed abroad, and hath geuen to the poore, his ryghteousnesse remayneth for euer.
- 10 He that ministreth seede vnto ye sower, ministreth bread also for foode, and multiplieth your seede, and encreaseth the frutes of your ryghteousnesse: >
- 11 That in all thynges ye may be made riche into all singleness, which causeth through vs, that thankes are geuen vnto God.  
D
- 12 For the administration of this seruice, not only supplieth ye neede of the saintes: but also is aboundaunt by the thankes geuyng of many vnto God,
- 13 Which by the experiment of this ministration, prayse God for the obedience of your consentyng to the Gospell of Christe, and for your singleness in distributyng to them, and to all men:
- 14 And by their prayers for you, which [Note: Or, are greatly affectioned toward you. ] long after you, for the aboundaunt grace of God in you.
- 15 Thankes be vnto God, for his vnspeakeable gyft.

## ¶ The .x. Chapter.

- 1 He toucheth the false Apostles, and defendeth his auctoritie, exhortyng them to obedience: 11 And sheweth what his power is, 13 and howe he vseth it.  
A
- 1 **I Paul** my selfe beseche you by the mekenesse & gentlenesse of Christ, whiche when I am present among you, am lowlye: but am bolde towarde you beyng absent.
- 2 I beseche you, that I neede not to be bolde when I am present, with that same boldnesse, wherwith I am supposed to haue ben bolde, agaynst some, which repute vs as though we walked accordyng to the fleshe.
- 3 For though we walke in the fleshe, yet we do not warre according to ye flesh.  
B
- 4 [Note: Ephe.vi.c. ] For the weapons of our warfare are not carnall, but myghtie through God, to cast downe strong holdes,
- 5 Wherwith we ouerthrowe counsels, and euery hie thyng, that is exalted agaynst the knowledge of God, & bryng into captiuitie all imagination, to the obedience of Christe,
- 6 And are readie to take vengeance on all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7 Loke ye on thynges after the vtter appearaunce? If any man trust in hym selfe that he is Christes, let hym consider this agayne of hym selfe, that as he [is] of Christe, euen so [are] we of Christe.

[Page]

8 For though I shoulde boast my selfe somewhat more of our auctoritie, which the Lorde hath geuen to vs [Note: ii Cor.xiii.c ] for edification, and not for your destruction, it shal not be to my shame:

9 Lest I should seeme as though I wet about to make you afrayde by letters.

10 For the [Note: [b] Meaning a certayne ma among them, which thus spake of Paul. ] letters sayth he, are sore and strong: but his bodyly presence is weake, and his speache rude.

11 Let hym that is such, thynke on this wise: that as we are in worde by letters, when we are absent, such are we in deede when we are present.

D

12 For we dare not make our selues of the number of them, or to compare our selues to them which praise themselues. Neuerthelesse, whyle they measure them selues, with them selues, and compare them selues with them selues, they vnderstande not.

13 But we wyll not reioyce aboue measure: but accordyng to the [Note: [c] That is, the giftes and vocation which God had geuen hym to wynne others by. ] measure of the rule, which God hath distributed vnto vs, a measure to reache euen vnto you.

14 For we stretch not out our selues beyonde measure, as though we reached not vnto you: For euen to you also haue we come with the Gospell of Christe:

15 And we boast not our selues out of measure in other mens labours: Yea, and we hope, when your fayth is increased among you, to be magnified accordyng to our measure aboundantly,

16 And that I shall preache the Gospell, in those [regions] which [are] beyonde you: and not to glorie of those thynges, which by another mans measure are prepared alreedy.

17 But let hym that glorieth, glorie in the Lorde.

18 For he that prayseth hymselfe, is not alowed, but whom the Lorde prayseth.

## ¶ The .xj. Chapter.

2 He declareth his affection towarde them. 5 The excellencie of his ministerie, 9 and his diligence in the same. 13 The fetches of the false Apostles. 16 The peruerse iudgement of the Corinthians. 22 And his owne prayses.

A

1 **Would** to God ye coulde haue suffred me a litle in my foolishnesse: and in dede ye do forbear me.



2 For I am gelous ouer you, with Godly gelousie: For I haue coupled you to one man, to present [you] a chaste virgin vnto Christe.

3 But I feare lest by any meanes, that as the serpent [Note: Gen.iii.a. ] begyled Eue through his subtiltie, euen so your myndes shoulde be corrupted fro the singleness that is towarde Christe.

4 For yf he that commeth, preacheth another [Note: [a] That is, more perfect doctrine concerning christ Iesus. ] Iesus, whom we haue not preached: or yf ye receaue another spirite whom ye haue not receaued: either another Gospell which ye haue not receaued, you woulde well haue suffered [hym].

B

5 Ueryly I suppose that I was not behynde the chiefe Apostles.

6 But though [I be] rude in speakyng, yet not in knowledge, but in all thynges among you, we haue ben well knowen to the vtmost.

7 Dyd I sinne because I submitted my selfe, that ye myght be exalted, & because I preached to you the Gospell of God freely?

8 I robbed other Churches, takyng wages of them, to do you seruice.

9 And when I was present with you, and had nede, [Note: Actes.xx.g ii Cor.xii.d. ] I was chargeable to no man: for that which was lackyng vnto me, the brethren which came from Macedonia supplied, and in all thynges I haue kept my selfe so that I shoulde not be chargeable to any man, and [so] wyll I kepe my selfe.

10 [Note: [b] Let not the trueth of Christe be thought to be in me, yf I suffer my ioy to be shut vp, which I haue conceaued of Grecia. ] The trueth of Christe is in me, that this reioycyng shall not be shut vp agaynst me in the regions of Achaia.

11 Wherefore? Because I loue you not? God knoweth.

C

12 But what I do, that wyll I do, to cut away occasion from them which desire occasion, that they myght be founde lyke vnto vs, in yt wherin they gloried.

13 For such false Apostles [are] disceiptfull workers, transfourmed into ye Apostles of Christe.

14 And no maruayle, for Satan himselfe is transfourmed into an angel of lyght.

[Page]

15 Therefore it is no great thyng though his ministers be transfourmed as the ministers of righteousnesse, whose ende shalbe accordyng to their workes.

D

16 I say agayne, let no man thynke that I am foolyshe: or els euen nowe take ye me as a foole, that I also may boast my selfe a litle.

17 That I speake, I speake it not after the [Note: [c] In his earth, he had respect to the Lorde: but this fashion of

boastyng seemed according to man, whervnto they compelled hym. ] Lorde: but as it were foolishly, in this maner of boastyng.

18 Seyng that many glorie after ye fleshe, I wyll glorie also. >

19 For ye suffer fooles gladly, seyng ye your selues are wyse.

20 For ye suffer, yf a man bryng you into bondage, yf a man deuoure, yf a man take, yf a man exalt hym selfe, yf a man smite you on the face.

21 I speake concernyng reproche, as though we had ben weake: Howbeit, wherin soeuer any man is bolde, (I speake foolishly) I am bolde also.

E

22 [Note: Philip.iii.a. ] They are Ebrues, euen so am I. They are Israelites, euen so am I. They are the seede of Abraham, euen so am I.

23 They are the ministers of Christe, (I speake as a foole) I am more: in labours more abundant, in stripes aboue measure, in pryson more plenteouslie, in death [Note: [d] In the present daunger of death. ] oft.

24 [Note: Deut.xxv.a ] Of the Iewes fyue tymes receaued I fourtie [stripes] saue one.

25 [Note: Actes xvi.c Actes xiii.c Actes.27.g. ] Thryse was I beaten with rodde, once stoned, thrise I suffred shipwracke, nyght and day haue I ben in ye depth:

26 In iourneyng often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils of myne owne nation, in perils among the heathen, [Note: Actes.x.d. ] in perils in the cite, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren,

27 In labour & trauayle, in watchinges often, in hunger and thirst, in fastinges often, in colde and nakednesse,

28 Besides the thynges which outwardlye come vnto me: my dayly encombraunce [is] the care of all the Churches.

29 [Note: i Cor.ix.d. ] Who is weake, and I am not weake? who is offended, and I burne not?

30 If I must needes glory, I wyll glory of the thynges that concerne myne infirmities.

31 The God and father of our Lorde Iesus Christe, which is blessed for euermore, knoweth that I lye not.

32 < In [the cite of] Damascus, Aretas the kynges gouernour of the people, layde watche in the cite of the Damascens, and woulde haue caught me:

33 And [Note: Actes.ix.d. ] at a wyndowe was I let downe in a basket through the wall, and scaped his handes.

## ¶ The .xij. Chapter.

1 He reioyceth in preferment, 5 but chiefly in his humblenesse, 11 and layeth the cause of his boasting vpon the Corinthians, 14 he sheweth what good wil he beareth them, 20 and promiseth to come vnto them.

A

1 It is not expedient doubtles, for me to glorie, I wyl come to visions & reuelations of the Lorde.

2 For I knew a ma in [Note: [a] That is, Christian, or, I speake it in Christe. ] Christe, aboue xiiij. yeres ago, (whether [he were] in the body I can not tell, or whether [he were] out of the body, I can not tell, God knoweth) that he was taken vp into the thirde [Note: [b] That is to say, into the highest heauen. ] heauen:

3 And I knewe the same man (whether in the body or out of the body, I can not tell, God knoweth)

4 Howe that he was take vp into [Note: [c] Mans infirmitie was not able to declare them. neither were they shewed vnto hym for that ende. ] paradise, & hearde vnspeakeable wordes, which is not lawfull for man to vtter.

B

5 Of such a man wyll I glorie, yet of my selfe wyll I not glorie, but in myne infirmities.

6 For though I woulde desire to glorie, I shall not be a foole, for I wyll say the trueth: but I nowe refrayne, lest any man shoulde thynke of me, aboue that which he seeth me to be, or yt he heareth of me.

7 And [Note: Iohn.ii.b. ] lest I shoulde be exalted out of measure through the aboundaunce of the reuelations, there was geuen vnto me a pricke to the fleshe, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, because I should not be exalted out of measure.

8 For this thyng besought I the Lorde thryse, that it myght depart from me.

[Page] c

9 And he sayde vnto me: My grace is sufficient for thee. For my strength is made perfect in weakenesse. Most gladly therefore, I wyll rather glorie in my infirmities, that the power of Christ myght dwell in me.

10 Therefore haue I delectation in infirmities, in rebukes, in necessities, in persecutions, in anguishes for Christes sake: For when I am weake, then am I strong.

11 I am become a foole [in] gloriyng. Ye haue compelled me: for I ought to haue ben commended of you. [Note: i Cor.ix.a. ] For nothyng was I inferiour vnto the chiefe Apostles, though I be nothyng,

12 Truely the signes of an Apostle were wrought among you, in all patience, and signes, and wonders, and myghtie deedes.

D

13 For what is it, wherin ye were inferiour vnto other Churches, except [it be] that I was not chargeable

vnto you? Forgeue me this wrong.

14 Beholde, nowe the thirde tyme I am redy to come vnto you, and yet wyll I not be chargeable vnto you: For [Note: Act.xx.g. ii Cor.xi.c. Eccle.46.c. i Reg.xii.a. ] I seke not yours, but you. For the children ought not to lay vp for the fathers and mothers: but the fathers and mothers for the chyldren.

15 I wyll very gladly bestowe, & wylbe bestowed for your sakes, though the more aboundantly I loue you, the lesse I am loued agayne.

E

16 But be it, [that] I was not chargeable vnto you: [Note: [d] Thus sayde his aduersaries that though he toke it not by hym selfe, yet he dyd it by the meanes of others. ] Neuerthelesse, when I was craftie, I caught you with guile.

17 Dyd I pyll you by any of them who I sent vnto you?

18 I desired Titus, and with hym I sent a brother: Dyd Titus defraude you of any thyng? Haue we not walked in the same spirite? not in the same steppes?

19 Agayne, thynke you that we excuse our selues vnto you? We speake in Christ in the syght of God: but [we do] all thinges dearely beloued, for your edifyng.

20 For I feare lest when I come, I shall not fynde you such as I woulde: and that I shalbe founde vnto you, such as ye woulde not: lest there be [Note: Galath.v.d. ] debates, enuynges, wrathes, strifes, backbitinges, whisperinges, swellinges, & seditions:

21 And that when I come agayne, my God bryng me lowe among you, and I shall bewayle many of the which haue sinned alreedy, and haue not repented of the [Note: i Cor.v.a. ] vncleannesse, and fornication, and wantonnes, which they haue comitted.

## ¶ The .xiiij. Chapter.

1 He threatneth the obstinate, 5 And declareth what his power is by their owne testimonie. 10 Also he sheweth what is the effect of this Epistle. 11 After, hauyng exhorted them to their duetie, he wissheth them all prosperitie.

A

1 **Nowe** come I the third time vnto you. [Note: Deu.xix.d. Mat.xviii.c Iohn.viii.c. Hebr.x.f. ] In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall euery worde be stablISHED.

2 I tolde you before, and tell you before, as though I had ben present with you the seconde tyme, so write I nowe beyng absent, to them which in time past haue sinned, and to all other, that yf I come agayne, I wyll not spare,

3 Seyng yt ye seeke experience of Christe [Note: Math.x.d. ] which speaketh in me, which to you ward is

not weake, but is mighty in you.

4 For though he was crucified of weakenesse, yet liueth he of the power of God. And we no doubt, are weake in hym: but we shall lyue with hym, by ye might of God towarde you.

B

5 [Note: i Cor.xi.f. Eccle.18.c. ] Examine your selues, whether ye are in the fayth: Proue your owne selues. Knowe ye not your owne selues, howe that Iesus Christe is in you? except ye be reprobates.

6 I trust ye shal knowe that we are not reprobates.

C

7 Truely I pray to God that ye do none euyll, not that we shoulde seeme approued: but yt ye shoulde do that which is honest, though we be as [Note: [a] In that he humbled hym selfe, and toke vpon hym ye fourme of a seruaunt. ] reprobates.

8 For we can do nothyng agaynst the trueth: but for the trueth.

9 For we are glad when we are weake, and ye are strong. Truely this also we wishe, euen your perfection.

10 Therefore write I these thynges beyng absent, lest when I am present, I should vse sharpenesse, accordyng to the power [Note: ii Cor.x.c. ] which the Lorde hath geuen me to edification, and not to destruction.

11 Finally brethren, fare well, be perfect, [Page] be of good comfort, be of one mynde, lyue in peace, and the God of loue and peace shalbe with you.

12 [Note: i.Cor.xvi.f. ] Greeete one another in an holy kisse. All the saintes salute you.

13 The grace of our Lorde Iesus Christ, and the loue of God, and the comunion of the holy ghost, be with you all. Ame.

**¶ The ende of the seconde Epistle to the Corinthians. Sent from Philippos, a citie in Macedonia, by Titus and Lucas.**

***The Epistle of the Apostle Saint Paul, to the Galathians.***

## ¶ The first Chapter.

¶ 6 Paul rebuketh their inconstancie, which suffred them selues to be seduced by the false apostles, who preached that the obseruation of the ceremonies of the lawe were necessarie to saluation, 18 and detesteth them that preache any otherwyse then Christe purely. 13 He sheweth his owne conuersation, magnifieth his office and Apostleshyp, and declareth hym selfe to be equall with the chiefe Apostles.

A

1 **Paul** an Apostle, not of men, neither by man: but by Iesus Christe, and by God the father, which rayseed hym vp from death:

2 And all the brethren which are with me. Unto ye Churches of Galacia:

3 [Note: Rom.i.a. i Cor.i.a. ii Cor.i.a. ] Grace [be] with you, and peace from God the father, and from our Lorde Iesus Christe:

4 Which gaue hym selfe for our sinnes, to deliuer vs from this [Note: [a] Which is, the corrupte lyfe of man without Christe. ] present euyll worlde, accordyng to the wyll of God, and our father:

5 To whom be glory for euer and euer. Amen.

6 I maruayle, that ye are so soone turned from him that had called you in the grace of Christe, vnto another Gospell:

7 Which is not another [Gospel] but that there be some which trouble you, and [Note: Actes.xv.a. ] intende to peruert the Gospel of Christ.

8 Neuerthesse, though we, or an Angel from heauen, preache any other Gospell vnto you, then that which we haue preached vnto you, let hym be accursed.

B

9 As we sayde before, so say I nowe agayne, yf any man preache any other Gospell vnto you, then that ye haue receaued, let hym be accursed.

10 Do I nowe perswade men, or God? Other do I seke to please men? [Note: Iohn.31.d. ] For yf I shoulde yet please men, I were not the seruaunt of Christe.

C

11 < I certifie you brethren, that the Gospell which was preached of me, was not after man.

12 For I neither receaued it of man, neither was I taught [it] but by the reuelation of Iesus Christe.

13 For ye haue hearde of my conuersation in tyme past in the Iewes religion, howe that beyonde measure [Note: Actes.viii.a ] I persecuted the Church of God, & spoyled it:

14 And profited in the Iewes religion, aboue many of my companions in mine owne nation, [Note: i Cor.xv.b. Philip.iii.a. ] beyng a very feruent maynteyner of the [Note: [b] That is, of the lawe of God, whiche was geuen to the auncient fathers. ] traditions of my fathers.

15 But when it pleased God, which seperated me from my mothers wombe, & [Note: Actes.ix.c. ] called [me] by his grace,

16 To reueale his sonne by me, that I shoulde by the Gospell preache hym among the Heathen: immediatly I communed not with [Note: Math.xvi.c ] [Note: [c] That is, with any ma, as though I had neede of his counsel to approue my doctrine. ] fleshe and blood:

17 Neither returned to Hierusalem, to them which were Apostles before me: but went my wayes into Arabia, and came agayne vnto Damascus.

D  
18 Then after three yeres, I returned to Hierusale to see Peter, and abode with hym fyfteene dayes.

19 But other of the Apostles sawe I none, saue Iames the Lordes brother.

20 The thynges therefore which I write vnto you, beholde, before God I lie not.

21 [Note: Act.xxii.d. ] Afterwarde, I came into the coastes [Page] of Syria & Cilicia, and was vnknownen in face vnto the Churches of Iurie, which were in Christe.

22 But they had hearde only, that he which persecuted vs in tyme past, nowe preacheth the [Note: [d] That is, the Gospell, which is the doctrine of fayth. ] fayth, which before he destroyed.

23 And they glorified God in me. >

## ¶ The .ij. Chapter.

1 Confirmyng his Apostleshyp to be of God, 3 he sheweth why Titus was not circumcised, 6 and that he is nothyng inferiour to other Apostles, 11 Yea, and that he hath reprobued Peter, the Apostle of the Iewes. 16 After, he commeth to the principal scope, which is, to proue that iustification only commeth of the grace of God by fayth in Iesus Christe, and not by the workes of the lawe.

A  
1 **Then** fourteene yeres after, I went vp agayne to Hierusalem [Note: Actes.xv.a. ] with Barnabas, and toke Titus with me.

2 I went vp also by reuelation, & I declared vnto them the Gospel which I preache among the gentiles: but priuately, with them which were the chiefe, lest by any meanes, I shoulde runne or had runne in vayne.

3 But neither Titus which was with me, beyng a Greke, was compelled to be circumcised,

4 And that because of incommers, being false brethren, which came in priuily, to spye out our libertie

which we haue in Christe Iesu, that they myght bryng vs into bondage.

5 To whom, no not for an houre, we gaue place by subiection, that the trueth of the Gospel might continue with you.

B

6 Of them which seemed to be somewhat (what they [Note: [a] Albeit they had ben conuersant with Christe afore tyme. ] were in time passed, it maketh no matter to me, God accepteth no mans person) for they which seemed chiefe, [Note: That is, they taught me not: but approued my doctrine perfecte in all poyntes. ] added nothing [to me.]

7 But contrary wyse, when they sawe that the Gospell of the vncircumcision was committed vnto me, as the Gospel of the circumcision was committed vnto Peter.

8 (For he that was myghtie in Peter, to the Apostleshyp of the circumcision, the same was myghtie in me towarde the gentiles)

9 When they perceaued the grace that was geuen vnto me, then Iames, Cephas, and Iohn, which seemed to be pyllers, gaue to me and Barnabas the ryght handes of felowshyppe, that we [shoulde be Apostles] vnto the Heathen, and they vnto the circumcision.

10 Onely that we shoulde remember the poore: [Note: Actes xi.d. ii Cor.ix.a. ] Wherin also I was diligent to do the same.

C

11 But whe Peter was come to Antioche, I withstoode him [Note: [b] Meaning before all men. ] to the face, because he was to be blamed.

12 For yer yt certaine came from Iames, he dyd eate with the gentiles: But whe they were come, he withdrue, and seperated himselfe, fearing them which were of the circumcision.

13 And the other Iewes dissembled lykewyse with hym: insomuch that Barnabas also was brought into their simulation.

14 But when I sawe that they went not the ryght way to the trueth of the Gospel, I saide vnto Peter before them all: If thou beyng a Iewe, lyuest after the maner of the gentiles, and not as do the Iewes: Why causest thou the gentiles to lyue as do the Iewes?

15 We [which are] [Note: Philip.iii.a. ] Iewes by nature, and not [Note: [c] For so the Iewes called the gentiles in reproche. ] sinners of the gentiles,

16 Knowe that a man [Note: Rom.iii.c. ] is not iustified by the deedes of the lawe, but by the fayth of Iesus Christe: And we haue beleued on Iesus Christ, that we might be iustified by the fayth of Christe, and not by the deedes of the lawe, because by the deedes of the lawe no fleshe shalbe iustified.

17 If then, whyle we seke to be made ryghteous by Christe, we our selues are founde sinners: is therfore Christe the minister of sinne? God forbyd.



18 For yf I bulde agayne the thynges which I destroyed, then make I my selfe a trespasser.

19 For I, through the lawe, am dead to the lawe, that I myght lyue vnto God: I am crucified with Christe.

20 Neuerthesse, I lyue: yet nowe not I, but Christe lyueth in me. And ye lyfe [Page] which I nowe liue in the fleshe, I lyue by the faith of the sonne of God, [Note: Ephe.v.a. ] which loued me, and gaued hym selfe for me.

21 I reiect not the grace of God: For [Note: Rom.iiii.c. ] yf ryghteousnesse come of the lawe, then Christe is dead in vayne.

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

1 He rebuketh them sharply, 2 and proueth by dyuers reasons, that iustification is by fayth, 6 as appeareth by the example of Abraham, 10, 19, 24, and by the office, and the ende both of the lawe, 11. 25. and of fayth.

A

1 **O foolish** Galathians, who hath bewitched you, that ye shoulde not obey ye trueth? To whom Iesus Christe was [Note: [a] To who Christe was so liuely preached, as yf his liuely image were set before your eyes, or els had ben crucified among you. ] described before the eyes, & among you crucified.

2 This only woulde I learne of you, whether ye receaued the spirite by the deedes of the lawe, or by the hearyng of the fayth?

3 Are ye such fooles, that after ye haue begun in the spirite, ye woulde nowe ende in the fleshe?

4 Haue ye suffered so great thynges in vayne? Yf it be yet in vayne.

5 He therefore that ministreth to you the spirite, and worketh miracles among you, doth he it through the deedes of the lawe, or by hearyng of the fayth?

6 [Note: Gen.xv.b. Rom.iiii.a. Iames.ii.d. ] Euen as Abraham beleued God, & it was ascribed to hym for righteousnesse.

7 Knowe ye therefore, that they which are of fayth, the same are the chyldren of Abraham.

B

8 For the scripture seyng aforehande that God woulde iustifie the Heathen through fayth, shewed beforehand glad tydynges vnto Abraham, [saying]: [Note: Gen.xii.a. and .xxii.b. ] In thee shall all nations be blessed.

9 So then, they which be of fayth, are blessed with the faythfull Abraham.

10 For as many as are of the [Note: [b] Whiche thynke to be iustified by them. ] deedes of the lawe, are vnder the curse. For it is writte: [Note: Deut.27.d. ] Cursed is euery one that continueth not in all thinges which are written in the booke of the lawe, to do them.

11 But that no man is iustified by ye lawe in the sight of God, it is euident. [Note: Abacuc.ii.a Rom.xx.c. ] For the iust shall lyue by fayth.

12 And the lawe is not of fayth: [Note: Hebre.x.g. Leuit.28.a. Ezech.xx.b Rom.x.a. ] but the man that doth them, shall lyue in them.

13 Christe hath redeemed vs from the curse of the lawe, beyng made a curse for vs. For it is written: [Note: Deut.xxi.d ] Cursed is euery one that hangeth on tree:

C

14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the gentiles through Iesus Christe, that we myght receaue the promise of the spirite through fayth.

15 Brethren, [Note: [c] I wyll vse a common example, that you may be ashamed to attribute lesse vnto God, the to such couenantes, which one man maketh to another. ] I speake after ye maner of men: Though it be but a mans testamet, yet if it be alowed, no man reiecteth it, or addeth therto.

16 < To Abraham and his seede were the promises made. He sayth not to the seedes, as of many: but to thy seede, as of one, which is Christe.

17 This I say, that the lawe which began afterwarde, beyonde [Note: Gen.xv.d. Exod.xii.f. Iudith.v.b. Actes.vii.a. ] foure hundred and thirtie yeres, doth not disanull the testament that was confirmed afore of God, vnto Christe warde, to make the promise of none effect.

18 [Note: Rom.iii.c. ] For yf the inheritaunce be of the lawe, then not nowe of promise: But God gaue it vnto Abraham by promise.

19 Wherefore then [serueth] the lawe? [Note: Rom.v.c. ] It was added because of transgressions, tyl the seede came to whom the promise was made: and it was ordayned [Note: Act.vii.g. ] by Angels in the hande of a mediatour.

20 A mediatour is not [a mediatour] of one, but God is [Note: [d] Constant, and alwayes lyke him selfe. ] one.

21 [Note: Rom.vii.c. i Tim.i.b. ] Is the lawe then against the promise of God? God forbyd. For yf there had ben a lawe geuen which coulde haue geuen life: then no doubt righteousnesse shoulde haue ben by the lawe.

22 But the scripture hath concluded all vnder sinne, that the promise by ye fayth of Iesus Christe shoulde be geuen vnto them that beleue. >

23 But before fayth came, we were kept vnder the lawe, and were shut vp vnto the fayth which shoulde afterwarde be reuealed.

D

24 Wherefore, the lawe was our scholemaister vnto Christe, that we shoulde be iustified by fayth.

25 But after that fayth is come, we are no longer vnder a scholemaister.

26 For ye are all the chyldren of God by [Page] fayth in Christe Iesu.

27 For [Note: Some reade, all ye that are baptized into Christe, haue put on Christ. ] all ye that are baptized, haue put on Christe.

28 There is no Iewe, neither Greke, there is neither bonde nor free, there is neither male, nor female: For ye are all one in Christe Iesu.

29 If [ye be] Christes, then are ye Abrahams seede, and heyres accordyng to the promise.

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

2 He sheweth wherfore the ceremonies were ordayned, which beyng shadowes, must ende, when Christe the trueth commeth. 9 He moueth them by certayne exhortations, 22 and confirmeth his argument with a strong example or allegorie.

A

1 < **And** I say, that the heyre, as long as he is a chylde, differeth nothyng from a seruaut, though he be Lorde of all,

2 But is vnder tuters and gouernours, vntyll the tyme appoynted of the father.

3 Euen so we, when we were chyldren, were in bondage vnder ye [Note: That is, the law, whiche before he called a scoole maister. ] rudimentes of the worlde:

4 But when the fulnesse of the tyme was come, God [Note: Luk.xx.b. Iohn.iii.b. Rom.viii.a. ] sent his sonne, made of a woman, and made vnder the lawe,

5 To redeeme them that were vnder the lawe, that we myght receaue the adoption of chyldren.

6 Because ye are sonnes, [Note: Rom.viii.c. ] God hath sent the [Note: [a] For our adoption vnto Christe, is sealed by hym. ] spirite of his sonne into your heartes, crying, [Note: [b] He instructeth both Iewes and Gentiles, to call God their father in euerie language, so that none are excepted. ] Abba, father.

7 Wherefore thou art no more a seruaut, but a sonne: If thou be a sonne, thou art also an heire of God, through Christ.

8 Notwithstandyng, when ye [Note: [c] When ye receaued the Gospell, ye were idolaters, therefore it is shame for you to refuse libertie, and become seruantes, yea, and seyng the Iewes desire to be out of their tutleship ] knewe not God,

ye dyd seruice vnto the which by nature are no Gods.

9 But nowe after that ye haue knowen God, yea, rather are knowen of God, howe turne ye agayne vnto the weake and beggarly rudimentes, whervnto againe ye desire a freshe to be in bondage?

10 Ye obserue dayes, and monethes, and tymes, and yeres.

B

11 I am in feare of you, lest I haue bestowed on you labour in vayne.

12 Brethren, I besech you be as I [am] for I am as ye are. Ye haue not iniured me at all.

13 Ye knowe howe through infirmitie of the fleshe, I preached the Gospell vnto you at the first:

14 [Note: [d] That is, the troubles and vexations which God sent to try me whyle I was among you. ] And my temptation which was in my fleshe, ye dispised not, neither abhorred: but receaued me as an Angel of God, euen as Christe Iesus.

15 What is then your felicitie? For I beare you recorde, that yf it had ben possible, ye woulde haue plucked out your owne eyes, and haue geuen them to me.

C

16 Am I therefore become your enemie, because I tell you the trueth?

17 They are gelouse ouer you [Note: [e] For they are but ambitious. ] amisse: Yea, they intende to exclude [Note: [f] They woulde turne you from me, yt you myght folowe them. ] you, that ye shoulde be feruent to them warde.

18 It is good alwayes to be zelous in a good thyng, and not only when I am present with you

19 My litle chyldren, of whom I trauayle in birth agayne, vntyll Christe be [Note: [g] And imprinted so in your heartes, that ye loue none other. ] fashioned in you.

20 But I desire to be present with you nowe, and to chaunge my voyce: for I stande in doubt of you.

21 Tell me, ye that desire to be vnder the lawe, do ye not heare the lawe?

22 < For it is written, that Abraham had two sonnes, [Note: Gen.xvi.a. Gen.xxi.a. ] the one by a bonde mayde, [Note: Hebr.xi.a. ] the other by a free woman:

23 But he which was of the bonde woman, was borne after the fleshe: but he which was of the free woman, [was borne] by promise.

24 Which thynges are spoken by [Note: [h] By an allegorie, that is another thyng is meant. ] an allegorie. For these are two testamentes: the one from the mount Sina, which gendreth vnto bondage, which is Agar.

25 For Agar is the mount Sina in Arabia, and bordreth vpon the citie, which is nowe [called] Hierusalem, and is in bondage with her chyldren.

D

26 **But** [Note: Apo.xxi.a. ] Hierusalem which is aboue, is free: which is the mother of vs all.

27 For it is written: [Note: Esai.liiii.a. ] Reioyce thou baren, that bearest no chyldren, breake foorth and crye, thou that trauaylest not: For the desolate hath many mo chyldren, then she which hath an husbände.  
[Page]

28 **But** brethren, we are after Isaac the chyldren of promise.

29 **But** as then he that was borne after the fleshe, persecuted hym that was borne after the spirite: euen so is it now.

30 Neuerthelesse, what saith the scripture? [Note: Gen.xxi.b. ] put away the bondwoman and her sonne: For the sonne of the bondwoman, shall not be heire with the sonne of the free woman.

31 So then brethren, we are not chyldren of the bonde woman, but of the free. >

### The .v. Chapter.

2 He laboureth to drawe them away from circumcision, 17 and sheweth them the battell betwixt the spirite and the fleshe, and the fruites of them both.

A

1 **Stande** fast therefore in the libertie wherwith Christe hath made vs free, and be not intangled agayne with ye yoke [Note: Esaias.ix.a. ] of bondage.

2 Beholde I Paul saye vnto you, that [Note: Act.xxv.a. ] yf ye be [Note: [a] For we are in the Church of Christ, which is our mother: and not of the synagogue, which is seruaunt vnder the lawe. ] , circumcised Christe shall profite you nothyng.

3 For I testifie agayne to euery man which is circumcised, that he is a detter to do the whole lawe.

4 Christe is become but vayne to you, as many of you as are iustified by the lawe, are fallen from grace.

5 For we through the spirite, wayte for the hope of ryghteousnes by fayth.

6 [Note: Galath.vi.a. ] For in Iesus Christe, neither is circumcision any thing woorth, neither yet vncircumcision: but fayth, [Note: i.Cor.xiii.a. ] which worketh by loue.

7 Ye dyd runne well, who was a let vnto you, that ye should not obey ye trueth?

8 Not the perfection of hym that called you.

B

9 [Note: i.Cor.v.a. ] A litle leauen, doth leauen the whole lumpe of dowe.

10 < I haue truste towarde you in the Lorde, that ye wyll be none otherwyse mynded: But he that troubleth you, shall beare iudgement, whatsoeuer he be.

11 And brethren, if I yet preache circumcision, why do I yet suffer persecution? Then is the slauder of the crosse ceased.

12 I woulde to God they were cut of which trouble you.

13 For brethren, ye haue ben called into libertie: Only [Note: Rom.xiii.a. i.Cor.viii.a. ] let not libertie be an occasio to the flesshe, but by loue serue one another.

14 For all the lawe is fulfilled in one worde, which is this: [Note: Mat.xxii.d Mark.xii.c. Leuit.xix.d Rom.xiii.c. Iacob.ii.b. ] Thou shalt loue thy neyghbour as thy selfe.

15 Yf ye byte and deuoure one another, take heede lest ye be consumed one of another. >  
C

16 < Then I say, walke in the spirite, and ye shall not fulfill the lust of the flesshe.

17 For the flesshe lusteth contrary to the spirite, [Note: Mat.xxvi b ] and the spirite contrary to the flesshe. These are contrary one to the other, so that ye can not do what ye woulde.

18 But and yf ye be ledde of the spirite, then are ye not vnder the lawe.

19 The deedes of the flesshe are manifest, which are these, adulterie, fornication, vncleannesse, wantonnesse,

20 Worshipping of images, witchcrafte, hatred, variaunce, zeale, wrath, strife, seditions, sectes,  
D

21 Enuyinges, murthers, drunkennesse, gluttonies, and such lyke: of the whiche I tell you before, as I haue tolde you in tyme past, that [Note: i.Cor.vi.b. Ephe.v.a. ] they which do suche thinges, shall not inherite the kingdome of God.

22 But the fruite of the spirite is, loue, ioye, peace, long sufferyng, gentlenesse, goodnesse, fayth,

23 Mekenesse, temperauncie: [Note: i.Tim.i.b. ] agaynst such there is no lawe.

24 They truely that are Christes, [Note: [b] Christe hath not only remitted their sinnes, but sanctified the into newnesse of lyfe. ] haue crucified the flesshe, with the affections and lustes. >

25 < Yf we lyue in ye spirite, let vs walke in the spirite.

26 Let vs not be desirous of vayne glorie, prouoking one another, enuying one another.  
[Page]

## ¶ The .vj. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth them to vse gentlenesse towarde the weake, 2 and to shewe their brotherly loue and modestie, 6 also to prouide for their ministers, 9 to perseuer, 14 to reioyce in the crosse of Christe, 15 to newnesse of lyfe, 16 and last of all wyseth to them with the rest of the faythfull all prosperitie.

A

1 **Brethren**, yf a man be taken in any fault, ye which are spiritual restore such a one in the spirite of mekenes, considering thy selfe, lest thou also be tempted.

2 [Note: Rom.xv.a. ] Beare ye one anothers burthen, and so fulfyll the lawe of Christe.

3 For if any man seeme to him selfe that he is somewhat, when he is nothyng, the same deceaueth hymselfe in his owne fansie.

4 But let euery man proue his owne worke, & then shall he haue [Note: [a] For his reioycyng is a testimonie of a good conscience. ] reioyceyng only in his owne selfe, and not in another.

5 For [Note: Rom.xiii.c ] euery man shall beare his owne burthen.

6 [Note: Rom.xv.f. i.Cor.ix.b. ] Let hym that is taught in the word, minister vnto hym that teacheth hym, in all good thynges.

7 Be not deceaued, God is not mocked: For [Note: Iohn.iiii.b. ] whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reape.

B

8 For he that soweth into his flesshe, shal of the flesshe reape corruption: But he that soweth into the spirite, shall of the spirite reape lyfe euerlastyng.

9 [Note: ii.Thess.iii.b ] Let vs not be weery in well doyng: for in due season we shall reape, yf we faynt not.

C

10 Whye we haue therefore tyme, let vs do good vnto all men, specially vnto the which are of the housholde of fayth. >

11 Ye see how large a letter I haue written vnto you with myne owne hande.

12 As many as desire with outwarde appearaunce to please carnally, the same constraene you to be circumcised, onlye lest they shoulde suffer persecution for the crosse of Christe.

13 For they the selues which are circumcised, kepe not the lawe: but desire to haue you circumcised, that they myght reioyce in your flesshe.

D

14 God forbyd that I shoulde reioyce, but in the crosse of our Lorde Iesus Christe, wherby the [Note: [b] By the worlde, he meaneth all outward pompes, ceremonies, & thynges whiche please mes fantasies ] world is crucified vnto me, and I vnto the worlde.

15 For [Note: Galath.v.a. ] in Christe Iesu, neither circumcision auayleth any thing, nor vncircumcision, but a newe creature.

16 And as many as walke accordyng to this rule, peace be on them, and mercie, and vpon the [Note: [c] That is, vpon ye Iewes. As.Ro.2. ] Israel [that is] of God.

17 From hencefoorth, let no man put me to busynesse: [Note: i.Cor.iiii.c. ] For I beare in my body the markes of the Lorde Iesus.

18 Brethren, the grace of our Lorde Iesus Christe be with your spirite. Amen.

## **The Epistle vnto the Galathians, was sent from Rome.**

### **¶ *The Epistle of the Apostle S. Paul, vnto the Ephesians.***

#### **¶ The first Chapter.**

After his salutation, 4 he sheweth that the chiefe cause of their saluation standeth in the free election of God through Christe, 16 he declareth his good wyll to warde them, geuyng thanks, & praying God for their fayth. 21 The maiestie of Christe.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **Paul** an apostle of Iesus Christe by the wyll of God: To the saintes which are at Ephesus, and to the faythfull in Christe Iesus:

2 [Note: Rom.i.a. i.Cor.i.a. ] Grace be with you, and peace, from God our father, & from the Lorde Iesus Christe.

3 [Note: i.Pet.i.a. Galath.i.a. ] Blessed be God, the father of our Lorde Iesus Christe, whiche hath blessed vs in all spirituall blessing, in heauenly thynges by Christe:

4 According as he had chosen vs in hym before the foundation of the world, that we shoulde be holy, and without blame before hym, through loue.

5 Who hath predestinate vs into the adoption [Page] of [Note: [a] Where as we were not the naturall chyldren, he



received vs by grace, and made vs his chyldren. ] childre, by Iesus Christ vnto hym selfe, according to the good pleasure of his wyll:

6 To the prayse of the glorie of his grace, wherein he hath made vs accepted in the beloued.

B

7 [Note: Coloss.i.b. ] In whom we haue redemption through his blood, the forgeuenesse of sinnes, accordyng to the rychesse of his grace,

8 Wherein he hath abounded towarde vs in all wysedome and prudence.

9 And hath opened vnto vs the misterie of his wyll, accordyng to his good pleasure which he had purposed in himselfe.

10 That in the dispensation of [Note: Galath.iiii.a ] the fulnesse of the tymes, he myght gather together in one all thinges in Christe, both which are in heauen, and which are in earth, in hym.

11 In whom also we are chosen, beyng predestinate accordyng to the purpose of hym who worketh all thynges after the councell of his owne wyll:

C

12 That we shoulde be vnto the prayse of his glorie, whiche before beleued in Christe.

13 In whom also ye, after that ye heard the worde of trueth, the Gospell of your saluation, wherin also after that ye beleued, were [Note: Rom.viii.c. ii.Cor.i.d. ] sealed with the holy spirite of promyse,

14 Whiche is the earnest of our inheritaunce, vnto ye [Note: [b] Though we be redeemed from the bondage of sin by the death of Christe. Rom.6. yet we hope for this seconde redemption, which shalbe whe we shall possesse our inheritaunce in the heauens, whereof we haue the holy ghoste for a gage, as ca.4. ] redemption of the purchased possession, vnto the prayse of his glorie.

15 Wherefore I also after that I hearde of the fayth which ye haue in the Lorde Iesus, and loue vnto all the saintes,

16 Ceasse not to geue thanks for you, makyng mention of you in my prayers:

17 That the God of our Lorde Iesus Christe, the father of glorie, may geue vnto you the spirite of wisdom and reuelation, in the knowledge of hym:

D

18 The eyes of your myndes beyng lightened, that ye maye knowe what the [Note: Rom.xv.c. ] hope is of his callyng, and what the rychesse of the glorie of his inheritaunce [is] in the saintes:

19 And what is the exceedyng greatnesse of his power to vsuarde, which beleue, accordyng to the workyng of his myghtie power,

20 Which he wrought in Christe when he raysed hym from the dead, [Note: Psal.cx.a. ] and set him on his ryght hande in heauenly [places]

21 Farre aboue [Note: Danie.vii.d ] all rule, and power, and myght, and dominion, and euery name that is named, not in this worlde only, but also in the worlde to come.

22 And [Note: Psal.viii b. Hebr.ii.d. i.Cor.xv.d. Ephe.v.e. Coloss.i.c. ] hath put all thynges vnder his feete, and gaue him [to be] the head ouer all thynges to the Church,

23 Which is his body, the fulnesse of him that fylleth all in all.

## ¶ The .ij. Chapter.

5 To magnifie the grace of Christe, which is the only cause of saluation, 11 he sheweth them what maner of people they were before their conuertio, 18 and what they are nowe in Christe.

A

1 **And** you that were dead in trespasses and sinnes,

2 In the which in time passed [Note: Rom.v.a. Coloss.i.c. ] ye walked, according to the course of this worlde, after the gouernour that ruleth in the ayre, the spirite that nowe worketh in the chyldren of disobedience.

3 [Note: Coloss.iii.a. ] Among whom we all had our conuersation also in tyme past in the lustes of our flesshe, fulfylling the wyll of the flesshe, and of the mynde, & [Note: [a] Not by creation, but by Adams transgression, & so by birth. ] were by nature the chyldren of wrath, euen as other:

4 But God which is ryche in mercie, for his great loue wherwith he loued vs,

5 Euen when we were dead by sinnes, hath quickned vs together with Christ, [Note: Esai.xxv.d. ] by grace are ye saued:

6 And hath raysted [vs] vp together, and made [vs] syt together in the heauenly in Christe Iesus.

[Page]

7 That in ages to come, he might shew the exceedyng ryches of his grace, in kyndnesse to vsuarde through Christe Iesus.

8 For by grace are ye made safe through fayth, and that not of your selues, it is the gyft of God:

9 Not of workes, lest any man shoulde boast hym selfe.

10 For we are his workmanship, created in Christe Iesus vnto [Note: Titus.i.d. ] good workes, whiche God hath ordeyned that we shoulde walke in them.

C

11 Wherefore, remember that ye being in tyme passed gentiles in the flesshe, called vncircumcision of that which is called [Note: Philip.iii.a. Coloss.ii.b. ] circumcision in the flesshe, made by handes:

12 That at that tyme ye were without Christe, beyng aliauntes from the common wealth of Israel, and straungers fro the testamentes of promise, hauyng no hope, & without God in this worlde.

13 But nowe in Christe Iesus, ye which sometyme were farre of, are made nye by the blood of Christe.

14 For he is our peace, which hath made both one: and hath broken downe the [Note: That is, the cause of ye diuision that was betweene the Iewes & the Gentiles. ] wall that was a stoppe betwene vs,

15 Taking away in his flesshe the hatred, [euen] the lawe of commaundementes, [conteyned] in ordinaunces, for to make of twayne one newe man in hym selfe, so makyng peace,

16 And that he myght reconcile both vnto God in one body through [his] crosse, and slewe hatred thereby.

17 And came and preached peace to you which were a farre of, and to them that were nye.

D

18 For through hym, we both haue an entraunce in one spirite vnto the father.

19 < Nowe therefore, ye are no more straungers and foreyners: but citezins with the saintes, and of the housholde of God,

20 And are built vpon the [Note: i.Cor.iii.b. Esa.xxviii d ] foundation of the apostles and prophetes, [Note: Rom.ix.f. Psal.c xviii c ] Iesus Christe hym selfe beyng the head corner stone,

21 In whom all the buyldyng coupled together, groweth vnto an holy temple in the Lorde.

22 In whom ye also are buylded together for an habitation of God through the spirite. >

### The .iiij. Chapter.

1 He sheweth the cause of his imprisonment, 13 desireth them not to faynt because of his trouble, 14 and prayeth God to make them stedfast in his spirite.

A

1 **For** this cause I Paul [am] a prisoner of Iesus Christe, for you heathen:

2 Yf ye haue hearde of the dispensatio of the grace of God, [Note: Act.xiii.a. Galath.i.b. ] which is geuen me to youwarde:

3 For by reuelation shewed he the [Note: [a] Misterie, is that secrete hydden purpose of saluation through Christe. ] misterie vnto me (as I wrote afore in fewe wordes:

4 Whereby, when ye reade, ye may vnderstande my knowledge in the misterie of Christe)

5 Which [misterie] in other ages was not opened vnto the sonnes of men, as it is nowe reuealed vnto his holy apostles and prophetes by the spirite,

6 That the gentiles shoulde be inheritours also, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christe, by the Gospell:

7 Wherof I am made a minister, accordyng to the gyfte of the grace of God, which is geuen vnto me after the workyng of his power.

B  
8 Unto me the [Note: i.Cor.xv.a. ] least of all saintes is this grace geuen, that I shoulde preache among the gentiles the vnsearchable ryches of Christe,

9 And to bring to lyght to all men what the felowship of the misterie is whiche from the begynnyng of the world hath ben hid in god, which made all thinges through Iesus Christe:

10 To thintent that nowe vnto the rulers and power in heauenly [thynges] myght be knowen by ye [Note: [b] The Church being gathered of so many kyndes of people, is an example or a glasse for the Angels to beholde the wisdom of God in, who hath tourned their particuler discordes, into an vniuersal concorde, and of the synagogue of bondage, hath made the Churche of freedome. ] Church, the very manyfolde wysedome of God:

11 According to ye eternall purpose which he wrought in Christe Iesus our Lord:

12 By who we haue boldnesse & entraunce in ye confidence which is by faith of him.

[Page] c

13 < Wherfore I desire that ye faynt not in my tribulations [Note: Coloss.i.d. ] for you, whiche is your glorie.

14 For this cause I bowe my knees vnto the father of our Lorde Iesus Christe,

15 Of who all the famyly in heauen and earth is named:

16 That he would graunt you, according to the rychesse of his glorie, to be strengthened with myght by his spirite in the inner man.

17 That Christe may dwell in your heartes by fayth: that ye beyng rooted and grounded in loue,

D

18 Myght be able to comprehende with al saintes, what is the breadth, & length, and deapth, and heygth:

19 And to knowe the loue of Christe, whiche excelleth knowledge, that ye might be fylled with all fulnesse of God.

20 Unto him that is able to do exceeding aboundauntly aboue all that we aske or thynke, accordyng to the power that worketh in vs,

21 Be prayse in the Churche by Christe Iesus, throughout all ages, worlde without ende. Amen. >

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

< He exhorteth them vnto mekenesse, long sufferyng, and vnto loue and peace, 3 euery one to serue and edifie another with the gyft that God hath geuen hym, 14 to be ware of strange doctrine, 22 To lay asyde the olde conuersation of greedy lustes, & to walke in a newe lyfe.

A

1 **I therefore**, a prisoner [Note: For the Lordes cause. ] in the Lorde, exhorte you, [Note: i.Cor.vii.d. ] that ye walke worthy of the vocatio wherewith ye are called,

2 With all lowlynesse & mekenesse, with long sufferyng, forbearyng one another in loue.

3 Endeuryng to kepe the vnitie of the spirite in the bonde of peace:

4 **One body and one** [Note: [a] So that ye can not dissent one fro another, seing ye spirit which ioyneth you in one bodye can not dissent fro hym selfe. ] spirite, euen as ye are called in one hope of your calling.

5 **One Lorde, one fayth, one baptisme.**

6 **One God, and father of all, whiche is aboue all, and through all, and in you all.** >

B

7 < **But** [Note: Rom.xii.b. ii.Cor.xii a. Psal.xviii.d ] vnto euery one of vs, is geuen grace, accordyng to the measure of the gyft of Christe.

8 Wherefore he saith: When he went vp an hye, he ledde captiuitie captiue, and gaue gyftes vnto men.

9 (But that he ascended, what is it? but that he also descended first into the lower partes of the earth?

10 [Note: Iohn.iii.b. ] He that descended, is euen the same also that ascended vp farre aboue all heauens, to fulfyll all thynges.)

11 And he gaue some [Note: i.Cor.xii.d. Math.x.a. Luk.ix.a. ] apostles, and some prophetes, and some euangelistes, and some shepherdes and teachers,

C

12 To the gatheryng together of the saintes, into the worke of ministration, into the edifyng of the body of Christe:

13 Tyll we all meete together into the vnitie of fayth, and knowledge of the sonne of God, vnto a perfect man, vnto the measure of the age of the fulnesse of Christe: >

14 That we hencefoorth be no more children, [Note: Coloss.ii.b. ] wauering and caryed about with euery wynde of doctrine, in the wylnesse of men, in craftynesse, to the laying [Note: [b] whereby they laye in wayte to deceaue. ] wayte of deceyte.

15 But folowyng trueth in loue, let vs growe vp into him in all thynges [Note: Ephes.i.d. Coloss.i.c. ] whiche is the head, Christ:

16 In whom all the body beyng coupled and knit together by euery ioynt of subministration, accordyng to the effectuall power in ye measure of [Note: [c] That is, wherwith one ministreth to another. ] euery part, maketh increase of the body, vnto the edifyng of it selfe in loue.

D

17 < This I say therefore, and testifie in the Lorde, that ye hencefoorth walke not [Note: Rom.i.d. i.Pet.iiii.a. ] as other gentiles walke, in vanitie of their mynde:

18 Darkened in cogitation, being alienated from the lyfe of God by the ignoraunce that is in them, by the blindnesse of their heartes.

19 Whiche beyng past [Note: The Greke worde doth signifie such as be obdurate in heart, and hath not the feelyng of repentaunce. ] feelyng, haue geuen the selues ouer vnto wantonnesse, to worke al vncleanenesse with greedynesse.

20 But ye haue not so learned Christe.

[Page] D

21 Yf so be that ye haue hearde hym, and haue ben taught in hym, as the trueth is in Iesus,

22 To lay downe, accordyng to the former conuersation, ye [Note: [c] That is, all the natural corruptio that is in vs. ] olde man, which is corrupt, accordyng to the lustes of error: >

23 < To be renued in the spirite of your mynde,

24 And [Note: Rom.vi.a. Coloss.iii.a. ] to put on that newe man, which after God is shapen, in righteousnesse & holynesse of trueth.

25 [Note: Leui.xix.c. ] Wherfore, puttyng away lying, speake euery man trueth vnto his neyghbour, forasmuch as we are members one of another.

26 [Note: Psal.iiii.a. ] Be ye [Note: [d] If so be that ye be angry, to moderate your affection that it burst not out into an euyll worke, but be soone appeased. ] angry, and sinne not, let not the sunne go downe vpon your wrath,

27 Neither geue place to the deuyll.

28 Let hym that stole, steale no more: [Note: 11. Thes.iii.b ] but let hym rather labour, workyng with his handes the thyng whiche is good, that he may geue vnto hym that needeth. >

29 Let no fylthy communication procede out of your mouth, but that whiche is good to edifie withal, as oft as neede is, that it may minister grace vnto the hearers.

30 And [Note: [c] So to behaue your selues, that the holye ghoste may wyllingly dwell in you, and geue hym no occasion to depart for sorowe, by your abusyng of Gods graces. ] greeue not the holy spirite of God, by whom ye are

sealed vnto the day of redemption.

31 Let all bytternesse, and fiercenesse, & wrath, and crying, and euyl speakyng, be put away from you, with all maliciousnesse.

32 Be ye curteous one to another, merciful, forgeuing one another, euen as God for Christes sake hath forgeuen you.

## The .v. Chapter.

< 2 He exhorteth them vnto loue, 3 warneth them to beware of vncleannesse, couetousnesse, foolyshe talkyng, and false doctrine, 17 to be circumspect, 18 to auoyde dronkennesse, 19 to reioyce, and to be thankefull towarde God, 21 to submit them selues one to another. 22 He entreateth of corporall mariage, & of the spirituall betwixt Christe and his Church.

A

1 **Be** ye [Note: i.Pet.ii.d. Iohn.xiii.b. Galath.ii.d. ] therefore folowers of God, as deare chyldren:

2 And walke ye in loue, euen as [Note: Exo.xxiii.b ] Christe hath loued vs, and hath geuen hym selfe for vs an offering and a sacrifice of a sweete smellyng sauour to God.

3 But fornication, and all vncleannesse, or couetousnesse, let it not be once named among you, as it becommeth saintes:

4 Neither fylthynesse, neither foolyshe talkyng, neither iestyng, which are not comely: but rather, geuyng of thanks.

5 For this ye knowe, that no [Note: Galath.v.d. i.Cor.vi.b. ] whoremonger, neither vncleane person, nor couetous person, which is a worshipper of images, hath any inheritaunce in the kyngdome of Christe, and of God.

B

6 [Note: Math.24.a. Coloss.ii.b. Mark.xiii.a Luk.xxi.b. ] Let no man deceaue you with vayne wordes: For, because of such thynges commeth the wrath of God vppon the chyldren of disobedience.

7 Be not ye therefore companions of them.

8 For ye were sometimes darknesse: but nowe are ye lyght in the Lorde. [Note: Iohn.xii.e. i.Thess.v.a. ] Walke as chyldren of lyght.

9 For the fruite of the spirite (is) in all goodnesse, and righteousnesse, & trueth,

10 Approuyng what is acceptable vnto the Lorde.

11 And haue no felowship with the vnfruitefull workes of darknesse, but rather euen rebuke them.

12 For it is shame euen to name those thynges whiche are done of them in secrete.

C  
13 But all thynges, when they are rebuked of the lyght, are manifest: For all that which do make manifest, is lyght.

14 Wherefore he sayth: [Note: [a] God thus speaketh by his seruauts, to drawe the infidels from their blyndenesse. ]  
Awake thou that sleepest, and stande vp from the dead, and Christe shall geue thee lyght.

15 < Take heede therefore howe ye walke circumspectlye: not as vnwyse, but as wyse,

16 Redeemyng the time, because ye dayes are euyll.

17 Wherefore be ye not vnwise, but vnderstandyng what the wyll of the Lord is.

18 And be not drunke with wine, wherin is excesse: but be fylled with the spirite,

19 Speaking vnto your selues in [Note: Psalm.33.a. Coloss.iii.c. ] psalmes and hymnes, and spirituall songes, syngyng and makyng melodie to the Lorde in your heartes:

[Page] D  
20 Geuyng thankes alwayes for all thinges vnto God and the father, in ye name of our Lorde Iesus Christe,

21 Submyttyng your selues one to another in the feare of God. >

22 Wyues, submit your selues vnto your owne husbandes, as vnto the Lorde:

23 For [Note: Genes.ii.d. ] the husbande is the head of the wyfe, euen as Christe is [Note: i.Cor.xi.a. Ephe.i d. ] the head of the Church: & he is the sauour of the bodie.

24 But as the Church is subiect to Christ, lykewyse the wyues to their owne husbandes in all thynges.

25 Ye husbandes loue your wyues, euen as Christe also loued the Churche, and gaue hym selfe for it,

26 To sanctifie it, clensyng [it] in the [Note: [b] Baptism is a toke that God hath consecrated the Churche to hym selfe, and made it holy by his word: that is, his promise of free iustificatio in Christe. ] fountayne of water in the worde,

27 To make it vnto hym selfe a glorious Churche, not hauyng spot or wrinkle, or any such thyng: but that it should be holy, and without blame.

28 So ought men to loue their wyues, as their owne bodies. He that loueth his wyfe, loueth hym selfe.

29 For no man euer yet hated his owne flesshe: but norissheth & cherissheth it, euen as the Lorde the Churche.



30 For we are members of his body, of his flesshe, and of his bones.

31 [Note: Genes.ii.d. Math.xix.a Mark.x.a. i.Cor.vi.d. Ephes.v.g. ] For this cause shall a man leaue father and mother, and shalbe ioyned vnto his wyfe, and two shalbe made one flesshe.

32 This is a great secrete: but I speake of Christe and of the Churche.

33 Therefore euery one of you [do ye so] Let euery one of you loue his wyfe euen as hym selfe, and [let] the wyfe reuerence her husbnde.

## ¶ The .vj. Chapter.

1 Nowe chyldren shoulde behaue them selues towarde their fathers and mothers, 4 Lykewyse parentes towarde their chyldren, 5 seruauntes towardes their maisters, 9 Maisters towarde their seruauntes, 13 An exhortation to the spiritual battayle, and what weapons the christians shoulde fyght withall.

A

1 **Chyldren**, [Note: Coloss.iii.d. ] obey your fathers and mothers in the Lorde: for this is ryght.

2 [Note: Exok.xx.b ] Honour thy father and mother (whiche is the first commaundement in promise)

3 That thou mayest prosper, and lyue long on earth.

4 Fathers prouoke not your children to wrath: [Note: Deut.iii.b. ] but bring them vp in instruction and information of the Lorde.

5 Seruauntes obey them that are your bodyly maisters, with feare and tremblyng, in singleness of your heart, as vnto Christe.

6 Not with seruice vnto the eye, as men pleasers: but as the seruautes of Christ.

B

7 Doyng the wyll of God fro the heart, with good wyll seruyng the Lorde, and not men:

8 Knowyng, that whatsoeuer good thyng any man doeth, that shall he receaue agayne of the Lorde, whether [he be] bonde or free.

9 And ye maisters do the same thynges vnto them, puttyng away threatnyng: knowyng that your maister also is in heauen, [Note: ii.Par.xix.e Actes x.c. Rom.ii.b. ] neither is respecte of person with hym.

10 < Finally my brethren, be strong in the Lorde, & in the power of his might.

11 Put on all the armour of God, that ye may stande agaynst the assaultes of the deuyll.

12 For we wrastle not agaynst [Note: [a] The faith full haue not only to stryue agaynst men, & themselues: but agaynste Satan the spiritual enemie, who is moste daungerous: for he is ouer our heads, so yt we can not reache hym, but he muste be resisted by Gods peace. ] blood & flesshe: but agaynst rule, agaynst power, agaynst worldly gouernours of the darknesse of this worlde, agaynst spirituall craftynesse in heauenly [places.]

13 Wherefore take vnto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to resist in the euyll day, and hauing finished all thynges, to stande fast.

C  
14 Stande therefore, [Note: Luk.xii.e. i.Pet.i.c. ] hauyng loynes girt about with the trueth, and puttyng on the brest plate of righteousnesse,

15 And hauyng your feete shodde, in the [Note: [b] That ye maye be redy to suffer all thynges for the Gospell. ] preparation of the Gospell of peace.

16 Aboue all, takyng the shielde of fayth, wherwith ye may quenche all the fierie dartes of the wicked:

17 And take the helmet of saluation, and the sworde of the spirite, whiche is the worde of God. >

18 [Note: Luk.xviii.a i.Thess.v.d. ] Praying alwayes in all prayer and supplication in the spirite, and watche thervnto with all instaunce and supplication, for all saintes,

19 And for me, [Note: Coloss.iiii.a ] that vtteraunce may be geue vnto me, yt I may open my mouth [Page] freely, to vtter ye secretes of the Gospell.

D  
20 Whereof I am messenger in bondes, that therein I may speake freely, as I ought to speake.

21 But yt ye may also knowe my affaires, and what I do, Tichicus a deare brother and faythfull minister in the Lord, shall shewe you all thynges:

22 Whom I haue sent vnto you for the same purpose, that ye myght knowe of our affaires, and that he myght comfort your heartes.

23 Peace [be] vnto the brethren, and loue, with fayth, from God the father, and from the Lorde Iesus Christe.

24 Grace be with all them whiche loue our Lorde Iesus Christe in sinceritie. Amen.

**Sent from Rome vnto the Ephesians, by Tichicus.**

## ***The Epistle of Saint Paul the Apostle to the Philippians.***

### **¶ The first Chapter.**

1 Saint Paul discovereth his heart towards them, 3 by his thankes geuyng, 4 prayers, 8 and wisshes for their fayth and saluation. 7. 12. 20. He sheweth the fruite of his crosse, 15. 27. and exhorteth them to vntie, 28 and pacience.

A

1 **Paul** & Timotheus the seruauntes of Iesus Christ: To all the saintes in Christ Iesus, whiche are at Philippos, with the bisshops & deacons:

2 Grace [be] vnto you, and peace fro God our father, and [from] the Lorde Iesus Christ.

3 < I thanke my God, with all remembraunce of you,

4 ( [Note: Rom.i.b. Coloss.i.a. ] Alwayes in all my prayer for all you, makyng prayer with gladnesse,)

5 For your felowship in the Gospell, fro the first [Note: [a] That ye receaued the Gospell. ] day vntyll nowe.

6 And beyng perswaded of this same thyng, that he which hath begun good worke in you, wyll perfourme it vntyll the day of Iesus Christe,

7 As it becommeth me to iudge this of you al, because I haue you in my heart, and in my bondes, in the defence and confirmation of the Gospell, you all beyng partakers of my [Note: [b] Of this peculier benefite to suffer for Christes sake. ] grace.

8 For God is my recorde howe greatly I long after you all, in the [Note: [c] That is, from the very heart roote of Iesus Christ ] bowels of Iesus Christe.

9 And this I pray, that your loue may abounde yet more and more in knowledge, and in all vnderstandyng:

B

10 That ye maye discernе thynges that differ, that ye maye be pure, and without offence, tyll the day of Christe.

11 Beyng fylled with the fruites of righteousnesse, which [are] by Iesus Christ, vnto the glorie and prayse of God. >

12 But I woulde ye should vnderstande brethren, that the thinges which [came] vnto me, hath come rather vnto the furtheraunce of the Gospell:

13 So that my bondes in [Note: [d] whiche I susteyne for Christes cause. ] Christe, are manifest, throughout all the iudgement hall, and in all other [places.]

14 And many of the brethren of the Lord, beyng encouraged through my bondes, dare more plentifully speake the word, without feare.

15 Some preache Christe of enuie & strife, and some of good wyll.

16 The one preache Christe of strife, not sincerely, supposyng to adde more affliction to my bondes:

17 But the others of loue, knowing that I am set to the defence of the Gospell.

18 What then? So that Christe be preached any maner of way, whether it be by pretence, or by trueth, I ioy therein, and wyll ioy.

C

19 For I knowe that this shall turne [Page] to my saluation, [Note: ii Cor.i.b. ] through your prayer, and ministryng of the spirite of Iesus Christe,

20 Accordyng to my expectation, and my hope, yt in nothyng I shalbe ashamed: but yt with all boldnesse, as alwayes, so now also, Christ shalbe magnified in my body, whether it be by life, or by death.

21 For Christe [is] to me lyfe, and death [is] to me aduantage.

22 But if I lyue in the fleshe, this (is) the fruite of my labour, and what I shall chose, I wote not.

23 [Note: ii Cor.v.a. ] For I am in a strayte betwixt two, hauyng a desire to be loosed, and to be with Christ, which is much farre better.

24 Neuerthelesse, to abyde in ye [Note: Or, bodie. ] fleshe, [is] more needefull for you.

25 And this am I sure of, that I shall abyde & continue with you all, for your furtheraunce and ioy of fayth,

D

26 That your reioysyng may be ye more aboundaunt in Iesus Christe for me, by my commyng to you agayne.

27 Only let your conuersation be, [Note: Ephe.iiii.a. ] as it becommeth the Gospell of Christe: that whether I come and set you, or els be absent, I may yet heare of your matters, that ye continue in one spirite, in one soule, fyghtyng together for ye fayth of the Gospell.

28 And in nothyng fearyng your aduersaries, which is to them a token of perdition: but to you of saluatio, and [Note: [e] God sheweth by this meanes of bearyng ye crosse, who are his, and who are not. ] that of God.

29 For vnto you it is geuen [Note: Or, Christes cause. ] for Christe, not only this to beleue on hym: but also this, to suffer for his sake,

30 Hauing the same fight, which ye sawe in me, and nowe heare in me.

## ¶ The .ij. Chapter.

3 He exhorteth them aboue all thynges to humilitie, wherby pure doctrine is chiefly mayntayned, 16 promisyng that he and Timotheus wyll spedly come vnto them, 27 and excuseth the long tariyng of Epaphroditus.

A

1 **If** [there be] therefore any [Note: [a] If you so loue me that you desire my comfort. ] consolation in Christe, yf any comfort of loue, if any felowship of ye spirite, yf any compassion and mercie,

2 Fulfyl ye my ioy, that ye be lyke mynded, hauyng the same loue, being of one accorde, of one mynde,

3 Let nothyng [be done] through stryfe or vayne glorie, but in mekenesse of mynde euery man esteeme one ye other better then hym selfe.

4 [Note: i Cor.x.f. ] Loke not euery man on his owne thynges, but euery man also on the thynges of others.

5 < Let ye same mynde be in you, which was in Christe Iesus:

6 Who beyng in the fourme of God, thought it not [Note: [b] For he that was god, shoulde therin haue done no iniurie to the Godhead. ] robbery to be equall with God.

7 But made hym selfe of no reputation, takyng on him the fourme of a seruaut, and made in the lykenesse of men, and founde in figure as a man:

B

8 He humbled hym selfe, made obedient vnto death, euen the death of the crosse.

9 Wherefore God also hath highly exalted hym, and geuen hym a name which is aboue euery name.

10 That in [Note: Math.i.c. ] the name of Iesus [Note: Rom.xiiii.c ] euery [Note: [c] worship, and be subiect to hym. ] knee should bowe, [of thynges] in heauen, and [thynges] in earth, and [thinges] vnder the earth:

11 And that euery tongue should confesse that the [Note: Actes.ii.f. Rom.xiiii.b ] Lorde, Iesus Christe [is] to the glorie of God the father. >

12 Wherefore, my dearely beloued, as ye haue alwayes obeyed, not as in my presence only, but nowe much more in my absence, worke [Note: Our health haget not on our workes: & yet are they sayd to worke out their health, who do runne in ye race of iustice. For although we be saued freely in christ by fayth, yet must we walk by the way of iustice vnto our health. ] out your owne saluation with feare and tremblyng.

13 For it is God which worketh in you, both to will and to do of good wyll.

14 Do all thyng without murmuryng and disputyng:

15 That ye may be blamelesse and pure, the sonnes of God, without rebuke in the myddes of a croked and peruerse nation, among who shyne ye as lightes in the worlde,

16 Holdyng fast the worde of lyfe, to my [Note: ii Cor.i.c. i Thes.ii.c. ] reioycyng in the day of Christe that I haue not runne in vayne, neither haue laboured in vayne.

17 Yea, and though I be offered vp vpo the offeryng and seruice of your fayth, [Page] I reioyce, and reioyce with you all.

18 For the same cause also do ye reioyce, and reioyce with me.

19 But I trust in the Lorde Iesus, to [Note: Actes.xvi.a ] sende Timotheus shortly vnto you, [Note: i Thess.iii.b ] that I also may be of good comfort, when I knowe your state.

20 For I haue no man lyke mynded, who wyll naturally care for your state.

21 For all seeke their owne, not the thynges which are Iesus Christes.

22 Ye knowe the profe of hym, that as a sonne with the father, he hath serued with me in the Gospell.

23 Hym therefore I hope to sende, assoone as I knowe my state.

24 But I trust in the Lorde, that I also my selfe shall come shortly.

25 But I supposed it necessarie to sende to you Epaphroditus, my brother and companion in labour, & felowe souldier, but your Apostle, and the minister of my neede.

D

26 For he longed after you all, and was full of heauinesse, because that ye had hearde that he had ben sicke.

27 And no doubt he was sicke nye vnto death, but God had mercie on hym, and not on hym only, but on me also, lest I shoulde haue sorowe vpon sorowe.

28 I sent him therefore the more diligentlie, that when ye see him againe, ye may reioyce, and that I may be the lesse sorowfull.

29 Receaue hym therefore in the Lorde with all gladnes, & [Note: Rom.xv.d. i Thess.v.c. ] make much of such:

30 Because, for the worke of Christe, he was nye vnto death, not regardyng his lyfe, to fulfyll your lacke of seruice towarde me.

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

2 He warneth them to beware of false teachers, 3 agaynst whom he setteth Christe. 4 Likewise himselfe, 9 and his doctrine, 12 and reproueth mans owne righteousnes.

A

1 **Moreouer** my brethren, reioyce ye in the Lord. It greueth me not to write the same thyng often to you, for to you it is a sure thyng.

2 Beware of [Note: [a] whiche barke agaynst the true doctrine, to fyll their bellyes. ] dogges, beware of euyll workers, beware of [Note: [b] S. Paul here alludeth vnto circumcision by semblaunce of a lyke word, because that they who craked therof, did rather cause a scisme, diuision, or cutting of and tearing in sunder, the an accorde in the Church. ] concision.

3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirite, and reioyce in Christ Iesus, and haue no confidence in the fleshe:

4 Though I might also haue confidence in the fleshe. If any other man thinketh that he hath wherof he myght trust in the fleshe, more I:

5 Circumcised the eyght day, of the kinred of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, [Note: ii Cor.xi.a. Act.xxiii.b ] an Ebrue of the Ebrues, after the lawe a pharisee,

6 Concernyng feruentnesse, persecutyng the Church: touchyng ye righteousnesse which is in ye lawe, I was blamelesse.

B

7 [Note: Mat.xiiii.c. ] But the thynges that were vauntage vnto me, those I counted losse for Christes sake.

8 Yea, I thynke all thynges but losse, for the excellencie of the knowledge of Christe Iesus my Lorde: For whom I haue counted all thyng losse, & do iudge the but vile, that I may winne Christe,

9 And be founde in hym, not hauyng myne owne ryghteousnesse which is of the lawe: but that which is through the fayth of Christ, the ryghteousnes which commeth of God through fayth:

10 That I may knowe hym, and the power of his resurrection, and the felowshippe of his passions, confirmable vnto his death,

11 If by any meanes, I myght attayne vnto the resurrection of the dead.

C

12 [Note: [c] Or, haue nowe taken full possession therof, not yt he doubted to attain vnto it, but because he would declare the excellencie thereof. ] Not as though I had alrede attained, either were alrede perfect: but I folowe, yf that I may comprehende, wherein also I am comprehended of Christe Iesus.

13 Brethren I count not my selfe as yet that I haue attained: but this one thing [I say] I forget those thinges which are behynde, and endeuour my selfe vnto those thynges which are before,

14 And I prease towarde the marke, for the price of the hye callyng of God in Christe Iesus.

15 Let vs therefore as many as be perfect, be thus mynded, and if ye be otherwyse [Page] mynded, God shall reueale the same also vnto you.

16 Neuerthelesse, vnto that which we haue attayned vnto, let vs proceade by one rule, that we may be of one accorde.

D

17 < [Note: i Cor.iiii.c. ] Brethren, be folowers together of me, and loke on them which walke so as ye haue vs for an ensample.

18 For many walke, of whom I haue tolde you often, & nowe tel you wepyng, [that they are] the enemies of the crosse of Christe:

19 [Note: Rom. xvi.c. ] Whose ende [is] dampnation, whose God [is their] belly, and glorie to their shame, which mynde earthly thynges.

20 But our conuersation is in heauen, from whence also we loke for the sauour, the Lorde Iesus Christe:

21 Who shall [Note: i Co.xv.g. ] change our vyle body, that it may be fashioned lyke vnto his glorious body, according to the working wherby he is able to subdue all thynges vnto hym selfe. >

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

1 He exhortheth them to be of honest conuersation, 15 and thanketh them, because of the prouision that they made for hym beyng in pryson, 21 and so concludeth with salutations.

A

1 **Therefore** my brethren beloued & longed for, my ioy and crowne, so continue in the Lorde ye beloued.

2 I pray Euodias, and beseche Syntyches, yt they be of one accorde in the Lorde.

3 Yea, and I beseche thee also faythfull yockefelowe, helpe those [women] which laboured with me in the Gospell, and with Clement also, and with other my labour felowes, [Note: Luk.x.c. Apo.xvii.b ] whose names [are] in the [Note: [a] This booke Ezekiel calleth ye wrytyng of the house of Israel, and the secrete of the Lorde. ] booke of lyfe.

4 < Reioyce in the Lorde alway, and agayne I say reioyce.

5 Let your pacient mynde be knowen vnto all men: The Lorde [is] at hande.



6 Be carefull for nothyng: but in all thynges, let your petition be manifest vnto God, in prayer and supplication with geuyng of thankes.

7 And the peace of God, which passeth all vnderstandyng, shall [Note: [b] From Satan, who seketh to take from vs this peace of conscience. ] kepe your heartes and myndes through Christe Iesus. >

B

8 Furthermore brethren, whatsoever, thynges are true, whatsoever thynges (are) honest, whatsoever thynges (are) iuste, whatsoever thynges (are) pure, whatsoever thynges pertayne to loue, whatsoever thynges (are) of honest report: If there be any vertue, & yf there be any prayse, thinke on these thynges:

9 Which ye haue both learned, and receaued, and hearde, and seene in me: Those thinges do, and the God of peace shalbe with you.

10 But I reioyce in the Lorde greatly, that nowe at the last you are reuiued againe to care for me, in ye wherin ye were also carefull, but ye lacked oportunitie.

11 I speake not because of [Note: [c] That I was not able to endure my pouertie. ] necessitie. For I haue learned, in whatsoever estate I am, [Note: i Tim.vi.b. ] therwith to be content.

C

12 I knowe howe to be lowe, and I knowe howe to excede. Euery where & in all thynges I am instructed, both to be ful, and to be hungry, both to haue plentie, and to suffer neede.

13 I can do all thynges through Christe, which strengtheneth me.

14 Notwithstandyng, ye haue well done yt ye dyd communicate to my afflictions.

15 Ye Philippians knowe also, that in the [Note: [d] when I first preached the Gospell vnto you. ] begynnyng of the Gospell, when I departed fro Macedonia, no Church communicated to me, as concernyng geuyng and receauyng, but ye only.

16 For euen in Thessalonica, ye sent once, & afterward agayne vnto my necessitie.

17 Not that I desire a gyft, but I desire fruite aboundyng to your accompt.

18 But I haue receaued al, & haue plentie. I was euen fylled after that I had receaued of Epaphroditus the thynges [which were sent] from you, an odoure of a sweete smel, a [Note: Rom.xii.a Heb.xiii.c. ] sacrifice acceptable, plesaunt to God.

D

19 My God shall supplie all your neede, through his riches in glorie, in Christe Iesus.

20 Unto God and our father, be prayse for euermore. Amen.

21 Salute all the saintes in Christe Iesus. The brethren which are with me, greeete you.

22 All the saintes salute you, most of all, they that are of Caesars housholde.

23 The grace of our Lorde Iesu Christe [be] with you all. Amen.

**¶ This Epistle was written from Rome, by Epaphroditus.**

[Page]

***The Epistle of Saint Paul the Apostle to the Colossians.***

**¶ The first Chapter.**

3 He geueth thanks vnto God for their faith, 7 Confirming the doctrine of Epaphras, 9 prayeth for the increase of their fayth. 13 He sheweth vnto them the true Christe, and discovereth the counterfayte Christe of the false Apostles. 25 He approueth his auctoritie and charge, 28 and of his faythfull executyng of the same.

A

1 **Paul** an Apostle of Iesus Christe, by the wyll of God, and Timotheus the brother.

2 To them which [are] in Colossa, saintes and faythfull brethren in Christe: [Note: Galath.i.a. Ephe.i.a. ] Grace vnto you, & peace from God our father, and the Lorde Iesus Christe.

3 [Note: Philip.i.a. i Thess.ia. Rom.i.b. Philip.i.a. Ephe.i.d. ] We geue thanks to God and father of our Lorde Iesus Christe, alwayes for you, praying:

4 Sence we hearde of your fayth [Note: [a] For with out Christe there is no fayth to be saued by, but only a vayne opinion. ] in Christe Iesus, and of the loue which [is] to all saintes,

5 For the hopes sake which is layde vp for you in heauen, of which [hope] ye hearde before, in the worde of trueth of the Gospell,

6 Which is come vnto you, euen as [it is] into all the worlde, & is fruitfull, as it is also in you, from the day ye hearde [of it] and knewe the grace of God in trueth,

7 As ye also learned of [Note: Collos.iiii.c ] Epaphras, our deare felowe seruaunt, which is for you a faythfull minister of Christe:

B

8 Who also declared vnto vs your loue [Note: [b] whiche commeth of ye holy ghost. ] in the spirite.

9 < [Note: Ephe.i.d. ] For this cause we also, sence ye day we hearde, haue not ceassed to pray for you, and to desire that ye myght be fulfilled with knowledge of his wyll, in all wisdom & spiritual vnderstandyng,

10 That ye myght walke worthie of the Lorde in all pleasyng, [Note: Iohn.xv.c. ] beyng fruitefull in all good workes, and encreasyng in the knowledge of God,

11 Strenthened with all might, through his glorious power, vnto all patience and long sufferyng with ioyfulnesse: >

12 Geuyng thanks vnto ye father, which hath made vs meete to be partakers of the inheritaunce of the saintes in lyght.

13 Who hath delyuered vs from the power of darcknesse, and hath translated vs into the kingdome of his deare sonne.

C

14 [Note: Ephe.i.b. ii Cor.iii.a. ] In who we haue redemptio through his blood, the forgeuenesse of sinnes:

15 Who is the image of the inuisible God, the first borne of all creatures.

16 [Note: Hebre.i.a. ] For by him were all thinges created, that are in heaue and that are in earth, visible and inuisible, whether [they be] maiestie or lordeshippe, either rule or power: All thynges were created by hym and for hym.

17 And he is before all thynges, and in hym all thynges consist.

18 [Note: Ephe.i.b. i Cor.xv.c. ] And he is the head of the body of the Churche: he is the begynnyng, the first borne of the dead, that in all thynges he myght haue the preeminence.

19 For it pleased [the father] that in hym shoulde all [Note: [c] That the Church, whiche is his bodie, myght receaue of his aboundaunce. ] fulnesse dwell,

20 And by hym to reconcile all thynges vnto hym selfe, & to set at peace through the blood of his crosse by hym, both the thynges in earth, and thynges in heauen,

21 And you [Note: Rom.v.a. Ephe.ii.a.a. ] which were sometyme straungers, and enemies, by [Note: That is, the mynde, which part is ye principallest in man, as wherof is deriued ye qualitie of our doynges, bent & geuen vnto wickednesse. ] cogitation in euyll workes, hath he nowe yet reconciled,

22 In the body of his fleshe, through death, to present you holye, and vnblameable, & without fault in his syght:

23 If ye continue grounded & stablissed in the fayth, and be not moued away from the hope of the Gospell, which ye haue hearde howe it is preached to euery creature which is vnder heauen, wherof I

Paul am made a minister.

D

24 Nowe iowe I [Note: ii Cor.i.a. ] in my sufferynges [Note: Ephe.iii.b. ] for you, and fulfyll that which is behynde of the passions of Christe, in my fleshe, for his bodyes sake, which is ye Church:

25 Wherof I am made a minister, accordyng to the dispensation of God, which is geuen to me to youwarde, to fulfyll the worde of God:

[Page]

26 The [Note: Ephe.iii.b. ] misterie hyd sence the worlde began, and [sence the begynnyng of] generations: [Note: Mat.xi.d. ] but nowe is opened to his [Note: [d] whom he hath elected & consecrated to him by Christ ] saintes:

27 To whom God woulde make knowe what [is] the riches of the glorie of this misterie among the gentiles, which is Christe in you, the hope of glorie:

28 Whom we preache, warnyng euery man, and teachyng euery man in all wisdom, to present all men perfect in Christe Iesus:

29 Wherunto I also labour striuyng, according to his workyng which worketh in me mightylie.

## ¶ The .ij. Chapter.

1 Hauyng protected his good wyll towarde them, 4 he admonisheth them not to turne backe from Christe, 8 to the seruice of Angels or any other inuention, or els ceremonies of the lawe, 17 which haue finished their office, and are ended in Christe.

A

1 **For** I woulde that ye knew what great fight I haue for you, and for them that are at Laodicea, and for as many as haue not seene my face in the fleshe,

2 That their heartes myght be comforted, beyng knyt together in loue, and in al riches of certaintie of vnderstanding, to knowe the misterie of God, and of the father, and of Christe,

3 In whom are hyd all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

4 [Note: Ephe.v.a. ] This I say, lest any man shoulde begyle you with perswasion of wordes.

5 For though I be absent in the fleshe, yet am I with you in the spirite, ioying and beholdyng your order, and your stedfast fayth in Christe.

6 As ye haue therefore receaued Christe Iesus the Lorde, [so] walke ye in hym:

7 Rooted and built in hym, & stablished in the fayth, as ye haue ben taught, aboundyng therin with

thanks geuing.

B

8 < Beware lest any man spoyle you through [Note: [a] Teaching you vayne speculations, as worshipping of Angels, of blynde ceremonies & beggarlie traditions: for nowe they haue no vse, seyng Christe is come. ] philosophie & vayne deceipt, after the tradition of men, and after the rudimentes of the worlde, and not after Christe.

9 For in hym dwelleth all the fulnesse of the Godhead bodyly:

10 And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principalitie and power,

11 In whom also ye are [Note: Rom.ii.d. Ephe.ii.c. Collos.b. ] circumcised with circumcisio made without handes, by puttyng of the body of sinnes of the fleshe, in the circumcision of Christe:

12 [Note: Rom.vi.a. Calath.iii.d. ] Buried with him in baptisme, in who ye are also risen agayne through ye fayth [Note: [b] In beleuyng yt God by his power raysed vp Christ, wherof we haue a sure token in our baptisme. ] of the operation of God, who hath raysed hym from the dead.

13 And ye beyng dead to sinne and to the vncircumcision of your fleshe, hath he quickened with him, forgeuyng all your trepasses, >

C

14 And puttyng out the hande writing of ordinaunces, that was agaynst vs, and that hath he taken out of the way, fastenyng it to his crosse:

15 Spoylyng [Note: Gen.iii.e. Luk.xi.c. Iohn.xii.c. ] all principalities & powers, hath made a shewe of them openly, triumphyng ouer them in it.

16 Let no man therefore iudge you in meate, or in drinke, or in part of an holyday, or of the newe moone, or of the Sabboth [dayes]:

17 [Note: Hebr.vii..a. ] Which are shadowes of thynges to come: but the body (is) of Christe.

D

18 Let no man [Note: [c] Meaning that the hypocrites led the at their pleasure into all superstition and errour. ] begile you of victorie, in the humblenesse and worshipping of Angels, intrudyng (hym selfe into those thynges) which he hath not seene, causelesse puft vp with his fleshly mynde,

19 And holdeth not the head, wherof all the body by ioyntes & bandes supported and knit together, increaseth with the encrease of God.

20 Wherefore, yf ye be dead with Christe from ye [Note: Galat.iiii.b. ] rudimentes of the world: why, as though luyng in the worlde, are ye led with traditions,

21 Touche not, taste not, handle not?

22 Which all be in corruption, in abusyng after the commaundementes and doctrines of men.

23 Which thynges haue a shewe of wisdome, in superstition & humblenesse of mynde, and in hurtyng of

the body, not in any honour to the satisfyng of ye flesh.

[Page]

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

1 He sheweth where we shoulde seke Christe, 5 he exhorteth to mortification, 10 to put of the olde man, and to put on Christe, 12 to the which he addeth exhortation, both generall and perticuler, to charitie and humilitie.

A

1 < **If** ye then be rysen agayne with Christ, seke those things which are aboue, where Christe sitteth [Note: Ephe.i.d. Hebre.i.a. ] on the ryght hande of God.

2 Set your affection on [Note: [a] which either serue but for a tyme, or els are inuented by men. ] thynges aboue, not on thinges on the earth.

3 For ye are dead, and your lyfe is hyd with Christe in God.

4 When soeuer Christe which is our life, shall appeare, then shall ye also appeare with hym in glorie. >

5 Mortifie therefore your members which are vpon the earth: fornication, vncleannesse, inordinate affection, euyll concupiscence, and couetousnesse, which is worshipping of images:

6 For which thynges sake, the wrath of God commeth on the children of disobedience,

7 [Note: Ephe.ii.a. ] In the which ye walked sometyme, when ye lyued in them.

B

8 But nowe put ye of also all, wrath, fiercenesse, maliciousnesse, blasphemie, filthie comunication out of your mouth.

9 Lye not one to another, seyng that ye haue put of ye olde man with his workes:

10 [Note: Rom.vi.a. Ephe.iii.c. ] Hauyng put on the newe man, which is renued into the knowledge after the image of hym that made hym,

11 [Note: Galath.vi.d ] Where is neither Greke nor Iewe, circumcision nor vncircumcision, Barbarian, Sythian, bonde, free: but Christe is all, and in all.

12 < Put on therfore (as the elect of God, [Note: [b] He sheweth what frutes are in them that are dead to the worlde, and are rysen agayne with Christe. ] holy and beloued) bowels of mercie, kyndenesse, humblenesse of mynde, mekenesse, long sufferyng,

13 Forbearyng one another, and forgeuyng one another, yf any man haue a quarel agaynst any: euen as Christe forgaued you, so also [do] ye.

14 And aboute all thynges [put on] [Note: Mat.xxii.d. ] loue, which is the bonde of perfectnesse.

15 And let the peace of God haue the victorie in your heartes, to the which also we are called in one body:  
And see that ye be thankfull.

C

16 Let the worde of God dwell in you richly in all wisdome, teachyng and admonisshyng your owne selues, [Note: Psal.33.a. Ephe.v.d. ] in psalmes, and hymmes, and spirituall songes, singyng with grace in your heartes to the Lorde.

17 And [Note: i Cor.x.g. ] whatsoever ye do in worde or deede, [do] all in the name of the Lorde Iesus, geuyng thanks to God and the father by hym. >

18 [Note: Ephe.v.e. i Pet.iii.a. ] Wiues, submit your selues vnto your owne husbandes, as it is comely in the Lorde.

19 Husbandes, loue your wyues, and be not bitter agaynst them:

20 [Note: Ephe.vi.a. ] Chyldren, obey your fathers and mothers in all thynges, for that is well pleasyng vnto the Lorde.

21 Fathers, [Note: [c] By to much rigour. ] prouoke not your chyldren [to anger], lest they be discouraged.

22 [Note: Ephe.vi.a. Titus.ii.c. i Pet.ii.d. ] Seruauntes, obey in all thynges to your bodyly maisters: not with eye seruice, as men pleasers, but in singleness of heart, fearyng God.

D

23 And whatsoever ye do, do it heartilie, as to the Lorde, and not vnto men:

24 Knowyng, that of the Lorde ye shall receaue the rewarde of inheritaunce, for ye serue the Lorde Christe:

25 But he that doth wrong, shall receaue for the wrong he hath done: [Note: ii Par.xix.c. Actes.x.e. Eccle.35.b. Rom.ii.b. Coloss.iii.c. ] And there is no respect of persons.

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth them to be feruent in prayer, 5 to walke wisely towarde them that are not yet come to the true knowledge of Christ, he saluteth them, and wissheth them all prosperitie.

A

1 [Note: Ephe.vi.a. ] **Maisters**, do vnto your seruauntes that which is iust & equall, knowyng that ye also haue a maister in heauen.

2 [Note: Ephe.vi.c. ] Continue in prayer, and watche in the same with thankes geuyng:

3 Praying also for vs, [Note: Ephe vi.c. i Thess.vi.c. ] that God may open vnto vs the [Note: [a] That I may freely preache the Gospell. ] doore of vtteraunce, that we may speake ye misterie of Christ, wherfore I am also in bondes:

4 That I may vtter it, as I ought to speake.

[Page]

5 [Note: Ephe.v.d. ] Walke in wisdome towarde the that are without, redeemyng the tyme.

6 Let your speache be alway in grace, powdered with salt, [Note: Leuit.ii.d. Math.v.c. ] to knowe howe ye ought to aunswere euery man.

7 All my state shall Tychicus declare vnto you, [who is] a beloued brother and faythfull minister, and felowe seruaunt in the Lorde:

8 Whom I haue sent vnto you for the same thyng, that he myght knowe your state, and comfort your heartes,

9 With Onesimus a faythfull and beloued brother, which is of you. They shall shewe you of all thynges which [are] here.

C

10 [Note: Act.xxvii a ] Aristarchus my prison felowe saluteth you, & [Note: ii Tim.iiii.b. ] Marcus Barnabas sisters sonne, (touchyng whom ye receaued commaundementes:) If he come vnto you, receaue hym:

11 And Iesus, which is called Iustus, which are of the circumcision. These only are my [Note: [b] In preachyng the Gospell. ] workefelowes vnto the kyngdome of God, which hath ben vnto my consolation.

12 [Note: Coloss.iii.a. ] Epaphras which is of you, a seruaunt of Christe, saluteth you, alwayes labouryng feruently for you in prayers, that ye may stande perfect and fylled in all the wyll of God.

D

13 For I beare him recorde, that he hath a great zeale for you, and them [that are] in Laodicea, and them [that are] in Hierapolis.

14 Deare Lucas the phisition greeteth you, and [Note: ii Tim.iiii.c ] Demas.

15 Salute the brethren [which are] in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the Churche which is in his house.

16 And when the epistle is read of you, make that it be read also in the Church of the Laodiceans: and that ye likewise reade the epistle from Laodicea.

17 And say to Archippus: take heede to the ministerie that thou hast receaued in the Lorde, that thou fulfyll it.

18 The salutation, by the hande of me, Paul. Remember my bondes. Grace be with you. Amen.



## ¶ Written from Rome to the Colossians, by Tychicus and Onesimus.

### *The first Epistle of Saint Paul the Apostle, vnto the Thessalonians.*

#### ¶ The first Chapter.

¶ 2 He thanketh God for them, that they are so stedfast in fayth and good workes, 6 and receaue the Gospell with such earnestnesse, 7 that they are an example to all others.

A

1 **Paul** & Siluanus and Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, in [Note: [a] For there is no Church which is not ioyned together in God. ] God the father, and in the Lorde Iesus Christ: [Note: Rom.i.a. i Cor.i.a. ii Cor.i.a. Galath.i.a. Ephe.i.a. ] Grace [be] vnto you, & peace from God our father, and the Lorde Iesus Christe.

2 We geue thanks to God [Note: Rom.i.b. Philip.i.a. Ephe.i.b. Coloss.i.a. ] alwayes for all you, makyng mention of you in our prayers,

B

3 Without ceassyng, callyng to remembraunce the worke of your fayth, and labour of [Note: i Thess.4.b ] loue, and patient abidyng in the [Note: i Tim.i.a. ] hope of our Lorde Iesus Christe, in the syght of God and our father.

4 < Knowyng, brethren beloued, your election of God.

5 For our Gospell came not vnto you in [Note: i Cor.ii.a. ] worde only, but also in power, and in the holy ghost, and in much certayntie, as [Note: i Thess.ii.a. ] ye knowe after what maner we were among you for your sake.

C

6 And ye became folowers of vs, and of the Lorde, receauyng the worde in much affliction, with [Note: [b] To beleue, and to be fully perswaded to haue ye giftes of the holy ghost, & ioyfully to suffer for christes sake, are most certain signes of our election ] ioy of the holy ghost:

7 So that ye were an ensample to all that beleue in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you, sounded out the worde of the Lorde, not only in Macedonia & Achaia: but also in euery place your faith to Godwarde is spread abroade, so [Page] that we neede not to speake any thyng.

D

9 For they them selues shewe of you, what maner of entryng in we had vnto you, and howe ye turned to God from images, to serue the [Note: [c] For images are dead thinges, and only faigned fantasies. ] lyuyng and true God.

10 And to tary for his sonne [Note: Actes.i.b. ] from heauen, whom he rayسد from the dead: > [euen] Iesus which delyuereth vs from [Note: Iohn.iii.b. ] the wrath to come.

## ¶ The .ij. Chapter.

1 To the intent they shoulde not faint vnder the crosse, 2 he commendeth his diligence in preachyng, 13 and theirs in obeying, 18 He excuseth his absence, that he coulde not come and open his heart to them.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **For** ye your selues, [Note: i Thessa.i.b. ] brethren, knowe our entraunce in vnto you, yt it was not in [Note: [a] Not in outwarde shewe and in pompe, but in trauel and in the feare of God. ] vayne:

2 But euen after that we had suffred before, and were [Note: Act.xvii.c. ] shamefully entreated as ye knowe, at Philippos, we were bolde in our God, to speake vnto you the Gospell of God, in [Note: Act.xvii.b. ] much stryuyng.

3 For our exhortation was not of deceit, neither of vncleannes, neither in guile:

4 But as it were alowed of God, to be put in credite with the Gospell: euen so we speake, not as pleasyng [Note: Galath.i.b. ] men, but God, which tryeth our heartes.

<sup>B</sup>  
5 For neither at any tyme vsed we flatteryng wordes, as ye knowe, neither cloke of couetousnes, [Note: Philip.i.a. ] God [is] recorde,

6 Neither sought we prayse of men, neither of you, nor yet of others:

7 When we myght haue ben in [Note: Or, a burden. ] auctoritie, as the Apostles of Christe, but we were tender among you, euen as a [Note: [b] He humbled hym selfe to support all thynges with out all respect of lucre: euen as the tender mother which nourceth her children, and thynketh no office to vtile for her chyldrens sake. ] nource cherissheth her chyldren,

8 So, beyng tenderly affected towarde you, our good wyll was to haue dealt vnto you, not the Gospell of God only: but also our owne soules, because ye were deare vnto vs.

<sup>C</sup>  
9 < For ye remember brethren, our labour and trauayle. [Note: Act.xx.g. 2 Thess.iii b i Cor.ix.c. ] For we labouryng nyght & day, because we woulde not be chargeable vnto any of you, preached vnto you the Gospell of God.

10 Ye [are] witnesses, & God [also] howe holyly, and iustly, and vnblameably, we behaued our selues

among [Note: [c] For it is not possible to auoyde the reproche of the wicked, whiche euer hate good doinges. ] you that beleue.

11 As ye knowe, howe that as a father his chyl dren, so we haue exhorted, comforted, and besought euery one of you,

12 That ye woulde walke worthie of God, who hath called you vnto his kyngdome and glorie.

13 For this cause thanke we God also without ceassyng, because ye receauyng the worde which ye hearde of vs concernyng God, ye receaued it not as the worde of man, (but as it is in deede) the worde of God, which effectuously worketh also in you that beleue. >

D

14 For ye brethren became folowers of the Churches of God, which in Iurie are in Christe Iesus: for ye haue suffred lyke thynges of your countreymen, as they haue of the Iewes:

15 Who both kylled the Lorde Iesus, and their owne prophetes, & haue persecuted vs: and God they please not, and are contrarie [Note: [d] And would hynder all men from their saluatio. ] to all men:

16 And hynder vs to speake to the gentiles that they myght be saued, to fulfyll their sinnes alway. For the [Note: Luk.xxi.a. ] wrath [of God] is come on them to the vtmost.

17 Forasmuch brethren, as we are kept from you for a short season, in person, not in heart, we enforced ye more to see you personally with great desire.

18 And therefore we woulde haue come vnto you, (I Paul) once agayne: [Note: Daniel.x.a. ] but Satan hyndered vs.

19 For what is our hope, or ioy, or crowne of reioycyng? [Note: ii Cor.i.c. ] Are [Note: [e] Therefore I coulde not forget you, except I would forget my selfe. ] not ye it in the presence of our Lorde Iesus Christe, at his commyng?

20 Yes, ye are our glorie and ioy.

## The .iiij. Capter.

2 He sheweth howe greatly he was affectioned towarde them, both in that he sent Timotheus to them, 10 and also prayed for them.

A

1 **Wherfore**, sence we coulde no longer forbear, we thought it good to remaine at [Note: Act.xvii.d. ] Athens alone.

2 And sent Timotheus, our brother and minister of God, and felowe labourer in the Gospell of Christe, to

stabilishe you & to comfort you concernyng your faith.

[Page]

3 That no man shoulde be moued in these afflictions: For [Note: Iohn. xv.c. Act.xiiii.d. ] ye your selues knowe, that we are appoynted therevnto.

4 For veryly when we were with you, we tolde you before that we shoulde suffer tribulation, euen as it came to passe, and [as] ye knowe.

B

5 For this cause, when I [Note: [b] His great affection towarde ye small flocke. ] coulde no longer forbear, I sent to knowe your fayth, lest by some meanes the tempter had tempted you, and our labour had ben vayne.

6 But nowe lately, when Timotheus came from you vnto vs, and brought vs good tydynges of your fayth and loue, and howe that ye haue good remembraunce of vs alwayes, desiryng to see vs, as we also [to see] you:

C

7 Therefore brethren we were comforted ouer you, in all our aduersitie and necessitie, because of your fayth.

8 For nowe we [Note: [c] If ye remaine constat in faith & true doctrine, I shall thynke that all myne afflictions be so many pleasures, & shal be restored fro death to lyfe. ] lyue, yf ye stande fast in the Lorde.

9 For what thanks can we recompence to God agayne for you, for all the ioye wherwith we ioy for your sakes before our God?

D

10 Praying nyght and daye exceedyngly to see you personally, and repayre the wantynges of your fayth?

11 Nowe God him selfe, and our father, and our Lord Iesus Christe, guyde our waye vnto you.

12 And the Lorde encrease you, & make you abounde in loue one towarde another, and towarde all men, euen as we also towarde you,

13 To stablyshe your heartes vnblameable, in holynesse before God and our father, in the commyng of our Lorde Iesus Christe, with all his saintes.

### The .iiij. Chapter.

1 He exhortheth them to holynesse, 6 innocencie, 9 loue, 11 labour, 13 and moderation in lamentyng for the dead, 17 describyng the ende of the resurrection.

A

1 **Furthermore** we besech you brethren, & exhorte you by the Lorde Iesus, that ye encrease more and more, as ye haue receaued of vs, how ye ought to walke and to please God.

2 For ye knowe what commaundementes we gaue you by the Lorde Iesus.

3 For this is the wyll of God, [Note: Rom.xii.a. Ephe.v.a. ] your holynesse, [Note: [a] That is, that ye should dedicate your selues wholly vnto God. ] that ye should abstayne from fornication:

4 That euery one of you should knowe [Note: i.Cor.vii.a. ] how to possesse his vessell in holynesse and honour:

5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, [Note: Rom.i.c. ] euen as the gentiles, which knowe not God.

B  
6 That no man oppresse and defraude his brother in [any] matter, because that the Lorde is the auenger of all suche: as we also haue forewarned you, and testified.

7 For God hath not called vs vnto vncleanenesse, but into holynesse. >

8 [Note: Luke.x.c. ] He therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath geuen to you [Note: i.Cor.iii.b. ] his holy spirite. >

9 < But as touchyng brotherly [Note: i.Thess.i.a. ] loue, ye nede not that I write vnto you: [Note: Iohn.xiii.d. ] For ye are taught of God to loue one another.

C  
10 Yea and that thyng verly ye do vnto all ye brethren which [are] in al Macedonia: But we beseche you brethren, that ye encrease more and more:

11 And that ye studie to be quiet, and to do your owne [busynesse] and [Note: Actes.xx.b i.Cor.ix.c. ii.Thes.iii.b ] to worke with your owne handes as we commaunded you:

12 That ye may walke honestly toward them that are without, & that nothyng be lackyng in you. >

13 < But I woulde not haue you to be ignoraunt brethren, concernyng them which sleepe, that ye [Note: [b] He doeth not condemne all kynde of sorowe. but that whiche proceadeth of infidelitie. ] sorowe not euen as other, which [Note: Sapi.ii.a. ] haue no hope.

14 For yf we beleue that Iesus dyed and rose agayne: euen so them also whiche sleepe by Iesus, wyll God bryng with hym.

D  
15 For this say we vnto you in the worde of the Lorde, that we whiche [Note: i.Cor.xv.g. ] lyue, remayning vnto the comyng of the Lord, shall not preuent them which sleepe.

16 For the Lorde hym selfe shal descende from heauen in a shoute, [and] in the voyce of the [Note: Math.24.c. Daniel.xii.a ] Archangell, and in the trumpe of God: And the dead in Christ shall aryse first. [Page]

17 Than we which lyue, which remaine, shalbe caught vp together with them in the cloudes, to meete the Lorde in the ayre: And so shall we euer be with the Lorde.

18 Wherefore comfort your selues one another in these wordes. >

## The .v. Chapter.

1 He infourmeth them of the day of iudgement and commying of the Lorde, 6 Exhortyng them to watche, 12 and to regarde such as preache Gods word among them.

A

1 **But** of the tymes & seasons brethre, ye haue no neede that I write vnto you.

2 For ye your selues knowe perfectlye [Note: Math.24.d. ii.Pet.iii.c. Apoc.iii.a. ] that the day of the Lord shall so come euen as a theefe in the nyght.

3 For when they shal say peace & safetie, then shall [Note: Iere.xv.b. ] sodeyne destruction come vppon them, [Note: [a] That is, sodenly & vnloked for. ] as sorowe vpon a woman with chylde, and they shall not escape.

4 **But** ye [Note: Iohn.xii.e. Ephe.v.c. ] brethren are not in darknesse, that that day shoulde ouertake you as a theefe.

5 < Ye are all the chyltren of lyght, and the chyltren of the daye: We are not of the nyght, neither of darknesse.

B

6 [Note: Rom.xiii.d. ] Therefore let vs not [Note: [b] Here slepe is taken for contempte of saluation, when men continue in sinnes and wyll not awake to godlynesse. ] sleepe, as [do] other: but let vs watche and be sober.

7 For they that sleepe, sleepe in the night: and they that be druncken, are druncken in the nyght.

8 **But** let vs which are of the day, be sober, [Note: Ephe.vi.b. ] puttyng on the brest plate of fayth and loue, and a helmet, the hope of saluation.

9 For God hath not appoynted vs to wrath: but to obtayne saluation, by our Lorde Iesus Christe,

10 [Note: ii.Cor.v.c. ] Whiche dyed for vs, that whether we wake or sleepe, we shoulde lyue together with hym.

11 Wherefore comfort your selues together, and edifie euery one another, euen as ye do. >

C

12 And we beseche you brethren to know them [Note: Galath.vi.b i.Tim.v.c. Philip.ii.b. ] whiche labour among you, and haue the ouersight of you in the Lorde, and admonishe you:

13 That ye haue them in hye reputation, in loue for their worke, and be at peace among your selues.

14 < We exhort you brethren, warne them that are vnruely, comfort the feeble mynded, lyft vp the weake, be pacient towarde all men.

15 [Note: Math.v.g. ] See that none recompence euyl for euyl vnto any man: but euer folowe that whiche is good, both among your selues, and to all men.

16 [Note: Philip. iiii.a ] Reioyce euer.

17 [Note: Luk.xviii.a ] Pray continually.

D

18 In all thinges geue thankes. For this [is] the wyl of God in Christe Iesus towarde you.

19 Quenche not the spirite.

20 [Note: i.Cor xiiii g. ] Despise not [Note: [c] The preachyng of the word of God. ] prophesynges.

21 Examine all thynges, holde fast that which is good.

22 Abstayne from all appearaunce of euyl.

23 And the very God of peace santifie you throughout [And I pray God] that your whole spirite, and soule, and body, may be preserued blamelesse in the comming of our Lorde Iesus Christe.

24 [Note: Nu.xxiii.c. ] Faythfull is he whiche called you, whiche wyl also do it.

25 Brethren, pray for vs.

26 [Note: i.Cor.i.b. Rom.xvi.c. i.Cor.xv.d. ] Greete all the brethren in an holy kysse.

27 I charge you in the Lorde, that this epistle be read vnto al the holy brethren.

28 [Note: ii.Cor.xiii.c ii.Thes.iii.d ] The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you. Amen.

### **The first (epistle) vnto the Thessalonians, written from Athens.**

[Page]

### ***The seconde Epistle of the Apostle Saint Paul, to the Thessalonians.***

## The first Chapter.

3 He thanketh God for their fayth, loue, and pacience. 11 He prayeth for the encrease of the same. 12 And sheweth what fruite shall come therof.

A

1 **Paul** and Siluanus and Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians in God our father, and the Lord Iesus Christe:

2 [Note: Rom. i.a. i.Cor.i.a. Ephe.i.a. ] Grace vnto you and peace from God our father, & the Lorde Iesus Christe.

3 We are bound to [Note: Rom.i.b. ] thanke God alwayes for you brethren, as it is meete, because that your fayth groweth exceedyngly, and the loue of euery one of you toward another aboundeth:

B

4 So that we our selues reioyce in you in the Churches of God, ouer your [Note: [a] whiche procedeth of your fayth, as a most notable fruite. ] pacience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye suffer,

5 [Which is] a [Note: [b] The faith full by their afflictios, see as in a cleare glasse, the end of Gods iuste iudgement, when as they shall raigne with Christe whiche haue suffered with hym: and the wicked shall feele his extreme wrath & vengeance. ] token of the ryghteous iudgment of God, that ye may be counted woorthy of the kyngdome of God, for which ye also suffer.

6 For it is a ryghteous thing with God, to recompence tribulation to them that trouble you:

C

7 And to you whiche are troubled, reste with vs, in the reuelation of the Lorde Iesus from heauen, with the Angels of his power,

8 In flamyng fire, rendryng vengeance vnto them that knowe not God, [Note: Rom.ii.b. ] and that obey not the Gospell of our Lorde Iesus Christe.

9 [Note: Sapi.v.c. ] Which shalbe punisshed with euerlastyng dampnation, from the presence of the Lorde, & fro the glorie of his power:

D

10 [Note: Mat.xxv.c. ] When he shall come to be glorified in his saintes, and to be made marueylous in all them that beleue (because our testimonie toward you was beleued) in that day.

11 [Note: Coloss.i.a. Philip.i.b. ] Wherefore also we praye alwayes for you, that our God woulde make you worthy of the callyng, & fulfill all good pleasure of goodnesse in the [Note: [c] Fayth is gods wonderfull worke in vs. ] worke of fayth in power:

12 That the name of our Lorde Iesus Christe may be glorified in you, and ye in hym, accordyng to the grace of our God, and the Lorde Iesus Christe.



## ¶ The .ij. Chapter.

3 He sheweth them that the day of the Lorde shall not come, tyll the departyng of the fayth come first, 9 and the kyngdome of Antichriste. 15 And therefore he exhorte them not to be deceaued, but to stande stedfast in the thinges that he hath taught them.

A

1 We besech you brethren, by the comyng of our Lorde Iesus Christe, and by our assembling vnto hym,

2 That ye be not sodenlye moued from [your] minde, nor be troubled, neither by [Note: [a] As false reuelations, or dreames. ] spirite, nor by worde, nor yet by letter, as from vs, as though the daye of Christe were at hande.

3 Let no man deceaue you by any meanes, for [the Lorde shall not come] excepte there come a [Note: Dani.ix.g. i.Tim.iiii.a. ] fallyng away first, & that that man of sinne be reuealed, the sonne of [Note: [b] who, as he destroyeth other, so shall he be destroyed hym selfe. ] perdition,

4 [Whiche is] an aduersarie, and is exalted aboue all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that he as God, sitteth in the temple of God, shewing hym selfe that he is God. [Note: i.Cor.iii.b. ]

B

5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I tolde you these thynges?

6 And nowe ye knowe what withholdeth, that he myght be reuealed in his tyme.

7 [Note: i.Iohn.ii.a. ] For the misterie of iniquitie doth alredie worke, tyll he whiche nowe onely letteth, be taken out of the way.

[Page]

8 And then shall that wicked be reuealed, [Note: Esaias xi.a. ] whom the Lorde shall consume with the spirite of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightnesse of his comyng: >

9 [Euen hym] whose comyng is after the workyng of Satan, in all power [Note: Math.24.c. ] & signes, and wonders, of lying,

10 And in all deceauablenesse of vnryghteousnesse, in them that peryshe: because they receaued not the loue of the trueth, that they myght be saued.

C

11 [Note: Rom.i.d. ] And therefore God shall sende them strong delusion, that they should beleue lyes:

12 That all they myght be dampned whiche beleued not the trueth, but had pleasure in vnryghteousnes.

13 But we are bounde to geue thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloued of the Lorde, because that God hath fro the begynnyng chosen you to saluation in sanctifyng of the spirite, & [in] fayth of the trueth:

14 Wherevnto he called you by our Gospell, to the obteyning of the glorie of our Lorde Iesus Christe.

D

15 < Therefore brethren stande fast, and holde the ordinaunces whiche ye haue ben taught, whether it were by our preachyng, or by our epistle.

16 Our Lorde Iesus Christe, and God and our father, whiche hath loued vs, and hath geuen vs euerlastyng consolation, and good hope in grace,

17 Comfort your heartes, and stablysshe you in all good saying and doyng.

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

1 He desireth them to pray for hym, that the Gospell may prosper, 6 and geueth them warnyng to reprove the idle, 16 and so wyssheth them all wealth.

A

1 **Furthermore** brethren, praye ye for vs, [Note: Ephe.vi.c. Coloss.iiii.a ] that the worde of the Lord may haue free passage and be glorified, euen as with you:

2 And that we may be delyuered from disordered and euyll men: For all men haue not [Note: [a] Although they boast the selues therof. ] fayth.

3 But the Lorde is faythfull, whiche shall stablysshe you, and kepe you from euyll.

4 And we haue confidence in the Lorde to youwarde, that ye both do, and wyll do the thynges whiche we commaunde you.

5 And the Lorde guyde your heartes to the loue of God, and to the pacient waytyng for Christe. >

B

6 < We commaunde you brethren in the name of our Lorde Iesus Christe, [Note: i.Cor.v.b. ] that ye withdrawe your selues from euery brother that walketh inordinately, and not after the [Note: [b] which is, to trauayle yf he wyll eate. ] institution whiche he receaued of vs.

7 For ye your selues knowe howe ye ought to folowe vs: For we behaued not our selues inordinately among you,

8 Neither toke we breade of any man for nought: [Note: Actes.xx.g i.Cor.ix.c. i.Thess.ii.c. ] but wrought with labour and sweat nyght and daye, because we woulde not be chargeable to any of you.

C

9 Not but that we had auctoritie, but to make our selues an ensample vnto you to folowe vs.

10 For when we were with you, this we warned you of: that yf any woulde not worke, the same shoulde not eate.

11 For we haue heard that there are some which walke among you inordinately, workyng not at all, but be

busy bodies.

12 Them that are such, we commaunde and exhort by our Lorde Iesus Christ, that they workyng in quietnesse, eate their owne breade.

13 And ye [Note: Galath.vi.b ] brethren, be not weery in well doyng.

D

14 Yf any man obey not our doctrine, signifie hym by an epistle, [Note: ii.Thess.iii d ] and haue no companie with hym, that he maye be ashamed.

15 Yet count him not as an [Note: [c] The ende of excommunication, is not to dryue from the Churche such as haue fallen, but to wyn them to the Churche by amendmet. ] enemye, but warne hym as a brother.

16 Nowe the very Lorde of peace geue you peace alwayes, by all meanes. The Lorde be with you all.

17 The salutation of me Paul with mine owne hande. This is the token in euery epistle. So I write.

18 [Note: i.Thess.v.b. Phil.iiii.b. ] The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

### ¶ Sent from Athens.

[Page]

## ¶ *The first Epistle of the Apostle Saint Paul, vnto Timothie.*

### The first Chapter.

3 He exhorteth Timothie to wayte vpon his office namely to see that nothyng be taught but gods worde. &c. 5 Declaryng that fayth, with a good conscience, charitie, and edification, are the ende therof, 20 and admonisheth of Hymeneus and Alexander.

A

1 **Paul** an Apostle of Iesus Christ, [Note: Actes.ix.c. ] by the commission of God our sauour, and Lorde Iesus Christe [whiche is] [Note: i.Thes.i.a. ] our hope,

2 Unto [Note: Actes.xvi.a ] Timothie a natural [Note: [a] So called because he folowed the simplicite of the Gospell. ] sonne in the faith: Grace, mercie [and] peace from God our father and Iesus Christe our Lorde.

3 As I besought thee to abyde styll in Ephesus, when I departed into [Note: Actes.xix.a ] Macedonia [so do] that thou comaunde some that they teache no other doctrine:

4 Neither geue heede to [Note: ii.Tim.ii.c. Tit.iii.e. i.Tim.iii.a. ] fables and endlesse genealogies, whiche breede questions, more then godly edifying which is in fayth.

B

5 But the [Note: [b] Because these questionistes preferred their curious fables to al other knowledge, & beautified them with the law, as yf they had ben the verry law of God: S. Paul sheweth, that the ende of Gods lawe is loue, which can not be without a good conscience, neither a good conscience without faith, nor faith without the word of God: So ther doctrine which is an occasion of contention, is woorth nothyng. ] ende of the commaundement, is loue out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, & of fayth vnfaigned.

6 From the whiche thynges, some hauyng erred, haue tourned vnto vayne ianglyng:

7 Couetyng to be doctours of the lawe, not vnderstandyng what they speake, neither wherof they affirme.

8 < But we knowe that the lawe is good, yf a man vse it lawfully:

9 Knowyng this, that the lawe is not geuen vnto a ryghteous man, but vnto the lawlesse and disobedient, to the vngodly and to sinners, to vnholly and vncleane, to murtherers of fathers & murtherers of mothers, to mansleas,

10 To [Note: Leui.xxi.b. Rom.i.d. ] whoremongers, to them that defyle them selues with mankynde, to manstealers, to lyers, to periured, and yf there be any other thyng that is contrarie to wholsome doctrine:

11 Accordyng to the Gospell of glorie of the blessed God, whiche is committed vnto me.

C

12 And I thanke Christ Iesus our Lord whiche hath made me strong: For he counted me faythfull, puttyng [me] into the ministerie,

13 Beyng a blasphemmer, [Note: Actes.ix.a. i.Cor.xv.b. Galath.i.c. ] and a persecuter, and an oppressour: But yet I obtayned mercie, because I dyd it [Note: [c] Not knowyng that I sought against God. ] ignorauntly in vnbeliefe.

14 Neuerthelesse, the grace of our Lorde was exceedyng aboundaunt, with faith and loue, which is in Christe Iesus.

15 < This is a faythfull saying, and by all meanes worthy to be receaued, that [Note: Math.ix.d. Mark. ii.c. Luk. xix.a. Iohn.iii.c. ] Christe Iesus came into the worlde to saue synners, of whom I am chiefe.

D

16 Notwithstandyng, for this cause was mercie shewed vnto me, that in me the first, Iesus Christe myght shewe all long sufferyng, to the example of them which shoulde beleue on hym to lyfe euerlastyng.

17 [Note: [d] He Brusteth foorth into these godly affectios, consideryng gods great mercye toward hym. ] Nowe, vnto the kyng euerlastyng, immortall, inuisible, vnto God onlye wise [be] honour and glorie for euer and euer, Amen.

18 This commaundement commit I vnto thee sonne Timotheus, accordyng to the prophetes which went before vpon thee, that thou in them shouldest fyght a good fyght:

19 Hauyng fayth and good conscience, which some hauyng put awaye as concernyng fayth, haue made shipwracke.

20 Of whom [Note: ii.Tim.ii.e. Mat.xviii.c. i.Corin.v.a. ] is Hymeneus and Alexander, whom I haue [Note: [e] Excommunicate, or cast out of the Churche. ] delyuered vnto Satan, that they maye learne not to blaspheme. [Page]

## ¶ The .ij. Chapter.

1 He exhortheth to pray for all men. 4 wherfore, 8 and howe. 9 As touchyng the apparell and modestie of women.

A

1 **I exhort** therefore, that firste of all, prayers, supplications, intercessions and geuyng of thankes be made for all men:

2 [Note: Iere.xxix.e Baruch.i.c. ] For kynges, and for all that are in auctoritie, that we maye leade a quiete and peaceable lyfe, in all godlynesse and honestie.

B

3 For that is good and accepted in the syght of God our sauour,

4 Who wyll haue all men to be saued, and to come vnto the knowledge of the trueth.

5 For [there is] [Note: Ioh.xvii.a. Hebr.ix.d. Galath.iii.c ] one God, and one mediatur of God and men, the man Christe Iesus:

6 Who gaue him selfe a [Note: [a] He sheweth that there can be no mediatur, except he be also the redeemer. ] ransome for all, a testimonie in due tymes.

7 Wherevnto I am ordeined a preacher and an apostle (I tell the trueth in Christe, and lye not) a teacher of the gentiles in fayth and veritie. >

C

8 I wyll therefore, that the men [Note: Iohn.iii.c. ] praye euerywhere, lyftyng vp holy handes, without wrath and reasonyng.

9 Lykewyse also the women, that they araye them selues in comely apparell, with shamefastnesse, and discrete behauiour, not in brayded heere, either golde or pearles, or costly aray:

10 But (that becommeth women professyng godlynesse) through good workes.

11 [Note: i.Cor.xiiii g ] Let the woman learne in scilence in all subiECTION.

D

12 But I suffer not a woman to teache, neither to vsurpe auctoritie ouer ye man, but to be in scilence.

13 For Adam was first fourmed, then Eue.

14 And Adam was not deceaued: but the woman beyng deceaued, was [Note: [b] That is, gyltie of the transgression. ] in the transgression.

15 Notwithstandyng through bearyng of chyldren she shalbe saued, yf they continue in fayth and loue, and holynesse, with modestie.

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

2 He declareth what is the office of ministers, 11 and as touchyng their families, 15 the dignitie of the Church, 16 & the principall poynt of the heauenly doctrine.

A

1 **This** is] a faithful saying: Yf a man desire ye office of a bishop, he desireth a good worke.

2 A bishop therefore must be blamelesse, the husband of one wyfe, watchyng, sober, comely apparelled, a loue of hospitalitie, apt to teache,

3 Not geuen to ouermuch wine, no striker, not greedy of fylthy lucre: but gentle, abhorryng fyghtyng, abhorryng couetousnesse:

4 One that ruleth well his owne house, hauyng chyldren in subiECTION, with all grauitie.

B

5 For yf a man knowe not to rule his owne house, howe shall he care for the Church of God?

6 Not a young scoler, lest he, beyng puffed vp, [Note: [a] Lest, beyng proude of his degree, he be lykewyse condempned, as the deuyll was for lyftyng vp hym selfe by pride. ] fall into the condempnation of the deuyll.

7 He must also haue a good report of the which are without, lest he fall into the rebuke and snare of the deuyll.

8 Likewise must ye ministers be [Note: Actes.vi.a. ] graue, not double tongued, not geuen to much wine, neither greedy of fylthy lucre:

9 [Note: [b] Hauyng the true doctrine of ye Gospell and the feare of God. ] Holdyng the misterie of the fayth in a pure conscience.

C

10 And let them first be proued, then let them minister, beyng blamelesse.

11 Euen so must their wyues be graue, not euyl speakers, sober, faythfull in all thynges.

12 Let the deacons be the husbandes of one wife, and such as can rule their children well, and their owne houtholdes.

13 [Note: Mat.xxv.b. ] For they that haue ministred well, get them selues a good degree, and great libertie in the fayth [whiche is] in Christe Iesus.

14 These thynges write I vnto thee, hopyng to come shortly vnto thee:

D

15 But yf I tary long, that thou mayest knowe howe thou oughtest to behaue thy selfe in the house of God, whiche is the Church of the Iyuyng God, the pyller [Page] and grounde of trueth.

16 And without doubt, great is that misterie of godlynesse: [Note: Iohn.i.b. ] God was shewed in the flesshe, was iustified in the spirite, was seene among the angels, was preached vnto the gentiles, was beleued on in the worlde, and was receaued vp in glorie.

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

2 He teacheth hym what doctrine he ought to flee, 6.8.11. and what to folowe, 15 and wherin he ought to exercise hym selfe continually.

A

1 **Nowe** the spirite speaketh euidently, that [Note: Actes.xx.f. ii.Tim.iii.a. ii.Pet.ii.a. Iude i.c.c. ii.Thess.ii.a ] in the latter tymes some shall depart from the fayth, geuing heede vnto spirites of errour, & doctrines of deuyls,

2 Which speake false in hypocrisie, hauyng their [Note: [a] Their dul consciences, firste waxed harde: then after, cancker and corruptio bread therein: last of all, it was burnt of with an hotte iron, so that he meaneth such as haue no conscience. Ephe.4. ] conscience seared with an hotte iron:

3 Forbidding to marrie [& commaunding] to abstayne from meates whiche God hath created to be receaued with geuing thanks, of them whiche beleue, and knowe the trueth.

4 For [Note: Gene.i.d. Rom.xxiii c Titus.i.d. ] euery creature of God [is] good, and nothyng to be refused, yf it be receaued with thanks geuyng.

5 For it is sanctified by the worde of God and prayer.

B

6 Yf thou put the brethren in remembraunce of these thynges, thou shalt be a good minister of Iesus Christ, [Note: ii.Tim.iii.d. ] which hast ben norysshed vp in the wordes of fayth and of good doctrine, which thou hast continually folowed.

7 But [Note: i.Tim.i.a. Titus.iii.c. ] cast away prophane & old wiues fables: Exercise thy selfe rather vnto

godlynesse.

C

8 For [Note: Coloss.ii.d. ] bodily exercise profiteth little: but godlinesse is profitable vnto all thinges, hauing promise of the lyfe that is nowe, and of that which is to come.

9 [This is] a sure saying, & by all meanes worthy to be receaued.

10 For therfore we both labour, and suffer rebuke, because we haue hoped in the lyuyng God, whiche is the sauour of all men, specially of those that beleue.

11 These thynges commaunde & teache.

12 [Note: Titus.ii.c. ] Let no man despise thy youth: [Note: i.Pet.v.a. ] but be thou a paterne of the beleuers, in worde, in conuersation, in loue, in spirite, in fayth, in chastitie.

D

13 Tyll I come geue attendaunce to readyng, to exhortation, to doctrine.

14 Despise not the gyfte that is in thee, which was geuen thee [Note: [b] And reuelation of the holy ghost. ] through prophesie, with the [Note: Actes.vi.b. ] laying on of handes by the auctoritie of the eldership.

15 Haue a care of these thinges, and geue thy selfe vnto them, that it may be seene howe thou profitest in all thynges.

16 Take heede vnto thy selfe, and vnto doctrine, and continue therein: For in doying this, thou shalt both [Note: [c] Thou shalt faythfully do thy duetie, which is an assuraunce of thy saluation. ] saue thy selfe, and them that heare thee.

## The .v. Chapter.

1 He teacheth hym howe he shall behaue hym selfe in rebukyng all degrees, 3 an order concernyng wyddowes, 17 The establyshyng of ministers, 23 the gouernaunce of his body, 24 and the iudgement of sinnes.

A

1 **Rebuke** not an elder, [Note: Leui.xix.d. ] but exhort him as a father, the younger men as brethren,

2 The elder women as mothers, the younger as sisters, in all chastitie.

3 Honour wydowes, whiche are wydowes in deede.

4 [Note: Eccles.iii. b. ] But yf any wydowe haue chyldren or nephewes, let them learne first to rule their owne houses godly, and to recompence also their elder kynsefolkes: for that is good and acceptable before God.



5 [Note: Luke.ii f. ] And she that is a wydowe [Note: [a] whiche hath no maner of worldly meanes to helpe her selfe with. ] in deede, and left alone, hopeth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers nyght and day.

6 But she that liueth in pleasure, is dead beyng alyue.

B

7 And these thynges commaunde, that they may be blamelesse.

8 But if any prouide not for his owne, and specially for them of his housholde, he hath denyed the fayth, and is worse then an infidell.

9 Let not a wydowe be chosen vnder three score yeres olde, hauyng ben the wyfe of one man.

[Page]

10 And well reported of in good workes, yf she haue brought vp chyldren, [Note: Gene.ix.a. Actes.x.c. i.Pet.iii.b. ] yf she haue lodged straungers, yf she haue washed the saintes feete, yf she haue ministred vnto them that were in aduersitie, yf she haue ben continually geuen to euery good worke.

11 But the yonger wydowes refuse: For whe they haue begun to waxe wanton agaynst Christe, they wyll marrie:

C

12 Hauyng dampnation, because they haue cast away their first fayth.

13 They learne to wander about from house to house idle: yea not idle only, but also tatlers and busybodies, speakyng thynges which are not comely.

14 I wyll therefore that the yonger women do [Note: i.Cor.vii.b. ] marrie, to beare chyldren, to guyde the house, to geue none occasion to ye aduersarie to speake slaunderously.

15 For certaine of them are alredy turned backe after Satan.

16 Yf any man or woman that beleueth haue wydowes, let them susteine them, & let not the Churches be charged, that there maye be sufficient for them that are wydowes in deede.

17 The elders that rule well are worthy of double honour, most speciallye they which labour in the worde & teachyng.

18 For the scripture sayth: [Note: Deu.xxv.b. ] Thou shalt not moosel the oxe that treadeth out the corne: And, [Note: Math.x.b. ] the labourer is worthy of his rewarde.

19 Agaynst an elder receaue none accusation, but [Note: Dent.xix.d ] vnder two or three witnesses.

20 Them that sinne, rebuke before all, that other also may feare.

D

21 I testifie before God, and the Lorde Iesus Christe, and the elect angels, that thou obserue these thinges without hastynesse of iudgement, and do nothyng after parcialitie.

22 [Note: Nu.xxvii.d. Act.vi.b. ] Lay handes sodenly on no man, neither be partaker of other mens sinnes. Kepe thy selfe chaste.

23 Drinke no longer water, but [Note: ii.Tim.i.b. Eccle.31.d. ] vse a litle wine for thy stomackes sake & thine often diseases.

24 Some mens sinnes are open beforehande, hastyng before vnto iudgement, and in some [Note: [b] Their synnes folow, whiche for a tyme haue deceaued ye godly, and after are detected, as Saul, Iudas, & other hypocrites. ] they folowe after.

25 Lykewise also, good workes are manifest before hande, and they that are otherwyse can not be hyd.

## ¶ The .vj. Chapter.

1 The duetie of seruauntes towarde their maisters. 3 Agaynst such as are not satisfied with the worde of God. 6 Of true godlynesse and contentation of mynde. 9 Agaynst couetousnesse. 11 A charge geuen to Timothie.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **Let** as many [Note: i.Cor.xii.c. Ephe.vi.a. Coloss.iii.d. ] seruauntes as are vnder the yoke, count their maisters worthy of all honour, that the name of god and his doctrine be not blasphemed.

2 And they whiche haue beleuyng maisters, despise them not because they are brethren: but rather do seruice, forasmuch as they are beleuyng and beloued and partakers of the [Note: [a] That is, of the grace of God, ] benefite. These thynges teache and exhort.

3 [Note: Galath.i.a. ] Yf any man teache otherwyse, and consenteth not vnto the wholsome wordes of our Lorde Iesus Christe, and to the doctrine whiche is accordyng to godlynesse:

4 He is puft vp, knowyng nothing, but dotyng about questions and [Note: i.Tim.i.a. Mitus.iii.c. ] strifes of wordes, wherof commeth enuie, stryfe, raylynges, euyll surmysynges,

<sup>B</sup>  
5 Uayne disputations of men of corrupte myndes, destitute of the trueth, thynkyng lucre to be godlynesse. From suche be thou separate.

6 Godlynesse is great lucre, [Note: Eccl.xxix.d Hebr.xiii.a ] if a man be content with that he hath.

7 [Note: Iob.i.d. Eccle.v.e. ] For we brought nothyng into the worlde, and it is certayne that we may carry nought away.

8 But hauyng foode and rayment, we must therwith be content.

9 For they that [Note: [b] That set their felicitie in riches. ] wyll be riche, fall into temptations and snares, and

into many folishe & noysome lustes, which drowne men in perdition and destruction.

C

10 For loue of money, is the roote of all euyll, whiche whyle some lusted after, they erred from the fayth, & [Note: [c] For they are neuer quiet, neither in soule nor body ] pearced the selues through with many sorowes.

11 But thou O man of God, flee these thynges, and folow after righteousnes, godlynes, faith, loue, pacience, mekenes.

12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hand on eternall lyfe, wherevnto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

[Page]

13 I geue thee charge in the sight of God, [Note: Act.xvii.c. ] who quickeneth all thynges, and before Iesus Christe, which vnder Pontius Pilate witnessed a good profession,

14 That thou kepe the commaundement without spot, vnrebukeable, vntyll the appearyng of our Lorde Iesus Christ:

15 [Note: Apoc.xvii.c ] Which in his tymes he shall shewe that is blessed and prince only, [Note: [d] By this mighty power of God, the faythfull ore admonished boldly to stande in their vocation, although the world, Satan and hell, rage agaynst them. ] the kyng of kynges, and Lorde of Lordes,

16 Who only hath immortalitie, dwelling in the light that no man can attayne vnto, Whom no man hath seene, neither can see, vnto whom be honour & power euerlastyng. Amen.

D

17 Charge them which are riche [Note: [e] In thynges pertaynyng this life ] in this world, that they be not hie minded, nor [Note: Math.v.c. Luk.xii.d. Eccle.29.b. ] trust in vncertayne riches: but in ye lyuyng God, which geueth vs abundauntly all thynges to enioy:

18 That they do good, that they be riche in good workes, that they be redye to geue, glad to distribute:

19 [Note: Math.vi.c. ] Laying vp in store for them selues a good foundation agaynst the tyme to come, that they may lay holde on eternall lyfe.

20 O Timotheus, saue [Note: [f] The giftes of God, for the vtilitie of ye Church. ] that which is geuen thee to kepe, auoydyng prophane [and] vayne bablynges, and [Note: [g] As when question, engendreth question. ] oppositions of science, falslie so called:

21 Which some professyng, haue erred concernyng the fayth. Grace [be] with thee. Amen.

**¶ Sent from Laodicea, which is the chiefest citie of Phrygia Pacaciana.**

## *The seconde Epistle of the Apostle Saint Paul, to Timothie.*

### ¶ The first Chapter.

¶ 6 Paul exhorteth Timotheus to stedfastnesse and patience in persecution, and to continue in the doctrine that he had taught hym, 12 wherof his bondes & afflictions were a gage. 16 A commendation of Onesiphorus.

A

1 **Paul** an Apostle of Iesus Christe by the wyll of God, [Note: [a] Beyng sent of God to preache that lyfe which he had promised in Christe Iesus. ] according to the promise of lyfe, which is in Christ Iesus,

2 To Timothie a beloued sonne: Grace, mercy, and peace, from God the father, and Christe Iesus our Lorde.

3 I thanke God [Note: Act.xxii.a. Rom.i.a. Philip.iii.a ] whom I worshippe from [my] forefathers in pure conscience, that without ceassyng I haue remembraunce of thee in my prayers night & day

4 Desiryng to see thee, myndefull of thy teares: that I may be fylled with ioy.

5 When I call to remembraunce the vnfaigned fayth that is in thee, whiche dwelt first in thy graundmother Lois, and in thy mother Eunica: and I am assured that [it dwelleth] in thee also.

B

6 Wherefore I put thee in remebraunce that thou [Note: [b] The gyft of God is a certaine liuely flame, kindeled in our heartes, whiche Satan & the fleshe labour to quech, and therefore we must nourishe it, and stirre it vp. ] stirre vp the gyft of God, which is in thee by the puttyng on of my handes.

7 For God hath not geuen to vs the spirite of feare: but of power, and of loue, and of a sounde mynde.

8 [Note: Rom.i.b. Ephe.iii.a. ] Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimonie of our Lorde, neither of me his prisoner: but suffer thou aduersitie with the Gospell, accordyng to the power of God,

9 Who hath [Note: Titus.iii.b. Ephe.i.a. ] saued vs, & called vs with an holy callyng, not accordyng to our workes: but accordyng to his owne purpose and grace, which was geuen vs in Christe Iesus, before the world began:

C

10 But is nowe made manifest by the appearyng of our sauour Iesus Christ, [Note: i Cor.xv.g. Hebr.ii.d. Rom.i.a. ] who hath put away death, and hath brought life and immortalitie vnto light through the Gospell:

11 [Note: i Tim.ii.b. ] Wherunto I am appoynted, a preacher and Apostle, and a teacher of the gentiles:

12 For the which cause I also suffer these thynges. Neuerthelesse, I am not [Page] ashamed: For I knowe whom I haue beleued, and I am perswaded that he is able to kepe that which I haue committed to hym, agaynst that day.

D

13 [Note: i. Tim iii. b Titus ii. b. i. Peter. v. a. ] See thou haue the paterne of wholesome wordes, which thou hast hearde of me in fayth & loue, [that is] in Christe Iesus.

14 That [Note: [c] The grace of the holy ghost. ] good thyng which was committed to thy keping, holde fast through the holy ghost which dwelleth in vs.

15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia, be turned from me: of who are Phygelus & Hermogenes.

16 The Lorde geue mercie vnto ye house of Onesiphorus, for he oft refreshed me, [Note: Mat. xxv. c Roma. i. b. ] and was not ashamed of my chayne.

17 But whe he was in Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and founde [me].

18 The Lorde graunt vnto hym, that he may fynde mercie with the Lorde in that day: And in howe many thynges he ministred vnto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

## The .ij. Chapter.

2 He exhorteth hym to be constant in trouble, to suffer manly, to abyde fast in the wholsome doctrine of our Lorde Iesus Christe, 11 shewyng hym the fidelitie of Gods counsell touchyng the saluation of his, 19 and the marke therof.

A

1 < **Thou** therefore my sonne, be strong in the grace that is in Christe Iesus.

2 And the thynges that thou haste hearde of me by many witnesses, the same commit thou [Note: Titus. i. b. ] to faythfull men, which shalbe apt to teache other also.

3 Thou therefore suffer afflictions as a good souldier of Iesus Christe.

4 No man that warreth, entangleth hym selfe with thaffayres of [this] lyfe, that he may please hym which hath chosen hym to be a souldier.

5 And if a man also wrestle, yet is he not crowned except he wrestle lawfullie.

6 The labouryng husbandman, [Note: [a] So that the payne must go before the recompence. ] must first be partaker of the frutes.

7 Consider What I say: and the Lorde geue thee vnderstandyng in all thynges.

B

8 Remember that Iesus Christe, [Note: Math.i.a. Rom.i.a. ] of the seede of Daud, was raysted from the dead, accordyng to my Gospell,

9 Wherin I suffer trouble as an euyll doer, euen vnto bondes: But the worde of God is not bounde.

10 Therfore [Note: Actes.xx.f. ] I suffer all thynges for the electes sakes, that they myght also obtaine the saluation, which is in Christ Iesus, with eternall glorie.

11 It is a faythfull saying: [Note: Rom.vi.b. Rom.viii.c. ] for yf we be dead with hym, we shall also lyue with hym:

12 [Note: Luk.xii.b. Rom.iii.a. ] If we be patient, we shall also raigne with hym: [Note: Num.23.c. ] If we denie hym, he also shall denie vs.

13 If we be vnfaythful, he abideth faithfull, he can not denie hym selfe.

14 Of these thynges put them in remembraunce, testifie before the Lorde, that they striue not about wordes to no profite, [but] to the peruertyng of ye hearers.

C

15 Studie to shewe thy selfe approued vnto God, a workman not to be ashamed, rightlie deuidyng the worde of trueth.

16 [Note: i Tim.i.a. ] But prophane voyces of vanitie passe ouer: For they wyll encrease vnto greater vngodlynnesse.

17 And their worde shall fret as doth a cancker: of whom is [Note: i Tim.i.d. ] Hymeneus and Philetus,

18 Which about the trueth haue erred, saying that the resurrection is past alredie, & do ouerthrowe the fayth of some.

19 But the strong foundation of God standeth styl, hauyng this seale: [Note: [b] He groundeth vpon Gods electio & mans fayth. ] The Lorde knoweth the that are his: And, let euery one that nameth the name of Christe, depart from iniquitie.

D

20 But [Note: Rom ix.d. ] in a great house are not onely vessels of golde, and of siluer, but also of wood and of earth: some to honour, and some vnto dishonour.

21 If a man therefore pouрге hym selfe from these, he shalbe a vessell vnto honour, and meete for ye vses of the Lorde, and prepared vnto euery good worke.

22 Lustes of youth auoyde, but folowe ryghteousnesse, fayth, loue, peace, with them that call on the Lorde out of a pure heart.

[Page]

23 [Note: Tim.i.a. ] But foolishe & vnlearned questions put from thee, knowyng that they do but gender

strife.

24 And the seruaunt of the Lorde must not striue: but be gentle vnto all men, [Note: i Tim.iii.a. ] apt to teache, sufferyng euyll in mekenesse,

25 Instructing the which are [Note: [c] He meaneth not this of Apostates is heretikes, whom he willeth to flee: but of them only which as yet are not come to the knowledge of the trueth, and fal through ignoraunce. ] contrarie mynded, yf God at any tyme wyll geue them repentaunce, to the knowledge of the trueth:

26 And that they may come to the selues agayne, out of the snare of the deuyll, which are holden captiue of hym at his wyll.

### The .iiij. Chapter.

1 He prophecieth of the perilous tymes, 2 setteth out hypocrites in their colours, 12 sheweth the state of the Christians, 14 and howe to auoyde daungers, 16 Also what profite commeth of the scriptures.

A

1 **This** knowe also, that [Note: Actes.xx.f. i Tim. iiii.a. i Peter.ii.a. Iude.i.c. ] in the last dayes, perylous tymes shalbe at hande.

2 For men shalbe louers of their owne selues, couetous, boasters, proude, blasphemers, disobedient to fathers and mothers, vnthankefull, vngodlye:

3 Without naturall affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, riotous, fierce, despisers of them which are good,

4 Traytours, headdy, hye mynded, louers of pleasures more then louers of God:

5 Hauyng a fourme of godlynesse, but denying the power therof: turne away from these.

B

6 These are they, [Note: Titus.i.c. ] which enter into houses, & leade captiue [simple] women laden with sinne, caryed with diuers lustes:

7 Euer learnyng, and neuer able to come vnto the knowledge of the trueth.

8 [Note: Exod.vii.b. ] For as Iannes and Iambres withstode Moyses, so do these also resist the trueth: Men of [Note: [a] whiche can iudge nothyng aryght. ] corrupt myndes, reprobate concernyng the fayth:

9 But they shall preuayle no longer. For their madnesse shalbe manifest vnto all [men] as also theirs was.

C

10 But thou hast folowed my doctrine, fashion of lyuyng, [Note: [b] Not only what I taught and dyd, but also what my mynde and wyll was. ] purpose, fayth, long sufferyng, loue, patience,

11 Persecutions, afflictions, which came vnto me at Antioche, at Iconium, at Lystra, which persecutions I suffred patiently: And from them all, the Lord deliuered me.

12 Yea, and [Note: Act.xiiii.d. Psal.34.d. Prou.24.b. Eccle.ii.a. ] all that wyll lyue godly in Christe Iesus, shall suffer persecution.

13 But the euyll men and deceauers, shall waxe worse and worse, deceauyng and deceaued.

14 But continue thou in the thynges which thou haste learned, which also were committed vnto thee, knowyng of whom thou hast learned [them]:

D

15 And that from an [Note: i Ti.iiii.a. ] infant thou hast knowen the scriptures, which are able to make thee wyse vnto saluation, thorowe fayth which is in Christe Iesus.

16 [Note: ii Peter.i.d. ] All scripture is geuen by inspiration of God, and [is] profitable to doctrine, to reprove, to correction, to instruction which is in ryghteousnesse,

17 That [Note: [c] which is content to be gouerned by Gods worde. ] the man of God may be perfect, instructed vnto all good workes.

### The .iiij. Capter.

2 He exhorteth Timotheus to be seruent in the worde, and to suffer aduersitie, 6 maketh mention of his owne death, 9 and biddeth Timothe come vnto hym.

A

1 **I testifie** therefore before God, & the Lorde Iesus Christe, which shall iudge the quicke and the dead at his appearyng, and his kingdome.

2 Preache the worde, be [Note: [a] Leauē none occasion to preache and to profite. ] instant in season, out of season: Improue, rebuke, exhort in all long sufferyng and doctrine.

3 For the tyme wyll come, when they shall not suffer wholsome doctrine: but after their owne lustes, shal they whose eares itche, get the an heape of teachers:

4 And shall turne away their hearyng from the trueth, and shalbe turned vnto fables.

5 But watche thou in all thynges, suffer [Page] afflictions, do the worke of an Euangelist, fulfyll thy ministerie:

B

6 For I am nowe redie to be offered, & the tyme of my dissolution is at hande.



7 I haue fought a good fyght, I haue fulfilled [my] course, I haue kept ye faith.

8 Hencefoorth there is layde vp for me [Note: i Cor.ix.d. i Peter.v.b. ] a crowne of ryghteousnesse, which the Lorde, the ryghteous iudge, shall geue me at that day: not to me only, but vnto the also yt haue loued his appearyng.

9 Do thy diligence to come shortly vnto me.

10 For Demas hath forsaken me, hauing loued this present worlde, and is departed vnto Thessalonica, Crescens to Galatia, Titus vnto Dalmatia.

11 Only Luke is with me. Takyng Marke and bryng him with thee, for he is profitable vnto me for ye ministracion.

12 And Tychicus haue I sent to Ephesus.

C

13 The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, whe thou comest bring with thee, and the bookes, but specially the parchementes.

14 Alexander the coppersmith shewed me much euyll: The Lorde [Note: [c] For Paul sawe in hym manifest signes of reprobacion. ] rewarde hym accordyng to his deedes.

15 Of whom be thou ware also: For he hath greatly withstande our preaching.

16 At my first aunsweryng, no man assisted me, but all forsoke me, [I pray God] yt it may not be layde to their charges:

D

17 < Notwithstanding, the Lorde assisted me, and strengthed me, that by me the preachyng should be fulfilled to the vtmost, and that all the gentiles should heare, and I was deliuered out of the mouth of the Lion.

18 And the Lorde shall delyuer me from euery [Note: [d] That I comit nothing vnworthie mine office. ] euyll worke, & will preserue me vnto his heauenly kingdome: To who [be] prayse for euer and euer. Amen. >

19 Salute Prisca and [Note: Act.xiii.a. ] Aquila, and the housholde of [Note: Rom.xvi.a. ii Tim i.d. ] Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus abode at Corinthum: [Note: Actes.xx.b. ] But Trophimus haue I left at Miletum sicke.

21 Do thy diligece to come before winter. Eubolus greeteth thee, and Pudens, & Linus, and Claudia, & all the brethre.

22 The Lorde Iesus Christe [be] with thy spirite: Grace be with you. Amen.

**¶ The seconde epistle vnto Timothe, was written from Rome, when Paul was presented the seconde tyme vnto the Emperour Nero.**

## *The epistle of Saint Paul vnto Titus.*

[Page]

### ¶ The first Chapter.

¶ 5 He aduertiseth Titus touchyng the gouernment of the Church. 7 The ordinaunce and office of ministers. 12 The nature of the Cretians, and of them which sowe abroade Iewishe fables and inuentions of men.

A

1 **Paul** a seruaunt of God, & an Apostle of Iesus Christe, according to the [Note: [a] That is, to preache the fayth, to encrease their knowledge, to teache them to lyue godly, that at length they may obtayne eternall lyfe. ] fayth of Gods elect, & the knowledge of ye trueth, whiche is after godlynesse,

2 In the hope of eternall lyfe, which [Note: Rom.iii.a. ] God that can not lye, promised before the worlde began:

3 But hath made manifest his worde, at ye time appoynted through preaching, which is committed vnto me, according to the ordinaunce of God our sauour:

4 To [Note: ii Cor.viii.c. ] Titus a natural [Note: [b] In respect of fayth, which was common to them both, so that hereby they are brethren: but in respect of the ministerie, Paul begat hym as his sonne in fayth. ] sonne after the common fayth: Grace, mercie, peace, from God the father, and the Lorde Iesus Christe our sauour.

5 For this cause left I thee in Creta, that thou shouldest refourme ye thynges that are left, and ordayne elders in euerye citie, as I had appoynted thee:

B

6 If any be blamelesse, the husbände of one wyfe, hauyng faythfull chyl dren, not accusable of riote, or vntractable.

7 [Note: i Tim.iii.a. ] For a bishop must be blamelesse, as the stewarde of God: not stubborne, not angry, [Note: Leuit.x.b. Ephe.v.d. ] not geuen to wyne, no striker, not geuen to filthie lucre:

8 But a louer of hospitalitie, a louer of goodnes, sober, ryghteous, godly, temperate,

9 Holdyng fast the faythfull worde, which is accordyng to doctrine, that he may be able both to exhort in wholsome doctrine, and to improue them that say agaynst it.

C

10 For there are many vnruely, and vayne talkers, and deceauers of myndes, specially they [that are] of ye [Note: [c] which were not only the Iewes, but also the Hebronites, & Chorinthians heretiques. which taught that the lawe must be ioyned with Christe. ] circumcision,

11 Whose mouthes must be stopped, which subuert whole houses, teachyng thynges which they ought not, for fylthie lucre sake.

12 One of them selues [euen] a prophete of their owne, sayde: The Crettans [are] alwayes lyers, euylly beastes, slowe bellyes.

13 This witnesse is true: wherfore rebuke them sharpely that they may be founde in the fayth,

14 Not takyng heede to Iewes fables and comaundementes of men, turnyng from the trueth.

D

15 [Note: Rom.xiiii.d ] Unto the pure, [are] all thynges pure: but vnto them that are defyled and vnbeleuyng, [is] nothyng pure, but euen the mynde and conscience of them is defyled.

16 They confesse that they knowe God: but with workes they denie hym, seyng they are abhominable and disobedient, and vnto euery good worke reprobate.

## ¶ The .ij Chapter.

1 He commendeth vnto hym the wholsome doctrine, and telleth hym howe he shall teache all degrees to behaue themselues, 11 through the benefite of the grace of Christe.

A

1 **But** speake thou the thynges which become [Note: [a] wherwith our soules are fed and maintayned in health. ] wholsome doctrine.

2 That the elder men be watchyng, graue, sober, sounde in fayth, in loue, in pacience:

3 The elder [Note: i. Tim.ii.b. ] women lykewyse, that they be in such behaiour as becometh holynesse, not false accusers, not geuen to much wine, teachers of good thynges,

4 To make the young women sober mynded, to loue their husbandes, to loue their chyldren,

5 (To be) discrete, chaste, [Note: [b] Not runnyng to & fro without necessarie occasions, which is a signe of lightnesse. ] house keepers, good, obedient vnto their owne husbandes, that the worde of God be not blasphemed.

B

6 Young men lykewyse exhort, to be sober mynded.

7 [Note: i. Tim.iii.b. i.Peter.v.a. ] In all thynges shewyng thy selfe a paterne of good workes, in the doctrine, [Page] vncorruptnesse, grauitie, integritie,

8 Wholsome worde, vnrebukenable, that he which withstandeth, may be ashamed, hauyng no euyl thyng to say of you.

9 [Note: Ephe.vi.a. i.Peter.ii.d. Coloss.iii.d. i Tim.vi.a. ] [Exhort] seruantes, to be obedient vnto their owne maisters, and to please them in all thynges, not aunsweryng agayne:

10 Neither pickers, but shewing all good faythfulnesse, that they may adourne the doctrine of God our sauour in all thynges.

11 < For there hath appeared the grace of God [which is] [Note: [c] Of what condition or state soeuer they be. ] healthful to all men,

12 Teachyng vs, that denyng vngodlynesse and [Note: i Iohn.ii.c. ] worldly lustes, we shoulde lyue soberlie and ryghteouslie, and godlie in this present worlde:

13 Lokyng for that blessed hope and appearyng of the glorie of the great God, and our sauour Iesus Christe,

14 Which [Note: Rom.viii.a Galath.i.a. ] gaue hym selfe for vs, that he myght redeeme vs from all vnryghteousnesse, and poure vs a peculier people vnto hym selfe, [Note: Ephe.v.e. Ephe.ii.b. ] zelous of good workes.

15 These thynges speake and exhort, and rebuke with all auctoritie. [Note: i Tim.iii.b. ] Let no man dispise thee.

## ¶ The. iij. Chapter.

1 Of obedience to such as be in auctoritie. 9 He warneth Titus to beware of foolishe and vnprofitable questions, 12 concludyng with certayne priuate matters, 15 and salutations.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **Warne** them [Note: Rom.xiii.a i Peter.ii.c. ] to be subiect to rule & power, to obey magistrates, to be redie to euery good worke:

2 To blaspheme no man, to be no fyghters, [but] gentle, shewyng all mekenesse vnto all men.

3 [Note: [a] For, let vs consider what we our selues were when God shewed vs fauour. ] For we our selues also were some tyme foolyshe, disobedient, deceaued, seruyng diuers lustes & voluptuousnes, lyuyng in maliciousnesse and enuie, full of hate, hatyng one another.

<sup>B</sup>  
4 < But after that the kyndenesse and loue of our sauour God to manwarde appeared,

5 [Note: ii Tim.i.b. ] Not of workes which [be] in ryghteousnesse wrought, but accordyng to his mercie, he sauē vs [Note: Iohn.iii.a. ] by the [Note: [b] Baptisme is a signe of our regeneration, which is wrought by the holy ghost. ] fountayne of regeneration and renyng of the holy ghost,

6 Which he shed on vs richlie through Iesus Christe our sauour:

7 That we iustified [Note: Actes.xv.b. Ephe.ii.b. ] by his grace, should be made heyres accordyng to the hope of eternall lyfe.

C

8 < [This is] a faythfull saying: And of these thynges I wyll that thou confirme, that they which haue beleued in God, myght be carefull to shewe foorth good workes. These thynges are good and profitable vnto men.

9 [Note: i Tim.i.a. ii Tim.ii.a. ] But foolishe questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and striuings about the lawe, auoyde: for they are vnprofitable and vayne.

10 A man that is an aucthour of sectes, [Note: Math.18.c. ] after the first and the seconde admonition, auoyde:

11 Knowyng, that he that is such, is subuerted and sinneth, beyng dampned of hym selfe.

D

12 When I shall sende Artemas vnto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come vnto me vnto Nicopolis: For I haue determined there to wynter.

13 Bryng Zenas the lawyer, & Apollos, on their iourney diligently, that nothing be lackyng vnto them.

14 And let ours also learne to excell in good workes to necessarie vses, that they be not vnfruitfull.

15 All that are with me, salute thee. Greeete them that loue vs in the fayth. Grace be with you all. Amen.

**¶ Written from Nicopolis, (a citie) of Macedonia.**

[Page]

**¶ *The epistle of Saint Paul vnto Philemon.***

**[Chapter 1]**

¶ 5 He reioyceth to heare of the fayth and loue of Philemon, 9 whom he desireth to forgeue his seruaunt Onesimus, and louyngly to receaue hym agayne.

A

1 **Paul** a prisoner of Iesus Christ, and brother Timotheus: Unto Philemo the beloued, and our felowe labourer,

2 And to the beloued Apphia, and to Archippus our felowe souldier, and to the Church in thy house:

3 [Note: i Cor.i.a. ii Cor.i.a. Galath.i.a. ] Grace to you, and peace from God our father, and the Lorde Iesus Christ.

4 I thanke my God, makyng mention alwayes of thee in my prayers,

5 Hearyng of thy loue and fayth, which thou hast towarde the Lorde Iesus, and towarde all saintes:

6 That the [Note: [a] Thy beneuolence towarde the saintes, which procedeth of a lyuely and effectual fayth. ] felowshippe of thy fayth may be effectuell in the knowledge of euery good [worke] which is in you, towarde Christe Iesus.

7 For we haue great ioy & consolation in thy loue, because the [Note: [b] Meaning their inwarde partes and affections were through his charitie comforted. ] bowels of the saintes are refresshed by thee, brother.

8 Wherefore, though I myght be much bolde in Christe, to inioyne thee that which is conuenient:

B

9 Yet for loues sake, I rather beseche thee, beyng such a one as Paul the aged, & nowe also a prisoner of Iesus Christe.

10 I beseche thee for my sonne [Note: Coloss.iii.b ] Onesimus, whom I haue begotten in my bondes:

11 Which in tyme passed, was to thee vnprofitable, but nowe profitable to thee and to me.

12 Whom I haue sent agayne: Thou therefore receaue hym, that is, myne owne bowels,

C

13 Whom I woulde haue retayned with me, that in thy steade he myght haue ministred vnto me in the bondes of the Gospell:

14 But without thy mynde woulde I do nothyng, that thy benefite shoulde not be as it were of necessitie, but willingly.

15 For happily he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receaue hym for euer:

16 Not nowe as a seruaunt, but aboue a seruaunt, a brother beloued, specially to me: but howe much more vnto thee, both in the fleshe, and in the Lorde?

17 If thou count me therefore a felowe, receaue hym as my selfe.

18 If he haue iniuried, or oweth [thee ought] that lay to my charge.

19 I Paul haue written it with myne owne hande, I wyll recompence it: Albeit, I do not say to thee, howe that thou owest vnto me euen thyne owne selfe.

D

20 Yea brother, let me enjoy this pleasure of thee in the Lorde: Comfort my [Note: [c] Graunt me this benefite, whiche shalbe moste acceptable vnto me of all other. ] bowels in the Lorde.

21 Trustyng in thine obedience, I wrote vnto thee, knowyng, that thou wilt also do more then I say.

22 Moreouer, prepare me also a lodgyng: for I trust that through your prayers, I shalbe geuen vnto you.

23 There salute thee Epaphras, my felowe prisoner [Note: [d] That is, for Christes cause. ] in Christe Iesus.

24 Marcus, Aristarcus, Demas, Lucas, my felowe labourers.

25 The grace of our Lorde Iesus Christ [be] with your spirite. Amen.

**¶ Written from Rome, by Onesimus a seruaunt.**

**¶ *The Epistle of Saint Paul the Apostle, vnto the Hebrewes.***

### **The first Chapter.**

¶ 1 He sheweth the excellencie of Christe, 4 aboue the Angels, 7 and of their office.

A

1 **God** which in time past, at sundrie tymes, and in diuers maners, spake vnto the fathers in the prophetes:

2 Hath in these [Note: [a] So that nowe we haue not credite in any newe reuelations after hym. ] last dayes, spoken vnto vs in the sonne, whom he hath appoynted heyre of all thynges, [Note: Coloss.i.e. ] by whom also he made the worldes.

3 [Note: Sapi.viii.d. ] Who beyng the bryghtnesse of the glorie, and the very image of his substaunce,

vpholdyng all thynges with the worde of his power, hauing by him [Page] selfe poured our sinnes, hath syt on the ryght hande of the maiestie on hye:

4 Beyng so much more excellent then the Angels, as he hath by inheritaunce obtayned a more excellent name then they.

B

5 For vnto which of the Angels sayde he at any tyme: [Note: Psal.ii.a. ] Thou art my sonne, [Note: [b] Because he was at the tyme appoynted, declared to the worlde. ] this day haue I begotten thee?

6 And agayne, I wyll be to hym a father, and he shalbe to me a sonne? And agayne, when he bryngeth in the first begotten sonne into the worlde, he saith: [Note: Psal.97.a. ] And let all the Angels of God worship hym.

7 And vnto the Angels he sayth: [Note: Psal.ciiii.a. ] He maketh his [Note: [c] He compareth the Angels to the wyndes, whiche are here beneath as Gods messengers. ] Angels spirites, and his ministers a flambe of fyre.

8 But vnto the sonne [he sayth] Thy seate O God, [shalbe] for euer and euer: The scepter of thy kyngdome [is] a scepter of ryghteousnesse.

9 Thou hast loued ryghteousnesse, and hated iniquitie: Therefore God, euen thy God, hath annoynted thee with the oyle of gladnesse, aboue thy felowes.

C

10 [Note: Psal.cii.b. ] And thou Lorde, in the begynnyng hast layde the foundation of the earth: And the heauens are the workes of thy handes:

11 They shall perishe, but thou endurest, and they shall waxe olde as doth a garment:

12 And as a vesture shalt thou folde the vp, and they shalbe chaunged: but thou art the same, & thy yeres shall not fayle.

13 But vnto which of ye Angels sayde he at any tyme: [Note: Psal.cx a. Mat.xxii.d i Cor.xv.b. ] Sitte on my right hande, tyll I make thyne enemies thy foote stoole?

14 Are they not all ministring spirites, sent foorth into ministerie for their sakes which shalbe heyres of saluation?

## The .ij. Chapter.

1 He exhortheth vs to be obedient vnto the newe lawe which Christe hath geuen vs, 9 and not to be offended at the infirmitie & lowe degree of Christe, 10 because it was necessarie that for our sakes he shoulde take such an humble state vpon hym, that he myght be lyke vnto his brethren.

A



1 **Wherfore** we ought to geue the more earnest heede to the thynges which we haue heard, lest at any [Note: [a] We must diligentlie kepe in memorie, the doctrine whiche we haue learned, lest lyke vessels full of chappes, we leake and run out on euery parte. ] tyme we should let them slippe.

2 For yf the [Note: [b] As the Gospell is, which only offereth saluation. ] worde spoken by Angels, was stedfast: And euery transgression and disobedience receaued a iust recompense of rewarde:

3 Howe shall we escape, yf we neglect so great saluation? which at the first began to be preached of the Lorde, and was confirmed vnto vswarde, by them that hearde it:

4 [Note: Mar.xvi.d. ] God bearyng witnesse therto both with signes & wonders also, and with diuers powers and gyftes of the holy ghost, accordyng to his owne wyll.

5 For vnto the Anges hath he not put in subiection the worlde to come, wherof we speake.

6 But one in a certayne place witnessed, saying: [Note: Psal.viii.a. ] What is man, that thou arte myndeful of hym? Or the sonne of man, that thou wouldest loke vpon hym?

B

7 Thou madest hym for a litle whyle lower then the Angels, thou hast crowned him with [Note: [c] In making hym felowe heyre with Christe. ] glorie and honour, and [Note: Psal.viii.b. i Cor.xv.d. ] hast set hym aboue the workes of thy handes.

8 Thou hast put all thynges in subiectio vnder his feete. In yt he put all thinges vnder hym, he left nothyng that is not put vnder hym. But nowe, we see not yet all thynges put vnder hym.

9 But hym that [for a whyle] was made lesse then the Angels, we see [that it was] Iesus, who through the sufferying of death, was crowned with glorie and honour, that he by the grace of God, shoulde taste of death for all.

C

10 For it became hym, for whom are all thynges, and by whom are all thynges, after he had brought many sonnes vnto glorie, that he shoulde make the capitayne of their saluation perfect through afflictions.

11 For both he that sanctifieth, and they which are sanctified, [are] all of one. For which cause, he is not ashamed to call them brethren,

12 Saying: I wyll declare thy name vnto my [Note: Psal.xxii.e. Iohn.xx.d. ] brethren, in the myddes of the Churche wyll I prayse thee.

13 And agayne: I wyll put my trust in [Page] hym. And agayne: Beholde here am I, and the chyldren whiche God hath geuen me.

D

14 Forasmuch then as the chyldren are partakers of flesshe and blood, he also hym selfe lykewyse toke part with the, that through death he myght expell hym that had lordship ouer death, that is the deuyll:

15 And that he myght delyuer them, which through feare of death, were all their lyfe tyme in daunger of bondage.

16 For he in no place taketh on hym the [Note: Not the nature of angels, but of men. ] Angels: but the seede of Abraham taketh he on hym.

17 Wherefore, in all thinges it became him to be made lyke vnto his brethren, that he myght be mercyfull, and a faythfull hye priest in thynges concernyng God, for to purge the peoples sinnes.

18 For in that he hym selfe suffered and was tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

1 He requireth them to be obedient vnto the worde of Christe, 3 who is more worthy then Moyses. 12 The punishment of such as wyll harden their heartes, and not beleue, that they myght haue eternall rest.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **Therefore** holy brethren, partakers of the celestiall calling, [Note: [a] Take heede to his wordes, and heare hym. ] consider the apostle and hye priest of our profession Christe Iesus,

2 Beyng faythfull to hym that appoynted hym, as also [was] Moyses in all his house.

3 For this [man] is counted worthy of more glorie then Moyses, inasmuch as he which hath buylded the house, hath more honour then the house.

4 For euery house is buylded of some man: But he that buylded all thynges, is God.

5 And Moyses veryly [was] faythfull in al his house, as a minister, for a wisse of those thynges whiche were to be spoken after:

<sup>B</sup>  
6 But Christe as a sonne [hath rule] ouer his owne house, whose [Note: [b] For in obeying the sonne, we are made ye house of God. ] house are we, yf we holde fast the confidence and [Note: Rom.v.a. ] the reioycyng of that hope vnto the ende.

7 Wherefore, as the holy ghost saith: Today yf ye wyll heare his voyce,

8 Harden not your heartes, as in the prouokyng, in the day of the temptation in the wyldernesse,

9 Where your fathers tempted me, proued me, and sawe my workes .xl. yeres.

<sup>C</sup>  
10 Wherefore I was greeued with that generation, and sayde: they do alway erre in heart, they veryly haue not knowen my wayes.

11 So that I sware in my wrath, [Note: [c] Here note the Hebrew phrase, meaning that they shal not enter ] yf they shall enter into my rest.

12 Take heede brethren, lest at any tyme there be in you an euyll heart of vnbeliefe, to depart from the lyuyng God:

13 But exhort ye one another dayly, whyle it is called to day, lest any of you be hardened, through the deceytfulnesse of sinne.

D

14 For we are made partakers of Christe, yf we kepe sure vnto the [Note: [d] which is, by fayth to imbrace and holde fast the true doctrine of Iesus Christe. ] ende the begynnyng of the substaunce,

15 So long as it is said: to day yf ye wyll heare his voyce, harden not your heartes, as in the prouokynge.

16 For some when they had hearde, dyd prouoke: howe be it, not all that came out of Egypt by Moyses.

17 But with whom was he displeased fourtie yeres? Not with them that had sinned, whose carkases fell in the desert?

18 And to who sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but vnto them that were not obedient?

19 And we see that they coulde not enter in, because of vnbeliefe.

### The .iiij. Chapter.

2 The worde without fayth is vnprofitable. 3 The Sabboth or rest of the Christians. 6 Punishment of vnbeleuers. 12 The nature of the worde of God.

A

1 **Let** vs feare therefore, lest at any tyme, by forsakyng the promise of entryng into his reste, any of you shoulde be defrauded.

2 For vnto vs was the Gospell preached, aswell as vnto them: But the worde whiche they hearde dyd not profite them, not beyng coupled with fayth to them that hearde.

[Page]

3 For we which haue beleued, do enter into his rest, as he sayde: Euen as I haue sworne in my wrath, if [Note: [a] Although that God by his rest after the creation of his workes. signified the spirituall reste of ye faythfull: yet he sware to geue rest in Chanaan, whiche was but a figure of the heauenlye rest, & dured but for a time. ] they shal enter into my rest. Although the workes were made perfecte from the foundation of the worlde.

4 For he spake in a certayne place of the seuenth daye on this wyse: [Note: Gene.ii.a. ] And God dyd rest the seuenth daye from all his workes.

5 And in this place againe: yf they shall enter into my rest.

B

6 Seing therfore it foloweth, that some must enter there into, and they to who the Gospell was first preached entred not therin for vnbeliefe.

7 Againe, he appoynteth a certaine day, by to day, saying in Daudid after so long a tyme (as it is sayde:) To day yf ye wyl heare his voyce, harde not your hearts.

8 For yf [Note: [b] By Iesus, is meant Iosua. ] Iesus had geuen them reste, then woulde he not afterwarde haue spoken of another day.

9 There remayneth therfore yet a rest to the people of God.

10 For he that is entred into his rest, hath ceased also from his owne workes, as God [dyd] from his.

C  
11 Let vs studie therfore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same ensample of disobedience.

12 For the worde of God is quicke, and myghtie in operation, and sharper then any two edged sword, and entreth thorowe, euen vnto the deuydyng a sunder of the [Note: [c] where the affectios are. ] soule & the [Note: [d] which coteyneth wyll and reason. ] spirite, and of the ioyntes & the marie, and is a discerner of the thoughtes and of the intentes of the heart:

13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in the syght of hym: But all thinges are naked and open vnto the eyes of hym of whom we speake.

14 Seyng then that we haue a great hye priest, which is entred into heauens, Iesus the sonne of God, let vs holde faste the confession.

D  
15 For we haue not an hye priest whiche can not be touched with the feelyng of our infirmities: but [Note: Phil.ii.a. ] was in all poyntes tempted lyke as we are, and [yet] without sinne.

16 Let vs therfore come boldly vnto the [Note: Exo.xxv. b ] throne of grace, that we may obteyne mercie, and fynde grace to helpe in time of neede.

## The .v. Chapter.

5 He compareth Iesus Christe with the Leuiticall priestes, shewyng wherein they eyther agree or dissent.

11 Afterwarde he reprocureth the negligence of the Iewes.

A  
1 **F**or euery hye priest taken from among men, is ordeined for men, in things parteynyng to God, [Note: Leuit.ix. b. ] to offer [Note: [a] He sheweth that man can haue none accesse to god, without an hye priest, because that of hym selfe, he is prophane & synfull. ] gyftes & sacrifices for sinne:

2 Which can sufficiently haue compassion on the ignoraunt, & on them that erre out of the waye,

forasmuche as he hym selfe also is compassed with infirmitie.

3 And for ye same [infirmitie] he is bounde to offer for sinnes, aswell for hym selfe, as for the people.

4 And no man taketh the honour vnto hym selfe, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron.

B

5 Euen so, Christ also glorified not hym selfe to be made ye hye priest: but he that sayde vnto hym, [Note: Psal.ii.b. Actes.xiii.e ] thou art my sonne, to day haue I begotten thee [gaue it hym.]

6 As he saith also in another place: [Note: Hebr.i.b. Psal.cx.b. ] thou art a priest for euer, after the order of Melchisedech. >

7 Which in the dayes of his fleshe, when he had offered vp prayers and supplications with [Note: [b] He meaneth yt moste earnest prayer which Christ prayed in the garde, where he swet drops of blood. ] strong crying and teares, vnto hym that was able to saue hym from death, and was hearde in [Note: [c] Beyng in perplexitie, & fearyng the horrors of death. ] that which he feared:

8 Though he were the sonne, yet learned he obediece, by these thinges which he suffred:

C

9 And being perfect, was made the aucthour of eternall saluation vnto al them that obey hym:

10 And is called of God an hye priest after the order of Melchisedech.

11 Of whom we haue many thynges to say, and harde to be vttered, seing ye are dull of hearyng.

D

12 For when as concernyng the tyme, ye ought to be teachers, yet haue ye nede againe that we teache you the first principles of the begynnyng of the worde of God, and are become such as haue nede of [Note: i.Cor.iii.a. ] mylke, and not of strong meate.

13 For euery one that vseth mylke, is vnexpert of the worde of righteousnes, for he is a babe.

14 But strong meate belongeth to them that are perfecte, euen those whiche by reason of vse, haue their wittes exercised to discerne both good and euyll.

[Page]

## ¶ The .vj. Chapter.

1 He proceedeth in reprovynge them, and exhorteth them not to faynt, 12 but to be stedfast and pacient, 18 forasmuch as God is sure in his promise.

A

1 **Therefore** leauyng the doctrine of the begynnyng [Note: [a] whereby it may apere that you are fully perswaded of lyfe euerlastyng. ] of Christe, let vs go fourth vnto perfection, not laying agayne the foundatio of repentaunce from dead workes, and of fayth towarde God,

2 Of the doctrine of baptesmes, and of laying on of handes, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternall iudgement.

3 And this wyll I do, [Note: Actes.iiii.b. and .xviii.c. ] yf God permit.

4 For it can not be that they which were once lighted, and haue tasted of the heauenly gyft, and were become partakers of the holy ghost,

5 And haue tasted of the good worde of God, and the powers of the worlde to come:

6 [Note: Math.xii.d. ii.Pet.ii.d. Hebr.x.b. ] And they fall away, shoulde be renued agayne into repentaunce, hauyng crucified to the selues the sonne of God a fresshe, and made a mocke of hym.

B

7 For the earth which drynketh in the rayne that commeth oft vppon it, and bringeth fourth hearbes meete for them by whom also it is dressed, receaueth blessing of God:

8 But that grounde whiche beareth thornes and bryers, is reprobud, and is nye vnto cursyng, whose ende is to be burned.

9 Neuerthesse, deare frendes, we haue perswaded our selues better thynges of you, and thynges whiche accompanie saluation, though we thus speake.

10 For God is not vnryghteous, [Note: Mat.xxv.c. ] to forget your worke & labour of loue, whiche ye haue shewed towarde his name, hauyng ministred to the saintes, and [do] minister.

C

11 Yea and we desire that euery one of you do shewe the same diligence, to the full assuraunce of hope, vnto the ende,

12 That ye faynt not, but be folowers of [Note: [b] As the holy fathers, prophetes and martirs, that were before vs. ] them which through fayth and pacience inherite the promises.

13 For when God made promise to Abraham, because he had no greater to swere by, [Note: Gene.xii.c. ] he sware by hym selfe,

14 Saying: Surely, blessing I wyll blesse thee, and multiplieng, multiplie thee.

15 And so after that he had taryed paciently, he enjoyed the promise.

16 For men veryly swere by the greater, and [Note: Exo.xxii.a. ] an oth for confirmation, is to them an ende of all stryfe.

D

17 Wherein God wylleng very [Note: [c] Because of mans wickednes, whiche wyll not beleue God, excepte he swere. ] aboundauntly to shewe vnto the heires of promise, the stablenesse of his counsaile, confirmed by an oth:

18 That by [Note: [d] Goddes worde & oth, are two thynges in him vnchangeable. ] two immutable thynges, in

whiche it was vnpossible for God to lye, we myght haue a strong consolation, which haue fledde to holde fast the hope layde before vs:

19 Which [hope] we holde as an ancker of the soule both sure and stedfast, and entryng in, into that thing which is within the vayle:

20 Whyther the forerunner is for vs entred [euen] Iesus, after the order of Melchisedech made [Note: Hebr.viii.a. ] a priest for euer.

## The .vij Chapter.

1 He compareth the priesthood of Christe vnto Melchisedech, 11 also Christes priesthood with the Leuites.

A

1 **For** this Melchisedech kyng of [Note: Gen.xiiii.d. ] Salem, priest of the most hye God, who met Abraham returnyng from the slaughter of the kynges, and blessed hym:

2 To whom also Abraham gaue tythe of all thynges, first being called by interpretatio king of righteousnes, & after yt [Page] also, kyng of Salem, which is, kyng of peace.

3 Without [Note: [a] So called, because that Moyses maketh no mentio of his parentes or kynsfolkes, but as he had ben sodenly sent of God vnto ye world, to be a figure of Christe, or euerlastyng priest, & shortly taken out of the worlde agayne: So Christe as touchyng his humanitie had no father, & concernyng his diuinitie no mother. ] father, without mother, without kynne, hauyng neither beginnyng of dayes, neither ende of lyfe, but lykened vnto the sonne of God, and continueth a priest for euer.

4 Nowe consider howe great this [man] was, vnto whom also the patriarche Abraham gaue tythe of the spoyles.

5 And verly they which are of the children of Leuie, which receaue the office of the priesthood, haue a commaundement to take tythe of the people accordyng to the lawe, that is, of their brethren, though they came out of ye loynes of Abraham.

6 But he whose kynrede is not counted among them, receaued tythe of Abraham, and blessed hym that had the promises.

B

7 And without all controuersie, the lesse is blessed of the better.

8 And here men that dye, receaue tithes: but there he [receaueth them] of whom it is witnessed that he lyueth.

9 And to say the trueth, Leuie also whiche receaueth tythes, payed tythes in Abraham.

10 For he was yet in the loynes of his father, when Melchisedech met Abraham.

11 [Note: Rom.ii.c. Galat.iii.c. ] If therefore perfection was by the priesthood of ye Leuites (For vnder that priesthood the people receaued the law) what neded it furthermore that another priest shoulde rise after the order of Melchisedech, and not to be called after the order of Aaron?

12 For yf the priesthood be translated, of necessitie also there is made a translation of the lawe.

13 For he of whom these thynges are spoken, parteyneth vnto another tribe, of which no man stode at the autler.

C

14 For it is euidet that our Lord sprong [Note: Math.i.a. ] out of Iuda, of which tribe spake Moyses nothyng concernyng priesthood:

15 And it is yet a farre more euidet thing, yf after the similitude of Melchisedech there aryse another priest,

16 Which is not made after the lawe of the carnall commaundement, but after the power of the endlesse lyfe:

17 For he testifieth [Note: Psal.cx. b. Hebr.iii.c. ] that thou art a priest for euer, after the order of Melchisedech.

18 For there is truely a disanulling of the commaundement goyng before, for the weakenesse and vnprofitablenesse therof.

19 For the [Note: Rom.viii.a. Galath.iii.c. ] lawe made nothyng perfect, but [was] the bryngyng in of a better hope, by the whiche we drawe nygh vnto God.

20 And in as much as that was not without an oth (For those priestes were made without an oth:

21 But this priest with an oth, by hym that saide vnto him: The Lord [Note: Psal.cx.a. ] sware and wyll not repent, thou art a priest for euer, after the order of Melchisedech.)

D

22 By so much was Iesus made a suertie of a better testament.

23 And among them many were made priestes, because they were forbidden by death to endure.

24 But this man, because he endureth euer, hath an [Note: [b] Therefore all others are blasphemous, that eyther make them selues his successours, or pretende any other sacrifices ] vnchaungeable priesthood.

25 Wherefore he is able also euer to saue them to the vttermost that come vnto God by hym, seyng he euer lyueth [Note: i.Tim.ii.a. i.John.ii.b. ] to make intercession for them.

26 For such an hye priest became vs, whiche [is] holy, harmelesse, vndefyled, seperate from sinners, and



made hygher then heauens:

27 Whiche nedeth not dayly, as those hie priestes, [Note: Leuit.ix.b. ] to offer vp sacrifice, first for his owne sinnes, and then for the peoples: for that dyd he once, when he offered vp hym selfe.

28 [Note: Hebr.v.a. ] For the lawe maketh men hie priestes which haue infirmitie: but the word of the oth which (was) after the lawe (maketh) the sonne, whiche is perfecte for euermore.

[Page]

## The .viiij. Chapter.

6 He proueth the abolishyng aswell of the Leuiticall priesthood, as of the olde couenaunt, by the spirituall and euerlastyng priesthood of Christe, 8 and by the newe couenaunt.

A

1 **But** of the thinges whiche we haue spoken, [this is] ye summe: [Note: Hebr.vi.d. and .x.c. ] We haue such an hie priest that sitteth on ye ryght hand of ye throne of the maiestie in the heaues,

2 A minister of holy thynges, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pight, and not man.

3 For euery hie priest is ordeyned to offer gyftes and sacrifices: Wherefore it is of necessitie, that this man haue somewhat also to offer.

4 For he were not a priest, yf he were on the earth, seyng there are priestes that accordyng to the lawe offer gyftes,

5 Who serue vnto the example and [Note: Coloss.ii.c. Hebr.x.a. ] shadowe of heauenly thinges, as Moyses was admonished of God, when he was about to finishe the tabernacle: [Note: Exo.xxv.d. Actes.vii.f. ] For see, saith he, that thou make all thynges accordyng to the patterne shewed to thee in the mount.

B

6 But nowe hath he obteyned a more excellent office, by howe much also he is the mediatour of a better couenaunt, whiche was confirmed in better promises.

7 For yf that first [couenaunt] had ben founde fautlesse, then shoulde no place haue ben sought for the seconde.

C

8 For in rebukyng them, he saith: [Note: Iere xxxi.f. ] Beholde the dayes [Note: [a] That is, when Christe shal remit our sinnes by the preachyng of the Gospell. ] come, saith the Lord, and I wyll finishe vppon the house of Israel and vppon the house [Note: [b] Signifying that there shoulde be no more divisio: but all shall be made one Church. ] of Iuda a newe couenaunt:

9 Not lyke that that I made with their fathers, in the day when I toke them by the hande, to leade them out of the lande of Egypt: because they continued not in my couenaunt, and I regarded them not, saith the Lorde.

10 For this is the couenaunt that I wyll make with the house of Israel after those dayes, saith the Lord, geuyng my lawes into their mynde, and in their heart I wyl write them, and I wyll be to them a God, and they shalbe to me a people.

D

11 And they shall not [Note: [c] Men shal not in ye tyme of the Gospell be so ignorant as they were before: but shall knowe God muche more perfectlye through Christe. ] teach euery man his neyghbour, and euery man his brother, saying, knowe the Lorde: for all shall knowe me, from the litle of them to the great of them.

12 For I wyll be mercyfull to their vnrighteousnes, and their sinnes and their iniquities wyll I thynke vpon no more.

13 In that he sayth a newe [couenaunt] he hath worne out the first: For that which is worne out and waxed olde, is redie to vanishe away.

## The .ix. Chapter.

1 Howe that the ceremonies and sacrifices of the lawe are abolished, 11 by the eternitie and perfection of Christes sacrifice.

A

1 **The** first couenaunt then had verylye iustifyng ordinaunces, seruinges of God, and worldlye holynesse.

2 < For [Note: Exo.xxv.b ] there was a fore tabernacle made, wherein was the lyght, and the table, and the shewe bread, whiche is called holy.

3 But after the [Note: [a] That is, on the inward syde of the vayle, which was hyd fro the people. ] seconde vayle [was] a tabernacle, which is called holiest of al:

4 Which had the golden senser, and the arke of the couenaunt ouerlaide rounde about with golde, wherin was the golden pot hauyng [Note: Exo.xvi.g. ] Manna, and [Note: Leui.xvii.a ] Aarons rodde that had budded, and [Note: Exod.xl.c. ] the tables of the couenaunt:

B

5 And ouer it, the Cherubins of glorie, shadowyng the mercie seate: Of which thynges we can not nowe speake particulerlie.

6 When these thynges were thus ordeyned, the priestes went alwayes into the first tabernacle, accomplishyng the seruice of God.

C

7 But into ye seconde (went) the hye priest alone [Note: Exo.xxx.b. ] once euery yere, not without blood, [Note: Leui.xvi.b. ] which he offered for hym selfe, & for the ignorauncies of the people.

8 The holy ghost this signifyng, that the [Note: [b] So long as the hye priest offered once a yere for his owne sinnes and for ye peoples, & also whyle this earthly tabernacle stode, ye way to ye heauenly tabernacle, whiche is made open by

Christ's blood could not be entered into. ] waye of holy thinges was not yet opened, whyle as yet the first tabernacle was standyng:

9 Whiche (was) a similitude for the tyme then preset, in which were offered giftes [Page] and sacrifices, that could not make the worshipper perfect as parteyning to the conscience,

10 With only meates and drynkes, and diuers wasshynges, and iustifynges of the flesshe, which were layde vp vntyll the tyme of reformation.

D  
11 < But [Note: Hebr.vi.d. ] Christe beyng come an hie priest of good thynges that shoulde be, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with handes, that is to say, not of this buyldyng,

12 Neither by the blood of Goates and Calues: but by [Note: i.Pet.i.6. ] his owne blood he entred in once into the holy place, & founde eternall redemption. >

13 For if the [Note: Leui.xvi.c. ] [Note: [a] The Leuitical priests offered beastes blood: But Christ ye true and eternall prieste offered his own blood whiche was most holy and pure. The Leuitical prieste offered yerely, and therefore did only represent the true holynesse: but Christ by one onely sacrifice hath made holy for euer the that beleue. ] blood of Oxen & of Goates, and the ashes of a young Cowe, sprinklyng the vncleane, sanctifieth to the purifyng of the flesshe:

14 Howe much more the blood of Christe, which through the eternall spirite offered hym selfe without spot to God, shall purge your conscience fro dead workes, to serue the lyuyng God?

15 And for this cause is he the [Note: i.Tim.ii.a. ] mediatour of the newe couenaunt, that through death, which was for the redemption of the transgressions [that were] vnder the first couenaunt, they whiche are called myght receaue the promise of eternall inheritaunce. >

E  
16 For where as is a testament, there must also of necessitie be the death of him that maketh it.

17 For a testament is confirmed when men are dead: for it is yet of no value, as long as he that maketh the testamet is alyue.

18 For which cause also, neither the firste [testament] was dedicated without blood.

19 For when Moyses had spoken euery precept to all the people according to the lawe, takyng the blood of Calues and of Goates, with water & purple wooll and ysope, he sprynkled both the booke it selfe, and all the people,

20 Saying: [Note: Exod.24.b. ] This [is] the blood of the testament, whiche God hath enioyned vnto you.

F  
21 And lykewise he sprinkled with blood both the tabernacle, and all the vessels of the ministerie.

22 And almost all thynges are by ye lawe poured with blood, and without sheddyng of blood is no remission.

23 It is neede then that the paterne of heauenly thynges, be purified with such thynges: but the heauenly thynges the selues (be purified) with better sacrifices then are those.

G

24 [Note: Actes.xvi.c ] For Christe is not entred into the holy places made with handes (which are) paternes of true thynges: but into heauen it selfe, nowe to [Note: i.John.ii.a ] appeare in the syght of God for vs.

25 Not that he shoulde offer him selfe [Note: [b] Therefore to make anye other offryng or sacrifice for synne, after that Christes body was once offred, is blasphemie. ] often, as the hie priest entreth into the holy places euery yere in straunge blood:

26 (For then must he haue often suffred sence the foundation of the worlde) But nowe once in the ende of the world hath he appeared, to put away sinne, by the sacrifice of hym selfe.

27 And as it is appoynted vnto men once to dye, and after this the iudgement:

28 [Note: Rom.v.b. i.Pet.iii.d. ] Euen so, Christe once offered to take away the sinnes of many, the seconde time shalbe seene without sinne, of them which wayte for hym vnto saluation.

## ¶ The .x. Chapter.

1 The olde lawe had no power to clense away sinne, 10 but Christe dyd it with offeryng of his body once for all. 22 And exhortation to receaue the goodnesse of God thankfully, with pacience and stedfast fayth.

A

1 [Note: Coloss.ii.c. Hebr.viii.a. ] **F**or the lawe, hauyng the [Note: [a] whiche was as it were ye first draught and purtraice of the lyuely paterne to come. ] shadow of good thynges to come, and not the very fashion of the thinges the selues, can neuer with those sacrifices whiche they offer yere by yere continually, make the commers therevnto perfect.

2 For woulde not then those [sacrifices] haue ceassed to haue ben offred, because that the offerers once poured, shoulde haue had no more conscience of sinnes?

3 Neuerthelesse, in those (sacrifices) is mention made of sinnes euery yere.

4 [Note: Leuit.xvi.c ] For it is not possible that the blood of Bulles & of Goates shoulde take away sinnes.

B

5 Wherefore when he commeth into the worlde, he saith: [Note: Psal.xl.b. ] Sacrifice and offryng thou wouldest not haue, but a body hast thou ordeyned me.

[Page]

6 In burnt sacrifices & sinne (offerynges) thou hast had no pleasure.

7 Then sayde I, lo I come (In the begynnyng of the booke it is written of me) to do thy wyll O God.

8 Aboue when he saith, that sacrifice, and offeryng, and burnt offeringes, and sinne [offerynges] thou wouldest not, neither haddest pleasure [therein] (which are offered by the lawe:)

C

9 Then sayde he, lo I come, to do thy wyll, O God. He taketh away ye first [Note: [b] That is, sacrifices. ] to stablyshe the [Note: [c] which is, the wyll of God, to stand content with Christes sacrifice. ] seconde.

10 In ye which wyll we are made holy, euen by the offeryng of the body of Iesus Christe once for all.

11 And euery priest standeth dayly ministryng, & offeryng oftentimes the same sacrifices, whiche can neuer take away sinnes.

12 But this man, after he hath offered one sacrifice for sinnes, is sit downe for euer [Note: Ephe.i.d. Coloss.iii.a. Hebre.i.a. ] on the ryght hande of God:

13 From hencefoorth taryng tyl his foes be made his footstoole.

14 For with one offeryng hath he made perfite for euer them that are sanctified.

15 And the holy ghost also beareth vs recorde: For after that he tolde before,

16 This is the couenaunt that I wyll make vnto them after those dayes, (sayth the Lorde) geuyng my lawes in their heart, and in their myndes wyl I write them:

17 And their sinnes and iniquities wyll I remember no more.

18 And where remission of these thinges [is] there [is] no more offering for sinne.

D

19 Hauyng therefore brethren, libertie to enter into holy [places] in the [Note: [d] we by Christe haue that libertie, whiche the auncient fathers coulde not haue by the lawe. ] blood of Iesus,

20 By the new and [Note: [e] The blood of Christe as always freshe and lyuely before the father to sprinckle & quicken vs. ] lyuing way, which he hath prepared for vs through the vayle, that is to say his flesshe:

21 And [seyng we haue] an hye priest ouer the house of God:

22 Let vs drawe nye with a true hearte, in assuraunce of fayth, sprinkeled in our heartes from an euyl conscience, and wasshed in body with pure water.

23 Let vs holde the profession of the hope without waueryng, (for he is faythfull that promised:)

24 And let vs consider one another to prouoke vnto loue and good workes,

E

25 Not forsakyng the assemblyng of our selues together, as the maner of some [is] but exhortyng one (another) and so much the more, as ye see the day approchyng.

26 [Note: Math.xii.d. Hebr.vi.a. ii.Pet.ii.d. ] For yf we sinne wyllingly after that we haue receaued the

knowledge of the trueth, there remayneth no more sacrifice for sinnes:

27 But a fearefull loking for of iudgement, and violent fire, whiche shall deuour the aduersaries.

28 He that despiseth Moyses lawe, dyeth without mercie [Note: Deut.xix.d Mat.xviii.c ii.Cor.xiii.a ] vnder two or thre witnesses:

29 Of howe muche sorer punyshement (suppose ye) shall he be worthy, whiche treadeth vnder foote the sonne of God? and counteth the blood of the couenaut wherein he was sanctified, an vnholye thyng, and doth despite to the spirite of grace?

F

30 For we knowe hym that hath sayde, [Note: Deut.32.d. Psal xciiii.a Rom.xii.d. ] vengeance [belongeth] vnto me, I wyl render saith the Lorde: And agayne, the Lorde shall iudge his people.

31 It is a fearefull thyng to fall into the handes of the lyuyng God.

32 Call to remebraunce the former dayes, in the which after ye had receaued light ye endured a great fyght of aduersities:

33 Partly whyle ye were made a gasing stocke, both by reproches & afflictions, and partly whyle ye became companions of them whiche were so tossed to & fro.

G

34 For ye suffred also with my bondes, & toke in woorth the spoylyng of your goodes with gladnesse: knowyng in your selues how that ye haue in heauen a better and an enduryng substaunce.

35 Cast not away therefore your confidence, which hath great recompence of rewarde.

36 For ye haue neede of pacience, that after ye haue done the wyll of God, ye myght receaue the promise.

37 For yet a very litle whyle, and he that shall come, wyll come, and wyll not tary.

38 And [Note: Abacuc.ii.a Rom.i.a. Galat.iii.b. ] the iuste shall lyue by fayth: And yf he withdrawe hym selfe, my soule shall haue no pleasure in hym.

39 We are not of them that withdrawe our selues vnto perdition: but we parteyne vnto fayth, to the wyning of the soule.

[Page]

## The .xj. Chapter.

1 What fayth is, and a commendation of the same. 9 Without fayth we can not please God. 16 The stedfast beliefe of the fathers in olde tyme.

A

1 **Fayth** is the grounde of thynges hoped for, the euidence of thynges not seene.

2 For by it, the elders [Note: [a] Haue ben approued, and so obtayned saluation. ] obtayned a good report.

3 Through fayth, we vnderstande that the worldes were ordeined by the word of God, and that thynges whiche are seene, were made of thynges whiche were not seene.

4 [Note: Act.xiii.c. Rom.i.c. Gene.iiii.a. ] By fayth Abel offered vnto God a more excellent sacrifice then Cain: by whiche he was witnessed to be [Note: [b] Because God receaued him to mercy, therfore he imputed hym ryghteous. ] ryghteous, God testifyng of his gyftes: by which also he beyng dead, yet speaketh.

5 By fayth was [Note: Gene.v.g. Sep.iiii.b. Eccl.xliiii.b ] Enoch translated, that he shoulde not see death, neither was he founde, for God had taken hym away: For afore he was taken away, he was reported of to haue pleased God.

6 But without fayth it is vnpossible to please hym: For he that cometh to God, must beleue that God is, and that he is a rewarder of them that seeke him.

B  
7 [Note: Gene.vi.d. ] By fayth Noe beyng warned of God of thinges not seene as yet, moued with reuerence, prepared the arke to the sauynge of his house, through the whiche [arke] he [Note: Math.xii.d. ] condempned the worlde, and became heire of the righteousnes which is by fayth.

8 By fayth [Note: Gene.xi.a. Actes.vii.a. ] Abraham when he was called, obeyed, to go out into a place whiche he shoulde afterwarde receaue to inheritaunce: and he went out, not knowyng whyther he shoulde go.

9 By fayth he remoued into the lande of promise, as into a straunge countrey, whe he had dwelt in tabernacles, with Isaac and Iacob, heires with hym of the same promise:

10 For he loked for a citie hauyng a foundation, whose buylder and maker is God.

C  
11 [Note: Gene.xxi.a ] Through fayth also Sara her selfe receaued strength to conceaue seede, and was delyuered of a chylde whe she was past age, because she iudged hym faythfull which had promised.

12 And therefore sprang there of one, euen of one whiche was as good as dead [Note: Gene.xv.a. ] [so many] in multitude, as are the starres in the skye, and as the sande the whiche is by the sea shore innumerable.

13 These all dyed according to fayth, not hauing receaued the promises, but seing them a farre of, and beleuyng, and salutyng, and confessyng [Note: Iob.viii.g. Gen.xlvii b i.Pa.xxix.d ] that they were straungers and pilgrimes on the earth.

14 For they that saye suche thynges, declare that they seke a countrey.

D  
15 Also yf they had ben myndfull of that [countrey] from whence they came out, they had leasure to haue returned:

16 But nowe they desire a better, that is, a heauenly. Wherefore God is not ashamed of them [Note:

Exod.iii.f. ] to be called their God, for he hath prepared for them a citie.

17 [Note: Gen.xii.a. Eccles.44.c. ] By fayth Abraham offered by Isaac when he was [Note: [c] For it myght seeme to the flesshe, that the promyse was contrary to the commaundement, to sacrifice his son ] proued: and he that had receaued the promises, offered vp his only begotten sonne:

18 To whom it was saide, that in Isaac shall thy seede be called.

19 For he considered that God was able to rayse the dead vp agayne, fro whence also he receaued hym in a similitude [of the resurrection.]

20 [Note: Ge.xxvii.d. ] By fayth did Isaac blesse Iacob and Esau, concernyng thynges to come.

21 [Note: Gen.xlix.a. ] By fayth Iacob when he was a dying, blessed both the sonnes of Ioseph, and worshypped towarde the toppe of his scepter.

E

22 [Note: Gene.l.d. ] By fayth Ioseph when he dyed, remembred the departyng of the chyldren of Israel, and gaue commaundement of his bones.

23 [Note: Exod.ii.a. Actes.vii.a. ] By fayth Moyses whe he was borne, was hyd three monethes of his father and mother, because they sawe he was a proper chylde, neither feared they the kynges commaundement.

24 [Note: Exod.ii.b. ] By fayth Moyses when he was great, refused to be called the sonne of Pharaos daughter:

25 Chosyng rather to suffer aduersitie with the people of God, then to enioye the pleasures of sinne for a season:

26 Esteemyng the rebuke of Christ, greater [Page] riches, then the treasures of Egypt: For he had respect vnto the recompence of the rewarde.

27 [Note: Exod.xii.f. ] By fayth he forsoke Egypt, fearyng not the wrath of the kyng: For he endured, euen as though he had seene him which is inuisible.

F

28 [Note: Exod.xii.d. ] Through fayth, he ordeyned the Passouer and the effusion of blood, lest he that destroyed the first borne, shoulde touche them.

29 [Note: Exod.14.c. ] By fayth, they passed through the redde sea, as by drye lande: which the Egyptians assaying to do, were drowned.

30 [Note: Iosue.vi.c. ] By fayth, the walles of Iericho fell downe, after they were compassed about seuen dayes.

31 [Note: Iosue.ii.a. ] By fayth, the harlot Rahab perished not with them that were disobedient, when she had receaued the spyes with peace.



32 And what shall I more say? for the tyme woulde fayle me, to rehearse of Gedeon, of [Note: Iudi.vii.a. ] Barac, and of [Note: Iudi.iiii.d. ] Sampson, and of [Note: Iudi.xiii.a. ] Iephte, [Note: Iudi.xi.a. ] of Dauid also [Note: i Reg.17.f. ] and Samuel, and of the prophetes:

33 < Which through faith subdued kingdomes, wrought righteousnesse, obeyned the promises, [Note: i Reg.xii.a. i.Reg.17.a. ] stopped the mouthes of the Lions,

34 [Note: Daniel.vi.f. ] Quenched the violence of fyre, [Note: Daniel.iii.e ] escaped the edge of the sworde, [Note: Daniel.ii.c. ] out of weakenesse were made strong, wared valiant in fyght, turned to flyght the armies of the aliantes.

G

35 [Note: 3 Reg.19 a. ] The women receaued their dead, raysed to lyfe agayne: Other were racked, not lokyng for deliuerance, that they might receaue a better resurrectio.

36 And others were tryed with mockynges, and scourgynges: Yea, moreouer with bondes and prisonment:

37 [Note: 3 Reg.21 b. Esai.38.b. ] They were stoned, were hewen asunder, were tempted, were slaine with sword, wandred about in sheepskinnes, and goates skinnes, beyng destitute, afflicted [and] tormented:

38 Of who the worlde was not worthie: They wandred in wilderness, and in mountaynes, and in dennes, and caues of the earth.

39 And these all through fayth, obeyned good report, and receaued [Note: [d] They had not such cleare lyght as we: for they loked for that which we haue: therfore it were shame for vs, yf at least we haue not as great constancie as they. ] not the promise:

40 God prouidyng a better thyng for vs, that they without vs shoulde not be made perfect.

## ¶ The .xij Chapter.

1 An exhortation to be patient and stedfast in trouble and aduersitie, vpon hope of euerlastyng rewarde.

25 A commendation of the newe Testament aboute the olde.

A

1 **Wherfore**, seyng that we are compassed with so great a cloude of witnesses, [Note: Ephe.iiii.a. ] lay away all that [Note: [a] As riches cares & suche lyke, and so to become Christes disciples, by denying our selues, & takyng our crosse to folowe hym. ] presseth downe, & the sinne that hangeth so fast on, let vs run with patience vnto the battayle that is set before vs:

2 Lokyng vnto Iesus, the captayne and finisser of our fayth, which for the ioy that was set before hym, endured the crosse, hauyng dispised the shame, and is set downe [Note: Ephe.i.d. Coloss.iii.a. Hebr.i.a. ] on the ryght hande of the throne of God.

3 Consider therefore hym that endured such speakyng agaynst hym of sinners, lest you shoulde be weryed, fayntyng in your myndes.

4 Ye haue not yet resisted vnto blood, stryuyng agaynst sinne.

5 And ye haue forgotten the exhortatio, which speaketh vnto you as vnto chyldren: My sonne despise not thou the chastenyng of the Lorde, neither faynt when thou art rebuked of hym:

6 For whom the Lord loueth, he chasteneth, and scourgeth euery sonne that he receaueth.

7 If ye endure chastenyng, God offereth him selfe as vnto sonnes: For what sonne is he whom the father chasteneth not?

8 But yf ye be without chastisement, wherof all are partakers, then are ye bastardes, and not sonnes.

9 Furthermore, we haue had fathers of our fleshe, which corrected vs, and we gaue them reuerence: Shall we not then much rather be in subiECTION vnto the father of spirites, and lyue?

10 For they veryly, for a fewe dayes, [Page] chastened vs after their owne pleasure: but he, for our profite, that we myght be partakers of his holynesse.

11 No chashsyng for the present seemeth to be ioyous, but greuous: Neuerthelesse, afterwarde it bryngeth the quiet fruite of ryghteousnesse, vnto the which are exercised therby.

12 [Note: Esaias.35.2. ] Strayghten vp therfore the handes which were let downe, and the weake knees:

13 And make ryght steppes vnto your feete, lest [Note: [b] These haltynge, partlye declared their slownes, & partly their inconstancie in doctrine: therefore they were in bondage to be punished. ] that which is haltynge, turne you out of the way: but let it rather be healed.

14 Folowe peace with all men, and holynesse, without the which, no man shall see the Lorde:

15 Takyng heede that no man fall away from the grace of God, lest any roote of bitternesse spryngyng vp, trouble you, and therby many be defyled.

16 Let there be no fornicator or vnclene person, as Esau, [Note: Gen.xxv.d ] which for one morsell of meate, solde his birthryght.

17 For ye knowe, howe that afterwarde when he woulde haue inherited the blessing, he was reprobated: For he founde no place of repentaunce, though [Note: Gen.27.f. ] he sought it with teares.

D

18 For ye are not come vnto the [Note: Exod.xix.b ] mount that [Note: [c] whiche might be touched & seene: for it was materiall, but god comaunded that none should touche it. ] is touched, & vnto burnyng fyre, and vnto storme and darkenesse, and tempestes of weather,

19 And sounde of a trompe, & the voyce of wordes: which [Note: Exod.xx.e ] [voyce] they that heard it, wisshed away, that the worde should not be spoken to them:

20 (For they dyd not abyde that which was commaunded. [Note: Exod.xix.b ] If a beast touche the mountaine, it shalbe stoned, or thrust through with a darte.

21 And so terrible was the syght which appeared, that Moyses sayde, I feare and quake.)

22 But ye are come vnto ye mount Sion, and to the citie of the Iyuyng God, the celestiaall Hierusalem, and to an innumerable companie of [Note: [d] By the Gospell, we are ioyned with the Angels and Patriarkes. ] Angels,

23 And vnto the congregation of the first borne, written in heauen, and to God the iudge of all, and to the spirites of iust and perfect men:

24 And to Iesus the mediatour of the newe couenaunt, and to the [Note: 1 Peter.i.a. Hebre.ix.d. Cen.iiii.b. ] blood of sprinklyng, that speaketh better then that of Abel.

E  
25 See that ye despise not hym that speaketh: For yf they escaped not, which refused hym that spake on earth: much more shall we [not escape] yf we turne away from hym that [speaketh] from heauen:

26 Whose voyce then shoke the earth, & nowe hath declared, saying: Yet once more wyll I shake, not the earth only, but also heauen.

27 And this [yet once more] signifieth remouyng of those thynges which are shaken, as of thynges which are made: that the thynges which are not shaken, may remayne.

28 Wherefore, we receauyng a kingdome which can not be moued, let vs haue grace, wherby we may so serue God acceptablie, with reuerence [Note: Deut.iiii.d. ] & godly feare.

29 For our God [is] a [Note: [e] To destroy the that resist hym. ] consumyng fyre.

## ¶ The .xiiij. Chapter.

1 He maketh vs vnto loue, 2 to hospitalitie, 3 to thynke vpo such as be in aduersitie, 4 to mayntayne wedlocke, 5 to auoyde couetousnesse, 7 to make much of them that preache Gods worde, 9 to beware of straunge learnyng, 13 to be content to suffer rebuke with Christ, 15 to be thankful vnto god, 17 & obedient vnto our gouernours.

A  
1 **Let** brotherly loue continue.

2 [Note: Rom.xii.c. Actes.x.c. i Pet.iiii.b. i Tim.iiii.b. ] **Be** not forgetfull to lodge straungers: For therby some hauyng [Note: Gen.xix.a. ] lodged Angels, were vnawares therof.

3 Remember them that are in bondes, as bounde with them: And them which suffer aduersitie, as also ye your selues beyng in the body [suffered aduersitie].

4 Wedlocke is honorable among all men, and the bed vndefiled: But whoremongers and adulterers God wyll iudge.

5 Let your conuersation be without couetousnesse, beyng [Note: Eccle.29.d. i Tim.vi.b. ] content with such thynges as ye haue. For he hath sayde: [Note: Iosue.i.a. ] I wyll not fayle thee, neither forsake thee.  
[Page]

6 So that we may boldely saye, the Lorde is my helper, and I wyll not feare what man way do vnto me.

7 Remember them which haue the ouersyght of you, which haue spoken vnto you the worde of God: Whose ende of conuersation ye consideryng, folowe their fayth.

8 Iesus Christe [Note: [a] He was, is, and shalbe, the foundatio of ye Church for euer, ] yesterday and to day, and the same for euer. >

B  
9 < Be not caryed about with diuers & strange doctrines: For it is a good thing that the heart be stablISHED with grace, & not with meates, which haue not profited the that haue ben occupied therein.

10 We haue an aulter, wherof they haue no ryght to [Note: [b] They that sticke to the ceremonies of the law, can not eate, that is, can not be partakers of our aulter, which is thankesgeuyng and it be, whiche two sacrifices or offeringes, are nowe only left to the Christians. ] eate which serue in the tabernacle.

11 For the bodyes of those beastes whose blood is brought into the holy place by the hie priest for sinne, are [Note: [c] So that the priestes had no peece therof. ] burnt without the tentes.

12 Therefore Iesus also, that he myght sanctifie ye people with his owne blood, suffered without the gate.

13 Let vs go fourth therefore vnto hym out of the tentes, bearyng his reproche.

C  
14 For here haue we no continuyng citie: but we seke one to come.

15 By hym therefore, do we offer sacrifice of laude alwayes to God: that is, the fruite of lippes confessyng his name.

16 To do good & to distribute forget not, for [Note: Eccle.35.a. Actes.x.a. Rom xi.a Philip.iiii.d ] with such sacrifices God is pleased.

17 < Obey them that haue the ouersight of you, and submit your selues: for they watche for your soules, as they that must geue accomptes, that they may do it with ioy, and not with grieffe: for that is vnprofitable for you.

18 Pray for vs: For we trust we haue a good conscience, in all thynges wylling to lyue honestlie.

19 **But** I desire you the more earnestlie that ye so do, that I may be restored to you the sooner.

D

20 The God of peace, that brought agayne from the dead our Lorde Iesus [Note: Ezech.34.b Iosue.x.a. i Peter.v.a. ] the great sheepearde of the sheepe, through the blood of the euerlasting couenaunt,

21 Make you perfect in all good workes to do his wyll, workyng in you that which is pleasaunt in his sight, through Iesus Christe, to whom be prayse for euer and euer. Amen. >

22 And I beseche you brethren, suffer the worde of exhortation: for I haue written vnto you in fewe wordes.

23 Knowe ye, that brother Timothe is delyuered: With whom (yf he come shortly) I wyll see you.

24 Salute all them that haue the ouersight of you, and all the saintes. They of Italie salute you.

25 Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ **Written from Italie by Timotheus.**

### ***The Epistle of Saint Iames.***

#### **¶ The first Chapter.**

¶ 2 He exhorteth to reioyce in trouble, 6 to be feruent in prayer, with stedfast beliefe, 17 to loke for all good thynges from aboue, 21 to forsake all vice, and thankfully to receaue the worde of God, 22 not only hearyng it, & speakyng of it, but to do thereafter in dede. 27 What true religion is.

A

1 **Iames** a seruauant of God, and of the lorde Iesus Christ, to ye twelue tribes which are scattred abroad, greetyng.

2 < My brethren, count it all ioy whe ye fall into diuers temptations:

3 Knowyng (this) that [Note: Iob.xlii.a. Sapi.iii.a. Rom.v.a. ] the trying of your fayth worketh patience:

4 And let patience haue [her] perfect worke, that ye may be perfect & sounde, lackyng nothyng.

5 If any of you lacke wisdom, [Note: Iob.xviii.c. Eccle.vii.c. Math.xii.a Luk.xi.b. ] let him aske of God, that geueth to all men indifferentlie, and casteth no man in the teeth: and it shalbe geuen hym.

6 But let hym aske in fayth, nothyng waueryng: For he that wauereth, is like a waue of the sea, tost of the wynde, and caryed with violence.

7 Neither let that man thynke that he shall receaue any thyng of the Lorde.

8 A double mynded man, [is] vnstable in all his wayes.

9 Let the brother of lowe degree, reioyce [Page] in that he is [Note: [a] That he is called to ye companie of Christe and his Angels. ] exalted:

10 Agayne, the riche, in that he is made lowe: [Note: Esai.xi.b. Eccle.14.b. i Peter.i.d. ] Because as the flowre of the grasse he shall passe away.

B

11 For the sunne hath rysen with heate, and the grasse hath withered, and his flowre hath fallen away, & the beautie of the fashion of it hath perished: So also shall the ryche man fade away in his wayes.

12 Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: For when he is tryed, he shall receaue the crowne of lyfe, which the Lorde hath promised to them that loue hym. >

13 Let no man say when he is [Note: [b] He meaneth nowe of the inwarde temptations, as of our disordered appetites, which cause vs to sinne. ] tempted, I am tempted of God, for God can not be tempted with euyl, neither tempteth he any man:

14 But euery man is tempted, when he is drawen away, & entised of his owne concupiscence.

15 Then, when lust hath conceaued, it bryngeth foorth sinne: and sinne when it is finished, bryngeth foorth death.

16 Do not erre my deare brethren.

C

17 < Euery good [Note: [c] Seyng all good thynges come of God, we ought not to make hym the aucthour of euyll. ] geuyng, and euery perfect gyft is from aboue, and cometh downe from the father of lyghtes, with who is no variablenes, neither shadow of turnyng.

18 [Note: Iohn.i.a. ] Of his owne wyll begat he vs with the worde of trueth, that we shoulde be the first frutes of his creatures.

19 Wherefore my deare brethre, [Note: Pro.xvii.d. Eccle.v.a. ] let euery man be swyft to heare, slowe to speake, slowe to wrath.

20 For the wrath of man, worketh not that which is ryghteous before God.

21 [Note: Rom xlii.d Coloss.iii.a. ] Wherefore, lay apart all filthinesse, and superfluitie of maliciousnes, and receaue with mekenesse, the worde that is graffed in you, which is able to saue your soules. >

D

22 < And [Note: Rom.ii.b. Math.v.d. ] be ye doers of the worde, and not hearers only, deceauyng your owne selues.

23 For [Note: Luk.xi.g. ] yf any be a hearer of the worde, and not a doer, he is lyke vnto a man beholdyng his bodyly face in a [Note: [d] So Gods worde is a glasse, wherin we must beholde our selues, and be come lyke vnto hym. ] glasse:

24 For he hath considered hym selfe, and is gone his wayes, & hath forgotten immediatly what his fashion was.

25 [Note: Math.vii.d. ] But who so loketh in the perfect lawe of libertie, and continueth [therin] he being not a forgetfull hearer, but a doer of the worke, shalbe blessed in his deede.

26 If any man among you seeme to be deuout, and refrayneth not his tongue, but deceaueth his owne heart, this mans deuotion is vayne.

27 Pure deuotion and vndefyled before God and the father, is this: To visite the fatherlesse and widdowes in their aduersitie, and to kepe hymselfe vnspotted of the worlde. >

## ¶ The .ij Chapter.

1 He forbiddeth to haue any respect of persons, 5 but to regarde the poore aswell as the riche, 8 to be louyng and merciful, 14 and not to boast of faith where no deedes are, 17 for it is but a dead fayth, where good workes folowe not.

A

1 **My** brethren, haue not the fayth of our Lorde Iesus Christe, the Lord of glorie, [Note: [a] As esteemyng fayth & religion by the outwarde apperaunce of men. ] with respect of persons.

2 For yf there come into your companie a man wearing a golde ryng, clothed in goodly apparell, and there come in also a poore man in vile rayment:

3 And ye haue a respect to hym that weareth the gay clothyng, and say vnto hym, sitte thou here in a good place: & say vnto the poore, stande thou there, or sitte here vnder my footestoole:

4 Are ye not partiall in your selues, and are made iudges of euyll thoughtes?

5 Hearken my deare beloued brethren. Hath not God chosen the poore of this worlde, such as are riche in fayth, and heyres of the kyngdome, which he promised to them that loue hym?

6 But ye haue despised the poore. Do not riche men oppresse you by tirannie, and drawe you before the iudgementes seates?

7 Do not they blaspheme that [Note: [b] The name of God and Christe, wherof you make profession: and in that they dishonour God, it is not meet that you his childre should honour them. ] good name by the which you are named?

8 If ye fulfyll the royal lawe, according to the scripture, thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe, ye do well:

9 But yf ye regarde one person more then another, ye commit sinne, and are rebuked of the lawe, as transgressours.

[Page]

10 Whosoeuer shal kepe the whole lawe, and [Note: Math.v.c. ] yet fayle in one poynt, he is gyltie of all.

C  
11 For he that sayde, thou shalt not commit adulterie: sayde also, thou shalt not kyll. Though thou do none adulterie, yet yf thou kyll, thou art become a transgressour of the lawe.

12 So speake ye, and so do, as they that shalbe iudged by the lawe of [Note: [c] By the mercie of god, which deliuereth vs from the curse of the lawe. ] libertie.

13 For he shall haue iudgement without mercie, that sheweth no mercie: And mercie reioyceth agaynst iudgement. >

14 What profiteth it my brethren, though a man say he hath fayth, and hath not deedes? Can fayth saue hym?

15 If a brother or a sister be naked, and destitute of dayly foode,

16 And one of you say vnto them, depart in peace, be you warmed and fylled: notwithstanding, ye geue them not those thinges which are nedefull to, the body, what shall it profite?

17 Euen so, fayth, yf it haue not deedes, is dead in it selfe:

D

18 But some man wyll say, thou hast fayth and I haue deedes: shewe me thy fayth by thy [Note: [d] Here deedes are considered, as wyued with true fayth. ] deedes, and I wyll shewe thee my faith by my deedes.

19 Beleuest thou that there is one God? Thou doest well. The deuyls also beleue, and tremble.

20 But wylt thou knowe, O thou vayne man, that that fayth which is without workes, is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our father iustified through workes, when he had [Note: Gen.xxii.b ] offered Isaac his sonne vpon the aulter?

22 Seest thou not, howe ye faith wrought with his deedes, and through ye deedes was the fayth made perfect?



23 And the scripture was fulfilled, which sayth: [Note: Gen.xv.b. Rom.iiii.a. Galat.iii.a. ] Abraham beleued God, and it was reputed vnto hym for ryghteousnesse: And he was called the friende of God.

24 < Ye see then, howe that of deedes a man is iustified, and not of fayth only.

25 Lykewyse also, was not Rahab the harlot iustified through workes, [Note: Iosue.ii.a. ] when she had receaued the messengers, and had sent them out another way?

26 For as the body without the spirite is dead: euen so, fayth without workes, is dead [also] >

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

2 He forbiddeth all ambition to seke honour aboue our brethren. 3 He describeth the propertie of the tongue. 15. 16. And what difference there is betwixt the wisdome of God, and the wisdome of the worlde.

A

1 **My** brethren, [Note: Mat.xxiii.f Pro.xvii.a. ] be not manie maisters, knowyng howe that we shall receaue the greater damnation:

2 For in many thynges we sinne all. If a man sinne not in [Note: [a] He that is able to moderate his tongue, hath attained to an excellent vertue. ] word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle all the body.

3 Beholde, we put bittes in the horses mouthes, that they may obey vs, and we turne about all the body of them:

4 Beholde also ye shippes, which though they be so great, and are dryuen of fierce windes, yet are they turned about with a very small helme, whither soeuer the violence of the gouernour wyll.

5 Euen so the tongue is a litle member also, & boasteth great thynges. Beholde how great a matter a litle fire kindleth.

B

6 And the tongue is fyre, euen a worlde of wickednesse. So is the tongue set among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and [Note: [b] The intemperancie of the tongue, is a flambe of hell fyre. ] setteth on fyre the course of nature, & it is set on fyre of hell.

7 All the natures of beastes, & of byrdes, and of serpentes, and thynges of the sea, are meeked and tamed of the nature of man:

8 But the tongue can no man tame, it is an vnruly euyll, full of deadly poyson.

C

9 Therwith blesse we God the father: and therwith curse we men, [Note: Gen.i.d. ] which are made after the

similitude of God.

10 Out of one mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing. My brethren, these thynges ought not so to be.

11 Doth a fountayne sende foorth at one place, sweete water, and bitter also?

12 Can the fygge tree, my brethren, beare oliue beries? either a vine beare figges? So can no fountayne geue both salt water and freshe also.

13 Who is a wise man, and endued with [Page] knoweledge among you? let him shewe his workes out of good conuersation with mekenesse of wisdom.

14 But yf ye haue bitter enuiyng & strife in your hearte, glorie not, neither be lyers agaynst the trueth.

D

15 For such wisdom descendeth not fro aboue: but is earthlie, sensuall, and deuelishe.

16 For where enuiyng and strife is, there is sedition & all maner of euill workes.

17 But the wisdom that is from aboue, is first pure, then peaseable, gentle, and easie to be entreated, full of mercie and good fruites, without iudgyng, without simulation:

18 Yea, and the fruite of ryghteousnes is sown in peace, of the that make peace.

### ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

1 Hauyng shewed the cause of all wrong and wickednesse, and also of all graces and goodnesse, 4 he exhorteth them to loue God, 7 and submit them selues to hym, 11 not speakyng euill of their neighbours, 13 but patiently to depende on Gods prouidence.

A

1 **From** whence cometh warre and fightyng among you? come they not here hence, euen of your lustes that [Note: [a] For the lawe of the members, continually fyghteth agaynst the lawe of the mynde. ] fight in your members?

2 Ye lust, and haue not: Ye enuie, and haue indignation, and can not obtayne: Ye fyght and warre, ye haue not, because ye aske not.

3 Ye aske and receaue not, because ye aske amisse, euen to consume it vpon your lustes.

4 Ye adulterers & [Note: [b] He calleth adulterers here, after the maner of the scriptures, them which preferre the pleasures of the worlde, to the loue of God. ] adultresses, knowe you not howe that the frendship of the world is enmitie with God? Whosoeuer therefore wylbe a friende of the worlde, is made the enemye of God.

5 Either do ye thynke that the scripture sayth in vayne, the [Note: [c] The imagination of mans heart, is wicked. ] spirite that dwelleth in vs, lusteth after enuie?

6 But [the scripture] offereth more grace, and therefore sayth, God resisteth the proude, but geueth grace vnto ye lowlie.

B

7 Submit your selues therfore to God: but [Note: i Peter.v.b. ] resist the deuyll, and he wyll flee from you.

8 Drawe nye to God, and he wyll drawe nye to you. Clense your handes ye sinners, and purifie your heartes ye double mynded.

9 Suffer afflictions, and mourne, and weepe: Let your laughter be turned to mournyng, and your ioy to heauinesse.

10 [Note: i Peter.v.a. ] Humble your selues in the sight of the Lorde, and he shall lyft you vp.

11 Backbite not one another brethren. He that backbiteth his brother, and he that iudgeth his brother, backbiteth ye lawe, and iudgeth the lawe: But and yf thou iudge the lawe, thou art not an obseruer of the lawe, but a iudge.

12 There is one lawe geuer, which is able to saue and to destroy. [Note: Rom.xiii.a ] What art thou that iudget another?

C

13 Go to nowe ye that say, [Note: [d] we ought to submit our selues to the prouidence of God. ] to day and to morowe let vs go into such a citie, and continue there a yere, and bye and sell, and wyne:

14 And yet can not ye tel what shall happen on the morowe. For what thyng is your lyfe? It is euen a vapour, that appeareth for a litle tyme, and then he vanisheth away.

15 For that ye ought to say: [Note: Act.xvii.c. Hebr.vi.a. ] If the Lorde wyll, and yf we lyue, let vs do this or that.

16 But now ye reioyce in your boastinges: All such reioycyng is euyll.

17 Therfore [Note: Luk.xii.b. ] to hym that knoweth howe to do good, and doth it not, to hym it is sinne.

## The .v. Chapter.

2 He threatneth the wicked riche men, 7 exhorteth vnto patience, 12 to beware of swearyng, 16 one to knowledge his faultes to another, 20 and one to labour to bryng another to the trueth.

A

1 **Go** to nowe ye riche men, weepe and howle on your wretchednesse that shall come vpon you.

2 Your riches is corrupt, your garmentes are motheaten:

3 Your golde and siluer is cankred, and the rust of them shalbe a [Note: [b] And kindle the wrath of god against you. ] witness agaynst you, and shall eate your fleshe as it were fyre. Ye haue heaped treasure [Page] together in your [Note: [c] To suffice tyll the ende of the worlde. ] last dayes.

4 Beholde, [Note: Leuit.xix.c ] the hire of labourers, which haue reaped downe your fieldes, which hire is of you kept backe by fraude, cryeth: and the cryes of them which haue reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lorde Sabaoth.

5 Ye haue liued in pleasure on the earth, and ben wanton: Ye haue nourished your heartes, as in a day of slaughter.

6 Ye haue condempned and kylled the iust, and he hath not resisted you.

B

7 < Be patient therefore brethren, vnto the commyng of the Lorde. Beholde, the husbandman wayteth for the precious fruite of the earth, and hath long patience thervpon, vntill he receaue the early and the later rayne.

8 Be ye also patient therefore, and settle your heartes, for the commyng of the Lorde draweth nye.

9 Grudge not one agaynst another brethren, lest ye be dampned: Beholde, the iudge standeth before the doore.

10 Take my brethren, the prophetes for an ensample of suffering aduersitie, and of patience, which spake in the name of the Lorde. >

11 Beholde, [Note: Math.v.a. ] we count the happy which endure. Ye haue hearde of the patience of Iob, and haue knowen what ende the Lorde made: For the Lorde is very pitifull and mercifull.

C

12 But aboute all thynges my brethren, [Note: Math.v.f. ] swear not, neither by heauen, neither by earth, neither any other othe: Let your [Note: [d] That which muste be affirmed, affirme it simply, and without othes: lykewyse that which muste be denied. By this he taketh not from the magistrate his authoritie, who may require an othe for the mayntenance of iustice, iudgement, and trueth. ] yea, be yea, and your nay nay, lest you fall into condempnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? let hym pray. Is any mery? let him sing psalmes.

14 Is any diseased among you? let hym call for the elders of the Churche, and let them pray for him, and annoynt him with oyle in the name of the Lorde:

15 And the prayer of fayth shall saue the sicke, and the Lorde shall raise him vp: and yf he haue committed sinnes, they shalbe forgeuen hym.

D

16 < Knowledge your faultes one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed: For ye

feruent prayer of a ryghteous man auayleth much.

17 Elias was a man vnder infirmities euen as we are, and he prayed in his prayer that it myght not rayne: [Note: 3 Reg.17.a. Luk.iiii.c. ] and it rayned not on the earth by the space of three yeres and sixe monethes.

18 And he prayed againe, and the heauen gaue rayne, & the earth brought forth her fruite.

19 Brethren, yf any of you do erre from the trueth, and another conuert hym,

20 Let the same knowe, that he which conuerteth the sinner from going astray out of his way, shall saue a soule from death, and shall hyde the multitude of sinnes.

## ¶ The ende of the epistle of Saint Iames.

### *The first epistle of Saint Peter the Apostle.*

## ¶ The first Chapter.

2 He sheweth that through the aboundaunt mercie of God, we are elect and regenerate to a lyuely hope, 7 and howe fayth must be tried, 10 that the saluation in Christe is no newes, but a thyng prophesied of olde, 13 he exhorteth them to a godly conuersation, forasmuch as they are nowe borne a newe by the worde of God.

A

1 [Note: Act.viii.a. ] **Peter**, an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to [Note: [a] whiche were Iewes, to whom he was appoynted to be an Apostle. ] them that dwell here and there as straungers, throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia:

2 Elect accordyng to the [Note: [b] The free electio of god, is the efficient cause of our saluation, the material cause is Christes obedience, our effectuall callyng is the formall cause, and the finall cause is our sanctification. ] foreknoweledge of God the father, vnto the sanctifyng of the spirite, through obedience & sprinklyng of ye blood of Iesus Christ: [Note: Rom.i.a. ] Grace & peace be multiplied vnto you.

3 [Note: i Cor.i.a. ii.Cor.i.a Galath.i.a. ii Cor.i.a. Ephe.i.a. ] Blessed be God the father of our Lorde Iesus Christe, which accordyng to his aboundaunt mercie begat vs agayne vnto a lyuely hope, by that that Iesus Christe

rose agayne from death,

4 To an inheritaunce immortall, and vndefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserued in heauen for you,  
B

5 Which are kept by the power of God through fayth vnto saluation, which is prepared alredie to be shewed in the last tyme.

6 In the which ye reioyce, though nowe [Page] for a season (yf nede require) ye are in heauinesse through manifolde temptations:

7 That the triall of your fayth, beyng much more precious then golde that perisheth, though it be [Note: Iob.xxiii.b. Sapi.ii.a. Iames.i.a. Rom.v.a. ] tried with fyre, myght be founde vnto laude, glorie, and honour, at the appearyng of Iesus Christe,

8 Whom ye haue not seene, and yet loue hym, in whom euen nowe [Note: Iohn.x.g. ] though ye see hym not, yet do you beleue, & reioyce with ioy vnspeakeable and glorious:

9 Receauyng the ende of your fayth, euen the saluation of your soules.

10 Of which saluation haue ye [Note: Actes.x.g. Esai.ix.a. Daniel.ii.g. Agge.ii.b. ] prophetes enquired & searched, which prophesied of the grace that should come vnto you:

11 Searchyng when or at what tyme the spirite of Christ which was in them, shoulde signifie, which spirite testified before, the passions that should happen vnto Christe, and the glorie that shoulde folowe after.

12 Unto which prophetes it was also declared, that not vnto them selues, but vnto vs, they shoulde minister ye thinges which are nowe shewed vnto you of them, which by the holy ghost [Note: Actes.ii.a. ] sent downe from heauen, haue in the Gospell preached vnto you, the thynges which the Angels desire to beholde.

C  
13 Wherefore [Note: Luk.xii.c. Ephe.vi.c. ] girde vp the loynes of your mynde, be sober, and trust perfectly on the grace that is brought vnto you, by the reuelation of Iesus Christe:

14 As obedient chyl dren, not fashionyng your selues vnto the former lustes of your ignoraunce:

15 But as he which called you is holy, euen so be ye holy also in all maner of conuersation:

16 Because it is written, [Note: Leuit.xi.g ] be ye holy, for I am holy.

17 And yf so be that ye call on the father, which without respect of person iudgeeth [Note: Mat.xvi.d. Psal.xviii.c Rom.ii.b. ] accordyng to euery mans worke, see that ye passe the tyme of your dwellyng here, in feare:

D  
18 < Forasmuch as ye knowe, howe that ye were not redeemed with corruptible thynges, as siluer and golde, from your vayne conuersation which ye receaued by the tradition of the fathers:

19 But [Note: Hebre.ix.d. i Iohn.i.b. Apoca.i.b. ] with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lambe vndefiled, & without spot:

20 Which was ordeyned beforehande, euen before the worlde was made, but was declared in the [Note: [c] when Christ appeared vnto the worlde, and when the Gospel was preached. ] last tymes for your sakes:

21 Which by his meanes do beleue on God that raysed hym vp from death, and [Note: Philip.b. ] glorified hym, that ye might haue fayth and hope towarde God:

22 Euen ye which haue purified your soules through the spirite in obeying the trueth, with brotherly loue vnfayned, see that ye loue one another with a pure heart feruentlye:

23 For ye are borne a newe, not of mortal seede: but of immortal, by the worde of God, which lyueth and lasteth for euer.

24 [Note: Esai.xl.b. Eccle.xiiii.b. Iacob.i.b. ] For all fleshe is as grasse, and all the glorie of man, is as the flowre of grasse. The grasse withereth, and the flowre falleth away:

25 But the worde of the Lorde endureth euer. > And this is the worde, which by the Gospell was preached vnto you.

## The .ij. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth them to lay aside all vice, 4 shewyng that Christe is the foundation whervpon they builde. 9 The excellent estate of the Christians, 11 he prayeth them to abstayne from fleshlie lustes, 13 to obey the rulers, 18 howe seruauntes shoulde behaue them selues towarde their maisters, 20 he exhorteth to suffer after the ensample of Christe.

A

1 **Wherefore** lay asyde all maliciousnesse, and all guile, and faynednesse, and enuie, and all backbityng,

2 And [Note: Mat.xviii.a ] as newe borne babes, desire ye ye milke of the worde, which is without deceipt: that ye may growe therby [vnto saluatio]

3 If so be that ye haue tasted howe gracious the Lorde is:

4 To whom ye come, as vnto a lyuyng stone, disalowed of men, but chosen of God and precious:

5 And ye as lyuely stones, be you made a spirituall house, an holy priesthood, for to offer vp spirituall sacrifices, acceptable to God by Iesus Christe.

[Page] B

6 Wherefore it is conteyned also in the scripture: [Note: Esaias 28.b. Actes.iiii.b. Rom.ix.f. ] beholde, I put in

Sion a stone to be laide in the chiefe corner, elect and precious, and he that beleueth on hym, shall not be confounded.

7 Unto you therefore which beleue, he is precious: but vnto them whiche beleue not, [Note: Psal.cxviii c Math.xxi.d ] the stone which the buylders refused, the same is made the head of the corner:

8 And a stone that men stumble at, and a rocke wherat they be offended, whiche stumble at the worde, and beyng disobedient, vnto the whiche thing they were euen ordeyned.

9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royall [Note: Exod.xix.a Deut.vii.a. ] priesthood, an holy nation, a peculier people: that ye should shewe foorth the vertues of hym that called you out of darknesse into his marueylous lyght.

10 [Note: Osee.ii.d. Rom.ix.c. ] Which in time past were not a people, but are nowe the people of God: which sometime had not obteyned mercy, but nowe haue obteyned mercy. >

C

11 < Dearely beloued, I beseche you as straugers and pilgrimes, abstaine [Note: Galath.v.c. Rom.xiii.d. ] from fleshly lustes, whiche fight agaynst the soule:

12 And see that ye haue honest conuersation among the gentiles: that where as they backbite you as euyll doers, [Note: Math.v.b. ] they may by your good workes whiche they shall see, prayse God in the day of visitation.

13 [Note: Rom.xiii.a. Titus.iii.a. ] Submit your selues therefore vnto al maner ordinaunce of ma for the Lordes sake: whether it be vnto the king, as hauyng the preeminence:

14 Other vnto rulers, as vnto them that are sent of hym for the punyshment of euyll doers, but for the laude of them that do well.

15 For so is the wyll of God, that with well doying, ye may stoppe the mouthes of foolishe and ignoraunt men:

16 As free, and not as hauyng the libertie for a cloke of maliciousnes, but euen as the seruautes of God.

17 [Note: Rom.xii.c. ] Honour all men. Loue brotherly felowship. Feare God. Honour the kyng.

18 [Note: Ephe.vi.a. Coloss.iii.d. i. Tim.vi.a. Titus.ii.b. Math.v.a. ] Seruautes, obey your maisters with all feare, not only yf they be good & curteous, but also though they be frowarde.

19 For it is thanke worthy, > yf a man for coscience toward god, endure grieffe, and suffer wrong vnderseed.

20 For what prayse is it, yf when ye be buffeted for your faultes, ye take it patiently? But yf when ye do well ye suffer wrong, & take it patiently, then is there thanke with God.

D

21 For herevnto veryly were ye called, for < Christe also suffered for vs, [Note: Iohn.xiii.b. Ephe.v.a. ]



leauyng vs an ensample, that ye should folowe his steppes.

22 Which did no sinne, neyther was there guyle founde in his mouth.

23 Whiche when he was reuiled, reuiled not agayne: when he suffred, he threatned not, but committed the vengeance to him that iudgeth righteously.

24 [Note: Math.viii.c. Esai.liii.b. ] Which his owne selfe bare our sinnes in his body on the tree, that we beyng deliuered from sinne, shoulde liue vnto ryghteousnes: By whose strypes ye were healed.

25 For ye were as sheepe goyng astray: but are nowe turned vnto the sheepearde and Byshop of your soules.

### The .iiij. Chapter.

1 Howe wyues ought to order themselues towarde their husbandes. 3 And in their apparell. 7 The duetie of men towarde their wyues. 8 He exhortheth all men to vnitie and loue. 14 And paciently to suffer trouble by the example and benefite of Christe.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **Likewise** [Note: Ephe.v.c. Coloss.iii.c. ] ye wyues, be in subiectio to your husbandes, that euen they whiche obey not the word, may without the word, be wonne by the couersation of ye wiues,

2 Whyle they beholde your chaste conuersation coupled with feare.

3 Whose apparel shal not be outward with brayded heere, & hanging on of gold, eyther in putting on of gorgeous apparel.

4 But let the hid man whiche is in the heart, be without all corruption, so that the spirite be at rest and quiet, whiche [spirite] is before god a thing much set by.

5 For after this maner in the olde tyme dyd the holy women, whiche trusted in God, tyre them selues, and were obedient vnto theyr husbandes.

[Page]

6 Euen as Sara obeyed Abraham, and called hym Lorde, whose daughters ye are as long as ye do well, and are not afrayde for any terrour.

<sup>B</sup>

7 Lykewyse ye husbandes dwell with them accordyng to knowledge, geuyng honour vnto the wyfe, as vnto the weaker vessell, and as vnto them that are heires also of the grace of lyfe, that your prayers be not hyndered.

8 < In conclusion, be ye all of one minde, of one heart, loue as brethren, be pitiful, be curteous, [Note: meke, ]

9 Not rendryng euyl for euyll, or rebuke for rebuke: but contrarywyse blesse, knowyng that ye are therevnto called, euen that ye shoulde be [Note: [a] God hath made vs whe we were his enmies heires of his kyngdome: & shall not we forgeue our brethren a small fault? ] heyres of the blessing.

10 [Note: Psal.34.c. ] For he that doeth long after lyfe, and loueth to see good dayes, let hym refrayne his tongue from euyll, and his lippes, that they speake no guyle.

11 Let hym eschewe euyll and do good, let hym seke peace and ensue it.

12 For the eyes of the Lorde are ouer the ryghteous, and his eares are open vnto their prayers: Againe, the face of the Lorde is [Note: [b] To take vengeance on hym. ] ouer them that do euyll.

13 Moreouer, who is it that wyll harme you, yf ye folowe that which is good?

C

14 Yea, [Note: Math.v.b. ] happy are ye if any trouble happen vnto you for ryghteousnes sake: Be not ye [Note: Esai.viii.c. Math.x.d. ] afrayde for any terrour of them, neither be ye troubled:

15 But sanctifie the Lorde God in your heartes. > Be redy alwayes to geue an aunswere to euery man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you,

16 And that with mekenesse and feare, hauyng a good conscience: [Note: i.Pet.ii.b. Titus.ii.a. ] that where as they backebite you as euyll doers, they may be ashamed that falsely accuse your good conuersation in Christe.

17 [Note: i.Pet.ii.b. Math.v.a. ] For it is better, yf the wyll of God be so, that ye suffer for wel doyng, then for euyll doyng.

D

18 < [Note: Rom.v.a. ] Forasmuch as Christe hath once suffered for sinnes, the iust for the vniust to bryng vs to God, and was kylled as parteynyng to the fleshe, but was quickened in the spirite.

19 In which spirite, he also went & preached vnto the spirites that were in pryson,

20 Which sometime had ben disobedient, when once the long sufferyng of God abode in ye dayes of Noe, whyle the Arke was a preparyng, [Note: Gene.vi.a. Gene.vii.c. ] wherein fewe, that is to say eyght soules, were saued in the water:

21 To the which also the figure agreeth that nowe saueth vs, euen [Note: Rom.vi.a. ] baptisme, not the puttyng away of the fylth of the fleshe, but in that a good conscience maketh request to God, by the resurrection of Iesus Christe:

22 Which is on the ryght hande of God, and is gone into heauen, [Note: Heb.i.b.ii.b ] angels, powers, and myght subdued vnto hym.

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth men to ceasse from sinne, 2 to spende no more tyme in vice, 7 to be sober and apt to pray, 8 to loue eche other, 12 to be pacient in trouble, 15 to beware that no man suffer as an euyll doer, 16 but as a christian man, and so not to be ashamed.

A

1 **For** as muche then as Christ hath suffered for vs in the fleshe, arme ye your selues lykewise with the same mynde: for he which suffereth in the fleshe, ceaseth from sinne:

2 That he hence forwarde shoulde lyue, as much tyme as remayneth in ye fleshe, not after the lustes of men, but after the wyll of God.

3 For it is sufficient for vs that we haue spent the tyme that is paste of the lyfe, after the wyll of the [Note: Rom.i.d. Ephe.iiii.d. ] gentiles, walkyng in wantonnesse, lustes, in excesse of wyne, in excesse of eatyng, in excesse of drynkyng, and abominable idolatrie.

B

4 And it seemeth to them an inconuenient thyng, that ye runne not also with them vnto the same excesse of riote, and therefore speake they euyll of you:

5 Whiche shall geue accomptes to hym that is redy to iudge quicke and dead.

6 For vnto this purpose veryly was the Gospel peached also vnto ye [Note: [a] Although the wicked thynke this Gospel newe, and vexe you that imbrace it: yet hath it ben preached to the of tyme past, whiche now are dead: to the intent yt they myght haue ben condempned or dead to sinne in the flesshe, & also myght haue lyued to God in the spirite, which two are the effect of the Gospell. ] dead, that they shoulde be iudged lyke other men in the fleshe, but should lyue before God in the spirite.

7 The ende of all thynges is at hande.

8 < Be ye therefore sober, and watche vnto prayer.

[Page]

8 But aboute all thynges, haue feruent loue among your selues: For loue shall couer the multitude of sinnes.

9 [Note: Gen.xix.a. Actes.x.c. Philip.ii.b. ] Be ye harberous one to another, without grudgyng.

10 As euery man hath receaued the gyft, eue so minister the same one to another, as good ministers of the manifold grace of God.

C

11 If any man speake, [let hym talke] as the wordes of God. [Note: Rom.xii.b. ] If any man minister, let him do it as [Note: ii.Cor.viii c. ] of the abilitie which God ministreth vnto hym, that God in all thynges may be glorified through Iesus Christe, > to whom be prayse and dominion for euer and euer. Amen.

12 Dearely beloued, thinke it not straunge concerning the fierie triall, which thing is to trye you, as though some straunge thyng happened vnto you.

13 But reioyce, in as much as ye are partakers of Christes passions: that when his glory appeareth, ye maye be mery and glad.

14 [Note: Math.v.b. i.Pet.i.e. ] Yf ye be rayled vpon for the name of Christe, happy are ye. For the spirite of glory and of God, resteth vpon you: On their part he is euyll spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.  
D

15 See that none of you be punished as a murtherer, or as a thiefe, or an euyll doer, or as a busie body in other mens matters.

16 Yf any [man suffer] as a Christian man, let hym not be ashamed, but let him glorifie God on this behalfe.

17 For the tyme is [come] that iudgement must begin at the house of God. Yf it first [begin] at vs, what shall the ende be of them whiche beleue not the Gospell of God?

18 And [Note: Prou.xi.d. ] if the ryghteous scacely be saued, where shall the vngodly and the sinner appeare?

19 Wherefore, let them that are troubled accordyng to the wyll of God, commit their soules to him with well doyng, as vnto a faythfull creatour.

## ¶ The .v. Chapter.

2 The duetie of pastours is to feede the flocke of Christe, and what rewarde they shall haue yf they be diligent. 5 He exhortheth young persons to submit them selues to the elders, 8 to be sober, and to watche that they may resist the enemye.

A

1 **The** [Note: [a] By elders he vnderstandeth all them which preach, teach, or minister in the Church. ] elders which are among you, I exhort, whiche am also an elder, & a wytnesse of the afflictions of Christe, and also a partaker of the glory that shalbe opened:

2 [Note: Actes.xxi.f ] Feede you God his flocke, whiche is committed vnto you, takyng the ouersight of them not as compelled therto, but wyllingly, not for the desyre of fylthy lucre, but of a good mynde:

3 [Note: ii.Cor.i.e. i.Tim.iiii.b. Titus.ii.d. ii.Tim.i.c. ] Not as though ye were Lordes ouer God his heritage: but that ye be an ensample to the flocke.

4 And when the chiefe shepherde shall appeare, ye shall receaue [Note: i.Cor.ix.d. ii.Tim.iiii.b ] an incorruptible crowne of glory.

B

5 Likewise ye younger, submit your selues vnto the elder: Submit your selues euery man one to another, decke your selues inwardly in lowlynes of mynde: For God resisteth the proude, and geueth grace to the

humble.

6 < Submit your selues therefore vnder the mightie hande of God, that he may exalt you when the tyme is come.

7 [Note: Math.vi.d. Luk.xii.c. ] Cast all your care vpon hym, for he careth for you.

8 Be sober, & watche, for your aduersarie the deuyll, as a roaryng Lion [Note: Iohn.i.b. Iacob.iiii.b. ] walketh about seking who he may deuour:

C

9 Whom resist stedfast in the fayth, knowyng that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the worlde.

10 But the God of all grace whiche hath called vs vnto his eternall glory by Christe Iesus, shal his owne selfe, after that ye haue suffred a litle affliction, make you perfite, setle, strength, and stablyshe you.

11 To hym be glory and dominion, for euer and euer. Amen. >

D

12 By Syluanus a faythfull brother, vnto you, as I suppose, haue I wrytten briefly, exhortyng and testifiyng, howe that this is the true grace of God, wherin ye stande.

[Page]

13 The Churche that is at Babylon elected together with you, saluteth you, and so doeth Marcus my sonne.

14 [Note: Rom.xvi.c. i Cor.xvi.d ] Greeete ye one another with the kysse of loue. Peace be with you all which are in Christe Iesus. Amen.

## ***The seconde epistle of Saint Peter.***

### **The first Chapter.**

4 Forasmuch as the power of God hath geuen them all thynges parteyning vnto lyfe, he exhorteth them to flee the corruptio of worldly lustes. 10 to make their callyng sure with good workes and frutes of fayth.

14 He maketh mention of his owne death, 17 declaryng the Lorde Iesus to be the true sonne of God, as he him selfe had seene vpvpon the mount.

A

1 **Simon** Peter, a seruaunt and an Apostle of Iesus Christe, to them which haue obteneid lyke precious faith with vs, thorowe the ryghteousnes of our god and sauour Iesus Christe:

2 [Note: i.Pet.i.a. ] Grace and peace be multiplied vnto you, through the knowledge of God, and of Iesus our Lorde:

3 Accordyng as his godly power hath geuen vnto vs all thynges that parteine vnto lyfe and godlynesse, [Note: [a] The sum of our saluation and religio is, to be ledde by Christe to ye father, who calleth vs in the sonne. ] through the knowledge of hym that hath called vs vnto glorie and vertue:

4 By the which are geuen vnto vs excellent and most great promises, that by the meanes thereof, ye might be [Note: Iohn.i c. Coloss.ii.b. ] partakers of the godly nature, yf ye flee the corruption of worldly lust.

B

5 And herevnto geue all diligence: in your fayth minister vertue, in vertue knowledge,

6 [Note: i.Cor.viii.a. ] In knowledge temperaunce, in temperaunce pacience, in pacience godlynesse,

7 In godlynesse brotherly kyndnesse, in brotherly kyndnesse loue.

8 For yf these thynges be among you, and be plenteous, they wyll make you that ye neither shalbe idle nor vnfruitefull in the knowledge of our Lorde Iesus Christe.

9 But he that lacketh these thynges, is blynde, and can not see farre of, & hath forgotten that he was purged from his olde sinnes.

C

10 Wherefore brethren, geue the more diligence for to make your callyng and election [Note: [b] Albeit to be sure in it self, forasmuch as god cannot chaunge: yet we must confirme it in our selues by the frutes of the spirite, knowyng that the purpose of god electeth, calleth, sanctifieth, and iustifieth vs. ] sure: For yf ye do such thynges, ye shall neuer fall.

11 Yea, and by this meanes an entryng in shalbe ministred vnto you aboudantlye, into the euerlastyng kyngdome of our Lorde and sauour Iesus Christe.

12 Wherefore I wyll not be negligent to put you alwayes in remembraunce of suche thynges, though ye knowe them your selues, and be stablysshed in the present trueth.

13 Notwithstandyng I thinke it meete, as long as I am in this [Note: ii.Cor.v.a. ] tabernacle, to stirre you vp by puttyng you in remembraunce:

14 Forasmuch as I am sure that shortly I must put of this my tabernacle, [Note: Iohn.xxi.d ] euen as our Lorde Iesus Christe shewed me.

15 I wyll euer also geue my diligence yt ye may haue wherwith to stirre vp the remembraunce of these thynges after my departyng.

16 < For we haue not folowed deceitfull fables, when we opened vnto you the power and commyng of our Lorde Iesus Christe, but [Note: i.Iohn.i.a. ] with our eyes we sawe his maiestie:

D

17 Euen then veryly when he receaued of God the father honour and glorie, & when there came suche a voyce to hym from the excellent glorie: [Note: Mat xvii.d. Mark.i.b. Luk.iii.d. ] This is my deare beloued sonne in whom I delyte.

18 This voyce we heard come from heauen, when we were with him in the holye mount.

[Page]

19 We haue also a ryght sure worde of prophesie, wherevnto yf ye take heede, as vnto a [Note: ii.Cor.iii.b. ] lyght that shyneth in a darke place, ye do well, vntyll the day dawne, and the day starre arise in your heartes.

20 So that ye first knowe this, that no prophesie in the scripture is of any priuate motion.

21 For the prophesie came not in olde time by the wyll of man: but holy men of God, spake as they were moued by the holy ghost.

## ¶ The .ij Chapter.

1 He prophesieth of false teachers, and sheweth their punishment.

A

1 **There** were false prophetes also among the people, eue as [Note: Actes.xx.f. i.Tim.iiii.a. ii.Tim.iii.a. ii.Pet.iii.a. Iudic.i.e. ] there shalbe false teachers among you, whiche pryuyly shal bryng in damnable heresies, euen denying the Lorde that hath bought them, and bryng vpo them selues swyft damnation.

2 And many shall folowe their damnable wayes, by whom the way of trueth shalbe euyl spoken of:

3 And through couetousnesse, shall they with fayned wordes make [Note: [a] That is euidently sene in the Pope & his priestes, which by lyes and flatteries sell mens soules: so that it is certayne yt he is not the successour of Simo Peter, but of Simon Magus. ] marchaudize of you, whose iudgement is nowe not farre of, and their damnation sleepeth not.

4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them downe into hell, and delyuered them into chaynes of darknesse, to be kept vnto iudgement:

B

5 [Note: Genes.vii.a. ] Neither spared the olde worlde, but saued Noe the eyght [person] a preacher of ryghteousnesse, and brought in the flood vpon the worlde of the vngodly,

6 And turned their cities of Sodome & Gomorrhe into asshes, ouerthrewe the, dampned them, and made of them an ensample vnto those that after shoulde lyue vngodly:

7 And iust [Note: Gene.xii.d. ] Lot, vexed with ye vncleane conuersatio of the wicked, deliuered he.

8 For he beyng ryghteous, & dwellyng among them, in seying and hearyng, vexed his ryghteous soule

from daye to daye with their vnlawfull deedes.

9 [Note: Iob.xv.b. i.Cor.x.c. ] The Lorde knoweth howe to delyuer the godly out of temptation, and to reserue the vniust vnto the day of iudgement for to be punished:

10 But chiefly them that walke after the fleshe in the lust of vnclennesse, and despise auctoritie. Presumptuous are they, and stande in their owne conceyte, whiche feare not to speake euyl of them that excell in worship.

11 When the Angels whiche are greater both in power and might, geue not raylyng iudgement against them before the Lorde.

C  
12 But these, as brute beastes ledde with sensualitie, and made to be taken and destroyed, speake euyl of the thynges that they vnderstande not, and shall perishe through their owne corruption,

13 And receaue the rewarde of vnryghteousnesse, they count it pleasure to lyue deliciouslye for a season: Spottes they are and blottes, [Note: [b] For in your holy feastes, they syt as members of the church, where as in deede they be but spottes, & so deceaue you. reade.Luk.13. ] delighting them selues in their deceauynges, in feastyng with you.

14 Hauyng eyes full of adulterie, & that can not ceasse from sinne, begylyng vnstable soules: Heartes they haue exercised with robberie, they are cursed chyldren,

15 Which haue forsaken the ryght waye, and are gone astray, folowyng the way [Note: Num.xxii b ] of Balaam the sonne of Bosor, which loued the rewarde of vnryghteousnesse:

D  
16 But was rebuked of his iniquitie. The dumbe beast, and vsed to the yoke, speaking with mans voyce, forbad the madnesse of the prophete.

17 [Note: Iudic.i.d. ] These are welles without water, cloudes that are caryed with a tempest, to whom the mist of darknesse is reserued for euer.

18 For when they haue spoken the great swellyng wordes of vanitie, they entice through lustes in the voluptuousnesse of the fleshe, them that were cleane escaped, from them whiche are wrapped in errour,

19 Whyle they promise them libertie, where as they them selues are ye bonde seruauntes of corruption. [Note: Iohn.viii.d. Rom.vi.c. ] For of whom a man is ouercome, vnto the same is he brought in bondage.

20 [Note: Hebr.vi.a. and .x.c. ] For yf they, after they haue escaped from the fylthynesse of the worlde, thorowe the knowledge of the Lord, & the sauour Iesus Christe, are yet tangled [Page] agayne therein, and [Note: Math.xii.d. ] ouercome, then is the later end worse with them then the begynnyng.

21 For it had ben better for them not to haue knowen the way of righteousnes, then after they haue knowen it, to turne from the holy commaundement that was geuen vnto them.

22 But the same is happened vnto them that is vsed to be spoken by the true prouerbe: [Note: Pro.xxi.a. ]



The dogge is tourned to his owne vomite againe, and the sowe that was washed, is turned againe to her wallowyng in the myre.

## The .iiij. Chapter.

3 He sheweth the impietie of them which mocke at Gods promises. 7 After what sort the ende of the worlde shalbe. 8 That they prepare them selues therevnto. 16 Who they are which abuse the wrytynges of S. Paul, & the rest of the scriptures, 18 Concludyng with eternall thankes to Christe Iesus.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **This** is the seconde epistle that I now wryte vnto you, dearely beloued, wherwith I stirre vp & warne your pure myndes,

2 By puttyng you in remembraunce, that ye may be myndfull of the wordes which were tolde before of the holy prophetes, and also the commaundement of vs, whiche be Apostles of the Lorde and sauour.

3 [Note: Actes.xx.f. ii.Pet.ii.a. ] This first vnderstande, that there shall come in the laste dayes mockers, whiche wyll walke after their owne lustes,

4 [Note: Iudi.i.e. i.Tim.iii.e. ii.Tim.ii.a. ] And say: Where is the promise of his commyng? For sence the fathers dyed, all thynges continue a lyke from the begynnyng of the creation.

<sup>B</sup>  
5 For this they knowe not (and that [Note: [a] He meaneth the whiche had once professed christian religion, but became afterward contemners and mockers, as Epicurians & Atheistes. ] wyfully) howe that the heauens were of olde, and the earth that was of the water, and by the water, by the worde of God:

6 By the which thinges the world that then was, perished, beyng then ouerrunne with water.

7 [Note: Iohn.xiiii.b Esaias.li.b. ] But the heauens and earth whiche are nowe, be kept by his worde in store, and reserued vnto fire, agaynst the day of iudgement and perdition of vngodly men.

8 Dearely beloued, be not ignoraunt of this one thyng, howe that [Note: Psal.xc.a. i.Cor.vii c. ] one day is with the Lorde as a thousande yere, & a thousande yere as one day.

9 The Lorde that hath promised, is not slacke, as some men count slacknesse, but is pacient to vsuarde [forasmuch] as he woulde haue no man lost, but wyll receaue all men to repentaunce.

<sup>C</sup>  
10 Neuerthelesse [Note: Math.24.d. i.Thesi.v.a. Apoc iii.a. ] the day of the Lorde wyll come as a theefe in the nyght, in the which the heauens shal passe away with a noyse, and the elementes shall melt with heate, the earth also and the workes that are therein shall burne.

11 Seyng then that all these thynges shall perisse, what maner persons ought ye to be in holy conuersation and godlynesse:

12 Loking for, and hastyng vnto the comyng of the day of God, by whom the heauens shall perishe with fire, and the elementes shall melt with heate?

13 [Note: Apoc.xxi.a ] Neuerthelesse, we accordyng to his promise, loke for a newe heauen, and a newe earth, wherein dwelleth ryghteousnesse.

14 Wherefore dearely beloued, seyng that ye loke for such thynges, be diligent that ye may be founde of hym in peace, without spot, and vndefyled:

D

15 And suppose that the long suffering of the Lord is saluatio, euen as our dearely beloued brother Paul also, accordyng to the wisdomes geuen vnto hym, hath written vnto you:

16 Yea almost in euery epistle, speakyng of such thynges: among which, are manye thynges harde to be vnderstande, which they that are vnlearned and vnstable, peruert, as they do also the other scriptures, vnto their owne destruction.

17 Ye therefore beloued, seyng ye be warned afore hande, beware lest ye with other men be also plucked away through the errour of the wicked, and fall from your owne stedfastnesse:

18 But growe in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lorde and sauour Iesus Christe, to whom be glorie both nowe and for euer. Amen.

[Page]

## ***The first Epistle of Saint Iohn the Apostle.***

### **The first Chapter.**

2 True wnesse of the euerlastyng worde of God. 7 The blood of Christe is the purgation of sinne. 10 No man is without sinne.

A

1 **That** whiche was fro the beginning, whiche we haue heard, which we haue seene with our eyes, whiche we haue loked vpo, & our handes haue handeled of, the worde of lyfe:

2 (And the lyfe appeared, and we haue seene, and beare wnesse, and shewe vnto you [Note: Mat.xvii.a. ] that eternall lyfe which was with the father, and appeared vnto vs.)

B

3 That which we haue seene and heard declare we vnto you, that ye also maye haue [Note: [a] The effect of

ye Gospell is, that we all beyng ioyned together in Christ by faith, shuld be the sonnes of God. ] fellowship with vs, and that our felowship may be with the father, and his sonne Iesus Christe.

4 And this write we vnto you, that your ioy may be full,

C

5 And this is the tydynges whiche we haue hearde of hym & declare vnto you, that God is lyght, & in hym is no darkenesse at all.

6 If we saye that we haue felowship with hym, and walke in darkenesse, we lye, and do not the trueth.

7 But and yf we walke in light, euen as he is in lyght, then haue we felowship [Note: [b] That is, Christe with vs, and we with our selues. ] one with another, and the blood of Iesus Christ his sonne clenseth vs from all sinne.

D

8 [Note: 3.Reg.viii e. ii.Par.vi.g. ] If we say that we haue no sinne, we deceaue our selues, and the trueth is not in vs.

9 [Note: Ioh.xiii.c. Psal.32.d. Luk.xv.d. ] If we knowledge our sinnes, he is faythfull & iust to forgeue vs our sinnes, and to clense vs from all vnryghteousnesse.

10 If we say we haue not sinned, we make hym a lyer, and his worde is not in vs.

## ¶ The .ij. Chapter.

1 Christe is our aduocate. 10 Of true loue, and howe it is tried. 18 To beware of antichriste.

A

1 My litle chyldren, these thynges write I vnto you, that ye sinne not. And yf any man sinne, we haue an aduocate with the father, Iesus Christe the ryghteous.

2 And he is ye attonement for our sinnes: not for our sinnes only, but also for the sinnes of all the worlde.

3 < And hereby we are sure that we [Note: [a] That is, by fayth, and so obey hym: for knowlege can not be without obedience. ] knowe hym, yf we kepe his comaundementes.

4 [Note: Iohn.xiii.d. ] He that sayth I knowe hym, and kepeth not his commaundementes, is a lyer, and the veritie is not in hym:

5 But who so kepeth his worde, in him is the loue of God perfect in deede. Hereby knowe we that we are in hym.

6 He that sayth he bydeth in him, ought to walke euen as he walked. >

B

7 Brethren, I write no newe comaundement vnto you, but that olde comaundement which ye haue had

from the begynnyng. The olde commaundement is the worde which ye haue hearde fro the begynnyng.

8 Agayne, a newe commaundement I write vnto you, that is true in hym, and [the same is true] also in you: For the darknesse is past, and the true lyght nowe shyneth. >

9 He that sayth howe that he is in the lyght, and yet hateth his brother, is in darknesse, euen vntyll this tyme.

10 He that loueth his brother, abydeth in the lyght, and there is none occasion of euyl in hym.

11 He that [Note: Leuit.xix.d ] hateth his brother, is in darknesse, and walketh in darknesse, & can not tell whyther he goeth, because that darknesse hath blynded his eyes.

12 Babes I write vnto you, because your [Page] sinnes are forgeuen you for his names sake.

13 I write vnto you fathers, because ye haue knowen hym that is from the begynnyng. I write vnto you young men, because you haue ouercome the wicked.

14 I write to you little chyldren, because ye haue knowe the father. I haue written to you fathers, because ye haue knowen hym that is from the begynnyng. I haue written vnto you young men, because, ye are stronge, and the worde of God abydeth in you, and ye haue ouercome the wicked.

C

15 See that ye loue not [Note: Ioh.xvii.b. ] the worlde, neither the thynges that are in the worlde. If any man loue the worlde, the loue of the father is not in hym.

16 For all that is in the worlde, as the lust of the fleshe, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the father, but of the worlde.

17 And the worlde passeth away, and the luste thereof: but he that fulfylleth the wyll of God, abydeth for euer.

18 Litle chyldren, it is the last time, and as ye haue hearde howe that antichrist shall come, euen nowe are there many antichristes, whereby we knowe that it is the last tyme.

19 [Note: Actes.xx.f. ] They went out from vs, but they were not of vs: For yf they had ben of vs, they woulde no doubt haue continued with vs: But that it myght appere that they were not of vs.

20 Neuerthelesse, ye haue an [Note: [b] the grace of the holy ghost. ] oyntment of hym that is holy, and ye knowe all thynges.

D

21 < I haue not written vnto you, as though ye knewe not the trueth: but because ye knowe it, and that no lye is of the trueth.

22 Who is a lyer, but he that denieth that Iesus is Christe? The same is antichrist that denyeth the father and the sonne.

23 Whosoeuer denyeth the sonne, the same hath not the father [But he that knowledgeth the sonne, hath the father also.]

24 Let therefore abyde in you, that same whiche ye hearde from the begynnyng. If that whiche ye hearde from the begynnyng shall remayne in you, ye also shall continue in the sonne, and in the father.

25 And this is the promise that he hath promised vs, euen eternall lyfe.

26 These thynges haue I written vnto you, concerning them that deceaue you:

27 And the annoynting whiche ye haue receaued of hym dwelleth in you: And ye nede not that any man teach you, but as the same [Note: [c] Christe comunicateth hym selfe vnto you, & teacheth you by the holy ghost and his ministers. ] [Note: Esai.liiii.d. ] annoynting teacheth you of all thynges, and it is true, and not lying: and as it taught you, ye shall abyde in it.

28 And nowe [Note: [d] By this name, he menneth ye whole Church of Christe in generall. ] babes abide in him, that when he shal appeare, we may be bolde and not be made ashamed of hym at his commyng.

29 If ye knowe that he is ryghteous, knowe also that euery one whiche doth righteousnes, is borne of hym.

## ¶ The .iiij Chapter.

1 The singuler loue of God towarde vs, 7 and howe we agayne ought to loue one another.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **Beholde** what loue the father hath shewed on vs, that we shoulde be called the [Note: Luk.xx.f. Iohn.i.b. ] sonnes of god: For this cause the worlde knoweth you not, because it knoweth not hym.

2 Dearly beloued, nowe are we the sonnes of God, and yet it doth not appeare what we shalbe: But we knowe that when he shall appeare, we shalbe lyke hym, for we shall see hym as he is.

3 And euery man that hath this hope in hym, purgeth hym selfe, euen as he also is pure.

4 Whosoeuer committeth sinne, transgresseth also the lawe: for sinne is the transgression of the lawe.

5 And ye know that he appeared to take away our sinnes, & in hym is no sinne.

6 As many as byde in hym, sinne not: whosoeuer sinneth, hath not seene him, neither knowen hym.

<sup>B</sup>  
7 Babes, let no man deceaue you: He that doeth righteousnes, is ryghteous, euen as he is righteous.

8 He that committeth sinne, is of the deuyll: [Note: Gene.iii.a. Iohn.viii.f. ] for the deuyll sinneth sence the beginning. For this purpose appeared the sonne of God, to loose the workes of the deuyll.

[Page]

- 9 Whosoever is borne of God, sinneth not: for his seede remayneth in him, and he can not sinne, because he is borne of God.
- 10 In this are ye children of God knowe, and the chyldren of the deuyll: Whosoever doth not ryghteousnesse, is not of God, neither he that loueth not his brother.
- C
- 11 For this is the tidynges that ye heard from the begynnyng, that ye shoulde loue one another.
- 12 Not as [Note: Gen.iiii.b. ] Cain, which was of that wicked, and slewe his brother: And wherfore slewe he hym? Because his owne workes were euyl, and his brothers good.
- 13 < Maruayle not my brethren though the worlde hate you.
- 14 We knowe, that we are translated from death vnto lyfe, because we [Note: [a] This loue is the speciall fruite of our fayth, and a certayne signe of our regeneration. ] loue the brethren. He that loueth not his brother, abideth in death.
- 15 Whosoever hateth his brother, is a mansleare: And ye knowe that no mansleare, hath eternall life abidyng in hym.
- 16 Hereby perceauwe we loue, because he layde downe his lyfe for vs, & we ought to lay downe our lyues for the brethren.
- 17 But who so hath this worldes good, and [Note: Deut.xv.b. ] seeth his brother haue neede, and shutteth vp his compassion from hym: howe dwelleth the loue of God in hym?
- 18 My babes, let vs not loue in worde, neither in tongue: but in deede and in veritie.
- 19 Hereby we knowe that we are of the trueth, and shall assure our heartes before hym.
- 20 For yf our heart condempne vs, God is greater then our heart, and knoweth all thynges.
- 21 Dearely beloued, yf our heart condempne vs not, then haue we boldnesse towarde God.
- 22 And [Note: Math.vii.a. Iohn.xv.b. Iacob.i.a. ] whatsoever we aske, we receaue of hym, because we kepe his commaundementes, and do those thynges which are pleasyng in his syght.
- 23 And [Note: i.Iohn.v.c. Ioh.xiii.d. ] this is his comaundement, that we beleue on the name of his sonne Iesus Christe, and loue one another, as he gaue commaundement.
- 24 And he that kepeth his commaundementes, dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we knowe that he abideth in vs, euen by the spirite which he hath geuen vs.

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

1 Difference of spirites, 2 howe the spirite of God may be knowen from the spirite of errour, 7 of the loue of God and of our neyghbours.

A

1 **Dearly** beloued, [Note: Math.vii.c. Deut.xiii.a. Ma.xxiii.a. Mar.xiii.a. Luk.xxi.d. ] beleue not euery spirite: but proue the spirites whether they are of God or not: for many false prophetes are gone out into the worlde.

2 Hereby shall ye knowe the spirite of God: Euery spirite that confesseth that Iesus [Note: [a] who beyng very god, came from his father & toke vpon hym our fleshe. He that confesseth or preacheth this truely, hath the spirite of God, els not. ] Christe is come in the fleshe, is of God:

3 And euery spirite which confesseth not that Iesus Christe is come in the fleshe, is not of God. And this is that spirite of antichriste, of whom ye haue hearde howe that he shoulde come: and euen nowe alredy is he in the worlde.

4 Litle chyldren, ye are of God, & haue ouercome them: for greater is he that is in you, then he that is in the worlde.

5 They are of the world, therefore speake they of the worlde, & the world heareth them.

B

6 We are of God. He that knoweth God, heareth vs: he that is not of God, heareth vs not. Hereby knowe we the spirite of veritie, and the spirite of errour.

7 Dearly beloued, [Note: Iohn.xiii.d i Thess.i.b. ] let vs loue one another, for loue commeth of God: And euery one that loueth, is borne of God, and knoweth God.

8 He that loueth not, knoweth not God: for < God is loue.

9 In this appeared the loue of God to vs warde, because [Note: Iohn.iii.a. Rom.v.b. ] God sent his only begotten sonne into the worlde, that we myght lyue through hym.

10 Herein is loue, not that we loued God, but that he loued vs, and sent his sonne to be the agreement for our sinnes.

11 Dearly beloued, yf God so loued vs, we ought also to loue one another.

12 [Note: Exod.33.d. Iudic.v.c. ] No man hath seene God at any time. If we loue one another, God dwelleth [Page] in vs, and his loue is perfect in vs.

13 Hereby knowe we that we dwell in hym, & he in vs: because he hath geuen vs of his spirite.

14 And we haue seene, and do testifie that the father sent the sonne to be the sauour of the worlde.

15 Whosoever confesseth that Iesus is the sonne of God, in him dwelleth God, and he in God.

D

16 And we haue knowen and beleued the loue that God hath to vs. God is loue, and he that dwelleth in loue, dwelleth in God, and God in hym.

17 Herein is the loue perfect in vs, that we shoulde haue boldnesse in the day of iudgement: For as he is, euen so are we in this worlde.

18 There is no feare in loue, but perfect loue casteth out feare: for feare hath paynefulnesse. He that feareth, is not perfect in loue.

19 We loue hym, for he loued vs first.

20 If a man say, I loue God, & yet hate his brother, he is a lyer: For how can he yt loueth not his brother whom he hath seene, loue God who he hath not seene?

21 And this commaundement haue we of hym: that he which loueth God, shoulde loue his brother also. >

## The .v. Chapter.

1. Of the fruites of fayth. 14. 20. The office, auctoritie, & diuinitie of Christe, 21 agaynst images.

A

1 **Whosoever** beleueth that Iesus is Christe, is borne of God: And euerie one that loueth him which begat, loueth hym also which is begotten of hym.

2 [Note: Iohn. xiii.c. ] By this we knowe that we loue the chyldren of God, when we loue God, and kepe his commaundementes.

3 For this is the loue of God, that we kepe his commaundementes, and [Note: Math.xii.d. ] his commaundementes are not greuous.

B

4 < For all that is borne of God, ouercommeth the worlde. And this is the [Note: i Cor.xv.g. ] victorie that ouercommeth ye worlde, [euen] our fayth.

5 Who is it that ouercommeth ye worlde, but he which beleueth that Iesus is the sonne of God?

6 This Iesus Christe, is he that came by water [Note: [a] The water & blood that came out of his syde, declare that we haue our sinnes washed by hym, and he hath made ful satisfaction for the same. ] and blood: not by water only, but by water and blood. And it is the spirite that beareth witnesse, because the spirite is [Note: [b] Whiche testifieth to our heartes, that we be the childre of god. ] trueth.



7 For there are three which beare recorde in heauen, the father, the worde, and the holy ghost, and these three are one.

8 And there are three which beare recorde in earth, the spirite, and water, and blood, and these three agree in one.

9 If we receaue the witsesse of men, the witsesse of God is greater: For this is the witsesse of God [that is greater] which he testified of his sonne.

C  
10 He that beleueth on the sonne of God, hath the witsesse in hym selfe: < He that beleueth not God, hath made hym a lyer, because he beleued not the recorde that God gaue of his sonne.

11 And this is the recorde, how that God hath geuen vnto vs eternall lyfe, and this lyfe, is in his sonne.

12 He that hath the sonne, hath lyfe: and he that hath not the sonne of God, hath not lyfe.

13 These thynges haue I written vnto you that beleue on ye name of the sonne of God, that ye may knowe howe that ye haue eternall lyfe, and that ye may beleue on the name of the sonne of God.

14 And this is the trust that we haue in hym: that [Note: Mat.vii.a. Mark.xi.d. Luk.xi.b. Iohn.xiiii.b ] yf we aske any thyng accordyng to his wyll, he heareth vs.

15 And yf we knowe that he heare vs, whatsoeuer we aske: we know that we haue ye petitions that we desire of hym.

D  
16 If any man see his brother sinne a sinne not vnto death, let hym aske, and he shal geue him life for them that sinne not vnto death. There is a sinne vnto death: I say not that thou shouldest pray for it.

17 All vnrighteousnes is sinne: and there is sinne vnto death.

18 We knowe that whosoeuer is borne of God, sinneth not: but he that is begotten of God, kepeth hym selfe, and that wicked toucheth hym not.

19 We knowe that we are of God, & the whole worlde lieth in wickednesse.

20 We knowe that the sonne of God is come, & hath geuen vs a minde to know hym which is true: and we are in hym that is true, through his sonne Iesus Christe. This same is very God, and eternall lyfe.

21 Babes kepe your selues from idols. Amen.

[Page]

***The seconde epistle of Saint Iohn.***

## [Chapter 1]

1 He writeth vnto a certayne Lady, 4 reioycyng that her chyldren walke in the trueth, 5 and exhorteth vnto loue, 7 warneth them to beware of such deceauers as denie that Iesus Christ is come in the fleshe, 8 prayeth them to continue in the doctrine of Christ, 10 and to haue nothyng to do with them that bryng not the true doctrine of Christe Iesus our sauour.

A  
1 **The** elder to the elect Lady & her chyldren, whom I loue in the [Note: [a] According to godlynesse and not with any worldly affections. ] trueth: and not I only, but also all that haue knowen ye trueth:

2 For the truthe sake which dwelleth in vs, and shalbe in vs for euer:

3 Grace be with you, mercie, and peace from God the father, & from the Lorde Iesus Christe the sonne of the father, in [Note: [b] We can not receaue the grace of God, except we haue the true knowledge of hym, of the whiche knowledge loue proceadeth. ] trueth and loue.

4 I reioyced greatly, that I founde of thy chyldren walkyng in [Note: [c] According to Gods worde. ] trueth, as we haue receaued a commaundement of the father.

B  
5 And nowe beseche I thee Lady, not as though I wrote a newe commaundement vnto thee: but that same which we haue had from the begynnyng, that we shoulde [Note: Iohn. xiiii.c i.Iohn.v.a. ] loue one another.

6 And this is the loue, that we shoulde walke after his comaundement. This commaundement is, that as ye haue hearde from the begynnyng, ye shoulde walke in it.

C  
7 For many deceauers are entred into the worlde, which confesse not that Iesus Christe is come in the fleshe. This is a deceauer and an antichriste.

8 Loke on your selues, that we loose not that we haue wrought: but that we may haue a full rewarde.

9 Whosoeuer transgresseth, and bideth not in the doctrine of Christe, hath not God: He that endureth in the doctrine of Christe, hath both the father and the sonne.

D  
10 If there come any vnto you, and bring not this learnyng, hym receaue not to house: neither byd hym God speede.

11 For he that byddeth hym God speede, is partaker of his euyll deedes.

12 I had many thynges to write vnto you: neuerthelesse, I woulde not write with paper & inke, but I trust to come vnto you, and speake with you mouth to mouth, that our ioy may be full.

13 The sonnes of thy elect sister greete thee. Amen.

### *The thirde epistle of Saint Iohn.*

#### [Chapter 1]

2 He is glad of Gaius that he walketh in the trueth, 8 exhorteth to be louyng vnto the poore Christen in their persecucion, 9 sheweth the vnkynde dealyng of Diotrephes, 12 and the good report of Demetrius.

A

1 **The** elder vnto ye beloued Gaius, whom I loue in the trueth.

2 Beloued, I wishe in all thynges that thou prosperedst and faredst well, euen as thy soule prospereth.

3 For I reioyced greatly, when the brethren came & testified of the trueth that is in thee, how thou walkest in ye trueth.

B

4 I haue no greater ioy, the for to heare how that my sonnes walke in [Note: [a] That is, in godly conuersation, as they whiche haue both the knowledge and feare of God. ] veritie.

5 Beloued, thou doest faythfully whatsoever thou doest to the brethren, and to straungers,

6 Which beare witness of thy loue before the Church. Which brethren, yf thou bryng forwardes of their journey after a godly sorte, thou shalt do well.

7 Because that for his names sake they went foorth, and toke nothyng of the gentiles.

C

8 We therefore ought to receaue such, that we myght be helpers to the trueth.

9 I wrote vnto the Church: but Diotrephes which loueth to haue the preeminence among the, receaueth vs not.

10 Wherefore yf I come, I wyll declare his deedes which he doth, iestyng on vs with malicious wordes, neither is therewith content: not only he hym self receaueth [Page] not the brethren: but also he forbiddeth the that woulde, and thrusteth them out of the Church.

D

11 Beloued, folow not that which is euyl, but that which is good. He that doth well, is of God: but he that doth euyl, seeth not God.

12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the trueth it selfe: Yea, and we our selues also beare recorde, and ye knowe that our recorde is true.

13 I haue many thynges to write: but I wyll not with inke and penne write vnto thee.

14 I trust I shal shortly see thee, and we shall speake mouth to mouth. Peace be vnto thee. The louers salute thee. Greeete the louers by name.

## ¶ *The epistle of Saint Iude.*

### [Chapter 1]

¶ Saint Iude admonisheth all Churches generally to take heede of deceauers, which go about to drawe away the heartes of the simple people from the trueth of God, & wylleth them to haue no societie with such, whom he setteth foorth in their liuely colours, shewyng by dyuers examples of the scriptures, what horrible vengeance is prepared for them: finally, he conforteth the faythfull, & exhorteth them to perseuer in the doctrine of the Apostles of Iesus Christe.

<sup>A</sup>  
1 **Iude** the seruaunt of Iesus Christe, the brother of Iames: To them which are called and sanctified in God the father, and preserued in Iesus Christe:

2 Mercy vnto you, and peace and loue be multiplied.

3 Beloued, when I gaue all diligence to write vnto you of the common saluation, it was nedeful for me to write vnto you, to exhorte you, that ye shoulde earnestly [Note: [a] Agaynst assaults of Satan and heretiques. ] contende for the fayth which was once geuen vnto the saintes.

4 For there are certayne vngodly men craftily crept in, which were before of olde ordeyned to this condemnation: They turne the grace of our God vnto wantonnesse, and denye God which is the only Lorde, and our Lorde Iesus Christe.

<sup>B</sup>  
5 My mynde is therefore to put you in remembraunce: forasmuch as ye once knowe this, howe that the Lorde, after that he had delyuered the people out of Egypt, destroyed the which afterward beleued not.

6 The Angels also which kept not their first estate, but left their owne habitation, he hath reserued in

euerlastyng chaynes vnder darkenesse, vnto the iudgement of the great day.

7 [Note: Gen.xix.f. ] Euen as Sodome and Gomorrhe, and the cities about them, which in lyke maner defiled them selues with fornication, and folowed straunge fleshe, are set foorth for an ensample, and suffer the payne of eternall fyre.

8 Lykewyse, these beyng deceaued by dreames, defyle the flesh, despise rulers, and speake euyll of them that are in auctoritie.

C

9 Yet Michael the Archangel, when he stroue agaynst the deuyll, and disputed about the body of Moyses, durst not geue raylyng sentence, but sayde, the Lorde rebuke thee.

10 But these speake euyl of those thinges which they knowe not: & what thinges they know naturally, as beastes which are without reason, in those thynges they corrupt them selues.

11 Wo be vnto the, for they haue folowed the way of [Note: Gen.iii.b. Num.xvi.f. ] Cain, and are vtterly geuen to the error of Balaam for lucre sake, and perishe in the gaynsaying of Core.

D

12 These are spottes in your feastes of charitie, whe they feast with you, without al feare feedyng the selues: cloudes they are without water, caryed about of windes, corrupt trees, and without fruite, twise dead, and plucked vp by the rootes:

13 They are the ragyng waues of the sea, fomyng out their owne shame: They are wandryng starres, to whom is reserued the mist of darknes for euer.

14 Enoch the seuenth from Adam, prophesied before of such, saying: [Note: Apoc.i.b. Esai.iii.c. ] Beholde, the Lorde shall come with thousandes of saintes,

15 To geue iudgement agaynst all men, and to rebuke all that are vngodly among them, of all their vngodly deedes, which they haue vngodly committed, [Page] and of all their cruel speakynges, which vngodly sinners haue spoken agaynst hym.

E

16 These are murmurers, complayners, walkyng after their owne lustes, whose mouthes speake proude thynges. They haue men in great reuerence because of aduantage.

17 But ye beloued, remember the wordes which were spoken before, of the Apostles of our Lorde Iesus Christe.

18 Howe that they tolde you, [Note: Actes.xx.f. i Tim.iii.a. ii Tim.iii.a. ii Peter.ii.a. ] that there shoulde be begilers in ye last tyme, which should walke after their owne vngodly lustes.

19 These are makers of sectes, fleshlie, hauyng not the spirite.

20 But ye dearely beloued, edifie your selues in your most holy fayth, praying in the holy ghost,

21 And kepe your selues in the loue of God, lokyng for the mercie of our Lord Iesus Christe, vnto eternall

lyfe.

F

22 And haue compassion of some, seperatyng them:

23 And other saue with feare, pullyng them out of the fyre, and haue compassion on the other, and hate euen the garment spotted by the fleshe.

24 Unto him that is able to kepe you free from sinne, and to present you faultlesse before the presence of his glory with ioy,

25 To God our sauour, which only is wyse, be glorie, maiestie, dominion, and power, nowe and euer. Amen.

### ***The reuelation of Saint Iohn the diuine.***

#### **¶ The first Chapter.**

1 The cause of this reuelation. 3 Of them that reade it. 4 Iohn writeth to the seuen Churches. 5 The maiestie and office of the sonne of God. 20 The vision of the candlestickes and starres.

A

1 **The** [Note: [a] Of things which were hyd before. ] reuelation of Iesus Christ, which [Note: [b] Christe receaued this reuelation out of his fathers bosome as his owne doctrine but it was hid in respect of vs, so that Christe as Lorde & God reuealed it to Iohn his seruaunt, by the ministerie of his Angel, to the edification at his Church ] God gaue vnto hym, for to shewe vnto his seruantes thyngs which must shortlye come to passe: < And when he had sent, he shewed by his Angel, vnto his seruaunt Iohn,

2 Which bare recorde of the worde of God, and of the testimonie of Iesus Christe, and of all thinges that he sawe.

3 Happy is he that readeth, and they that heare the wordes of this prophesie, and kepe those thynges which are written therin, for the tyme is at hande.

4 Iohn to the seuen Churches in Asia: Grace be vnto you, and peace, from him which is, and which was, and which is to come: and from the seuen spirites which are before his throne,

B

5 And from Iesus Christe, which is a faythfull wisse, and first begotten of the dead, and Lorde ouer the kynges of the earth: Unto hym that [Note: Hebre.xi.d. i.Peter.ii.d. i Iohn.i.b. ] loued vs, and wasshed vs from

our sinnes in his owne blood, >

6 And made vs kynges and priestes vnto God his father, be glorie and dominion for euermore. Amen.

7 [Note: Math. 24.c. Dani.vii.d. ] Beholde, he commeth with cloudes, and all eyes shall see hym, and they also which pearsed hym: And all kinredes of the earth shall wayle before hym. Euen so. Amen.

8 I am Alpha and Omega, the begynnyng and the endyng, sayth the Lorde almyghtie, which is, and which was, and which is to come.

C

9 I Iohn, your brother and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdome and patience of Iesus Christe, was in the Ile that is called Pathmos, for ye worde of God, and for the witnessyng of Iesus Christe.

10 I was in the spirite on the Lordes day, and hearde behynde me a great voyce, as it had ben of a trumpe.

11 Saying: I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: That thou seest, write in a booke, and sende it vnto the seuen Churches which are in Asia, vnto Ephesus, and vnto Smyrna, and vnto Pergamos, and vnto Thyatira, and vnto Sardis, and vnto Philadelphia, [Page] and vnto Laodicea.

D

12 And I turned backe to see the voyce that spake to me: And whe I was turned, I sawe seuen golden candlestickes,

13 And in ye middes of the candlestickes, one lyke vnto the sonne of man, clothed with a garment downe to the feete, and girde about the pappes with a golden girdle.

14 His head, and his heeres were whyte as whyte wooll, and as snowe, and his eyes were as a flambe of fyre.

15 And his feete lyke vnto fine brasse, as though they brent in a furnace, and his voyce as the sounde of many waters.

16 And he had in his ryght hande, seuen starres: And out of his mouth went a sharpe two edged sworde: [Note: Mat.xvii.a. ] And his face shone, euen as the sunne in his strength.

17 And when I sawe hym, I fell at his feete euen as dead: And he layde his ryght hande vpon me, saying vnto me, feare not, [Note: Esai.xliiii.b ] I am the first and the last,

18 And am alyue, and was dead: And beholde, [Note: Rom.vi.b. ] I am alyue for euermore, Amen, and haue the keyes of hell and of death.

19 Write therfore the thinges which thou hast seene, and the thynges which are, and the thinges which must be fulfilled hereafter.

20 The misterie of the seuen starres which thou sawest in my ryght hande, and the seuen golde candlestickes. The seuen starres, are the Angels of the seue Churches: And the seuen candlestickes whiche thou sawest, are the seuen Churches.

## The .ij. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth foure Churches, 5 to repentaunce, 10 to perseueraunce, patience, and amendement, 14.20.23. as wel by threatninges, 7.10.17.26. as promises of rewarde.

A

1 **Vnto** the Angel of the Churche at Ephesus, write: these thynges sayth he that holdeth the seuen starres in his ryght hande, and that walketh in the middes of the seuen golden candlestickes:

2 I knowe thy workes, and thy labour, and thy patience, and howe thou canst not forbear them which are euyll: and hast examined them which say they are Apostles, and are not, and hast founde them lyers:

B

3 And hast suffred, and hast patience, and for my names sake hast laboured, and hast not faynted.

4 Neuertheles, I haue [somewhat] against thee, because thou hast left thy first loue.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first workes: Or els I wyll come vnto thee shortly, & wyll remoue thy candlesticke out of his place, except thou repet.

[Page]

6 But this thou hast, because thou hatest the deedes of the [Note: Actes.vi.b. ] Nicolaitans, which (deedes) I also hate.

7 Let hym that hath an eare, heare what ye spirite sayth vnto the Churches. To hym that ouercommeth, wyll I geue to eate of the [Note: Gene.ii.b. ] tree of lyfe, which is in the middes of the paradise of God.

C

8 And vnto the Angel of the Churche of Smyrna, write: These thynges sayth he that is first and the last, which was dead, and is [Note: [a] The eternall diuinitie of Iesus Christe is here moste playnely declared, with his manhood and victorie ouer death, to assure his, that they shall not be ouercome by death ] alyue.

9 I knowe thy workes, and tribulation, and pouertie: but thou art [Note: [b] In spiritual treasures ] riche. And I know the blasphemie of them which cal them selues Iewes, and are not, but (are) the synagogue of Satan.

10 Feare none of those thynges, which thou shalt suffer: Beholde, the deuyll shall caste some of you into prison, to tempt you, and ye shall haue tribulation ten dayes. Be faythfull vnto the death, and I wyll geue thee a crowne of lyfe.

11 Let hym that hath an eare, heare what the spirite sayth vnto ye Churches. He that ouercommeth, shall not be hurt of the seconde death.

D

12 And to the Angell of the Churche in Pergamos, write: This saith he which hath ye sharpe [Note: [c] The word of God, is the sworde with two edges. ] sword with two edges:

13 I knowe thy workes, and where thou dwellest, euen where Satans seate is, and thou kepest my name,



and hast not denyed my fayth: Euen in those dayes when Antipas my faythfull martir was slayne among you, where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I haue a fewe thynges agaynst thee, because thou hast there, them that maynetayne the doctrine of Balaam, [Note: Nu.xxxi.c. ] whiche taught in Balacke, to put a stumblyng blocke before the chyldren of Israel, that they shoulde eate of meate dedicate vnto idols, & commit fornicatio.

15 Euen so hast thou the that maintayne the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thyng I hate.

16 Repent, or els I wyll come vnto thee shortly, and wyll fyght agaynst them with the sworde of my mouth.

E

17 Let hym that hath an eare, heare what ye spirite sayth vnto the Churches. To hym that ouercommeth, wyll I geue to eate Manna that is hyd, and wyll geue hym a white stone, and in the stone a newe name written, which no man knoweth, sauyng he yt receaueth it.

18 And vnto the Angell of the Churche of Thyatira, write: This saith ye sonne of God, who hath eyes lyke vnto a flambe of fyre, and his feete are like fine brasse.

19 I knowe thy workes, and thy loue, seruice, and fayth, and thy patience, and thy deedes, which are mo at the last the at the first.

F

20 Notwithstandyng, I haue a fewe thynges agaynst thee, because thou sufferest that woman [Note: 3.Reg.xvi.g iiii.Reg.x.d ] Iesabel, which called her selfe a prophetisse, to teache, and to deceaue my seruautes, to make them commit fornication, and to eate meates offred vp vnto idols.

21 And I gaue her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

22 Beholde, I wyll cast her into a bed, and them that commit fornication with her into great aduersitie, except they turne from their deedes:

23 And I wyll kyll her chyldren with death, & all the Churches shall knowe, that [Note: Iere.xxvii.b. ] I am he which searcheth the raynes and heartes: And I wyll geue vnto euery one of you, accordyng vnto his workes.

G

24 Vnto you I say, and vnto other of the of Thyatira, as many as haue not this learnyng, & which haue not knowe the deepenesse of Satan, as they say, I wyll put vpon you none other burthen:

25 But that which ye haue alredy, holde fast tyll I come,

26 And whosoeuer ouercommeth, and kepeth my workes vnto the ende, to hym wyll I geue power ouer nations,

27 [Note: Psal.ii.b. ] And he shall rule them with a rodde of yron: and as the vessels of a potter, shall they be broken to sheuers:

28 Euen as I receaued of my father, so wyll I geue hym the mornyng starre.

29 Let hym that hath an eare, heare what the spirite sayth to the Churches.

[Page]

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth the Churches or ministers to the true profession of fayth, and to watchyng, 12 with promises to them that perseuer.

A

1 **And** write vnto the Angel of the Church that is at Sardis, this sayth he that hath the seuen spirites of God, and the seuen starres. I knowe thy workes: thou hast a name that thou lyeest, and thou art dead.

2 Be awake, and strength the thynges which remayne, that are redie to dye: For I haue not founde thy workes perfect before God.

3 Remember therefore howe thou hast receaued and heard, and holde fast, and repent. [Note: i.Thess.v.a. ii Pet.iii.c. ] If thou shalt not watche, I wyll come on thee as a thiefe, and thou shalt not knowe what houre I wyll come vpon thee.

4 Thou hast a fewe names in Sardis, which haue not defiled their garmetes, and they shall walke with me in white, for they are worthie.

5 He that ouercommeth, shalbe thus clothed in whyte aray, and I wyll not put out his name out of the booke of life, and I will confesse his name before my father, and before his Angels.

6 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the spirite sayth vnto the Churches.

B

7 And write vnto ye Angel of the Church of Philadelphia, this sayth he that is holy and true, which hath the key of Dauid, [Note: Esai.xxii.f Iob.xii.c. ] which openeth, and no man shutteth, and shutteth, and no man openeth.

8 I knowe thy workes: Beholde, I haue set before thee an open doore, and no man can shut it, for thou hast a litle strength, & hast kept my saynges: and hast not denyed my name.

9 Beholde, I make them of the synagogue of Satan, which call them selues Iewes and are not, but do lye: Behold, I wyll make them that they shal come and worshyp before thy feete, and shall knowe that I haue loued thee.

C

10 Because thou hast kept the wordes of my patience, therefore I wyll kepe thee from the houre of temptation, which wyll come vpon all the worlde, to trie them that dwel vpon the earth.

11 Beholde, I come shortly: Holde that which thou haste, that no man take away thy crowne.

12 Hym that ouercometh, wyll I make a pyller in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: And I wyll write vpon him the name of my God, and the name of the cite of my God, newe Hierusalem, which commeth downe out of heauen from my God, and [I wyll write vpon hym] my newe name.

D

13 Let hym that hath an eare, heare what the spirite sayth vnto ye Churches.

14 And vnto the Angel of the Churche which is in Laodicea, write: This saith Amen, the faythfull and true witnesse, the begynnyng of the creatures of God.

15 I knowe thy workes, that thou arte neither colde nor hotte: I woulde thou were colde or hotte.

16 So the, because thou art luke warme, and neither colde nor hotte, I wyll spewe thee out of my mouth:

17 Because thou sayest, I am riche and increased with goodes, and haue neede of nothyng: & knowest not howe that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poore, and blynde, and naked.

18 I counsel thee to bye of me gold tryed in the fyre, that thou mayest be riche, and whyte rayment, that thou mayest be [Note: ii.Cor.v.a. ] clothed, that thy fylthie nakednesse do not appeare, and annoynt thyne eyes with eye salue, that thou mayest see.

19 [Note: Prou.ii.b. Heb.xij.b. ] As many as I loue, I rebuke and chasten: Be feruent therefore, & repent.

20 Beholde, I stande at the doore and knocke: If any man heare my voyce, and open the doore, I wyll come in to hym, and wyll suppe with hym, and he with me.

21 To hym that ouercommeth, wyll I graunt to sitte with me in my throne, euen as I ouercame, and haue sitten with my father in his throne.

22 Let hym yt hath an eare, heare what the spirite sayth vnto the Churches.

[Page]

## ¶ The .iiij. Chapter.

1 The vision of the maiestie of God. 2 He seeth the throne, and one syttyng vpon it, 8 and .xxiiii. seates about it, with. xxiiii. elders syttyng vpon them, and foure beastes praysyng God day and nyght.

A

1 **After** this, I loked, and beholde a doore was open in heaue: and the first voyce which I heard, was as it were of a trumpet talking with me, which saide: Come vp hyther, and I wyll shewe thee thynges which must be fulfilled hereafter.

2 And immediatly I was in the spirite, and behold, a throne was set in heauen, and one sate on the throne.

B

3 And he that sate, was to loke vppon like vnto a Iasper stone and a Sardine stone: and there was a raynebowe about the throne, in sight like to an Emeralde.

4 And about ye throne were .xxiiij. seates, and vpon the seates .xxiiij. elders sitting, clothed in whyte rayment, and had on their heades crownes of golde.

5 And out of the throne proceded lightnynges, and thundrynges, and voyces, and there were seue lampes of fire burnyng before the throne, whiche are the seuen spirites of God.

C  
6 And before the throne there was a sea of glasse, lyke vnto cristall, and in the myddest of the throne, & rounde about the throne, were foure beastes, full of eyes before and behynde.

7 And the first beast was lyke a Lion, and the seconde beast lyke a Calfe, & the thirde beast had a face as a Man, and the fourth beast was like a fleyng Egle.

8 And the foure beastes had eche one of them sixe wynges about hym, and they were full of eyes within: and they had no rest day neither night, saying: [Note: Esai.vi.b. ] Holy, holy, holy Lorde God almightie, which was, and is, and is to come.

D  
9 And when those beastes gaue glorie, and honour, and thankes to hym that sate on the throne, which lyueth for euer and euer:

10 The xxiiij. elders fell downe before him that sate on the throne, and worshipped hym that lyueth for euer, and cast their crownes before the throne, saying:

11 Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receaue glorie, and honour, and power: for thou hast created all thynges, and for thy pleasures sake they are & were created.

## ¶ The .v. Chapter.

1 He seeth the lambe openyng the booke, 8. 14. and therefore the foure beastes, the xxiiii. elders, and the angels, prayse the lambe, and do hym worship 9 for their redemption and other benefites.

A  
1 **And** I sawe in the right hande of hym that sate on the throne, a booke written within, and on the backe syde, sealed with seuen seales.

2 And I sawe a strong angell, whiche preached with a loude voyce: Who is worthy to open the booke, and to loose the seales therof?

3 And no man in heauen, nor in earth, neither vnder the earth, was able to open the booke, neither to loke thereon.

4 And I wept muche, because no man was founde worthy to open & to reade the booke, neither to loke thereon.

5 And one of the elders sayde vnto me, wepe not: behold a Lion of the tribe of Iuda, the roote of Dauid, hath obteyned to open the booke, and to loose the seuen seales therof.

6 And I behelde, and loe in the middes of the throne and of the foure beastes, and in the middes of the elders, stode a lambe as though he had ben kylled, hauyng seuen hornes & seuen eyes, whiche are the seuen spirites of God, sent into all the worlde.

B

7 And he came, and toke the booke out of the right hande of him that sate vpon the throne.

8 And when he had taken the booke, the foure beastes and .xxiiij. elders fell downe before the lambe, hauyng euery one of them harpes, and golden vyals full of odours, which are the prayers of saintes:

[Page]

9 And they song a newe song, saying: Thou art worthy to take the booke and to open the seales therof: for thou wast kylled, and hast redeemed vs to God by thy blood, out of al kinrede, and tongue, and people, and nation:

10 And hast made vs vnto our God kinges and priestes, and we shall raigne on the earth.

D

11 And I beheld, and I heard the voyce of many angels about the throne, and [about] the beastes and the elders, and hearde thousande thousandes,

12 Saying with a loude voyce: Worthy is the lambe that was kylled to receaue power, and richesse, and wisdom, and strength, and honor, and glorie, and blessing.

13 And all the creatures whiche are in heauen, and on the earth, and vnder the earth, and in the sea, and all that are in them, hearde I, saying: Blessyng, honour, glorie, and power be vnto hym that sitteth vpon the throne, and vnto the lambe for euermore.

14 And the foure beastes sayde, Amen. And the .xxiiij. elders fell vpon their faces, and worshipped hym that lyueth for euermore.

## ¶ The .vj. Chapter.

The lambe openeth the sixe seales, and many thynges folowe the openyng therof, so that this conteyneth a generall prophesie to the ende of the worlde.

A

1 **And** I sawe when the lambe opened one of the seales, and I heard one of the foure beastes say, as it were the noyse of thunder, come and see: and I sawe.

2 And behold, there was a whyte horse, and he that sate on hym had a bowe, & a crowne was geuen vnto hym, and he went fourth conqueryng, and for to ouercome.

3 And when he had opened the seconde seale, I hearde the seconde beast saye, come and see.

4 And there went out another horse that was redde, and power was geuen to him that sate thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kyll one another: [Note: Esa.xxvii.a ] and there was geuen vnto hym a great sworde.

B  
5 And when he had opened the thirde seale, I hearde the third beast say, come and see. And I behelde, and loe, a blacke horse, and he that sate on hym hadde a payre of balaunces in his hande.

6 And I hearde a voyce in the myddes of the foure beastes saye: A measure of wheate for a penie, and three measures of barley for a penie, and oyle and wine see thou hurt not.

[Page]

7 And when he had opened the fourth seale, I hearde the voyce of the fourth beast say, come and see.

8 And I loked, and behold a pale horse, & his name that sate on him was death, and hell folowed after hym, and power was geuen vnto them ouer the fourth part of the earth, to kyll with sworde, & with hunger, and with death, and with the beastes of the earth.

C  
9 And when he had opened the fift seale, I sawe vnder the aulter [Note: Iob.xxii.b. ] the soules of them that were kylled for the worde of God, and for the testimonie which they had.

10 And they cryed with a loude voyce, saying: Howe long taryest thou Lorde, holy and true, to iudge and to auenge our blood on the that dwell on y earth?

11 And long whyte garmentes were geuen vnto euery one of them: and it was sayde vnto them, that they should reste yet for a litle season, vntyll the number of their felowes, and brethren, and of them that shoulde be kylled as they were, were fulfilled.

D  
12 And I behelde when he had opened the sixt seale, and loe there was a great earthquake, & the sunne was as blacke as sackcloth made of heere, & the moone [Page] waxed all euen as blood:

13 And the starres of heauen fell vnto the earth, euen as a figge tree casteth her vntimely figges when she is shaken of a myghtie wynde.

14 And heauen vanished awaye as a scroule when it is roulled together, and all mountaynes and yles were moued out of their places.

15 And the kynges of the earth, and the great men, and the ryche men, and the chiefe capitaines, and the myghtie men, and euery bonde man, and euery free man, hyd them selues in dennes and in rockes of the hylles:

16 [Note: Ose.x.b. Luk.xxiii.d ] And sayde to the hylles & rockes, fall on vs, and hyde vs from the presence of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the lambe:

17 For the great day of his wrath is come: and who is able to endure?

## The .vij. Chapter.

4.9. He seeth the seruauntes of God sealed in their foreheades, out of all nations and people, 15 which though they suffer trouble, yet the lambe feedeth them, leadeth them to the fountaynes of lyuyng water, 17 and God shall wpe awaye all teares from their eyes.

A

1 **And** after that, I sawe foure angels stande on the foure corners of the earth, holding the foure wyndes of ye earth, that the wynde shoulde not blowe on the earth, neither on the sea, neither on any tree.

2 < And I sawe another angell ascende from the rysing of the sunne, which had the seale of the lyuyng God, and he cryed with a loude voyce to the foure angels to whom power was geuen to hurt the earth and the sea,

3 Saying: Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, neither the trees, tyll we haue sealed the seruautes of our God in their foreheades.

B

4 And I hearde the number of them which were sealed: And there were sealed an C. and xliiii. thousande, of all the tribes of the chyldren of Israel.

5 Of the tribe of Iuda were sealed .xij. thousande. Of the tribe of Ruben were sealed .xij. thousande. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed .xij. thousande.

6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed .xij. thousande. Of the tribe of Nephthali were sealed .xij. thousande. Of ye tribe of Manasses were sealed .xij. thousande.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed xij. thousande. Of ye tribe of Leui were sealed .xij. thousande. Of ye tribe of Isachar were sealed .xij. thousande.

8 Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed [Page] xij. thousande. Of the tribe of Ioseph were sealed .xij. thousande. Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed xij. thousand.

C

9 After this I behelde, and loe a great multitude which no man could number of all nations, and kinredes, and people, and tongues, stode before the throne, and before the lambe, clothed with long whyte garmentes, and palmes in their handes,

10 And cryed with a loude voyce, saying: Saluation be ascribed to hym that sitteth vpon the throne of our God, and vnto the lambe.

11 And all the angels stode in the compasse of the throne, and of the elders, & of the foure beastes, and

fell before the throne on their faces, and worshypped God,

12 Saying, Amen: Blessyng, and glorie, and wisedome, and thankes, & honour, and power, and myght, be vnto our God for euermore, Amen. >

D

13 And one of the elders aunswered, saying vnto me: What are these which are arayed in long whyte garmentes? and whence came they?

14 And he sayde vnto hym, Lorde thou wotest. And he sayde to me: These are they which came out of great tribulation, and haue washed their long robes, and made them whyte by the blood of the lambe.

15 Therefore are they in the presence of the throne of God, and serue hym daye and nyght in his temple, and he that sitteth in the throne, wyll dwell among them.

16 They shall hunger no more, neither thirst, neither shall the sunne lyght on them, neither any heate.

17 For the lambe which is in the myddes of the throne shall feede them, and shall leade them vnto fountaynes of lyuyng water, and God shall wpe awaye all teares from their eyes.

## ¶ The .viiij. Chapter.

1 The seuenth seale is opened, there is scilence in heauen. 6 The foure angels blowe their trumpettes, and great plagues folowe vpon the earth.

A

1 **And** when he had opened the seuenth seale, ther was scilence in heaue about the space of halfe an houre:

2 And I sawe the seuen angels standyng before God, and to them were geuen seuen trumpets.

3 And another angell came and stode before the aulter, hauyng a golden senser, and much of odours was geuen vnto hym, that he should offer of the prayers of all saintes vpon the golden aulter which was before the throne.

4 And the smoke of the odours whiche [Page] came of the prayers of all saintes, ascended vp before God, out of the angels hande.

B

5 And the angel toke the senser, and fylled it with fire of the aulter, and cast it into the earth: and voyces were made, and thundrynges, and lyghtnynges, & earthquake.

6 And the seuen angels whiche had the seuen trumpettes, prepared them selues to blowe.

7 The first angell blewe, & there was made hayle & fire, mingled with blood, and they were cast into the



earth, and the thirde part of trees was burnt, and all greene grasse was burnt.

C

8 And the seconde angell blewe, and as it were a great mountayne burnyng with fire was cast into the sea, and the thirde part of the sea turned to blood.

9 And the thirde part of the creatures whiche were in the sea, and hadde lyfe, dyed, and the thirde part of shippes were destroyed.

10 And the third angell blewe, and there fell a great starre from heauen, burning as it were a lampe, and it fell into the thirde part of the ryuers, and into fountaynes [Page] of waters:

D

11 And the name of the starre is called wormewood, and the thirde part was turned to wormewood, and many men dyed of the waters, because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth angell blewe, and the thirde part of the sunne was smytten, and the thirde part of the moone, and the thirde part of starres, so that the thirde part of them was darkened: and the day was smitten, that the third part of it shoulde not shyne, and lykewise the nyght.

13 And I behelde, and hearde an angell fleyng through the myddes of heauen, saying with a loude voyce, wo, wo, wo to the inhabiters of the earth, because of the voyces to come of the trumpe of the three angels which were yet to blowe.

## The .ix. Chapter.

1 The fift and sixt angell blowe their trumpettes, the starre falleth from heauen. 3 The locustes come out of the smoke. 12 The first wo is past. 14 The foure angels that were bounde are loosed. 18 And the thirde part of men is kylled.

A

1 **And** the fift angell blewe, and I sawe a starre fall from heauen vnto ye earth: and to hym was geuen the key of the bottomlesse pit.

2 And he opened the bottomlesse pit, and the smoke of the pit arose, as the smoke of a great fornace, and the sunne and the ayre were darkened by the reason of the smoke of the pit.

3 And there came out of the smoke locustes vpon the earth, and vnto them was geuen power, as the scorpions of the earth haue power.

4 And it was commaunded them that they shoulde not hurt the grasse of the earth, neither any greene thing, neither any tree: but only those men which haue not the seale of God in their forheades.

5 And to them was commaunded that they should not kyll them, but that they shoulde be vexed fiue monethes, and their paine was as the payne that commeth of a scorpion when he hath stong a man.

6 [Note: Esaias.ii.d. Osee.x.e. Luk.xxiii.d ] And in those dayes shall men seke death, and shall not fynde it, and shall desire to dye, and death shall flee from them.

B

7 And the similitude of the locustes was like vnto horses prepared vnto battayle, and on their heades were as it were crownes lyke vnto golde, and their faces were as it had ben the faces of men.

8 And they had heere as the heere of women, & their teeth were as ye teeth of [Page] Lions.

9 And they had habbergions as it were habbergions of iron, and the sounde of their wynges was as ye sounde of charrettes when many horses runne together to batayle.

10 And they had tayles lyke vnto scorpions, and there were stynges in their tayles: and their power was to hurt men fiue monethes.

11 And they had a king ouer them, which is the angell of the bottomlesse pytte, whose name in the Hebrue tongue is Abadon, but in ye Greke tongue Apollyon, [that is to say, a destroyer.]

12 One woe is past, & beholde two woes come yet after this.

C

13 And the sixt angell blewe, & I hearde a voyce from the foure hornes of the golden aluter, which is before God,

14 Saying to the sixt angell whiche had the trumpe: Loose the foure angels which are bounde in the great riuier Euphrates.

15 And the foure angels were loosed, whiche were prepared for an houre, for a day, for a moneth, and for a yere, for to slea the thirde part of men.

16 And the number of horsemen of warre were twentie thousand times ten thousande, & I hearde the number of them.

17 And thus I sawe the horses in a vision, and them that sate on them, hauing fierie habbergions of a iacinct colour, and brymstone, and the heades of the horses were as the heades of lions, and out of their mouthes went foorth fire, and smoke, and brymstone.

D

18 And of these three was the third part of men kylled [that is to say] of fire, smoke and brymstone, which proceded out of the mouthes of them.

19 For their power was in their mouthes, & in their tayles: for their tayles were lyke vnto serpentis, and had heades, & with them they dyd hurt.

20 And the remnaunt of the men whiche were not killed by these plagues, repented not of the deedes of their handes, that they shoulde not worship deuyls, and idoles of golde, and syluer, & brasse, and stone, and of wood, whiche neither can see, neither heare, neither go:

21 Also they repented not of their murder, & of their sorcerie, neither of their fornication, neither of their theft.

[Page]

## The .x. Chapter.

1 The Angel hath the booke open, & he sweareth there shalbe no more tyme, he geueth the booke vnto Iohn, which eateth it vp.

A

1 **And** I sawe another myghtie Angel come downe fro heaue, clothed with a cloude, and ye raynebowe vpon his head, and his face as it were the sunne, and his feete as it were pillers of fyre.

2 And he had in his hande a litle booke open, and he put his ryght foote vpon the sea, and his left foote on the earth:

3 And cryed with a loude voyce, as whe a Lion roreth: And when he had cryed, seuen thunders vttered their voyces.

4 And when the seuen thunders had vttered their voyces, I was about to write: and I hearde a voyce from heauen, saying vnto me: seale vp those thinges which the seuen thunders vttered, and write them not.

B

5 And the Angel which I sawe stande vpon the sea and vpon the earth, lyft vp his hande to heauen,

6 And sware by hym that lyueth for euermore, which created heauen and the thynges that therin are, & the earth and the thinges that therin are, and the sea, and the thynges which therin are, that there shoulde be no longer tyme.

7 But in the dayes of the voyce of the seuenth Angel, when he shall begyn to blowe, euen the misterie of God shalbe finished, as he declared to his seruantes the prophetes.

C

8 And the voyce which I hearde from heauen, spake vnto me agayne, & sayde: [Note: Ezech.ii.c. ] Go, and take the litle booke which is open in the hande of the Angel, which standeth vpon the sea and vpon ye earth.

9 And I went vnto the Angel, & sayde vnto hym, geue me the litle booke. And he sayde vnto me, take it and eate it vp, and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shalbe in thy mouth as sweete as hony.

D

10 [Note: Ezech.iii.c. ] And I toke the litle booke out of the Angels hande, and ate it vp, and it was in my mouth as sweete as hony: and assoone as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

11 And he sayde vnto me, thou must prophesie agayne among the people, and nations, and tongues, & to many kinges.

[Page]

## ¶ The .xj. Chapter.

1 The temple is measured. 3 Two witnesses rayseed vp by the Lorde, are murdered by the beast, 11 but after receaved to glorie. 15 Christe is exalted, 16 and God is prayseed by the .xxiiii. elders.

A  
1 **And** the was geuen me a reede lyke vnto a rod, and the angel stode by, saying: Rise & meate ye temple of God, & the aulter, and them that worshippe therein:

2 But the court which is without the temple, cast out, and meate it not: for it is geuen vnto the gentiles, and the holy citie shall they treade vnder foote fourtie and two monethes.

3 And I wyl geue power vnto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesie a thousande, two hundred, and threescore dayes, clothed in sackcloth.

4 These are two oliue trees, and two candlestickes, standyng before the God of the earth.

B  
5 And yf any man wyll hurt them, fyre shal proceade out of their mouthes, & cosume their enemies: And if any man wil hurt them, this wyse must he be kylled.

6 These haue power to shut heauen, that it rayne not in the dayes of their prophesying: and haue power ouer waters, to turne them to blood, and to smite the earth with all maner plagues, as often as they wyll.

7 And whe they haue finished their testimonie, the beast that commeth out of the bottomlesse pit, shall make warre against them, and shal ouercome them, and kyll them.

8 And their bodyes shall lye in ye streates of the great citie, which spiritually is called Sodome and Egypt, where our Lorde was crucified.

9 And they of the people, and kinredes, and tongues, and they of the nations, shall see their bodyes three dayes and an halfe, & shall not suffer their bodyes to be put in graues.

10 And they that dwell vpon the earth shal reioyce ouer them, and be glad, and shall sende gyftes one to another: for these two prophetes vexed them that dwelt on the earth.

C  
11 And after three dayes and an halfe, the spirite of lyfe [commyng] from God, shall enter into them: And they shall stande vp vpon their feete, & great feare shall come vpon the which sawe them.

12 And they shall heare a great voyce from heauen, saying vnto them, come vp hyther. And they shall ascende vp to heauen in a cloude, and their enemies shall see them.

13 And the same houre shall there be a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the citie shall fall, and in the earthquake shalbe slaine names of men seuen thousande: and the remnaunt shalbe afraide, and geue glorie to the God of heauen.

14 The seconde wo is past, and beholde the thirde wo wyll come anone.

[Page] D

15 And the seuenth angell blewe, & there were made greate voyces in heauen, saying: the kyngdomes of this worlde are our Lordes, and his Christes, and he shall raigne for euermore.

16 And the .xxiiij. elders which sit before God on their seates, fel vpon their faces, and worshipped God,

17 Saying: we geue thee thankes, O Lorde God almyghtie, which art, and wast, and art to come: for thou hast receaued thy great myght, & hast raigned.

18 And the nations were angrie, and thy wrath is come, and the tyme of the dead that they shoulde be iudged, and that thou shouldest geue rewarde vnto thy seruauntes the prophetes and saintes, and to them that feare thy name, small and great, and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth.

19 And the temple of God was opened in heauen, and there were seene in his temple the arke of his testament: and there folowed lyghtninges, and voyces, and thundringes, and earthquake, and much hayle.

## ¶ The .xij. Chapter.

1 There appeareth in heauen a woman clothed with the sunne. 7 Michael fyghteth with the Dragon which persecuteth the woman. 11 The victorie is gotten, to the comfort of the faythfull.

A

1 **And** there appeared a great wonder in heauen: A woman clothed with the sunne, & the moone vnder her feete, and vpo her head a crowne of twelue starres:

2 And she was with chylde, and cryed, trauaylyng in birth, and payned redy to be delyuered.

3 And there appeared another wonder in heauen, for beholde, a great redde dragon, hauing seuen heades, and tenne hornes, and seuen crownes vpon his heades.

B

4 And his taylor drue the thirde part of the starres of heauen, and cast them to the earth: And the dragon stode before the woman which was redie to be deliuered, for to deuoure her chylde assoone as it were borne.

5 And she brought foorth a man chylde, which shoulde rule all nations with a rodde of yron: And her sonne was taken vp vnto God, and to his throne.

6 And the woman fled into wilderness, where she had a place prepared of God, that they should feede her there a thousande two hundreth and threscore days.

C

7 And there was a battayle in heauen, Michael and his angels fought with the dragon, and the dragon

fought and his angels,

8 And preuayled not, neither was their place founde any more in heauen.

9 And the great dragon, that olde serpent, called the deuyll & Satanas, was cast out, which deceaueth all the world: And he was cast into the earth, and his angels were cast out with hym.

10 And I hearde a loude voyce saying in heauen: Nowe is made saluation, & strength, & the kingdome of our God, & the power of his Christ: For the accuser of our brethren is cast downe, which accused them before our God day & nyght,

11 And they ouercame hym by the blood of the Lambe, and by the worde of their testimonie, and they loued not their lyues vnto the death.

12 Therefore reioyce heauens, and ye that dwell in them. Wo to the inhabitants of the earth, and of the sea: for the deuyll is come downe vnto you, which hath great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short tyme.

D

13 And when the dragon sawe that he was cast vnto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man chylde.

14 And to the woman were geuen two winges, of a great Egle, that she myght flee into the wilderness into her place, where she is norished for a tyme, tymes, and halfe a tyme, from the presence of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water after the woman as it had ben a fludde, that he myght cause her to be caryed away of the fludde.

16 And the earth holpe the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed vp the ryuer which the dragon cast out of his mouth.

[Page]

17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went and made warre with the remnaunt of her seede, which kepe the commaundementes of God, & haue the testimonie of Iesus Christe.

18 And I stode on the sea sande.

## The .xiiij. Chapter.

1.8. The beast deceaueth the reprobate, 2. 4. 12. and is confirmed by another. 17 The priuiledge of the beastes marke.

A

1 **And** I sawe a beast ryse out of the sea, hauing seuen heades, and ten hornes, & vpon his hornes ten

crownes, and vpon his head the name of blasphemie.

2 And the beast which I sawe, was like a Leopard, and his feete were as [the feete] of a Beare, and his mouth as the mouth of a Lion: And the dragon gaue hym his power, and his seate, and great auctoritie.

3 And I sawe one of his heades, as it were wounded to death, and his deadly wounde was healed: And all the world wondred after the beast.

4 And they worshipped the dragon which gaue power vnto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying: Who is lyke vnto the beast? who is able to warre with hym?

B

5 And there was geuen vnto hym a mouth, that spake great thynges and blasphemies, and power was geuen vnto hym, to do .xliij. monethes.

6 And he opened his mouth vnto blasphemie agaynst God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heauen.

7 And it was geuen vnto hym to make warre with the saintes, & to ouercome them: And power was geuen him ouer all kinredes, and tongues, and nations,

8 And al yt dwel vpon the earth, worshipped him whose names are not writte in the booke of lyfe of ye lambe, which was killed from the beginnyng of the world.

9 If any man haue an eare, let hym heare.

10 He that leadeth into captiuitie, shall go into captiuitie: [Note: Gene.xi.b. Math.26.c. ] He that kylleth with a sworde, must be kylled with a sworde. Here is the patience and the fayth of the saintes.

C

11 And I behelde another beast commyng vp out of the earth, and he had two hornes lyke a lambe, and he spake as dyd the dragon.

12 And he dyd all that ye first beast coulde do in his presence, & he caused the earth and them which dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he dyd great wonders, so that he made fyre come downe from heauen on the earth in the syght of men.

14 And deceaued them that dwelt on the earth, by the meanes of those signes which he had power to do in the syght of the beast, saying to them that dwelt on the earth, that they shoulde make the image of the beast which had the wounde of a sworde, and dyd lyue.

D

15 And he had power to geue a spirite vnto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast shoulde speake, and shoulde cause that as many as woulde not worship the image of the beast, shoulde be kylled.

16 And he made all both smal & great, rich & poore, free & bonde, to receaue a marke in their right hand, or in their foreheades.

17 And that no man myght bye or sell, saue he that had the marke or ye name of the beast, other ye number of his name.

18 Here is wisdome. Let hym that hath witte, count ye number of the beast: For it is the number of a man, & his number is sixe hundred threescore and sixe.

## ¶ The .xiiij. Chapter.

1 The notable companie of the lambe. 6 One angel announceth the Gospel. 8 Another, the fall of Babylon. 9 And the thirde warneth to flee from the beast. 13 Of their blessednesse which dye in the Lorde. 18 Of the Lordes haruest.

A

1 **And** I loked, and lo, a lambe stode on the mount Sion, and with hym an hundreth fourtie and foure thousande, hauyng his fathers name written in their foreheades.

2 And I hearde a voyce from heauen, as the sounde of many waters, and as [Page] the voyce of a great thunder: And I hearde the voyce of harpers harpyng with their harpes:

3 And they song as it were a newe song before the throne, and before the foure beastes, & the elders, and no man coulde learne that song, but the hundreth and fourtie & foure thousande, which were redeemed from the earth.

4 These are they which were not defiled with wome, for they are virgins: These folowe the lambe whither soeuer he goeth: These were redeemed fro men, beyng the first frutes vnto God, and to the lambe.

B

5 And in their mouthes was founde no guile: For they are without spot before the throne of God.

6 And I sawe another angell flee in the middes of heauen, hauyng the euerlastyng Gospell, to preache vnto them that sit and dwel on the earth, and to all nations, and kinredes, and tongues, and people,

7 Saying with a loude voyce: [Note: Act.xiiii.c. ] Feare God, and geue honour to hym, for the houre of his iudgement is come: and worshippe hym that made heauen and earth, and the sea, and fountaynes of water.

8 And there folowed another angell, saying: [Note: Esai.xxi.c. Ieremi.li.a. ] Babylon is fallen is fallen that great citie, for she made all nations drinke of the wyne of the wrath of her fornication.

C

9 And the thirde angell folowed them, saying with a loude voyce: If any man worshippe the beast and his image, and receaue his marke in his foreheade, or on his hande,

10 The same shall drynke of the wyne of the wrath of God: yea, of the pure wyne which is powred in ye



cup of his wrath: And he shalbe punisshed in fyre & brimstone, before the holy angels, and before the lambe.

11 And the smoke of their torment ascendeth vp euermore: And they haue no rest day nor nyght which worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receaueth the prynt of his name.

12 Here is the pacience of the saintes: Here are they that kepe the commaundementes of God, and the fayth of Iesus.

13 And I hearde a voyce from heauen, saying vnto me, write: Blessed are the dead, which hereafter dye in the Lorde. Euen so sayth the spirite, that they rest from their laboures, and their workes folowe them.

D  
14 And I loked, and beholde a whyte cloude, and vpon the cloude one sitting lyke vnto the sonne of man, hauyng on his head a golden crowne, and in his hande a sharpe sickle.

15 And another angell came out of the temple, crying with a loude voyce to hym that sate on the cloude: [Note: Ioel.iii.e. ] Thrust in thy sickle & reape, for the time is come to reape: for the haruest of ye earth is ripe.

[Page]

16 And he that sate on the cloude thrust in his sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped.

17 And another angell came out of the temple which is in heauen, hauyng also a sharpe sickle.

18 And I sawe another angell came out from the aulter, which had power ouer fyre, and cryed with a loude crye to hym that had the sharpe sickle, and sayde: Thrust in thy sharpe sickle, and gather the clusters of the vineyarde of ye earth, for her grapes are ripe.

19 And the angell thrust in his sharpe sickle on the earth, and cut downe the grapes of the vineyarde of the earth, and cast them into the great wynefat of the wrath of God.

20 And the wynefat was troden without the citie, and blood came out of the fat, euen vnto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand & sixe hundreth furlonges.

## ¶ The .xv. Chapter.

1 Seuen angels haue the seuen last plagues. 3 The song of them that ouercome the beast. 7 The seuen vials full of Gods wrath.

A

1 **And** I sawe another signe in heauen, great & marueylous, seuen angels hauyng the seuen last plagues, for in them is fulfilled the wrath of God.

2 And I sawe as it were a glassie sea mingled with fyre, and them that had gotten the victorie of the beast,

and of his image, and of his marke, and of the number of his name, stande on ye glassie sea, hauyng the harpes of God.

3 And they sang the song of Moyses the seruaunt of God, and the song of the lambe, saying: Great and marueylous are thy workes [Note: Esai xxi.c. Iere.li.a. ] Lorde God almightie, iust and true are thy wayes thou kyng of saintes.

4 Who shall not feare thee O Lorde, and glorifie thy name? for thou only art holy: And all gentiles shal come and worship before thee, for thy iudgemetes are made manifest.

B

5 And after that I loked, and beholde, the temple of the tabernacle of testimonie was open in heauen:

6 And the seuen angels came out of the temple, which had the seuen plagues, clothed in pure and bryght lynnyn, and hauing their brestes girded with golden girdels.

7 And one of the foure beastes, gaue vnto the seuen angels seuen golden vials, full of the wrath of God which lyueth for euermore.

8 And the temple was full of the smoke of the glorie of God, and of his power: and no man was able to enter into the temple, tyll the seuen plagues of the seuen angels were fulfylled.

[Page]

## The .xvi. Chapter.

1 The angels powre out their vials full of wrath, 6 and what plagues folowe therof, 15 Admonition to take heede and watche.

A

1 **And** I hearde a great voyce out of the temple, saying to ye seuen angels: Go your wayes, powre out your vials of wrath vpon the earth.

2 And the first angell went and powred out his vial vpon the earth, and there fell a noysome and a sore botch vpon the men which had the marke of the beast, and vpon them which worshipped his image.

3 And the second angell shed out his vial vpon the sea, and it turned as it were into the blood of a dead man: and euery lyuyng thyng dyed in the sea.

4 And the thirde angell shed out his viall vpon the ryuers and fountaynes of waters, and they turned to blood.

B

5 And I hearde the angell of the waters say: Lorde, which art, and wast, thou art ryghteous & holy, because thou hast geuen such iudgementes:

6 For they shed out the blood of saintes and prophetes, and therefore hast thou geuen them blood to

drynke: for they are worthie.

7 And I heard another out of the aulter say: euen so Lorde God almightie, true and ryghteous are thy iudgementes.

8 And the fourth angell powred out his viall on the sunne, & power was geuen vnto hym to vexe men with heate of fyre.

9 And men boyled in great heate, and blasphemed the name of God whiche hath power ouer these plagues, & they repented not, to geue hym glorie.

10 And the fifth angell powred out his viall vpon the seate of the beast, and his kyngdome waxed darke, & they gnewe their tongues for sorowe,

11 And blasphemed the God of heauen for their sorowe, and for theirs sores, and repented not of their deedes.

C  
12 And the sixt angell powred out his vial vpon the great riuer Euphrates, and the water dryed vp, that the wayes of the kynges of ye east should be prepared.

13 And I sawe three vncleane spirites like frogges, come out of the mouth of ye dragon, & out of the mouth of the beast, & out of the mouth of the false prophete.

14 For they are the spirites of deuyls workyng miracles, to go out vnto the kynges of the earth, and of the whole worlde, to gather them to the battayle of that great day of God almightie.

15 [Note: Math.24.d. ii Peter.iii. i Thess.v.a ] Beholde, I come as a theefe. Happie is he that watcheth and kepeth his garmentes, lest he walke naked, and men see his fylthynesse.

[Page]

16 And he gathered them together into a place, called in the Hebrue tongue Armagedon.

17 And the seuenth angell powred out his viall into the ayre: And there came a great voyce out of the temple of heauen, from the throne, saying: it is done.

18 And there folowed voyces, thundringes, & lyghtnynges: and there was a great earthquake, such as was not sence men were vpon the earth, so mightie an earquake and so great.

19 And the great cite was deuided into three partes, and the cities of all nations fell: And great Babylon came in remembraunce before God, to geue vnto her the cup of the wyne of the fearcenesse of his wrath.

20 Euery Ile also fledde away, and the mountaynes were not founde.

21 And there fell a great hayle, as it had ben talentes, out of heauen vpon the men, and the men blasphemed God, because of the plague of the hayle: for the plague therof was exceedyng great.

## The .xvij. Chapter.

3 The discription of the great whore, 8 her sinnes and punishment. 14 The victorie of the lambe.

A

1 **And** there came one of the seue angels, which had the seuen vials, & talked with me, saying vnto me: Come, I wyll shewe vnto thee the iudgement of the great whore that sitteth vpon many waters:

2 With whom haue committed fornication the kynges of the earth, and the inhabiters of the earth are dronken with the wyne of her fornication.

3 So he caryed me away in the spirite into the wilderness: And I sawe a woman sit vpon a scarlet coloured beast, ful of names of blasphemie, which had seuen heades, and ten hornes.

B

4 And the woman was arayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with golde, precious stone, and pearles, and had a cup of golde in her hande, full of abominations and fylthynesse of her fornication.

5 And in her forehead was a name written, a misterie, great Babylon, the mother of whoredome & abominations of the earth.

6 And I sawe ye woman dronken with the blood of the martirs of Iesus: And when I sawe her, I wondred with great maruayle.

7 And the angell sayde vnto me: wherfore maruaylest thou? I wyll shewe thee the misterie of the woman, and of the beast that beareth her, which hath seuen heades, and ten hornes.

8 The beast that thou seest, was, and is not, and shall ascende out of the bottomlesse pyt, and shall go into perdition, and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder (whose names are not written in the booke of lyfe from the begynnyng of the world) when they beholde the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

C

9 And here is a mynde that hath wisdom. The seuen heades, are seuen mountaynes on whiche the woman sitteth: They are also seuen kynges.

10 Fyue are fallen, & one is, and another is not yet come: And whe he commeth, he must continue a short space.

11 And the beast that was, and is not, is euen the eyght, and is one of the seuen, and shall go into destruction.

12 And the ten hornes which thou sawest, are ten kynges, which haue receaued no kyngdome as yet: but shall receaue power as kynges at one houre with the beast.

13 These haue one mynde, and shal geue their power & strength vnto the beast.

14 These shall fyght with the lambe, and the lambe shall ouercome them: [Note: i Tim.vi.f. ] For he is Lorde of Lordes, and Kyng of Kynges, and they that are on his syde, are called, and chosen, and faythfull.

D

15 And he sayde vnto me: The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are people, and folke, & nations, and tongues.

16 And the ten hornes which thou sawest vpon the beast, are they that shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate [Page] and naked, and shall eate her fleshe, and burne her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their heartes to fulfyll his wyll, and to do with one consent, for to geue their kyngdome vnto the beast, vntyll the wordes of God be fulfyllled.

18 And the woman which thou sawest, is that great citie which raigneth ouer the kynges of the earth.

## The .xviiij. Chapter.

3.9. The louers of the worlde are sory for the fall of the whore of Babylon. 4 In admonition to the people of God to flee out of her dominio. 20 But they that be of God haue cause to reioyce for her destruction.

A

1 **And** after that, I sawe another angell come from heauen, hauyng great power, and the earth was lyghtened with his glorie.

2 And he cryed myghtyly with a strong voyce, saying: [Note: Esai.xxi.f. Ierem.i.a. ] Great Babylon is fallen is fallen, and is become the habitation of deuyls, and the holde of all foule spirites, and a cage of all vnclene and hatefull byrdes:

3 For all nations haue dronken of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, & the kinges of the earth haue committed fornication with her, & the marchauntes of the earth are waxed riche of the aboundaunce of her pleasures.

B

4 And I hearde another voyce from heauen say: Come away from her my people, that ye be not partakers of her sinnes, and that ye receaue not of her plagues.

5 For her sinnes are gone vp to heauen, and God hath remembred her wickednesse.

6 Rewarde her euen as she rewarded you, and geue her double accordyng to her workes, and powre in double to her in the same cuppe which she fylled vnto you.

7 And as much as she glorified her selfe & lyued wantonly, so much powre ye in for her of punishment & sorowe: for she said in her heart, [Note: Esa.xlvii.d. ] I sit being a queene, and am no wydowe, and shall see no sorowe.

C

8 Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and sorowe, and hunger, and she shalbe brent with fire: for strong is the Lorde whiche shall iudge her.

9 And they shal bewayl her, & the kinges of the earth shall lament for her, which haue committed fornication with her, & haue lyued wantonly with her, when they shal see the smoke of her burnyng.

10 And shall stande a farre of for feare of her punishment, saying: [Note: Ierem.li.a. ] Alas, alas, that great citie Babylon, that myghtie citie, for at one houre is thy iudgement come.

[Page] D

11 And the marchauntes of the earth shall wepe and wayle ouer her, for no man wyll bye their ware any more.

12 The ware of golde and siluer, and precious stones, neither of pearle, & raynes, and purple, and sylke, and skarlet, and all thinne wood, and all maner vessels of yuorie, and all maner vessels of most precious wood, and of brasse, and yron, and marble,

13 And synamon, and odours, and oyntmentes, and frankensence, and wine, and oyle, and fine floure, and wheate, & beastes, and sheepe, and horses, & charrets, and bodies, and soules of men.

14 And the apples that thy soule lusted after are departed from thee, and all thynges which were daintie and had in price are departed from thee, and thou shalt fynde them no more.

15 The marchauntes of these thynges whiche were waxed ryche, shall stande a farre of fro her for feare of the punishment of her, wepyng and waylyng,

E

16 And saying: [Note: Ierem.li.b. ] Alas, alas, that great citie, that was clothed in raynes, and purple, and skarlet, and decked with golde and precious stones, and pearles:

17 For at one houre so great ryches is come to naught. And euery shippe gouernour, & all they that occupie shippes, and shippemen which worke in the sea, stode a farre of,

18 And cryed, when they sawe the smoke of her burnyng, saying: what citie is lyke vnto this great citie?

F

19 And they cast dust on their heades, & cryed, wepyng & waylyng, and saying: [Note: Ierem.li.b. ] Alas, alas, that great citie, wherein were made riche all that had shippes in the sea, by reason of her costlynesse, for at one houre is she made desolate.

20 Reioyce ouer her thou heauen, and ye holy apostles and prophetes: for God hath geuen your iudgement on her.

21 And a myghtie angell toke vp a stone lyke a great mylstone, and cast it into the sea, saying: With suche violence shall that great citie Babylon be cast, & shalbe founde no more.

G

22 And the voyce of harpers, and musitions, & of pypers, and trumpeters, shall be heard no more in thee, and no craftes man, of whatsoever craft he be, shall be founde any more in thee, and the sounde of a myll shall be heard no more in thee:

23 And the lyght of a candle shall shyne no more in thee, and the voyce of the brydegrome and of the bryde shall be hearde no more in thee: for thy marchaunts were the great men of ye earth, and with thyne inchauntment were deceaued all nations:

24 And in her was founde the blood of the prophetes, and of the saintes, and of all that were slayne vpon the earth.

## ¶ The .xix. Chapter.

1 Prayses are geuen vnto God for iudgyng the whore, and for auengyng the blood of his seruauntes. 10 The angell wyll not be worshipped. 17 The fowles & byrdes are called to the slaughter.

A  
1 **And** after that I heard a great voyce of much people in heauen, saying [Note: That is, prayse ye god, because ye antichrist and all wickednes is taken out of the worlde. ] Alleluia: Saluation, and glory, and honour, and power, be ascribed to the Lorde our God:

2 For true and ryghteous are his iudgementes, for he hath iudged the great whore which dyd corrupt ye earth with her fornication, and hath auenged the blood of his seruauntes of her hande.

3 And agayne they sayde Alleluia: and her smoke rose vp for euermore.

4 And the xxiiij. elders & the foure beastes fell downe, & worshipped God that sate on the throne, saying Amen, Alleluia.

5 And a voyce came out of the throne, saying: Praise our Lord God all ye that are his seruauntes, & ye that feare hym both small and great.

B  
6 And I hearde the voyce of much people, euen as the voyce of many waters, and as the voyce of strong thundringes, saying, Alleluia: for the Lorde our God omnipotent raigneth.

7 Let vs be glad, & reioyce, & geue honor to hym: for the mariage of the lambe is come, & his wyfe made her selfe redy.

8 And to her was graunted that she should be arayed with pure and goodly raynes: For the raynes is the ryghteousnes of saintes.

[Page]

9 And he sayde vnto me, write: [Note: Mat.xxii.a. Luk.xiiii.a. ] Happy are they which are called vnto the supper of the lambes mariage. And he said vnto me: These are the true sayinges of God.

10 And I fell at his feete to worship him. And he saide vnto me: See thou do it not, for I am thy felowe seruaunt, and of thy brethren, euen of them that haue the testimonie of Iesus. Worship God: For the

testimonie of Iesus, is the spirite of prophesie.

C

11 And I sawe heauen open, & beholde a white horse, and he that sate vpon him was called faythfull and true, and in ryghteousnesse he doth iudge and make battayle.

12 His eyes were as a flambe of fire, and on his head were many crownes, and he had a name written, that no man knewe but he hym selfe.

13 And he was clothed with a vesture dipt in blood, and his name is called the worde of God.

14 And the warryers which were in heauen folowed hym vpon whyte horses, clothed with whyte and pure raynes.

15 And out of his mouth went a sharpe sworde, that with it he shoulde smyte the heathen: and he shall rule the with a rodde of yron. And he trode the winefat of fiercenesse and wrath of almightie God.

D

16 And hath on his vesture and on his thygh a name written, King of kinges, and Lorde of lordes.

17 And I sawe an angell stande in the sunne, and he cryed with a loude voyce, saying to all the fowles that flee by the myddes of heauen: Come, and gather your selues together vnto the supper of the great God:

18 That ye may eate the fleshe of kinges, and the fleshe of hie capitaynes, and the fleshe of myghtie men, and the fleshe of horses and of them that syt on them, and the fleshe of all free men, and bonde men, and of small and great.

19 And I sawe the beast, and the kinges of the earth, and their warryers gathered together, to make battayle agaynst hym that sate on the horse, and agaynst his souldyers.

20 And the beast was taken, and with hym that false prophete that wrought miracles before hym, with which he deceaued them that receaued the beastes marke, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast quicke into a ponde of fire, burnyng with brymstone:

21 And the remnaunt were slayne with the sworde of hym that sate vpon the horse, whiche sworde proceded out of his mouth, and all the fowles were fylled with their fleshe.

[Page]

## ¶ The .xx. Chapter.

2 Satan beyng bounde for a certayne tyme, 7 and after let loose, vexeth the Churche greeuouslye. 10, 14. And after the worlde is iudged, he and his are cast into the lake of fire.

A

1 **And** I sawe an angel come downe from heauen hauyng the key of the bottomelesse pytte, and a great chaine in his hand



2 And he toke the dragon, that olde serpent, which is the deuyll and Satanas, and he bounde hym a thousand yeres.

3 And cast hym into the bottomlesse pit, and he shut hym vp, and set a seale on hym, that he shoulde deceaue the people no more, tyll the thousande yeres were fulfylled: and after that, he must be loosed for a litle season.

B

4 And I sawe thrones, and they sate vpon them, and iudgement was geuen vnto them: and I sawe the soules of them that were beheaded for the witnesse of Iesus, and for the word of God, and whiche had not worshipped the beast neither his image, neither had taken his marke vpon their foreheads, or in their handes: and they lyued and raigned with Christe a thousand yeres.

5 But the other of the dead men shall not lyue agayne, vntyll the thousande yeres be finished. This is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: For on such shal the seconde death haue no power, but they shalbe the priestes of God and of Christe, and shall raigne with hym a thousande yeres.

7 [Note: Esaias.38. ] And when the thousande yeres are expired, Satan shalbe loosed out of his pryson.

C

8 And shall go out to deceaue the people which are in the foure quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battayle, whose number is as the sande of the sea.

9 And they went vp in the playne of the earth, and compassed the tentes of the saintes about, and the beloued citie: and fire came downe from God out of heauen, and deuoured them:

10 And the deuyll that deceaued them, was cast into a lake of fire & brymstone, where the beast and the false prophete shalbe tormented day & nyght for euermore.

11 And I sawe a great whyte throne, and him that sate on it, fro whose face fledde away both the earth and heauen, and their place was no more founde.

[Page] D

12 And I sawe the dead both great and small stand before God, and the bookes were opened: and another booke was opened, which is [the booke] of lyfe, and the dead were iudged of those thynges whiche were written in the bookes, accordyng to their deedes.

13 And the sea gaue vp her dead whiche were in her, and death and hell delyuered vp the dead whiche were in them: and they were iudged euery man accordyng to his deedes.

14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fyre. This is the seconde death.

15 And whosoeuer was not founde written in the booke of lyfe, was cast into the lake of fire.

## ¶ The .xxj. Chapter.

3. 14. The blessed estate of the godly, 8. 27. and the miserable condition of the wicked. 11 The discription on the heauenly Hierusalem, and of the wyfe of the Lambe.

A

1 [Note: Esai.xlv.c. ii.Pet.iii.a. ] **And** I sawe a newe heauen & a new earth: for the first heauen & the first earth were vanisshed awaye, & there was no more sea.

2 < And I Iohn sawe the holy citie newe Hierusalem come downe from God out of heauen, prepared as a bride garnished for her husbände.

3 [Note: Esai.xxv.d. ] And I hearde a great voyce out of heauen, saying: Beholde, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he wyll dwell with them, and they shalbe his people, and God hym selfe shalbe with them, and be their God.

B

4 [Note: Esai.xliii.d. ii.Cor.v.d. ] And God shall wpe away all teares from their eyes: and there shalbe no more death, neither sorowe, neither crying, neither shall there be any more payne, for the former thynges are gone.

5 And he that sate vpon the throne, said: Beholde, I make all thynges newe. > And he sayde vnto me, write: for these wordes are faythfull and true.

6 And he sayde vnto me, it is done, I am Alpha and Omega, the begynnyng and the ende: I wyll geue to hym that is a thirst of the well of the water of lyfe freely.

7 He that ouercommeth, shall inherite all thynges, and I wyl be his God, and he shalbe my sonne.

8 But the fearefull and vnbeleuing, and the abhominable, and murtherers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, & all lyers, shall haue their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brymstone: which is the seconde death.

[Page]

9 And there came vnto me one of the seuen angels whiche had the seuen vyals full of the seuen last plagues, and talked with me, saying: Come hyther, I wyll shewe thee the bryde, the lambes wyfe.

10 And he caryed me away in the spirite to a great and an hye mountayne, and he shewed me the great citie holy Hierusalem, descendyng out of heauen fro God,

D

11 Hauing the glorie of God: and her shining was lyke vnto a stone most precious, euen lyke a Iasper, cleare as Cristall.

12 And had walles great and hye, & had xij. gates, and at the gates .xij. angels, & names written, which are the names of the .xij. tribes of Israel.

13 On the east syde three gates, and on the north syde three gates, and towards the south three gates, and fro the west three gates.

14 And the wall of the citie had .xij. foundations, and in them the .xij. names of the lambes .xij. Apostles.  
E

15 And he that talked with me had a golden reede to measure the citie withall, and the gates thereof, and the wall therof.

16 And the citie was buylt foure square, & the length was as large as ye breadth: and he measured the citie with the reede twelue thousande furlonges, and the length, and the breadth, and the heyght of it were equall.

17 And he measured the wall thereof an hundreth and fourtie and foure cubites, by the measure of man, that is of the angell.

18 And the buylding of the wall of it was of Iasper, and the citie was pure golde lyke vnto cleare glasse.  
F

19 And the foundations of the wall of the citie were garnished with all maner of precious stones. The first foundation was Iasper, the seconde Saphire, the third a Chalcedonie, the fourth an Emeralde,

20 The fifth Sardonix, ye sixth Sardius, the seuenth Chrysolite, the eygth Beryl, the ninth a Topas, the tenth a Chrysoprasus, the eleueth a Iacinct, ye twelfth an Amatist.

21 The .xij. gates were .xij. pearles, euery gate was of one pearle. and the streate of the citie was pure golde, as through shynyng glasse.

22 And I sawe no temple therin: For the Lorde God almightie and the Lambe, are the temple of it.  
G

23 [Note: Esai.lx.d. ] And the citie hath no neede of the sunne, neither of the moone to lighten it: For the glorie of God dyd lighten it, and the Lambe is the lyght of it.

24 And the people which are saued, shall walke in the lyght of it: and the kynges of the earth shall bryng their glorie and honor vnto it.

25 [Note: Esai.lx.c. ] And the gates of it are not shut by day, for there shalbe no nyght.

26 And they shall bring the glory and honor of the gentiles vnto it.

[Page]

27 And there shall enter into it none vncleane thyng, neither whatsoever worketh abhomination, or maketh lyes: but they only which are written in the lambes booke of lyfe.

## ¶ The .xxij. Chapter.

1 The riuer of the water of lyfe. 2 The fruitfulnessse and lyght of the cite of God. 6 The Lorde geueth euer his seruautes warnyng of thynges to come. 9 The angell wyll not be worshipped. 18 To the worde of God may nothyng be added, nor diminissed therfrom.

A

1 **And** he shewed me a pure ryuer of water of lyfe, cleare as Cristall, procedyng out of the throne of god, and of the lambe.

2 In the middes of the streate of it, and of either side of the ryuer, was there wood of lyfe, which bare twelue maner of frutes, and gaue fruite euery moneth: and the leaues of the wood serued to heale the people withall.

3 **And** there shalbe no more curse, but the throne of God and the lambe shalbe in it: and his seruautes shal serue hym.

B

4 **And** they shall see his face, & his name shalbe in their foreheades.

5 [Note: Esaias.lx.d. ] **And** there shalbe no nyght there, and they neede no candle, neither lyght of the sunne: for the Lorde God geueth them lyght, and they shall raigne for euermore.

6 **And** he sayde vnto me: these sayinges are faythfull and true. **And** the Lorde God of the holy prophetes, sent his angell to shewe vnto his seruautes, the thynges which must shortly be fulfilled.

7 Beholde, I come shortly: [Note: Apoc.i.a. ] **Happy** is he that kepeth ye saying of the prophecie of this booke.

C

8 I Iohn sawe these thynges, & hearde them: **And** when I had hearde and seene, [Note: Apoc.xi.b. ] I fell downe to worship before the feete of the angell, which shewed me these thynges.

9 **And** he sayde vnto me: see thou do it not, for I am thy felowe seruaunt, and the felowe seruaunt of thy brethren the prophetes, and of them which kepe the sayinges of this booke: **But** worshippe God.

10 **And** he sayde vnto me, seale not the sayinges of the prophecie of this booke: For the tyme is at hande.

11 **He** that doeth euyll, let hym do euyll styll: and he which is filthie, let hym be filthie styll: and he that is ryghteous, let hym be ryghteous styll: and he that is holy, let hym be holy styll.

12 **And** beholde, I come shortly, and my rewarde is with me, to geue euery man accordyng as his deedes shalbe.

13 I am Alpha and Omega, the begynnyng and the ende, the first and the last.

14 **Blessed** are they that do his commaundementes, that their power may be in the tree of lyfe, and may enter in through the gates into the cite.

15 [Note: Esai xliiii.b Apoc.i.b. ] **For** without shalbe dogges, and inchaunters, and whoremongers, and

murtherers, and idolaters, and whosoeuer loueth or maketh leasynges.

D

16 I Iesus sent myne angell, to testifie vnto you these thynges in ye Churches. I am the roote and the generation of Daudid, and the bryght mornynge starre.

17 And the spirite and the bride say, come. And let hym that heareth, say also, come. [Note: Esai.lv.a. Iohn.vii.f. ] And let hym that is a thirst, come. And let whosoeuer wyll, take of the water of lyfe, freely.

18 I testifie vnto euery man that heareth the wordes of ye prophecie of this booke: [Note: Deut.iii.a. Pro.xxx.a. ] If any man shall adde vnto these thynges, God shall adde vnto hym the plagues that are written in this booke.

19 And yf any man shall minishe of the wordes of the booke of this prophecie, God shal take away his part out of the booke of lyfe, and out of the holy citie, and from the thynges which are writte in this booke.

20 He which testifieth these thynges, sayth surely, I come quickly. Amen. Euen so, come Lorde Iesus.

21 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christe be with you all. Amen.

*FINIS.*

[Page]

## Back matter

***A Table to fynde the Epistles and Gospels read in the Church of Englande.***  
**VVherof, the first lyne is the Epistle, and the other the Gospell: Whose begynnyng thou shalt fynde in the booke, marked with a hande (as it were) poyntyng forwarde, and the ende, with a hande poyntyng backwarde, conteyned within these letters A.B.C.D.&c.**

**¶ On the first Sunday in Aduent.**

Owe nothyng to any.  
When they drewe nye.

Rom.xiii.c.  
Math.xxi.a.

**¶ On the seconde Sunday in aduent.**

Whatsoeuer thynges are.  
And there shalbe signes.

Rom.xv.a.  
Luk.xxi.e.

**¶ On the thirde Sunday in Aduent.**

Let a man this wyse.  
When Iohn beyng in prison.

i.Cor.iiii.a.  
Math.xi.a.

**¶ On the fourth Sunday in Aduent.**

Reioyce in the Lorde.  
This is the recorde of.

Phil.iiii.a.  
Iohn.i.b.

**¶ On Christmas day.**

God in tymes past.  
In the begynnyng was.

Hebr.i.a.  
Iohn.i.a.

**¶ On saint Steuens day.**

And Steuen beyng full of.  
Beholde, I sende vnto you.

Act.vii.c.  
Math.xxiii.d.

**¶ On saint Iohns day.**

That which was from.  
Iesus sayde vnto Peter.

i Iohn.i.  
Iohn.xxi.f.

**¶ On Innocentes day.**

I loked, and lo a lambe.  
The angell of the Lorde.

Apoc.xiiii.a.  
Math.ii.c.

**¶ On the Sunday after Christmas.**

And I say, that the heyre.  
This is the booke of the.

Gala.iiii.a.  
Math.i.a.

**¶ On Neweyeres day.**

Blessed is that man.  
And it fortun'd, assoone.

Rom.iiii.a.  
Luke.ii.c.

**¶ On the Epiphanie.**

For this cause, I Paul.  
When Iesus was borne.

Ephe.iii.a.  
Math.ii.a.

**¶ On the first Sunday after the Epiphanie.**

I beseche you therfore.  
The father and mother.

Rom.xii.a.  
Luk.ii.a.

**¶ On the seconde Sunday.**

Seyng that we haue.  
And the thirde day was.

Rom.xii.b.  
Iohn.ii.a.

**¶ On the thirde Sunday.**

Be not wyse in your owne.  
When he was come downe.

Rom.xii.d.  
Math.viii.a.

**¶ On the fourth Sunday.**

Let euery soule submit.  
And when he entred into.

Rom.xiii.a.  
Math.viii.c.

**¶ On the fifth Sunday.**

Put vpon you as the.  
The kyngdome of heauen.

Coloss.iii.c.  
Math.xiii.d.

**¶ On the sixth Sunday (If there be so many) shall haue the same Epistle and Gospell that was appoynted for the fifth Sunday.**

**¶ On Septuagesima Sunday.**

Perceau'e ye not, howe.  
The kyngdome of heauen.

i Cor.ix.d.  
Math.xx.a.

**¶ On sexagesima Sunday.**

Ye suffer fooles gladly.  
When much people were.

ii Cor.xi.a.  
Luk.viii.a.

**¶ On Quinquagesima Sunday.**

Though I speake with.  
Iesus toke vnto hym.

i Cor.xiii.a.  
Luk.xviii.d.

**¶ On the first day of Lent.**

Turne you vnto me.  
When ye fast, be not sad.

Ioel.ii.c.  
Math.vi.c.

**¶ On the first Sunday in Lent.**

We as helpers, exhort you.  
Then was Iesus led away.

ii Cor.vi.a.  
Math.iiii.a.

**¶ On the seconde Sunday in Lent.**

We beseche you brethren.  
Iesus went thence, and.

i Thess.iiii.a.  
Math.xv.c.

**¶ On the thirde Sunday in Lent.**

Be you the folowers of.  
Iesus was castyng out.

Ephe.v.a.  
Luk.xi.b.

**¶ On the fourth Sunday in Lent.**

Tell me, ye that desire.  
Iesus departed ouer the.

Gala.iiii.c.  
Iohn.vi.a.

**¶ On the fifth Sunday in Lent.**

Christe beyng an hye priest.  
Which of you can rebuke me

Heb.ix.c.  
Iohn.viii.f.

**¶ On the Sunday next before Easter.**

Let the same mynde be in you.  
And it came to passe, when.

Phil.ii.a.  
Math.xxvi.a.



**¶ On the Munday next before Easter.**

What is he this that.  
After two dayes was.

Esai.lxiii.a.  
Mark.xiiii.a.

**¶ On the Tuesday next before Easter.**

The Lorde God hath.  
And anone in the dawning.

Esai.l.b.  
Mark.xv.a.

**¶ On the Wednesday next before Easter.**

Where as is a Testament.  
The feast of sweete bread.

Hebr.ix.d.  
Luk.xxii.a.

**¶ On the Thursday next before Easter.**

This I warne you of.  
The whole multitude of.

i Cor.xi.d.  
Luk.xxiii.a.

**¶ On good Fryday.**

The lawe, which hath.  
When Iesus had spoken.

Hebr.x.a.  
Iohn.xviii.a.

**¶ On Easter euen.**

It is better, yf the wyll of.  
When the euen was come,

i.Pet.iii.d.  
Math.xxvii.g.

**¶ On Easter day.**

If ye be risen agayne.  
The first day of the.

Coloss.iii.a.  
Iohn.xx.a.

**¶ On the Munday in Easter weeke.**

Peter opened his mouth,  
Beholde, two of the.

Actes.x.d.  
Luk.xxiiii.b.

**¶ On the Tuesday in Easter weeke.**

Ye men and brethren.  
Iesus stode in the midst.

Act.xiii.d.  
Luk.xxiiii.d.

**¶ On the first Sunday after Easter.**

All that is borne of God.  
The same day at nyght.

i Iohn.v.a.  
Iohn.xx.d.

**¶ On the seconde Sunday after Easter.**

This is thank worthie.  
Christe sayde to his disciples.

i Peter.ii.d.  
Iohn.x.v.

**¶ On the thirde Sunday after Easter.**

Dearely beloued, I beseche.  
Iesus sayde to his disciples.  
[Page]

i Peter.ii.c.  
Iohn.xvi.d.

**¶ On the fourth Sunday in Aduent.**

Euery good gyft, and euery.  
Iesus sayd vnto his disciples.

Iames.i.c.  
Iohn.xvi.b.

**¶ On the fifth Sunday.**

See that ye be doers of the.  
Ueryly veryly I say vnto you.

Iames.i.d.  
Iohn.xvi.f.

**¶ On Assention day.**

In the former treatise.  
Iesus appeared vnto the.

Actes.i.a.  
Mark.xv.c.

**¶ On the Sunday after the Assention.**

The ende of all thynges is.  
When the comforter is come.

i Pet.iii.b.  
Iohn.xv.d.

**¶ On Whitsunday.**

When the fiftie dayes.  
Iesus sayd vnto his disciples.

Actes.ii.a.  
Iob.xiii.c.

**¶ On the Munday in Whitson weeke.**

Then Peter opened his.

Actes.x.f.

So God loued the worlde.

Iohn.iii.c.

**¶ On the Tuesday in Whitson weeke.**

When the Apostles.  
Ueryly veryly I say vnto you.

Actes.viii.a.  
Iohn.x.a.

**¶ On Trinitie Sunday.**

After this I loked, and beholde.  
There was a man of the.

Apoc.iiii.a.  
Iohn.iii.a.

**¶ On the first Sunday after Trinitie.**

Dearely beloued, let vs.  
There was a certayne riche.

i Iohn.iiii.b.  
Luk.xvi.e.

**¶ On the seconde Sunday.**

Maruayle not my brethren.  
A certayne man ordeyned.

i Iohn.iii.c.  
Luk.xiiii.d.

**¶ On the thirde Sunday.**

Submit your selues euery.  
Then resorted vnto hym.

i Peter.v.b.  
Luk.xv.a.

**¶ On the fourth Sunday.**

I suppose that the afflictions.  
Be ye mercifull, as your.

Rom.viii.a.  
Luk.vi.f.

**¶ On the fifth Sunday.**

Be you all of one mynde.  
It came to passe, that when.

i Pet.iii.b.  
Luk.v.a.

**¶ On the sixth Sunday.**

Knowe ye not that.  
Iesus sayde vnto his.

Rom.vi.a.  
Math.v.c.

**¶ On the seuenth Sunday.**

I speake groslye, because.

Rom.vi.d.

In those dayes, when.

Mark.viii.a.

**¶ On the eyght Sunday.**

Brethren, we are detters.  
Beware of false prophetes.

Rom.viii.c.  
Math.vii.b.

**¶ On the ninth Sunday.**

Brethren, I woulde not.  
Iesus sayde to his.

i Cor.x.b.  
Luk.xvi.a.

**¶ On the .x. Sunday after Trinitie.**

Concernyng spirituall.  
And when he was come neare.

i.Cor.xii.a.  
Luk.xix.f.

**¶ On the .xi. Sunday.**

Brethren, as parteynyng.  
Christe tolde this parable.

i.Cor.xv.a.  
Luk.xviii.b.

**¶ On the .xii. Sunday.**

Such trust haue we.  
Iesus departed from the.

ii Cor.iii.a.  
Mark.vii.d.

**¶ On the .xiii. Sunday.**

To Abraham and his seede.  
Happy are the eyes which.

Gala.iii.e.  
Luk.x.d.

**¶ On the .xiiii. Sunday.**

I say walke in the spirite.  
And it chaunced as Iesus.

Gala.v.c.  
Luk.xvii.c.

**¶ On the .xv. Sunday.**

Ye see howe large a letter.  
No man can serue two.

Gala.vi.d.  
Math.vi.d.

**¶ On the .xvi. Sunday.**

I desire that you faint not.

Ephe.iiii.a.

And it fortun'd that Iesus.

Luk.vii.b.

**¶ On the .xvii. Sunday.**

I which am a prisoner of.  
It chaunc'd that Iesus.

Ephe.iii.b.  
Luk.xiiii.a.

**¶ On the .xviii. Sunday.**

I thanke my God alwayes.  
When the pharisees had heard.

i Cor.i.a.  
Mat.xxii.d.

**¶ On the .xix. Sunday.**

This I say, and testifie.  
Iesus entred into a shippe.

Ephe.iiii.a.  
Math.ix.a.

**¶ On the .xx. Sunday.**

Take heede therfore howe.  
Iesus sayde to his disciples.

Ephe.v.d.  
Math.xxii.a.

**¶ On the .xxi. Sunday.**

My brethren, be strong.  
There was a certayne ruler.

Ephe.vi.b.  
Iohn.iii.f.

**¶ On the .xxii. Sunday.**

I thanke my God with.  
Peter sayd vnto Iesus.

Philip.i.a.  
Math.xviii.a.

**¶ On the .xxiii. Sunday.**

Brethren, be folowers.  
Then the pharisees went.

Philip.iii.d.  
Math.xxii.b.

**¶ On the .xxiiii. Sunday.**

We geue thankes to God.  
Whyle Iesus spake vnto.

Coloss.i.c.  
Math.ix.c.

**¶ On the .xxv. Sunday.**

Beholde, the tyme cometh.

Iere.xxiii.b.

When Iesus lyft vp his.

Iohn.vi.a.

**¶ If there be any mo Sundayes before Aduent Sunday, to supply the same, shalbe taken ye seruice of some of those Sundayes that were omitted betwene the Epiphanie and Septuagesima.**

**¶ Here endeth the table of the Epistles and Gospels of the Sundayes.**

***Here foloweth the table of Epistles and Gospels which are vsed to be read on diuers saintes dayes in the yere.***

**¶ On Saint Andrewes day.**

If thou knowledge.

Rom.x.a.

As Iesus walked.

Math.iiii.c.

**< On Saint Thomas the Apostles day.**

Nowe are ye not straungers.

Ephe.ii.d.

Thomas one of the twelue.

Iohn.xx.f.

**¶ On the Conuersion of Saint Paul.**

And Saul yet breathyng out.

Actes.ix.d.

Peter aunswered & sayde vnto Iesus.

Math.xix.

**¶ On the Purification of Saint Marie the Uirgin.**

**The same Epistle that is appoynted for the Sunday.**

When the tyme of their purification.

Luk.ii.

**¶ On Saint Mathias day.**

In those dayes Peter stode in the middes.

Math.xi.d.

Act.i.

In that tyme Iesus aunswered.

### ¶ On the Annunciation of the virgin Marie.

[Page]

God spake once agayne.

And in the sixth moneth.

Esai.vii.b.

Luk.i.c.

### ¶ On Saint Markes day.

Unto euery one of vs.

I am the true vine, and.

Ephe.iiii.a.

Iohn.xv.a.

### ¶ On Saint Philip and Iames day.

Iames the seruaunt of God.

And Iesus sayde vnto his.

Iames.i.a.

Iohn.xiiii.a.

### ¶ On Saint Barnabe Apostle.

Tydynges of these thynges.

This is my commaundement.

Actes.xi.a.

Iohn.xv.a.

### ¶ On Saint Iohn Baptistes day.

Be of good cheare my people.

Elizabethes tyme came.

Esai.xi.a.

Luk.i.f.

### ¶ On Saint Peters day.

At the same tyme Herode.

When Iesus came into the.

Actes.xii.a.

Math.xvi.c.

### ¶ On Saint Iames Apostle.

In those dayes came.

Then came to him the mother.

Act.xi.a.

Math.xx.c.

### ¶ On Saint Bartholmewe Apostle.

By the handes of the Apostles.

And there was strife among.

Act.v.c.

Luk.xxii.c.

### ¶ On Saint Mattheuwe Apostle.

Seyng that we haue such.  
And as Iesus passed foorth.

ii Cor iii.a.  
Math.ix.a.

**¶ On Saint Michael and all angels.**

There was a great battayle.  
At the same tyme came the.

Apoc.xii.c.  
Math.xviii.a.

**¶ On Saint Luke Euangelist.**

Watche thou in all thynges.  
The Lorde appoynted other.

i Tim.iiii.b.  
Luk.x.a.

**¶ On Saint Simon and Iude Apostles.**

Iudas the seruaunt of Iesus.  
This commaunde I you.

Iude.i.a.  
Iohn.xv.c.

**¶ On all Saintes day.**

Beholde, I Iohn sawe.  
Iesus seyng the people.

Apoc.vii.a.  
Math.v.a.

FINIS.

Imprinted at London in povvles Churchyarde by Richarde Iugge, printer *to the Queenes Maiestie*.

Cum priuilegio Regiæ Maiestatis.

*Matris vt hæc proprio stirps est saciata cruore: Pascis item proprio Christe cruore tuos.*